

MY MAMIWOTA

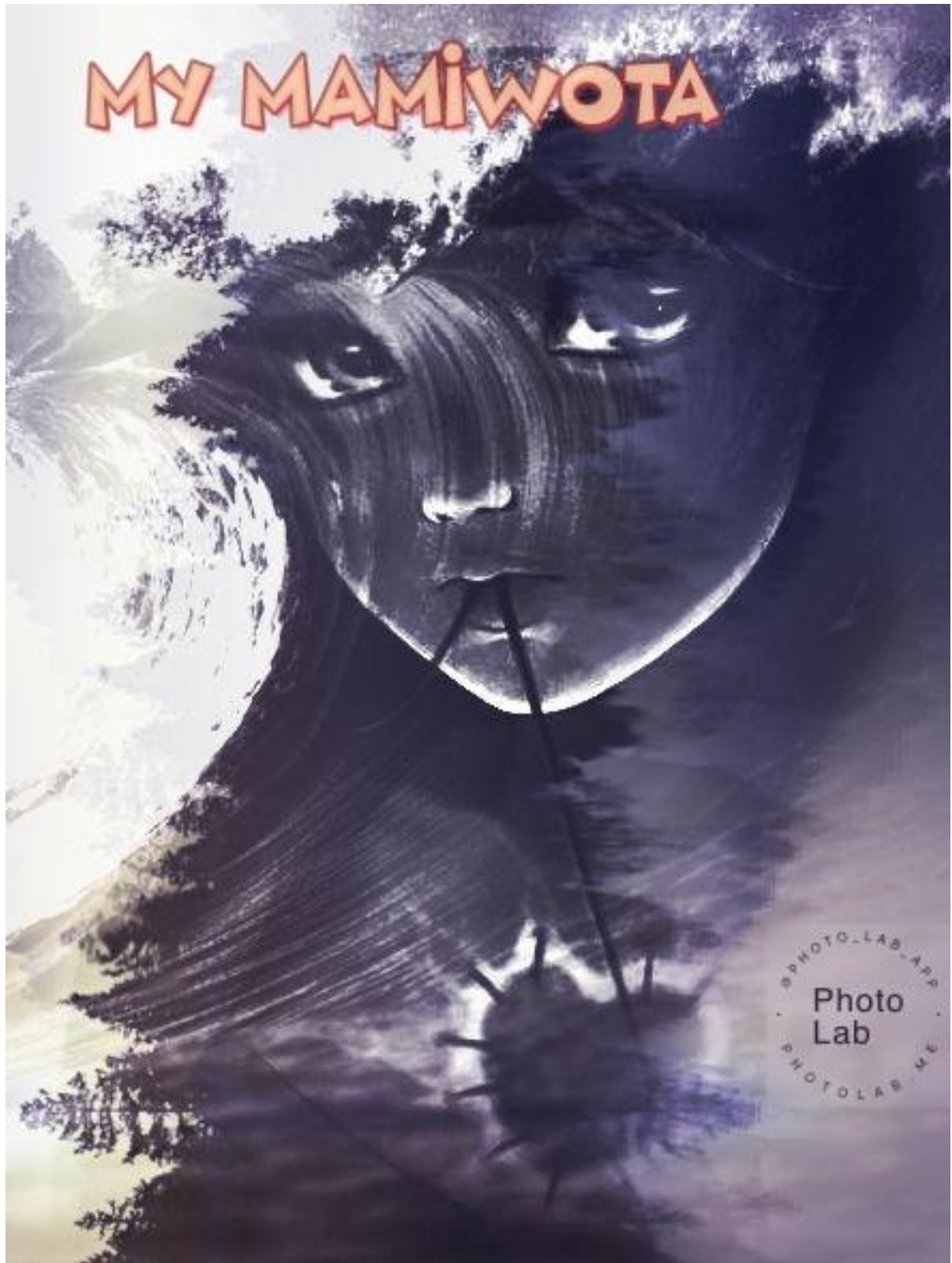
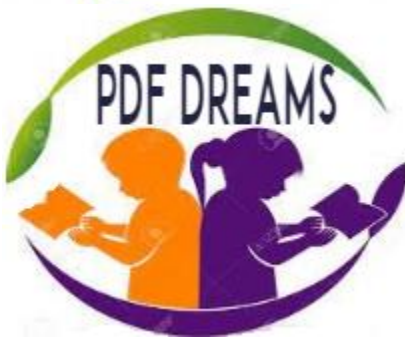


PHOTO-LAB-APP
Photo
Lab
PHOTOLAB.ME

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com



**Today
eBooks**



Naledi Shanelle Mogapi is the name im a 23-year-old daughter of Mamiki Mogapi well I don't know my father cause apparently he denied me to a point that he told my mother to abort me which I wish my mother should have done just that because she also abandoned me with her mother (my grandmother) as soon as I was brought home from the hospital and she left and only send money for my upkeep it hurts cause what I wanted was her love and not her stupid money but hey it is what it is right. Anyway the thing is im albino just like (zakhithi from isibaya) my skin is smooth and pure without any acne or any other skin problems like my fellow albinos have which im glad cause it's hard enough to develop one pimple on your face more especially when you are about to see your periods so imagine having them all over your body so yah im grateful. Well apparently im a product of an affair my mother dated a married man called James Moeketsi and when she fell pregnant with me then the guy asked her to abort cause he couldn't lose his family (wife and kids) well apparently my mother kept the pregnancy hoping to trap him with it but after I was born

and she was told im albino cause my skin color wasn't normal since my mother is darker and my father is also darker I guess she saw me as a curse and I was told she wanted to give me up for adoption but my granny took me instead and raised me to be the woman I am today. Well my so called mother likes to say the more I grow up is the more I look like my so called father and apparently that pisses her off and also makes her want to throw up cause whenever she looks at me she sees him nx as if I asked her to open her fat thighs to a married man. Well enough about my so called mother ummm let me describe myself neh ummm im not skinny and im also not chubby but I have a nice round but not too big ass and im also average height with big eyes.... yes

Sponsored

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

I also have eye side problems like my fellow albinos so most of the time I wear contact lenses and I only wear glasses when im studying. Well others think im colored cause of all the makeup I put on but the thing is once I wipe off the eyeliner and make up and not style my hair im a full blown albino with blond hair blond eyebrows and blond eyelashes and pink lips and pale skin but you know what I'm a PROUD albino nonetheless even though my own mother thinks im cursed im a proud albino. Anyway I have a 1 year 9 months old baby girl who is not albino named Lesedi...yep she's my light that one on this dark life im living and eish she looks just like her absent father to the core and it pains me every time I look at her but you know what I love her so much and I don't think I can live without her cause she always I mean always puts a smile on my face she's the reason I wake up every day to hustle. Anyway concerning her father let's say he told me to abort when I told him im pregnant and then he immediately broke up with me giving me that "it's not you it's me bullshit" mxm.... Anyway I heard he paid lobola (dowry) for some girl and they will soon get married and can you believe he haven't seen his daughter or attempted to even after I told him I couldn't abort and that I gave birth to a baby girl and she looks like him he just told me to FUCK OFF and stop calling him because he can never father an albino child but what he didn't know is that she's not a curse like me (like my mother always says to me).

Well life has been hard to tell the truth cause ya'll know the stigma concerning albinos on our society even today so yah it's been tough even though people say im a different kind of albino (can you



**Today
eBooks**

imagine mxm) but they still treated me differently and others still do even today but hey its life right when it throws you lemons you make a delicious lemonade out of it. Anyway im from a place called soshanguve in Pretoria and I study part time at a college and also work part time at mr price store so I not depend on koko's pension money to survive and to also help out in the house since mommy dearest stopped sending money for my upkeep the time she found out im pregnant. Well I live with my lovely grandmother and my annoying uncle named Thabo (koko's last born son) and I must say it's been hard living with him cause first of all he's a pig and he doesn't like to clean after himself which pisses me off cause its always been like im his maid busy cleaning after him nx ai and im also scared to be left alone with him cause he always makes stupid comments like " he wants to taste me and feel how it's like to fuck an albino" imagine nje my own blood uncle saying that to me modimo (God).

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

Well I once told my grandmother and she reprimanded him but aarg whenever she's not around he continues to make those nasty and creepy comments especially when his drunk which scares the living daylight out of me cause im scared one of this days he might force himself on me I always breathe a sigh of relieve when he's not around and live in fear when he's around so guys tell me what kind of life is this heh. Anyway stay tuned and enjoy this crazy and bumpy ride called my life.

Chapter 1

INSERT.....01

.
. .
. .

****NALEDI****

*** Well today its Thursday and im already on my way to work since I work Monday to Thursday and I attend my classed only on Fridays and Saturdays so eish im always busy and I have no time for myself because even Sunday is short and I spend the whole day cleaning and washing my clothes since koko only washes hers lesedi's and Thabo's clothes.... but what can I do because time waits for no man and Mamiki told me to my face that me feeding off her or her mother must come to an end that if I don't find a job soon I should just fall pregnant again so I can also contribute with the grant money imagine bathong (people) my own mother saying that to me mxm well koko told her she's talking shit and that I can feed off her (koko) if I want to cause im her grandchild. Well its ok cause I damn well know my god is not asleep the fact that Mamiki didn't abort me and that I didn't end up being adopted and that im still alive today even though I grew up hard it means he still got my back big time and im grateful for that shem. Ai anyway enough about Mamiki I arrived at work and I clocked in and I was told I'll be working at the till today***

Voice: baby mama

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

I turn to look and it was one of my bitchy colleagues bonolo well she's not sweet and kind like the meaning of her name in fact she's a bitter bitch she's friends with my baby daddy's sister and she doesn't like me at all she always reminds me that I'm albino and that im desperate to be loved and fucked that I even tried to trap him with a baby but he saw right through me and he left me.... Mxm it's the same old story every day and its actually getting boring now

Me: leave me alone bonolo

Bonolo: mxm ooh please you should be happy that im even talking to you it should be a privilege to you that im even looking at you now cause no one wishes to speak with you because they scared they might contact your curse and also give birth to albino kids

Voice: mxm can you even spell privilege you dumb bitch

***I turned and it was Thandi well she's good towards me in fact we are good friends when I got here she didn't bully me or treat me differently we just clicked and we have been getting along just fine and she's the only one who can actually tell bonolo where to fuck off cause she's ghetto like

that and you can also see that she's a fighter and that she can beat the shit out of anyone that pisses her off... she has a deep voice and a scratch on her chin which she said she got it from beating the shit out of her baby daddy when he didn't buy their kids winter clothes and instead he took his girlfriend to gold reef city with the money and lied to her that he was robbed and stuff only for her to see him tagged on Facebook by the girlfriend with lots of pictures of them taken at gold reef city with a caption saying " me and hubby yesterday at gold reef city enjoying our time together so yah she's hardcore like that***

Bonolo: im not talking to you Thandi

Thandi: well im talking to you.... tell me here don't you have better things to do like to work hard or to even go do prostitution so you make enough money to go do a plastic surgery for that ape like face of yours and stop bothering Naledi.... Or is it because she's more beautiful than you with a flawless skin even though she's an albino and wena you just look like something a cat vomited out is that why you always on her case or is it because she managed to taste that friend of yours' brother and even gave him a child while you couldn't even get a hug from him

bonolo just clicked her tongue and walked away with tears on her eyes.... what did I say only "hardcore Thandi" can shut her up and even make her want to cry

Thandi: nx anyway go do what you are paid for Ledi and ignore that ugly bitch nana ok

Me: thanks for that sistaz I just didn't have the energy to deal with her or to even ignore her today

*** well she older than me she's in her early 30s but she looks younger than her age ***

Thandi: well today I woke up on the wrong side of the bed and she's the right person to take out my frustrations on

*** I just laughed and she walked away calling out bonolo's name..... anyway I did what I was paid to do and by lunch time I went to Woolworths to buy myself a red velvet cake eish I've been craving it for days now.... anyway I got there and I went straight to the back to get it then out of the blue someone bumped into me and their phone fell on the floor but luckily it didn't crack on the screen yho it looks like an iPhone***

Woman: YOU STUPID BITCH ARE YOU BLIND WHY AREN'T YOU WATCHING WHERE YOU ARE GOING NX

yho did she have to shout at me like that nx and she's the one that wasn't looking where she was going

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

Me: you're the one that bumped into me because you were busy with your phone to see where you are going

***I don't know what happened but I felt a hot slap on my cheek and I held my cheek looking at this bitch ***

Woman: who the fuck does you think you are talking to me like that you worthless albino.... just because you are disabled it doesn't mean I will tolerate shit from your kind do I make myself clear

modimo (God)

Voice: LERATO!

someone reprimanded her and I looked at who it was and it was a caramel tall muscled man with brown eyes and a beard...he had tattoos on his hands damn he looked fine as hell and yummy too but the look on his face would make you forget about his yumminess because he looked pissed off

Lerato: baby she made me drop my iPhone and you know how expensive this phone is

Guy: im the one who bought it so I damn well know how much it is nx

Lerato: but ba...

Guy: shut it!

***yho.... then he turned and looked at me ***

Guy: are you ok

I nodded slowly while brushing my cheek and he got close to me and he held my cheek to check it and he sighed

Guy: im sorry for what she did to you ok

Lerato: heh im being tested here.... Heath what's all this why are you embarrassing me in front of this albino thing

Heath: will you be ok

he said that to me ignoring her.... his look was intense and I quickly looked down and I nodded then I walked away and I went where the cakes where and I heard the" Heath" guy talking to that bitch Lerato with a pissed off voice

Heath: you know some times I forget how narrow minded you are nx.... Mgbe ufodu m na-eche ihe mere m ka ji noro nx (sometimes I wonder why im still with you nx)

Lerato: askies what was that

***ok I also would like to know what he said yho because he said it with an annoyed voice....

Mmmmh and I wonder what language was that***

Heath: let's go!

***he said that ignoring her question and I could tell by his tone that he was pissed off...yho ok ***

Lerato: Heath you know I don't like it when you speak in your language

Heath: let's go woman or you'll walk home

he said that ignoring her again

Lerato: baby wait

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

then it was quiet...mmmmh ok I guess they left.... well concerning the slap im not even gonna talk about it im just gonna leave it at that cause im used to being bullied anyway I took what I came here for and I went to pay and I went back to work and I continued with what im being paid to do with bonolo busy saying whoever slapped me deserves an award and that that person should have punched my teeth out also.....even though I've learned to ignore her but it was hard especially when Thandi I working far away from me but hey I did what I do every day which is to plainly ignore her.... Well Later I knocked off and our transportation was waiting for us and we left the mall. I got home tired as hell and I found koko sitting in the lounge with Lesedi sleeping on the couch next to her and I greeted her and I kissed her cheek and lesedi's forehead

Me: how was she today koko (grandmother)

Koko: much better she even played around a bit

*** I breathed a sigh of relieve.... Well my daughter has been battling with flu for days now and koko even took her to the clinic but she wasn't getting better and I was this close to borrowing money from bra Joel who is a well-known mashonisa (loan shark) in our neighborhood to take her to the doctor since im now broke to pay for a doctor's fee but in two week's time Its pay day and I can't wait ****

Me: thank God

I said that sitting down on a single couch

Koko: Naledi

Me: koko

Koko: what happened to your cheek

I touched it and looked away

Me: it's nothing koko

Koko: don't tell me it's nothing Naledi man...did you look at your cheek

I sighed looking down

Me: me and some girl bumped into each other ko Woolworths and she slapped me

koko shook her head looking down

Me: its ok koko and her boyfriend shouted at her for slapping me

Koko: when will you find happiness ngwana ngwanaaka mara heh (my grandchild)

she said that with a breaking voice and I stood up and I went to sit on the arm rest next to her on the sofa and I put my arm around her

Me: I have you and Lesedi koko and I have a job so God hasn't forgotten me

***she nodded**todayebooks.com

pdfdreams.com

*

Koko: keep praying and smiling like you do every day and believe me blessings will continue to follow you

Me: amen to that

Koko: your food is in the microwave

Me: ok ummm I brought cake for us

Koko: cut me a slice and bring it with a cup of tea

Me: ok

*** I said getting up going to the kitchen***

.

.

.

***Well the rest of weekend (Sunday to be more specific) was just ok so was the rest of the following week and today its Thursday and I was at work ... well today I wasn't working on the till I was busy folding clothes and putting them in their rightful places until I heard someone clear their throat and I looked up and that guy...that guy man

Sponsored

that handsome guy people the one with that bitchy girlfriend who slapped me that time... What's his name kana...ummmm Heath yep his name is Heath I remember now he was with some young girl that looks 12 or 13 years of age***

Heath: hi

Me: hello

I turned and looked at the girl

Me: hi beautiful

she smiled and blushed

Girl: hi

she said with a low tone and I turned to this Heath guy

Me: how can I help

he looked at the girl

Heath: tell her what you are looking for

Girl: im looking for a white summer dress but I can't find my size

she was slender

Me: ok let's go look

***I helped her look for her size until we found it and luckily it was the last one ***

Girl: thanks sisi

respectful mmmh nice

Me: pleasure lovey

***she went to Heath ***

Girl: dad we found it

hehanna dad yho ok... Anyway I went back to folding clothes and I felt a figure standing next to me and I looked and that heath guy was standing there looking at me

Me: can I help you with another thing

Heath: im sorry

Me: huh

Heath: for what Lerato did to you

I sighed

Me: its ok you did nothing to me so you don't have to apologize

Heath: I know but I feel like I should since she's my woman you know

Me: ok apology accepted

he smiled and I smiled too then our eyes locked and I looked down quickly and he cleared his throat

Heath: thanks for helping Omphile with finding her size

Me: pleasure and it's my job to help the customer even to a beautiful customer that looks like a doll

he chuckled

Heath: she does neh

I nodded while smiling

Heath: you know I thought I was the only one who saw that she looks like those Barbie dolls I used to buy her

***I laughed while he chuckled...well for real guys this girl was beautiful she had a model's body and she was a dark beauty with glowing skin with some beautiful Japanese kinda eyes with small lips... she is beautiful shem and she's gonna drive a lot of guys nuts if she hasn't started already ***

Me: well she's gorgeous shem so Mr. its time you bought a gun cause boys will go after her left right and center if they haven't started already

***he frowned a bit **

Heath: don't worry I have already bought it

I laughed and he just smiled looking at me

Omphile: daddy I found them

Omphile spoke and we turned to look at her

Me: mmmmh I see you already have an eye for fashion cause those sandals will look good with that summer dress

she nodded with a big smile on her face then her father cleared his throat

Heath: let's go baby

then he looked at me

Heath: it was nice seeing you again miss Naledi

Me: same here Mr. Heath

***he chuckled ***

Omphile: bye sisi

Me: bye beautiful

she smiled while blushing and they walked towards the till and stood at the queue and I continued with my job.... Soon after it was knock off time and I walked out with Thandi

Thandi: you still coming right

Me: coming where

Thandi: please don't start with me tuu

***eish I thought she forgot about it mxm...well she invited me to her grandfather's 80th birthday next weekend ***

Me: ok ok I'll come geez

Thandi: good girl I told you I need someone to keep me in line so that I don't murder those snob bitches called my cousins and ruin my grandfather's party and you're that person since I actually listen when you calm me down.... shem your muthi is working wonders im telling you

***I pushed her lightly and we both laughed.... Well we might not be related but we have this indescribable bond that we both can't explain im sure that's why she always fights with anyone that bullies me especially that bitch bonolo ***

.
. .
.

*** well yeses the following week flew by so fast that today I woke up and it was Friday and I was working I decided to go to work since they cancelled the lessons this weekend anyway I woke up and got ready for work and I woke my beautiful princess and I bathed her and also fed her and koko walked in the kitchen with a worried look on***

Me: koko what's wrong

Koko: Thabo hasn't been home for a couple of days now and im worried

*** well im glad he hasn't been home I wish he got involved with some shitty things and they panel beat him and his in a coma in hospital nx im sorry but God will have to forgive me because Thabo is Satan himself.... Can you believe every time I bath Lesedi I check her private parts for any abnormalities cause im scared he might molest her when im at work and while koko is out of sight busy with something..... that's all I pray for every time I get down on my knees for God to protect Lesedi from him or any other man that might want to hurt her***?

Me: im sure he's with one of his friends busy drinking their lives away

***I said that not bothered at all ***

Koko: waitse (you know) Thabo is gonna be the death of me

Me: koko please don't worry yourself too much please remember you once suffered a heart attack and stress is not good for your heart

she sighed

Koko: why doesn't he behave like other people Naledi heh...he just disappears without letting anyone know where he's going and he comes back from wherever he disappeared to he pretends as if nothing happened nx why a sa no swa once ke mmoloke so ke kgone go ba le peace ka gore tlabo ke itsi ko a robetseng ko teng nx (why doesn't he just die so that I can bury him and then leave in peace knowing where he is all the time)

Me: koko

I said that shocked at her words because I know she loves Thabo

Koko: Hai man Thabo o tla go naganisa bosatane fela ka nnete o tla go tsentsha moya o mobe struu
(Hai man Thabo can make you think evil things im telling you he can make you have evil thoughts
for real)

***then she walked to her room and I just sighed...well this is my life guys im always caught between
a rock and a hard place when it comes to Thabo and koko.... I wish for Thabo to just disappear into
thin air and never come back but at the same time him going away breaks koko's heart because
Thabo is her last born and she loves him along with his troubles and I also can't bare it seeing her
sad or crying so eish go boima guys (its hard guys) Anyway I went after her with Lesedi in my
arms and I opened the door and I found her making her bed***

Me: koko

she looked at me

Me: its ok I'll asked some of his friends in the neighborhood about his whereabouts im sure one of
them know where he is

she nodded

Me: koko please don't stress Lesedi and I still need you you know you are the only parent I have so
please take it easy please

***I said that with tears threatening to come out...well I tried to hold them but they ran down my
cheeks***

Koko: no Naledi man you'll make Lesedi to also cry

***she said that taking Lesedi from me and I wiped my tears and she pulled me into a hug ***

Koko: nothing will happen to me Naledi so stop worrying

I sniffed

Me: I'll stop worrying when you also stop worrying about someone who doesn't care about how his
stupid disappearance acts does to you koko

Koko: ok I'll stop stressing

I smiled and wiped my tears

Me: good

Koko: mxm sellallane (cry baby)

***I giggled and Lesedi also giggled mxm this child.... Anyway I said my good byes and I left leaving
Lesedi with koko she'll take her to daycare in two hours' time****

.
. .
.

***well I got to work and did what they pay me to do and later on it was knock off time and I walked out with Thandi ***

Thandi: this way

Me: why are we going to the basement parking lot

Thandi: my brother borrowed me his car cause I told him I had other businesses to take care off after work

Me: mmmmh lucky you

Thandi: mxm oho can you believe that stupid fool didn't even have enough petrol in that stjotjoviya (scrap) of his and I had to use my own money to fill the tank nx

I laughed

Me: bathong he borrowed you his car the least you can do is fill the tank

Thandi: he's my elder brother Naledi he's supposed to also fill the tank he's just a stingy man nje

*** I continued to laugh until we got the car and it was a black bmw 1series.... Mxm did this bitch just call a bmw 1series a stjotjoviya? (a scrap?) ***

Me: stjotjoviya neh todayebooks.com

pdfdreams.com

she laughed

Thandi: he didn't fill it with enough petrol so it's a stjotjoviya

I just laughed while shaking my head and we got in and we drove to my place so I can go take my overnight bag and kiss my princess and grandmother goodnight since koko said over her dead body will I go with her grandchild to god knows where.... she said im free to go but not with Lesedi*

God I love my granny people***

Chapter 2

INSERT.....02

.

.

.

NALEDI*

we got home and I changed my clothes and I packed some clothes and toiletries and shoes then I took the bag and I went to the living room and I kissed Lesedi and koko and I promised that I will take care of myself and Thandi also promised koko that she will take care of me. God it was hard leaving Lesedi behind but I just couldn't bring her along.... We said our goodbyes and left

Thandi: she'll be ok with your granny Naledi

Me: I've never slept without her next to me since she was born Thandi

I wiped a tear that escaped my eye

Thandi: I know how you are feeling trust me but just tell yourself that she's in safe hands

well she's right and I just nodded.... Well she drove while we had a light conversation until we arrived and since the gate was wide open she drove in and parked the car.... Gosh it was a huge Tuscan house with a double garage it was beautiful shem no lies anyway we got out of the car and I took my bag and we went inside the house all the way to what looked like a lounge and there was an old lady and old man with a middle aged woman sitting on the couches drinking tea and we greeted them

Thandi: well fam this is my bestie Naledi we work together

bestie neh...mmmmh nice ... well the old lady stared at me with a smile on her face and she indicated that I should come to her and I put my bag down and I went to her and she held my hand and pulled me to sit down

Gogo: you are beautiful and you have a flawless skin my granddaughter

I just smiled and blushed...im not used to people saying im beautiful or that I have a flawless skin they always ask if im albino or what

Me: thank you koko

Gogo: uyinkanyezi ngempela mzikulu wam (you are a real star my granddaughter)

I blushed some more

Gogo: where are you from and what is your surname

Me: im from soshanguve and my surname is Makgotlha

***she nodded... well I forgot to mention that we are in Atteridgeville now at thandi's grandparents house ***

Thandi: so gogo are you done making my friend blush like uyam'shela or something (like you are asking her out) so we can go put our bags in my room

everyone laughed

Gogo: Hai suka im sure awuphuzanga amapilisi wakho ek'seni (im sure you didn't drink your pills in the morning

we all laughed

Thandi: haw gogo

Gogo: im kidding my beautiful granddaughter

Thandi: mmmmh I'll get you for that...anyway let's go Naledi

the granny laughed and I stood up and I went to pick up my bag and we walked to some passage then she opened a door and we walked in...well the bedroom was beautiful anyway I put my bag on top of the chair that was in the room and I sat on the edge of the bed and Thandi changed into a baggy shirt and leggings and she wore sleepers

Me: do you live here with you grandparents or with your mom

Thandi: I live here...yho I couldn't live with my mom anymore or else I would have ended up killing my step dad

Me: why

Thandi: nx can you believe that old fat fool after paying for my mother's lobola started giving unnecessary orders in the house telling me he won't allow nonsense in his house as if he bought that house he started throwing his weight around with his ugly face and I knew if I don't move out I'll end up poisoning him because he was getting on my last nerve

I just laughed gosh Thandi is too much bathong

Me: well im glad you moved out

Thandi: me too yho im telling you Naledi I was this close to poisoning him...anyway let's go get something to eat before the useless people of this family come and finish all the food cause im sure they are on their way

we stood up while laughing and we walked out and as we were about to enter the kitchen the kitchen door opened and "Heath" walked in with some guy and as soon as he looked at us his eyes popped out and he stood still

Guy: mmmmh and who's this

Thandi: uyaphapha jabu (you are too forward jabu) you don't even greet

*** jabu chuckled and as for Heath he was staring at me as if he was seeing a ghost people...ummm ok weird...***

Jabu: mxm

then he came to me and we shook hand

Jabu: forgive me for my manners...ummm the name is jabu and you beautiful

I just smiled

Heath: Naledi

he said with his deep voice and we looked at him

Heath: please don't tell me we are related

I shook my head no and I saw him breathe a sigh of relieve...ummm ok weird again..

Thandi: she's my bestie from work

then heath nodded and he walked in and stood next to jabu

Jabu: and how do you know her mfowethu

he said that to Heath

Thandi: I would also like to know

Me: he once came with his daughter to the store and I help her with finding a size for her dress

Thandi: oh ok

then Heath cleared his throat while staring at me

Heath: it was nice seeing you again

Me: same here

***he smirked ***

Heath: eeh lets go dog

*** he said that to jabu and jabu held my hand and he kissed it and heath just shook his head and pulled jabu away and they left***

Thandi: im listening

Me: what

Thandi: how did you really meet my cousin

Me: mmmmh he's your cousin

Thandi: yep our mothers are siblings

Me: wow ok...ummm you remember that time I came back from lunch with a five finger on my cheek

Thandi: please don't tell me he's the one that slapped you

Me: no man his girlfriend Lerato or Lebo is the one that slapped me

Thandi: nx why am I not surprised you know the way I hate that fake bitch ka teng I feel like punching her face every time I see her

Me: so you've met her

she nodded

Thandi: one day is one day with her im just waiting for the day I'll panel beat her without anyone stopping me and ke tlo mmontsha mmae struu (and I'll show her her mother im telling you)

I just laughed and she joined me

Me: don't worry with her I'll help you beat the shit out of her

we continued to laugh

Thandi: sho skeem

.

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

**** HEATH****

***the moment I opened the door and looked up and was met by her I thought I was dreaming she was standing there with her beautiful self and her flawless skin as if she bathes with fresh milk everyday...she looked at me with her beautiful big eyes that I froze by the door that's until an unsettling feeling washed over me when I started asking myself what she's doing here and I had one answer in my head that what if we are related but when she shook her head no when I asked if we are related I breathed a sigh of relief cause I just couldn't stomach her being my cousin cause I fell for this girl the first time I saw her while she was crossing next to my car on the robot in town then I saw her again walking passed me as I stood there frozen as if I was seeing a mamiwota (mermaid) at the mall where she works and when I saw her again at Woolworth that time Lerato slapped her I was happy that I bumped into her again but I was pissed off at what Lerato did to her and what she said to her. I swear if Lerato wasn't my girlfriend I would have punched her teeth out for what she did anyway for the first time in my life since I started chasing after girls I've never felt what I feel for this girl and worst part is we are not friends or anything for that matter but already what I feel for her is these deep eish I mean every time I see her I freeze and im unable to say what's on my mind something that's never happened to me before.... Look I've fucked women from all races and not even one of them rejected me or made me feel what I feel for this girl eish I mean im 35 years old with a 12-year-old daughter but this Naledi chick makes me feel like im a fucken teenager who sees his crush every time I see her that's how messed up I get when I see her eish. Anyway concerning Lerato

Sponsored todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

eish I mean im 35 years old with a 12-year-old daughter but this Naledi chick makes me feel like im a fucken teenager who sees his crush every time I see her that's how messed up I get when I see

her eish. Anyway concerning Lerato well we've been dating for 2 years now and to tell ya'll the truth for 2 years I've been madly in love with her cause she was different from all the girls I fucked for one she has a steady job and she's educated and even though I spoil her but I know she can spoil herself if she wants. She's beautiful and she takes good care of herself basically she's someone my mother would approve of but eish now it's like those strong feelings I had for her evaporated into thin air cause now all I feel for her is nothing but deep care since I saw Naledi and it drives me crazy cause I was even planning on proposing to her until Naledi happened and now I don't see myself doing it I mean i even took back the ring to the store that's how bad things are eish I even felt a painful pinch of jealousy in my heart when my cousin Jabu kissed her hand..... eish o na-esiri m ike ugbu a ndi mmadu (eish it's really hard being me now people). anyway we went to the lounge and my granny indicated I should come to her and I did and sat next to her***

Aunt: did you pack everything well in the garage

Me: yebo mamncane (yes aunt)

Aunt: even the chairs that where outside at the back

Jabu: everything dimamzo (ma)

Aunt: ok then let me go sleep because tomorrow will be a busy day

Me: ok goodnight

Aunt: night baby

then she walked away

Gogo: did you see your wife

heh and what is gogo talking about

Me: gogo?

Gogo: she's more beautiful in person she looks like a mermaid like she bathes in milk mzikulu wam (my grandson)

what...is she talking about Naledi...and what does she mean " she's more beautiful in person "

Me: gogo Lerato is not here

Gogo: Hai man Shaka don't tell me about that disrespectful girl.... now let me warn you mzikulu wam if you marry that girl you'll suffer for the rest of your life.... leyo ntombazane enhle emhlophe (that beautiful white girl) is yours even the stars have agreed and listen to me carefully if you tempt with fate mzikulu wam (my grandson) you'll suffer the consequences to a point that you'll even think you are being bewitched im telling you

she said that and sat up straight

Mkhulu: your grandfather from your father's side used to say this all the time until death remembered him that "what an elder sees sitting down a child will never see even if he/she climbs the tallest iroko tree"

***after he said that he stood up and helped his wife to stand up ***

Gogo: listen to your heart my grandson and your instinct cause those two will never lie to you....
goodnight

Me: ummm good night

Mkhulu: nilalekahle bafana bam (sleep well my boys)

Me: sleep well too Mkhulu

Jabu: goodnight Mkhulu

then they slowly walked away leaving me in total distraught trying to make sense of what they just said to me.... the thing is gogo is some sort of a seer even though she's not into these seer things but moments like this happen and most of the family member always advise us to take what she says into account

Jabu: I know you probably love that girl of yours Lerato mfowethu but please joh try and take into account what gogo just said to you because you know she will never say something like this nje unless there's a good reason behind her statement and you know gogo is a straight up person and she's humble and kind joh so take her words seriously mfowethu

I just sighed and stood up with a lot of things going through my head

Me: ok let me go I'll see you tomorrow

Jabu: alright let me walk you out

he stood up too and we walked out through the kitchen and the girls where sitting there eating while holding a conversation and I swallowed hard when my eyes landed on Naledi.... nx this is witchcraft im telling ya'll

Thandi: you leaving

Me: yeah I'll see ya'll tomorrow

Thandi: ok night

Me: goodnight

Naledi: goodnight

my heart skipped a beat when she said that and I nodded and we walked out jabu and I

Jabu: so gogo is right

Me: about what

Jabu: that girl...I mean even the way you look at her speaks volumes joh

Me: f'tsek don't start with me dog please I love Lerato and you know that

Jabu: ok ok

he said raising his hands up while laughing

Jabu: ok then since you don't want her then I can make my move right

Me: try it and you'll see what I'll do to you

Jabu: whipped

Me: f'tsek

I said that attempting to kick him but he moved and rushed off while laughing and I just smiled while shaking my head

.
. .
.

**** well the name is Heath Ezeudo Owoh- Masden and my lovely grandparents from my mother's side named me Shaka and that's what they call me. Well im the second child to Nomvula Masden and Michael Owoh-Masden and I have three siblings Raymond Owoh-Masden who's the oldest son in the family then Yvonne Stephens (married) who comes after me and Michael Owoh-Masden jnr who's the last born in the family. Im 35 years of age and I have a daughter who's 12 years and Lerato Moeketsi is my girlfriend. Well im a chartered accountant by profession but I also studied IT and well let's say I have a good enough reason why I have to different degrees the thing is well my father elder brother and I are into " white collar" crimes meaning we target bankrupt companies all over and force owners to sell them or trick owners to sell them to us and we also do gun smugglings diamond smuggling and we also steal authentic paintings by famous artists and replace them with fake ones and we sell them in the black market. We don't sell drugs or hijack cars or rob houses or even do human trafficking nope those things are for pussies because we deal with the real shit where the big boys roll. Anyway we all have authentic businesses well except for Raymond cause he's a doctor (a specialist) well with Lerato the thing is except for the fact that I care about her deeply her father is my biggest client in my business well that's how I met Lerato and fell for her anyway yeah this is my life and im afraid now it's about to get complicated fast cause now I know for a fact who my heart really desires****

.
. .
.

as soon as I get in my car i drove away for a mile or so and I packed it and I sat back and exhaled loudly....my heart was beating fast and Naledi's face kept appearing on my face

Me: what the fuck is happening with me I love Lerato I mean I've been with her for almost two years now and we even miscarried once and still at that we got closer than we were before the miscarriage I mean I even planned to propose to her but now my heart won't even let me...fuck
I said that to myself and I rubbed my face roughly...this is witchcraft im telling you all....Eish then my phone rang it was Lerato eish I took a deep breath and answered it

Me: babe

Lerato: when are you coming back

Me: im on my way

Lerato: ok please bring me MacDonald's

Me: ok anything else

Lerato: ummm yeah kfc's hot wings and a milkshake

Me: ummm ok... see you just now

Lerato: ok I love you

Me: I...I love you too babe

then I ended the call... well I suspect she's pregnant cause lately she's been eating a lot of MacDonald's and hot wings and she's gaining a bit of weight and she also sleeps a lot this days and she's moody as fuck and not forgetting extremely annoying too... see why I say my life is about to be complicated really fast.... eish

Chapter 3

INSERT.....03

.
. .
.

**** NALEDI***

*** its now early in the morning the following day around 5am and we are busy chopping vegetables and also cooking on the gas stove in the garage and im already tired cause we started by cleaning this huge house first...anyway two of thandi's cousins(portia and phindile) arrived last night and atleast they are not lazy cause they are also helping out with the cooking***

Thandi: I'll be back ok let me go make us some cup of coffee to warm us up

Me: ok ooh and also bring those scones I saw last night

Thandi: ai wena le dikuku (you and cakes)

I laughed and she left ...well it's a chilly morning and it looks it will be a cloudy day

Phindi: so Naledi are you an albino or...

***ooh here we go again.... ***

Me: or what?

I said that with a bit of attitude

Phindi: and what's with the attitude

Me: nx

and I continued with what I was doing

Portia: well I think her skin is like zakhithi's skin from isibaya I mean look at the colour of her hair eyelashes and eyebrows shes definitely an albino

Phindi: mmh shame I wonder how its like to be an albino you know

wow

Portia: it must be tough I mean imagine no man wanting you because of your sickness

gosh this bitches were talking about me as if im not here

Phindi: shame man yho mina I would just hang myself imagine living without a dick nje yho ngeke (I cant)

god I felt my anger brewing and I just stood up and i walked out of the garage with tears in my eyes and as I was about to open the kitchen door it opened and Thandi stood there looking at me

Thandi: whats wrong

Me: its nothing

Thandi: really Naledi

Me: yeah ummm are you done with our breakfast

Thandi: mmmh help me with this

I took the small bowl that had cookies in it and we went back to the garage and we found those two bitches laughing mxm

Phindi: haw Thandi where are our own cups

Thandi: do I perhaps look like your maid

Phindi: mxm

well we sat down and ate

Thandi: heh guess what

Me: you won the lotto my friend

she laughed and pushed me playfully

Thandi: I wish...mxm well James send me a message when I was in the kitchen asking to see me today he said its important

Me: what do you think he wants to talk to you about

***she shrug her shoulders and what the hell is he doing up this early on a Saturday ***

Phindi: maybe he wants amalove back you know cause I heard him and that girl he was seeing broke up

Thandi looked at her with an annoyed face

Thandi: and wena who invited you to this conversation

Phindi: take a chill pill geez I was just saying nje

Thandi: chill pill yamasimba nx I always told you stay out of my business

Portia: nkosi yam Thandi relax will you she was just trying to make conversation

Thandi: and wena ngubani ocele umbono wakho (who asked for you opinion)

Portia: yho ok

she said raising her hands up

Thandi: and wena

pointing at this bitch phindi

Thandi: just because we once shared a dick doesn't make us friends uyangizwa(do you hear me) don't think for a second I forgot your whoring ways so keep on sticking that extra large nose of yours in my business and ngizokukhahlela mina sfebe uyangizwa nx (I'll panel beat you bitch do you hear me nx)

yho she quickly walked out and portia followed her

Me: please don't tell me she slept with james

Thandi: nah not james but some guy I dated after james

Me: did she know you were dating the guy

she nodded

Me: yho.... Sebeta se se kana (the nerve)

Thandi: tell me about it

Me: I don't think they'll come back and we won't be able to finish all this just the two of us

Thandi: don't worry my other friends and cousins are probably on their way now

Me: ok

***well we ate and went back to chopping those different vegetables and boiling the spinach and potatoes.... Well after some time the friends and cousins that she was talking about arrived and well yho those ladies can work people cause after a while we were done chopping and cooking and now the old women were now cooking the pig pots(driefoots) while we sat in the garage while these ladies where busy gossiping....as for phindi and portia well they never came back...ai good riddens to bad rubbish ***

Me: I'll be back neh I need to use the bathroom

I said that to Thandi and she nodded... I went inside the house and I did my business and after I was done I called koko to check how they slept cause I know shes awake by this time and after our conversation I ended the call and I walked out of the bathroom and I walked a bit then the door of one of the bedrooms opened and heath walked out wearing overalls....damn he looked good in them..... he smiled when our eyes met and I smiled back

Heath: hi

Me: hey

Heath: shame you look tired

I giggled

Me: yeah eish and the party hasn't started yet so imagine how I'll look like later on

he chuckled

Heath: ummm I'll send someone to the shop to buy you an energy drink how's that

I smiled at him...wow that's thoughtful of him

Me: ok..thanks I really need it

he smiled...gosh in Setswana they say "matlho ke diale guys"and yep ke diale shem askies cause I don't even know how to translate it to English but gosh this man is handsome people like really handsome but hey im 100% sure im not his type so yep

Heath: ummm where are you sited

Me: at the garage

Heath: ok let me go find someone who'll go buy you the energy drink

Me: ok thanks again

he nodded and walked away leaving his hypnotic scent behind and I just sighed... God....you know sometimes I wish I was darker and that I wasn't born as an albino cause its not easy especially when people ask you stupid question or when they show pity for you or when they belittle you or even when they act as if you are contagious or something but hey its ok cause I know my God is not asleep and he's watching..... aarg anyway I went back to the garage and soon after some boy came to me holding a can of energy drink and he gave it to me and he said its from uncle heath I thanked him and I opened it and drank it

Thandi: mmmh uncle heath bought you an energy drink neh

***I just ignored her and she laughed mxm.....anyway later on the party started and we were all in the tent and speeches were given and a birthday song was sang to their grandfather who looked happy and emotional at the same time shem and also lots of presents were given to him.....well it was a lovely party and the grandparent were happy and that soothed my heart ***

.
. .

**** anyway it was now later in the evening and everyone already ate and now they were distributing alcohol and loud music was playing I was sitting with Thandi and her baby daddy and some of her cousins and friends and by now Im tired and I missing my daughter like crazy...as for that rude girl lerato she gave me the evil eye when she arrived here but I just ignored her mxm. anyway I felt someone tap my shoulder and I turned to look and it was heath****

Heath: you not drinking anything

I showed him my soft drink and he chuckled

Heath: I mean alcohol

Me: im not much into alcohol

Heath: mmmh ok then

then we both kept quiet and he cleared his throat

Heath: ummm you'll let me know if you need anything right

ummm ooohk" weird"...anyway I nodded and he walked away

Thandi: "umm you'll let me know if you need anything right"

she mimicked his voice then she laughed

Me: mxm wa bora shem (you are a bore shem)

Thandi: Naledi and heath sitting in a car k.i.s.s.i.n.g

she sang that and I pushed her

Me: can you please act your age tuu

Thandi: im acting my age haw

Me: I see you want that girl lerato to stab me neh

Thandi: I would like to see her try shem

Me: will you please stop heath doesnt see me like that ok...no man sees me like that ok

Thandi: says who

***she said that with a frown on her face... and I ignored her ***

Me: james

he turned and looked at me

Me: Thandi said you two can go and talk now

Thandi gave me an evil eye and I laughed

James: ooh for real

Me: yeah..right Thandi

she showed me the middle finger and I stuck my tongue out and James stood up...yho I guess hes desperate to talk to her

James: lets go T

Thandi: I'll get you for this

*** she said to me and I laughed a bit***

Me: I love you too

well shes been ignoring him since he got here cause my crazy friend thinks maybe he got bad news for her like maybe he has some STI or HIV cause apparently they had unprotected sex three weeks ago after they gave in to lust for each other when she went to drop their kids at his house

.

.

.

**** HEATH****

*** you'll let me know if you need anythingyou'll let me know if you need anything.... That's what I said to her nx out of all the things I could have said to her I had to say that.....i mean she's sitting next to her friend (my cousin) for God's sake ofcourse she'll tell her if she needs anything and not me nx...I felt someone shake me and I looked up and it was lerato mxm***

Lerato: are you ok

I nodded

Lerato: are you sure

Me: yeah

***I said that and took a sip of my drink.... Eish this girl is driving me insane people...well I looked at where she is sited and now she was talking with some nigga busy laughing and Thandi was nowhere in sight...I kept on looking at her and she was even blushing and I felt my blood boil instantly and I just clenched my jaws ***

Lerato: my love im tired and im sure the baby is also tired let's just go home

***mxm eish well last night after I got home she dropped a bomb on me that I was actually expecting in a way that she's pregnant...to tell ya'll the truth I wish she wasn't pregnant cause that would make it easy for me to end things with her but now there's a baby on the way and I just can't handle another miscarriage even though I wish she wasn't pregnant ***

Me: im not ready to leave lerato

Lerato: but baby I want to rest your baby is tired

*** nx***

Me: fine I'll go drop you off at your parents house and I'll come pick you up tomorrow

she sulked

Lerato: why...no I want us to go home heath plus this party is boring please

***im getting annoyed now ***

Me: look its either we stay and enjoy the party or I drop you off at your parents' house period

***she sulked some more and looked away ***

Me: so?

she kept quiet

Me: im waiting

Lerato: whatever I'll call someone to come pick me up since this stupid party is more important than me and your unborn child nx

I looked at her with my jaws clenched and I gulped down my drink and I stood up and walked away before I slap her rotten mouth with the back of my hand....i went inside and I found the grandparents sitting in the lounge drinking tea with other elders of the family mxm trust old people with a cup of tea

Granny: shaka

I turned and looked at her

Granny: are you ok

Me: I'm ok gogo

she sighed and nodded and I went to their bedroom cause it has an en-suit since they locked the one on the passage now and I took a leak and I washed my hands and walked out and lerato wasn't sited where I left her and I walked outside the yard to look for her and she was on the phone talking to someone while sobbingi stood behind her since she was looking the other way and she couldn't see me

Lerato: can you believe he chose to stay at this useless stupid party instead of going home with me.....I mean who throws a 100 year old person a party I mean hes close to his grave they should be preparing for his funeral and not waste money on a stupid party nx... anyway please come pick me up

then she listened

Lerato: I know ok but right now looking at him makes me wanna puke I need to get away from all these useless drunkards before they contaminate me with their poverty and their bad luck....i mean even that albino bitch he once shouted at me for is here your baby is tired

*** nx***

Me: fine I'll go drop you off at your parents house and I'll come pick you up tomorrow

she sulked

Lerato: why...no I want us to go home heath plus this party is boring please

***im getting annoyed now ***

Me: look its either we stay and enjoy the party or I drop you off at your parents' house period

***she sulked some more and looked away ***

Me: so?

she kept quiet

Me: im waiting

Lerato: whatever I'll call someone to come pick me up since this stupid party is more important than me and your unborn child nx

I looked at her with my jaws clenched and I gulped down my drink and I stood up and walked away before I slap her rotten mouth with the back of my hand....i went inside and I found the grandparents sitting in the lounge drinking tea with other elders of the family mxm trust old people with a cup of tea

Granny: shaka

I turned and looked at her

Granny: are you ok

Me: I'm ok gogo

she sighed and nodded and I went to their bedroom cause it has an en-suite since they locked the one on the passage now and I took a leak and I washed my hands and walked out and lerato wasn't sited where I left her and I walked outside the yard to look for her and she was on the phone talking to someone while sobbingi stood behind her since she was looking the other way and she couldn't see me

Lerato: can you believe he chose to stay at this useless stupid party instead of going home with me.....I mean who throws a 100 year old person a party I mean hes close to his grave they should be preparing for his funeral and not waste money on a stupid party nx... anyway please come pick me up

then she listened

Lerato: I know ok but right now looking at him makes me wanna puke I need to get away from all these useless drunkards before they contaminate me with their poverty and their bad luck...i mean even that albino bitch he once shouted at me for is here now this yard is full of poverty stricken individuals and cursed bitches left right and center what if even looking at her I end up giving birth to an albino child I cant yho i couldn't even eat the food cause im sure she helped cook

she listened again...by this time my anger and disappointment was sky rocketing

Lerato: mxm I don't even understand why hes mingling with his useless and hungry cousins of his I mean he should be hanging out with people of his status... sometimes heath just disappoints me you know hes filthy rich but he still behaves like a pauper

she listened again and I just shook my head with disbelief...why on earth did I stay this long with this thing...two years people...two fucken years and I tolerated all this shit nx im sure she bewitched me im telling ya'll

Lerato: ok hurry up katlego I cant even breath here even the air is contaminated

mmmh so shes talking to her sister nx then she ended the call and as soon as she turned she froze with her eyes popped out

Me: this...this thing between us...this sham of a thing between us is over lerato I cant believe I tolerated all this shit for 2 fucken years...i don't even know who you are and to think I was gonna propose to you nx im glad you showed me your true colours

I shook my head and walked in the yard leaving her with tears running down her cheek nx..... I went back to my sit and I took my glass and poured my whiskey and I gulped it down at once and I poured another one and also gulped it down

Jabu: are you ok mfwethu

Me: I'll be fine

he nodded and I saw him look behind me and I turned to look

Lerato: ba....bay im..im sorry ple...

I raised my hand up for her to shut up

Me: go and wait for your sister outside the yard

Lerato: heath please

Me: I SAID GO AND WAIT FOR YOUR FUCKEN SISTER OUTSIDE THE YARD OR ARE YOU DEAF

I shouted and everyone looked at me

Me: WHAT?

***I said to them and they looked away and jabu stood up ***

Jabu: ejoh lerato vaya before o bona masepa cause die man hier o kwatile nou (lerato leave before you regret it cause this guy here is angry now)

well she should listen to him cause he knows the real me and how I get when I lose it

Lerato: my love please let go somewhere private and talk please

Me: VOETSEK MAN LERATO VOETSEK DIDN'T I SAY GO WAIT FOR YOUR SISTER OUTSIDE THE YARD OR YOU WANT ME TO DRAG YOU OUT

***I roared....lerato should just leave now cause if I get up from this chair she'll curse the day she met me.....well jabu pulled her away and I poured another whiskey and I gulped it down after some time jabu came back ***

Jabu: as'vaye (lets go)

I stood up and I looked towards Naledi and she was still talking to that guy and well my anger hit the roof top....my hands were even shakinganyway we went to the back of the house and jabu rolled a joint and lit it and gave it to me

Jabu: take so you can calm down before you kill someone

I didn't say anything I just took it and took a few puffs and I felt myself slowly calming down and I took a crate and I sat down and I scratched my head roughly

Jabu: what made you this angry to a point that Caesar almost woke up

Me: I overheard lerato talking to her sister on the phone about nasty shit concerning our family

Jabu: I can already imagine what she was saying nx

Me: have I been blind all these years that I couldn't see the kind of a person she is

Jabu: uthando mfowethu (love my brother) is blind

Me: so you trying to tell me I don't love her anymore since I now see her for who she is

Jabu: I don't think it was love to begin with I mean lerato is every guys dream from afar.... Shes drop dead gorgeous independent and educated then the moment you get to know her well you start to see that all that gold you thought you saw is actually glitter and that there is nothing really interesting there but an overly spoiled brat with a stinking attitude

I sighed.....yah neh if only I got aware of all these before I knocked her up nx...anyway we continued to smoke the joint

.
. .
.

**** NALEDI****

***ok what just happened guys I mean heath just shouted at his girlfriend and embarrassed her in front of everyone mmh I wonder what happened but hey its none of my business...anyway now im sitting with some funny guy called kabela and his jokes crack me up well yena hes cute shem no lies and he has a killer smile ***

Kabela: so Naledi do you mind giving me your digits so I can continue to crack you up like this

Me: ooh really now

Kabelo: yeah and you know that laughing is good right

Me: yeah it is

Kabelo: soooo?

Me: ok

***he smiled wide and he gave me his phone and I put in my numbers and he save them ***

Kabelo: so when are you leaving

Me: tomorrow

Kabelo: can I take you back home please

Me: its ok I'll use a taxi plus I'm leaving early in the morning

Kabelo: I don't mind waking up ka 4am to come and pick you up

I giggled

Me: with the way you are drinking trust me you wont be able to wake up

he laughed

Kabelo: ok I stop drinking and you allow me to take you home right

I smiled and looked at him

Me: you are crazy you know that

Kabelo: so ive been told

I giggled then I felt a heavy feeling on my shoulders and before I could turn he spoke

Heath: that wont be necessary cause she already has someone taking her back home

since when...I thought to myself

Me: ummm i...

he interrupted me

Heath: lets go

***he said reaching out for my hand and he took it and made me stand up and I looked at kabelo

who didn't seem pleased at all...ok what is heath playing at***

Me: heath Im b...

***he interrupted me again ***

Heath: shhhh...lets go

*** yho... Ummmm ok I kept quiet cause he looks angry ***.

4

INSERT 04

.

.
.
****HEATH****

****after we finished with our smoking session we walked back and jabu told me to go take Naledi away from that dude she was busy talking and blushing for cause that nikka hangs out with some evil people whom he suspects practice ritual killings he said he was also arrested for being found with human remains and I didn't waste time cause I know jabu knows all the shady and evil people here even though I spend my time in the streets with him whenever I came to visit which was almost every weekend when I was in varsity but he knows the streets in and out and who to fuck with and who not to fuck with.... you get my drift abi (right) well I was born and bred in Nigeria at a place called Ikeja GRA in Lagos mainland and well im multilingual and I can speak igbo and igbo pigin zulu and Pretoria's tsotsi taal fluently and a bit of Portuguese and French.....anyway as soon as I finished my high school I relocated to south Africa and I studied to be an Accountant and IT at UJ (university of Johannesburg) here in south Africa and well I also got to know my mother's family a bit more and that when jabu and I got close and well we've been like that ever since. Even when he went to jail for 7 years for armed robbery nothing changed between us and when he got out I helped him out and well lets say now he owns a garage where he fixes cars and he also buys them fixes them and sells them and we also co-own a couple of night clubs strip clubs around Pretoria and a pub in the neighbourhood so yah we tight like that and we also have each other's backs so him saying that bastard is bad I knew I had to get Naledi away from him and now im standing far away from the crowd with an unhappy Naledi who looks more beautiful when pissed off.... Fuck I wish I can just kiss her right now and have her here and now****

Me: so you take lifts from men you just met Naledi

Naledi: Heath you didn't have to do that you know

she said with a frown on her face and her lips slightly pouted.... beautiful I tell you

Me: you haven't answered my question

Naledi: geez no I don't

Me: then what was all that with that dickhead

she looked up at me with that frown still on her face

Naledi: what is it to you anyway who I take lifts from heath

***her voice is soft and sweet and not forgetting her beautiful self with her big beautiful eyes... fuck she's beautiful ***

Me: ooh so im not supposed to care if your life is in danger Naledi

Naledi: wha...what do you mean my life is in danger

Me: that guy you were busy flirting with is not a good guy at all Ledi.... He's friends with evil people that are into muti killings

her eyes popped out and I could see she was scared

Naledi: wha...what

Me: Naledi this is attredgeville and not where you coming from and not every guy here that smiles and flirts with you want you some have evil intensions and they might wanna harm you

she swallowed hard

Me: don't get me wrong im not saying all these things cause you are an albino or shit like that no even darker girls are abducted here so please be careful ok

she nodded while looking down and I don't know why I did it but I put my fingers under her chin and I made her look at me and I stared into her beautiful eyes and she quickly looked away and I pulled her closer to me and I held her tight with her head on my chest fuck.... her being in my arms felt good and right.... anyway I rubbed her back gently

Me: its ok you don't have to be scared I won't let anyone hurt you ok

***she nodded fuck my heart was even beating fast....shit this girl is gonna be the death of me ***

Voice: this looks cosy

Naledi pulled away from the hug and I turned and it was lerato and her sister katlego and I got annoyed instantly

Me: wetin wahala be dis now (what problem is this)

I said that to myself annoyed as fuck

Lerato: bitch you better walk away now before I fuck you up pretty bad nx don't dare me sfebe

Naledi attempted to walk away but I quickly grabbed her hand and i pulled her back

Me: we not done talking

I said that ignoring lerato cause if I entertain her I lose it and fuck her up

Lerato: heath whats all this why are you embarrassing me like this

she said looking hurt

Me: didn't I say go wait for your sister outside the yard

Lerato: oho so you pretended to be mad at me so I'll leave and you can come and hug this cursed bitch

Me: LERATO!

I warned her

Naledi: heath please let go of me

she said that with a shaky voice and I felt like someone just stabbed my heart with a sharp object cause she also had tears in her eyes then I let her go and she walked away and I clenched my jaws looking at lerato

Lerato: yeah run bitch

I swear I wanted to slap her so bad but I fought off the edge

Me: what is it that you want back here

Lerato: look can we just go somewhere private and talk baby pl....

I interrupted her

Me: I thought you said you cant stand being with poverty stricken individuals now what are you doing here

Katlego: heath look shes sorry ok im sure it was her hormones that made her say all that

Me: and wena who invited you to this conversation

I said looking at katlego

Lerato: don't talk to my sister like that heath ok

Me: mmmh ok.... now take this ugly thing called your sister and get the fuck out of my grandparents' house

Katlego: heh I cant believe this

Me: I SAID LEAVE!

I shouted

Lerato: heath why are you acting like this heh why

Me: nx

*** I said that and I walked away from them before I slap one of them and I went to where Naledi was sitting and I could see that bastard was still talking to her but now I could see she wasn't even entertaining him goodi bend down a bit and whispered in her ear***

Me: lets go and talk

***she turned quickly probably to check who it was and our lips almost touched and she looked away quickly then shook her head no ***

Me: please Ledi im begging you

***fuck did I just beg a womanme heath beg a woman to talk to me ...yah neh wonders shall never end well she shook her head no again and I sighed frustrated cause I was getting impatient now ***

Me: don't make me force you Naledi cause believe me I will

then lerato had to follow me God im being tested here

Lerato: heath whats all this huh why are you embarrassing me like this

Me: Naledi lets go please

Lerato: you are not going anywhere with this albino bitch heath and if you want me to pop this baby im carrying here and now you will dare me and leave with this cursed bitch nx

I felt my blood boil

Me: make you no vex me lerato abeg or I go land you slap now now nx (don't upset me lerato please or I will slap you now)

I said that to her pissed off

Me: jabu

I called out to him and he stood up and walked to me

Jabu: flopo (whats wrong)

Me: please take care of naledi I'll be back

he looked at lerato and he shook his head with a disgusted look on his face then he turned to me

Jabu: sure

***then he looked at Naledi ***

Jabu: A re vaye ro nna da (lets go sit there)

*** he said to naledi and she seemed like she wanted to protest but then she decided against it when she saw the frown on jabu's face and she stood up and walked away with him then I grabbed lerato by her upper arm tight and I pulled her out of the yard pissed off as hell and I dragged her to my car and I pushed her inside the passenger side and I got in the driver side then I saw her sister rushing to my car and I drove off in total speed***

Lerato: I cant believe you embarrassed me in front of those people heath....me lerato heh I cant believe it

she said all worked up and that made me more angry

Me: SHUT UP....SHUT THE FUCK UP LERATO

she kept quiet

Me: nx

I drove and few minutes later I parked on the side of the road as I felt my anger raising by the second and I got out of the car

Lerato: baby

I kept quiet and went to her side and I opened her door and dragged her out roughly and I let go of her and I pointed at her

Me: now listen well well (pay attention) I've tolerated your bullshit for a long time and now im gaat vol with it who the fuck do you think you are lerato queen of fucken Sheba....well let me fucken tell you you may be queen of sheba ko mmao le ntatao (to your mother and father) and to everyone

who likes to kiss your fucken ass but to me you are nothing but my fucken baby mama you sabi (you understand)..... now if you ever in your fucken miserable life insult Naledi again you'll see the other side of me that will make you shit on yourself now don't fucken dare me woman

I roared and she was crying all along while I was breathing heavily angry as hell

Me: you...you insulted my grandfather and called my family members poverty stricken individual
Lerto: im sorry heath please...

I interrupted her

Me: SORRY?...SORRY LERATO you may be queen of sheba ko mmao le ntatao (to your mother and father) and to everyone who likes to kiss your fucken ass but to me you are nothing but my fucken baby mama you sabi (you understand)..... now if you ever in your fucken miserable life insult Naledi again you'll see the other side of me that will make you shit on yourself now don't fucken dare me woman

I roared and she was crying all along while I was breathing heavily angry as hell

Me: you...you insulted my grandfather and called my family members poverty stricken individual
Lerto: im sorry heath please...

I interrupted her

Me: SORRY?...SORRY LERATO HOW COULD YOU LOOK DOWN AT THE SAME PEOPLE YOU KNOW MEAN THE WORLD TO ME HOW COULD YOU AND TO TOP IT ALL YOU DISRESPECT ME EVERY CHANCE YOU GET..... NOW I SEE JUST BECAUSE I'VE NEVER LAID A HAND ON YOU YOU THINK IM WEAK RIGHT WELL CONTINUE WITH YOUR SHIT AND YOU'LL SEE MY OTHER SIDE NX

*** she didn't say anything***

Me: now listen here we are done and the only thing that connects us now is that baby in your womb

***she quickly rushed to me and she held my shirt crying ***

Lerto: heath please im sorry ok im sorry I'll get better please don't do this to me to us

Me: I'm done

I said to her and pushed her off me roughly and I went inside the car and she stood there crying but I was just too angry to care

Me: GET IN THE FUCKEN CAR OR YOU'LL CALL THAT STUPID SISTER OF YOURS TO COME PICK YOU UP NX

***she slowly walked to the car and got in and I drove off with her sobbing next to me...after some time I parked next to her father's gate ***

Me: on Monday we going to see a doctor concerning the pregnancy I'll make an appointment

she didn't say anything she just got out and walked inside and immediately her sisters car parked behind me and I drove off leaving her busy screaming God knows what nx stupid bitch

.
. .
. . .

NALEDI

*** well mmh I guess I'll never get used to people calling me names and belittling me in every possible way and I don't even know why heath hugged me in the first place cause im sure if he didn't I wouldn't have received those insults but hey the hug felt good im not even gonna lie . As for kagiso well I was shocked by what heath told me about him and I know its not fair to just ignore him just like that but muthi killings especially of albinos is real and happening and I don't wanna fall victim leaving my princess all alone in this cruel world because I chose to be ignorant when I was warned....well I would catch him staring at me with a hurt expression on his face ever since I came to sit with jabu then my phone beeped and I checked the message it was from Thandi and it read:

“LEDI IM SORRY FOR LEAVING YOU ALL ALONE THERE WHERE ELSE YOU HERE FOR ME BUT ITS YOUR FAULT THAT IM NOT THERE CAUSE THIS STUPID FOOL JUST FUCKED ME LIKE CRAZY THAT EVEN MY INSIDES ARE HURTING AND MY PUSSY IS BURNING UP MXM ANYWAY IM ON MY WAY BACK AND I'LL EXPLAIN EVEVRYTHING WHEN I GET BACK”..... I just smiled gosh these two should just get married cause no matter how much they break up they always find a way to each other... right then my phone rang and I didn't recognise the number so I answered anyway***

Me: hello

Voice: so they warned you to stay away from me

gosh it was kagiso and I looked at where he is sited and yep it was him indeed so I just kept quiet

Kagiso: so I guess they told you about my past

Me: yeah

Kagiso: and my side of the story is not important...you just gonna ignore me and move on

Me: its not like that

Kagiso: it is Naledi cause your actions says so

I just kept quiet looking down

Kagiso: look im not gonna force you to be my friend ok yes I like you and a lot but if you want me to stay away from you I will and I'll respect your decision

*** gosh did he say he likes me***

Kagiso: anyway take care of yourself beautiful and always stay beautiful ok

***gosh now I feel bad like really bad and confused then the line went dead and I looked towards him and he winked and concentrated on the guy that was next to him as he spoke to him and I sighed feeling really bad..... after sometime time I send him a message and it read:

“WHAT REALLY HAPPENED” and I looked towards him and I saw him look at his screen and he sighed and he typed for some time then my phone beeped and I checked it and the message read:

“ WELL LETS SAY I BEFRIENDED SOME BAD PEOPLE AND BY THE TIME I REALISED WHAT WAS HAPPENING IT WAS TOO LATE CAUSE I WAS ARRESTED ALONG WITH THEM WHEN THEY WERE CAUGHT WITH HUMAN REMAINS IN THE CAR WE WERE IN WHICH I KNEW NOTHING ABOUT BUT A MONTH LATER I WAS RELEASED AND THE CHARGES AGAINST ME WERE DROPPED WHEN THE INVESTIGATION SHOWED I WASN'T INVOLVED IN THE MUTI KILLINGS “..... I reread the message over and over again and I sighed and my phone beeped again and the message read:

“ YOU KNOW THAT ONE THING THAT ONE STUPID MISTAKE I MADE OF BEING A VERY BAD JUDGE OF CHARACTER HAS OVERSHADOWED ALL THE GOOD THINGS I'VE EVER DONE IN MY LIFE CAUSE NOW IM KNOWN AS A MUTI KILLER EVEN THOUGH THAT DAY I WAS AT A WRONG PLACE WITH THE WRONG PEOPLE AND AT THE WRONG TIME...WELL NOW IM LABELLED AS EVIL AND ANY OTHER BAD NAME OUT THERE“

***I sighed deeply feeling like shit for judging him before I heard his side of the story.... I send him back a message and it read:

“ IM SORRY I JUDGED YOU BEFORE I HEARD YOU SIDE OF THE STORY” and my phone beeped and the message read:

“ ITS OK NALEDI IM JUST GLAD YOU GAVE ME THE BENEFIT OF DOUBT AND YOU LET ME TELL YOU A SAMMARY OF WHAT REALLY HAPPENED”... then I looked at him smiled and my phone beeped again and the message read:

“ LOOK I KNOW I LOST THE CHANCE OF MAKING YOU MINE BUT PLEASE CAN WE BE FRIENDS THEN CAUSE I DON'T MIND BEING FRIENDZONE AS LONG AS I HAVE YOU IN MY LIFE...OOH AND I'LL GET TO CRACK YOU UP WITH MY JOKES”...I smiled looking at him and I nodded then my phone beeped and the message read:

“ ALSO ANSWER THROUGH AN SMS CAUSE I ALSO WANT YOUR ANSWER IN WRITING “.....

Gosh I laughed while looking at him and he laughed too then I smsed him an answer and he said thank you then I saw Thandi walking in the yard and she was walking funny and she looked around and spotted me and she limped toward me ***

Thandi: lets go to my room

I didn't ask any questions I stood up and we went to her room and she locked the door

Me: and now why are you limping

Thandi: yeses Naledi that motherfucker showed me flames this afternoon yho

Me: what happened

Thandi: wait let me go and prepare myself some bath water I need some water down there cause my nana is burning up

I laughed

Me: don't tell me you two slept together

Thandi: slept together is nothing Naledi that nikka fucked me until my legs went numb I don't even know how im able to walk even now

I just laughed hard

Thandi: this is not funny Naledi im serious

Me: ok ok what happened

ThandiL I'll be back wait

then she walked out and after a few minutes she came back with a bathing basin with water inside and she put it down and locked the door and she took off her clothes and started bathing

Me: talk haw

Thandi: ok geez.... Well we walked out and got into his car and he drove away to some quiet place in the neighbourhood and he instructed that we sit at the back and well we did then he started telling me how much he loves me and that he wants to spend the rest of his life with me and the kids blah blah and I reminded him that he has a girlfriend and he told me they broke up

Me: why

Thandi: because of me

Me: heh? How?

Thandi: heh heh... girl apparently whenever they got intimate he would call out my name every time he came

I busted out with laughter and she just giggled and continued to bath

Me: heh? Say what

she laughed

Thnadi: yep and remember that time he used our kids' winter clothes money and he took her to gold reef city and we fought

I nodded

Thandi: well he screamed out “ fuck I love you Thandi” when he came when they were busy fucking and well she wanted to break up with him cause she was gaat vol so apparently he had no choice but to do anything to stop her from leaving him and he chose to do what he did

Me: jesus Christ...and then

Thandi: well things got too much and he stopped being intimate with her and three weeks ago they broke up

Me: wait a minute so three weeks ago when ya'll fucked he was single

she nodded

Me: wow

Thandi: and guess what he did

Me: what

Thandi: he consulted a sangoma to find out why all that calling my name out during sex was happening

Me: don't tell me he thought you bewitched him

she laughed and nodded

Me: heh and?

Thandi: well the two different sangomas he visited told him the same thing that his heart is with me and that he'll never be happy with any other woman but me

I looked at her with my eyes popped out well she was now almost done with bathing

Thandi: and well after all that he...

she paused

Me: he what

Thandi: ok....ummm he proposed to me

Me: proposed what

Thandi: marriage Ledi man

I looked at her with my eyes popped

Me: ok before I start screaming and planning your wedding in my head cause im definitely your maid of honour what was your answer

she laughed...she was now lotioning and after she was done she wore clean clothes

Thandi: well after some time of him convincing me that hes ready infact that we both ready and how much he loves me I agreed to marry him

I got up quickly and I hugged her while I squealed and I jumped up and down with excitement

Me: congratulations Thandi...ooh my god im happy for you god you deserve it...im happy for you
mntase

she smiled widely and we hugged again

Thandi: thanks my love and yho its was about time gape im not getting any younger

we laughed

Me: and what happened afterwards cause you were walking like a penguin when you walked in

she laughed

Thandi: yho after I said yes he said next week he'll send a letter to my family and the following week the lobola negotiations will take place

I screamed again and I hugged her tightly and we broke it

Thandi: well after that we fucked hard in his car

Me: ooh my god no you didn't....mara you two

Thandi: heh Ledi it was like he drank Viagra pills or something im telling you.... Five rounds nonstop

I laughed

Me: shame I guess ne a go galletse strong (he was craving you)

*** we just laughed out loud well lucky for her and as for me the last time a man touched me was when I was still dating my ex before I even knew I was pregnant so im sure down there the are spider webs all over since it has been vacant for almost two years now.... Anyway she went out to discard the dirty bathing water and she came back and we laid in bed and I told her what happened after she and james left and she was livid that lerato said all those things to me but like I always do I didn't dwell too much on them cause they are my daily bread.... Anyway the was a knock on the door and Thandi went to open and I heard heath's voice ***

Heath: is Naledi in

I saw Thandi nod and she moved out of the way and he walked in and stood in the middle of the room with his hands in his pockets looking at me

Heath: can we talk now

Thandi: umm ok let me go dish up for us excuse me

*** then she walked out leaving me with him and he closed the door and he went to take the chair that was next to the dresser table and he put it in front of me since I was now sitting on the edge of the bed and he sat down and held both my hands and he kissed them.....ummm ok***

Heath: im sorry

I looked away and he sighed

Heath: im sorry about what happened Naledi

Me: you shouldn't have hugged me cause if you didn't she wouldn't have insulted and embarrassed me like that

Heath: well I dont regret hugging you just so you know

I sighed and pulled my hands from his grip

Me: what do you want from me heath

Heath: what do you mean

Me: all this I mean you should be with your pregnant girlfriend and not here with me holding my hands

he sighed deeply

Heath: we broke up

what

Me: huh...ummm sorry

Heath: its ok lets just say it was long over due

Me: wow ummm ok

he sighed again

Heath: look I know its way too early to tell you all this but I just cant wait anymore

Me: tell me what

Heath: that I ...ummm

then he cleared his throat

Heath: never mind ummm let me go chill with the gents outside

he stood up...ummm whats going on with heath...he walked to the door and he turned and looked at me

Heath: I'll come by around 10 in the morning so I can drive you home ok

***I nodded slowly and he walked out and I sighed and stood up and I put back the chair to its rightful place then the door opened roughly and heath walked in and he came straight to me and he smashed his lips on me and he kissed me Jesus Christ of Nazarethat first I didn't kiss him back since I was in shock but when he sucked on my lower lip with his one hand holding my waist tight while his other hand was cupping my face I decided to kiss him back...gosh his lips where soft and he's a good kisser bathong Well the kiss went on and on and as soon as he pulled me closer to his body and I felt his boner and also his hands on my butt squeezing tight I knew I had to stop all this before things got out of hand so I pulled out of the kiss feeling light headed and wet down there and I moved away from him breathing heavily and he smiled while biting his lower lip... gosh he looked sexy ***

Me: ummm we... this...ummm

*** I stuttered and he walked closer and I moved back a bit but then he quickly held my waist and pulled me closer to his body and he whispered to me with his mouth closer to mine....lord have mercy on me***

Heath: this is not over...I'll see you later don't sleep without seeing me ok

I don't know why but I nodded and he perked my forehead and he let go of me and walked out and I just sank to the floor cause out of the blue my knees became wobbly and were shaking....after some time I got up and I laid on the bed and soon after Thandi walked in with our plates and I sat up and we ate*

Thandi: what did my dearest handsome cousin want

I cleared my throat avoiding eye contact

Me: to apologise for what lerato said to me

Thandi: ooh ok

***well we continued to talk about random things and James.... Well after sometime the music was still playing loud outside and Thandi and I were still lying in bed talking about useless things then her phone rang and it was James ***

Thandi: baby daddy

she giggled and she listened

Thandi: ok im coming now now

then she ended the call and looked at me

Thandi: hubby says hes hungry so let me go dish up for him ok I'll be back

I giggled

Me: ok makoti even though im not sure of which hunger hes talking about

we laughed

Thandi: hai suka....i'll be back ok

***I nodded and she took the now empty plates and she walked out then a minute or so later the door opened and heath walked in and he locked the door and walked to the bed.... Ok and now?.....Jesus Christ my heart was beating fast and he took off his shoes and climbed the bed and he got on top of me.....wait a minute how did he know Thandi wasn't in the bedroom. Before I could say anything he smashed his lips on mine and he immediately deepened the kiss while getting between my legs and we continued to kiss but then I came back to my senses when I realised what was about to happen and im pretty sure I'll end up being his one night stand and I cant have that no matter how yummy he is ***

Me: heath stop please I cant

and well he stopped and looked at me with his eyes bloodshot red and now Asian

ME: I can't do this please get off me

Heath: we won't do anything Naledi so relax

Me: heath I may be a nobody but I will allow myself to be your rebound girl ok I respect myself too much

he frowned looking at me then he got off me and I sat up straight while he did too

Heath: you not my rebound Naledi ok you're too precious to be one

Me: then why are you doing all these while you know you just broke up with the mother of your unborn child few hours ago

*** he sighed and got off the bed and he wore his shoes ***

Heath: look im sorry ok...you right I shouldn't be doing this especially with you

I swallowed hard cause that hurt what does he mean by "especially with you"

Heath: shit I don't mean it like that what I meant is...

I interrupted him feeling hurt and insecure...."not him too God" I thought gosh I wanted to cry so bad

Me: please leave

Heath: Naledi look that's not what I meant ok what I meant is you not like one of those loose girls

Me: please leave heath and stay away from me from now on

he rushed to the bed and attempted to touch me but I moved

Heath: Naledi don't do this ok that's not what I meant please

Me: leave heath please

he looked down and I saw him clench his jaws and he got off the bed and he looked my way

Heath: that's not what I meant and you know it and just so you know when I look at you I see a beautiful sexy woman with big beautiful eyes and a glowing radiant and flawless skin

then he sighed

Heath: I guess I'll see you tomorrow when I drive you back home

Me: don't bother I don't need your help

Heath: Naledi don't

Me: please leave

he shook his head and he walked out and I laid down and tears just gushed out..... gosh it hurt so much and I didn't understand why....whether he meant what I thought he meant or not the fact is the way he said it broke my heart....i can take all the insults from all those people who insult and belittles me by calling me all sorts of names but I cant handle heath also seeing me as just a poor albino girl who doesn't deserve to be loved cause shes cursed cause even though I know im not his type or in his level but Im falling for him cause he has been nice to me and all but now I don't know anymore....i think now I should just keep away from him ...yah that's what I should do and just concentrate on my job and daughter like things have always been all along yep

INSERT.....05

.
. .
. .

*****NALEDI*****

Well the following morning I woke up and helped Thandi to clean up and we had our breakfast and I went to take a bath after I was done I got dressed and took my things to the lounge and thandi's granny and her mom where sitting there drinking tea

Gogo: you are leaving already my grandchild

Me: eyah koko (yes granny)

T.mom: do visit us again ok don't be a stranger

***I smiled at her ***

Me: ok mama

Gogo: tell Thandi to pack cookies and drinks for you

Thandi: already done that gogo

she said walking in the lounge*

Gogo: good

then we heard footsteps coming from the kitchen and heath walked in the lounge and he went to kiss koko's forehead and thandi's mom' cheek and he turned to Thandi and i

Heath: ladies

Thandi: sho

Me: hi

Heath: my love I'll come see you when I get back ok.. we need to discuss some things

he said to his granny

Gogo: uyaphi (where are you going)

***then he whispered to his grandmother's ear and she smiled wide then she cupped his face with one hand ***

Gogo: thank you

heath smiled in fact more like he blushed

Thandi: ok friend see you tomorrow ok now all I need is to bath and sleep

well I slept alone in her room cause after heath left she send me an sms saying she's outside with james and that I should come and join them but since I was down and didn't want to face heath I refused and told her im gonna sleep and well she came to bed around past three in the morning

Me: ok but you have to walk me to the bus top to catch a taxi first

Heath: that won't be necessary cause I'm driving you home

***I wanted to protest but his granny was busy nodding and smiling and I just looked down... mxm I thought I told this nikka last night that I don't want him to ***

Thandi: ok then heath please bring me six ye Bernini blush please

he nodded and kissed his granny's cheek and stood up and he picked my bag up and walked out then I sighed and stood up and I went to hug gogo and thandi's mother and I said goodbye to them and I walked out with Thandi

Thandi: you don't look happy

Me: I don't want to go with him

Thandi: why

Me: what are we gonna say to each other all the way home

she laughed

Thandi: mxm wa bora(you are a bore) just play a game or look out the window but I know ya'll won't have a silent drive

Me: and how do you know that

Thandi: I just know

Me: mmmh

*** I said that giving her the look and she just laughed and opened the car door for me***

Me: where is your grandfather

Thandi: he went out with jabu

Me: ok you'll tell him I left right

Thandi: yah now give me some love and leave I want to sleep

I giggled and hugged her tight then we broke it and I got inside the car and she gave me my parcel (a bag with cookies and drinks inside) and heath started the car and drove out while I waved goodbye to Thandi then I sat back and I buckled up and I looked outside the window like Thandi suggested.....well his car was beautiful shem no lies it was a black land rover with maroon leather seats and it felt good being inside it cause I love big cars I mean even the seats were more comfortable than our sofas at home..... well the drive was silent and after some time I saw that he was going to another direction

Me: ummm I live in soshanguve

Heath: I know

Me: then where are you taking me

Heath: my place

Me: askies

Heath: we need to talk Naledi

Me: please take me home or drop me off here and il see how I get home

he kept quiet and continued to drive

Me: heath I said stop the car

he ignored me and he increased the radio volume and continued to drive and I looked outside the window breathing heavily with tears threatening to come outafter what felt like forever for me he took a short left and he drove through a street that had the most beautiful houses ever and soon after he packed in front of a big gate and he pressed what I guessed is a remote gate controller and after the gate opened he drove in and packed the car

Heath: lets go inside

Me: please take me home

Heath: Naledi

Me: I don't wanna hear it heath just take me home or back to your grandparent's house

Heath: WILL YOU JUST STOP BEING STUBBORN AND LETS GO IN OR WHAT YOU WANT ME TO DRAG YOU INSIDE

he shouted with a frustrated voice and I kept quiet and looked outside the window.... Then I heard the door open and close again and I saw him walking to my side and he opened the door and pulled me out then he slammed the door and he pulled me inside well we got inside and Jesus the house was big and beautiful and the interior deco was exquisite. Anyway he pulled me to the lounge and he made me sit on the couch and he sat down on top of the table facing me I looked down and played with my fingers cause his look made me feel uncomfortable

Heath: look at me please

I shook my head no and I felt his hand under my chin and he pushed my face up and our eyes locked and I looked away quickly and he sighed

Heath: last night we had a misunderstanding Ledi and I need us to fix that now

I just kept quiet

Heath: I didn't mean what you thought I meant Naledi and deep down you know it

I continued to keep quiet

Heath: look all I meant was I couldn't sleep with you because you are not like those loose girls out there who would just open their legs for any dick and im glad you stopped me cause it was too early for any of that

Me: heath please take me home

he huffed

Heath: Naledi I'm trying here the least you can do is meet me half way please

Me: I get all that you are saying heath and yeah you right even though I was hurt deeply I knew what you said didn't come out the way you meant for it to come out..... look im ok and we cool all this wasn't necessary so please take me home

***he kept quiet and looked at me intensely ***

Heath: I see what you trying to do and its not gonna work Naledi cause I wont let it

I didn't say anything

Heath: eish

he huffed

Heath: you drive insane Naledi I don't even know how it got to that cause before now I only saw you four times and two of those times we only spoke briefly.... I don't even know how to explain it but the thing is im in love with you

***I quickly looked at him with my eyes popped out ***

Heath: don't look too shocked Its the truth

Me: w...what?

***I don't even know what to say heath just said he's in love with me...me Naledi ***

Heath: I am and every minute that pass by I fall deeper for you

gosh then he sighed

Heath: and I've also been fucking up every chance I get..... look Naledi we might not know each other but the heart wants what the heart wants and no matter who you end up with as long as your heart is not with the one it desires you'll never be happy

Me: ummm wow

that's all I could say under the "wow" circumstances im in now

Heath: please say something

***gosh he's serious ***

Me: why would you fall for me heath

Heath: why wouldn't i

Me: im an albino and people see me as a curse

Heath: I know you are an" albino".....

he highlighted the albino part

Heath: and the cursed part well fuck everyone who says that to you..... and just so you know you are not an albino but an extra yellowbone to me ok

I just smiled looking down ...extra yellowbone neh

Heath: you are beautiful Naledi and im sure you not even aware of it I wish you could see yourself through my eyes

I blushed looking down

Heath: look im not trying to use tricks other men out there use to get between women's legs no im just telling you the truth about what my heart desires and it desires you Naledi

wow...ok

Me: what...what about Lerato

Heath: what about her

Me: you two broke up yesterday and im sure she thinks is just a mere fight and you'll fix things and I don't wanna get caught in between all that heath

***he held my hands ***

Heath: look at me

***and I did...gosh he looks so handsome..... the dude just confessed his love for me but my heart and mind is scared to accept or believe it ***

Heath: I love you Naledi

I looked at him with my heart ponding hard on my chest cause the look on his face showed he's dead serious and not joking at all

Heath: and it feels good to say it Naledi...it feels so damn good and concerning Lerato shes still part of my life because of my baby in her womb other than that there's nothing between us

Me: heath all this is too soon and complicated for me I mean I know how being pregnant is like the cravings especially sex and I know you wont allow her to find pleasure somewhere else with your baby in her womb actually no man would allow that her getting sick and you'll have to be there for her I know she might even call you in the middle of the night net for control cause I can tell she's gonna be like one of those baby mamas

he sighed

Me: I wished my baby daddy could have been there for me but he wasn't and wena you are available for her so please don't put me in the middle of all that my heart wont be able to take it

he was still looking down

Me: im sorry but I cant do this

***he tightened the grip on my hands but it wasn't too tight and he stood up and pulled me up with him then he smashed his lips on mine and kissed the living daylights out of me..... I tried to pull out of it but he wouldn't let me and as soon as he held my waist tight and he pulled me closer to his body I felt his boner and I instantly lost my senses..... then I felt his hand grabbing my ass tight as he deepened the kiss God I don't know what was happening to me a moan escaped my mouth and he grabbed my ass with both his hands and he picked me up and i wrapped my legs around his waist and he walked away with me while he was busy sucking on my necki swear guys I wanted to stop his so bad but something in me stopped me and I don't even know what it was but it stopped me guys.....after he put me on top of the bed he immediately got on top of me and we started kissing again his hands where all over my body squeezing and caressing me making me to lose my mind.... Gosh his deep groans here and there drove me absolutely insane then all of a sudden he started taking off my clothes ***

Me: h...heath

Heath: please don't stop me obim (my heart) please

***he begged me mmmh I wonder what " obim" means and before I could even say a word I felt his hand on my nana and I moaned.... yah neh letswai le tla go bontsha masepa shem (sex craving will show you flames shem) soon after my wet underwear was off and he was now off the bed taking his own clothes off very quick and when he took off his boxers Jesus Christ of Nazareth his huge dick pointed up with veins popping and that colourless thing oozing on its tip and I swallowed hard and looked away.....he opened the drawer and took out a condom and he ripped the cover off with his teeth and he put it on then my heart started beating fastmmh mmh that monster is not getting inside of me nope it might rapture my nana mos.... Even my ex's dick wasn't even close to this size let alone being half of it no no no.....im horny as hell but that is not getting inside of me im brought back to my senses when he kissed me gosh he was now on top of me between my legs...gosh no ***

Heath: you look scared

I nodded and swallowed hard

Heath: relax I'll be gentle ok

Me: heath im sorry i....

***he interrupted me by kissing me and he started rubbing the tip of it on my entrance even though it felt good but it was bighe left my lips and started sucking on my neck and nibbling on my ear and I moaned out loud then I felt him try to enter me and he couldn't he tried for some time and he finally did and he groaned out loud and he cursed but the pain I felt when he entered me and

when my pussy walls expanded yho but I just closed my eyes and clenched my jaws but he didn't move***

Heath: look at me

and I opened my eyes slowly and our eyes locked

Heath: I love you Naledi and even though my life is complicated now but know that I'll never let you go or give up on you

***I didn't say anything cause my mind was on this uncomfortable feeling inside of me then he kissed my lips and started moving slowly while groaning loud ***

Heath: fuck ...you are too tight

*** he said that moving slowly then I felt him kissing my lips***

Heath: fuck I love you Naledi

***he said that increasing his pace and I held on too tight to his arms as he increased his pace mumbling things in a language I didn't understand soon after I started feeling a mixture of pain and pleasure and a loud moan escaped my mouth ***

Heath: shit nale..di

he said that going fast and deeper that I felt like his shaft was pocking my womb... gosh the way he was holding me tight and going in and out of me showed that he's way too experienced the next thing he pulls out and puts both of my legs on his shoulders and he entered me again and started moving with a fast pace busy mumbling things I couldn't understand..... soon after I felt my build up and an orgasm hit me hard and I screamed out loud with my body shaking then he stopped and turned me around (chest down and ass up) and he entered me from behind and he started moving with a fast pace groaning and mumbling things by this time my body is numb so is my nana and this nikka is still going....out of the blue another orgasm hit me hard and I scream out loud but instead of stopping he increases his pace and went too fast....right now the room is filled with my screams and his loud groans and out bodies slapping.....well after sometime I felt his grip on my waist going tighter and tighter then he went faster and slammed into me hard pushing in deeper and deeper then he pulled out and we both collapsed on the bed breathing heavily

Heath: fuck that was out of this world....shit thank you obi m (my heart)

***gosh my pussy was on fire and my body was numb and tired ***

Heath: are you ok obi m

I nodded with my eyes closed then I felt his lips on my sweaty forehead

.
. .
.

***** HEATH*****

*** the way im so happy and busy smiling like a fucken retard right now while im busy making something to eat for Naledi and I you'd swear I won the lotto but hey I guess I did cause that love making session I just had with her was out of this world I lost myself in her.... Fuck she's so tight its hard to believe that she actually has a child I think im falling deeper and deeper for her that it scares me.... look I know its way too early like way way too early for all this but I just couldn't wait and I got scared when she started saying she cant be with me so I did what I had to do at that moment and im glad I did even though I promised myself I'll get to know her first before we get intimate but it happened and im full of joy cause yeses her pussy is so delicious and tight... eish and now that I've tasted her there's no way in hell im letting her go now what I need to do is to have her trust me that I will never hurt her especially intentionally.... My phone rang disturbing me from my thoughts it was Jabu***

Me: bros

Jabu: sho o vaar (hey where are you)

Me: my house... why

Jabu: im on my way

Me: eeh don't come now im busy

Jabu: busy with what

Me: my woman

Jabu: mshikaro oska nchaela gore o nale dai tikilaine lerato daar (shaka don't tell me you are with that bitch lerato there)

I chuckled

Me: you don't want her neh

Jabu: dai deng ke skeberesh and o nale masepa my bra(that thing is a whore and she's full of shit my brother) no offence ka nqosi ya gago (with your baby)

*** I just sighed***

Me: nah im with Naledi

Jabu: HEEH O RE MANG? (who)

*** he sounded shocked and I just chuckled***

Me: Naledi my bra

Jabu: Naledi that beautiful watermeisie (mermaid)

****I just laughed out loud***

Me: yah leshanda pha laka my bra (yeah my beautiful woman)

Jabu: when...how?

Me: ska wara(don't worry) I'll tell you all about it

he laughed and whistled mxm

Jabu: so mshikaro setse o jele kuku(so shaka did you eat the cake)

I just laughed out loud

Me: im not telling you shit..... you know I don't fuck and tell

he laughed

Jabu: I'll take that as a yes....fuck you don't waste time neh

Me: f'sek

he laughed

Jabu: on a serious note mshikaro (shaka) don't play with her my bra remember what gogo said joh and don't fuck up or else you'll watch another nigga make her happy doing your job for you while o shebile from thirteen pos (you looking from afar) o nyetse skeberesh le di nqosi tse o seng sure le gore ke tsa gao or byang (married to a whore with kids that you won't even be sure if they are yours or not)

I sighed deeply

Me: I hear you jabu

Jabu: good now take it easy on yourkane what is a watermeisie in your language

I laughed

Me: mamiwota

he chuckled

Jabu: yah now take it easy on your mamiwota....oska moja thata lwena man (don't fuck her too much) or else she'll run away

I laughed out loud while he joined me

Me: ehh shap my bra

Jabu: shap re tla ova laater(we will talk later)

Me: sho

*** then we ended the call and I continued with what I was doing.... After I was done I went upstairs and she wasn't in bed I heard the shower running and I laid in bed reminiscing of what just happened her moans screams and tight and hot pussy and the way her ass was shaking and vibrating when I hit it from behind... fuck.... Eish I think im whipped then the shower stopped running and soon after my obi (my heart) came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her body and she stopped by the door when she saw me and I smiled at her...fuck my tent was already up and my heart was beating out of its ribcage and I stood up from the bed and I walked to

her she seemed nervous but I don't care cause the sooner she starts getting comfortable around me the better cause im never letting her go****

.
. .

****NARRATED****

Naledi stared at heath as he walked to her with his monster cock erect inside his boxers and she swallowed hard and looked down....her heart was beating fast and she felt cheap for sleeping with heath so soon she was regretting everything and now all she wanted was to go home to her daughter then heath lifted her head up and he saw tears in her eyes and immediately a worried look splashed on his face

Heath: what's wrong obi m (my heart)

*** naledi tried so hard to fight back the tears but they were just too strong and they ran down her cheeks***

Heath: hey whats wrong

he said that pulling her to his chest holding her tight

Heath: talk to me please

Naledi: I feel cheap and loose

she said that moving away from heath while wiping her tears with the back of her hand

Heath: huh

****he said that confused****

Naledi: it was too early and

heath interrupted her

Heath: I wont let you do this Naledi ok yes its too early for us to be intimate like this but then so what I love you and im never letting you go ok.... I don't care about when we met and all that what matters is what my heart wants and it wants you period

Naledi: but heath what about what I told you your life is complicated and I cant get caught up in all your baby mama drama

heath sighed wishing he never made lerato pregnant

Heath: I'll handle lerato Naledi don't worry ok all I want is for you to trust me and to not leave me please

Naledi: heath I cant im sorry

Heath: please obi m(my heart) ihunanya m (my love) mara mma (beautiful)...please nwanyi m mara mma (my beautiful queen) don't do this to me im begging you

Naledi was fascinated by his words even though she couldn't understand what they meant and she looked up at him

Naledi: translate what you just said to me

he sighed and pulled her closer and perked her lips

Heath: only if you'll scrap off the Idea of us not being together

she looked away

Heath: Naledi do you want me to die of heart attack

she looked up at him with a frown on her face and heath's heart beat faster when he noticed how cute she looks when she frowns

Naledi: why would you die of heart attack

Heath: cause you don't want to give my heart what it desires

Naledi: heath please see where im coming from

Heath: and also see where im coming from obi m

***Naledi sighed looking down and she felt the towel that was wrapped around her body falling to the floor and heath picked her up and put her on top of the dresser table and he quickly pulled down his boxers and he entered her and he groan while Naledi flinched with pain ***

Naledi: heath condom

he kissed her lips and started moving

Heath: im clean obi m and I know you are too and don't worry we will go buy morning after pills after this I just want to feel you skin to skin ihunanya m (my love)

Naledi wanted to say something but the nikka increased his pace hitting it hard making Naledi to moan out loud when that mixture of pain and pleasure started to kick in.... well they did their thing and they both came at the same time and heath cleaned both of them and they laid in bed both naked with heath holding on to Naledi like she was about to run away or disappear or something..... then out of the blue the bedroom door opened*

6

INSERT.....06

.
. .
.

NARRATED

Lerato: HEATH WHAT THE FUCK IS THIS

she screamed standing by the door with tears running down her cheeks and heath quickly grabbed the throw that was on top of the bed and he covered Naledi and he got off the bed searching for his underwear and lerato quickly charged towards Naledi and she grabbed her by her hair and she slapped her hard across her face and she pulled her out of the bed with Naledi screaming out loud and heath grabbed lerato from behind pulling her away from Naledi

Lerato: how could you heath.....i trusted you and you do me like this with this cursed bitch

heath turned her around and grabbed her by her upper arm pointing at her

Heath: INSULT HER ONE MORE TIME AND I'LL FORGET YOU PREGNANT AND I'LL FUCK YOU UP

*** out of the blue lerato kicked heath on his groin(private parts) and heath held his groin and he cursed in pain and he went down to the floor still in pain and lerato rushed to Naledi who was still on the floor crying and she kicked her on her stomach and also on the face and Naledi fell back and she got on top of her and she started throwing punches on her face ...heath got up quickly still in pain and he went to his drawer and he took out his belt and he limped to lerato and he grabbed her by her weave and dragged her out of the bedroom he let her go and swung the belt and it landed on her back and she screamed trying to hold where the pain was and heath hit her again and she continued to screamed***

Heath: FUCK YOU LERATO YOU HEAR ME FUCK YOU...THIS IS MY FUCKEN HOUSE AND IF YOU PULL THAT FUCKEN STUNT YOU JUST PULLED AGAIN I'LL FUCKEN KILL YOU....YOU DEY SABI (do you understand) nx now commot (leave) before I lose it with you and don't ever come to my house uninvited

lerato sat on the floor crying

Heath: I SAID LEAVE WOMAN

***he roared and lerato quickly stood up and as soon as she got up she held her stomach and screamed in pain ***

Heath: fuck whats wrong

he asked already in panic mode

Lerato: pain...uhhhhh

she said that and screamed holding her belly and heath scooped her up bridal style and he went down the stairs with her and he put her on the couch

Heath: let me go get dressedtry to breath baby ok

lerato nodded and heath ran upstairs and he quickly went to the closet and got dressed and he rushed out the door leaving Naledi on the floor crying and he picked his car keys and picked lerato up and he immediately saw blood from where she was sitting

Heath: fuck nooo fuck nooo

Lerato: heath

she said that crying

Heath: its ok baby its ok

*** he said that rushing out and he unlocked the car and he put her in and also got in and he drove out in total speed to the hospital***

.
. .

naledi got up in pain her face was burning and her right eye was extremely painful and it felt like it was getting swollen by the second and so was her right cheekbone she had a cut on her bottom lip and blood was coming out of her nose and her ribs were also painful.....she limped to the bathroom with tears gushing out of her eyes and as soon as she looked at the mirror more tears gushed out when she saw how her face was she opened the shower and got in and after a while she got out and dried herself and used heath's lotion and she got dressed and she limped downstairs and as soon as she got in the lounge she saw blood on one of the couches and she swallowed hard..... she limped herself outside and she only saw one car she didn't recognise and heath's car wasn't where it was parked.....more tears came out and she limped herself back to the house and she sat on one of the couches as reality kicked in that heath left with lerato and he left her all alone and wounded and the worst part is her bags are in his car and her phone is also in her handbag..... she laid on the three sitter couch and she just closed her eyes with tears gushing out

.
. .

*** at the hospital as soon as they wheeled lerato away heath came back to his senses and he remembered that he left naledi all alone back at his house and probably wounded after lerato attacked her and he took out his phone and called her but it rang unanswered a couple of times then he called jabu***

Jabu: nja yami (my dog)

Heath: I need a favour jabu

Jabu: ok z'khiphani (whats wrong)

Heath: im at the hospital lerato attacked naledi at the house and she started bleeding and I left naledi all alone when I rushed lerato here and now shes not answering her phone....please go and check on her for me

Jabu: fuck ok im on my way there now now

Heath: sho bafo

they ended the call and heath tried calling naledi again while pacing up and down and her phone still rang unanswered and he huffed frustrated*

.

.

.

**** jabu arrived at heath's house and he got out of his car and went inside and as soon as he stepped in the lounge he saw blood on the couch and naledi sleeping on the other couch and he went to her and shook her then she flinched and she opened her eyes slowly but only one eye opened cause the other one was badly swollen and closed***

Jabu: fuck....sit up nana

she did slowly while flinching and jabu took out his phone and dialled heath pissed off as hell

Heath: did you find her

Jabu: voetsek man heath... how can you leave her alone like this

Heath: like what?

Jabu: you are full of shit heath you chose to rush that bitch to the hospital and you left the woman you claim you love looking like she was hit by a train all alone ...are you fucken out of your mind

Heath: will you stop insulting me and give naledi the phone

Jabu: shes badly injured mshikaro her one eye is swollen and closed and she flinches with pain when she moves and her lip is cut why....

heath interrupted her

Heath: whh...what

Jabu: I need to take her to the hospital shes not looking good

Heath: fuck...fucklook give....

tuu tuu tuu tuu... jabu dropped the call

Jabu: where's your bag

Naledi: in...inside heath's car

Jabu: ok lets go

he helped her up and she flinched in pain with tears gushing out and jabu just scooped her up and he rushed to his car and put her in it slowly and he went back to the house and he locked the door and got in his car and drove out..... Heath was now pacing up and down while brushing his head roughly and his heart heavy he couldn't believe he left naledi all alone and woundedhis heart was beating fast and guilt washed up all over him he was feeling like shit now.... he called jabu's numbers again and he answered

Jabu: mshikaro

Heath: how far are you

Jabu: give me 10 minutes

Heath: fuck ok

***they ended the call ***

Voice: lerato Moeketsi

heath quickly turned and it was the doctor and he rushed to him

Heath: how is she...how my baby

the doctor sighed

Doctor: she's gonna be ok but im sorry she lost the baby

heath stood there frozen looking at the doctor and the doctor patted his shoulder and he told him which room she was in and he walked away and heath sat down with tears running down his cheeks

Heath: fuck not again

***he said that to himself with his elbows on his thighs and his hands on top of his head.... he stayed like that for some time until he heard jabu's voice calling for help and he stood up quickly and he rushed to him and when his eyes landed on naledi's face he froze his hands were shaking with anger and his heart beating out of its ribcage....naledi was put on the stretcher and wheeled away and jabu turned to heath and he saw his eyes where blood shot red ***

Jabu: bros

Heath: she... she did that to her

Jabu: what happened heath I saw the blood and naledi also looks bad

heath walked to the benches and jabu followed him and they sat down and heath looked down with his jaws clenched

Heath: lerato lost the baby

Jabu: shit...hade boy (im sorry)

Heath: naledi will never forgive me for this....she warned me to deal with this lerato issue before involving her but I was hell bend on making her mine and I didn't listen to her

Jabu: what happened

heath told him what happened and jabu chuckled lightly

Jabu: so the bitch kicked your nuts

Heath: eish joh the pain I felt yeses

then he kept quiet

Heath: I cant lose her jabu.... My heart wont be able to take it

Jabu: she might surprise you and become understanding of all this

heath shook his head no

Heath: I left her wounded I didn't even check if she's ok.... my mind was on the baby I just wanted the baby to be ok and I neglected naledi the same day we made things official...the same day she made me promise that she wont have to deal with baby mama drama....i failed her bros...I fucken failed her and the same baby I chose over her didn't even make it

jabu just squeezed his shoulder not knowing what to say.....heath decided to call lerato's sister karabo and he told her lerato is in hospital and she lost the baby and after some time she arrived with her fiancé

Karabo: where's my sister...what happened

heath told her the room she was in and she quickly went there and heath sat there staring into space while jabu was on the phone with Thandi who was hysterical about naledi being hospitalised because of lerato

Jabu: Thandi please man I need to fill this form will you stop with your swearing and answer my questions

Thandi: fine but when I get there I'll deal with that bitch

Jabu: she just lost a baby man Thandi just....

she interrupted him

Thandi: I don't give a fuck im gonna make sure to panel beat her so bad that even that pain off losing a baby seems like a piece of cake compared to the physical pain she will be feeling nx

jabu just huffed frustrated

.
. .
.

****NALEDI****

I opened my eyes but only one opened...then i remembered that I was in hospital and jabu brought me here...I cleared my throat since it's a little dry and heath quickly stood up from the chair he was sitting on ***

Heath: obim(my heart) you are awake

mxm

Me: wa..water

he adjusted the hospital bed and helped me drink water with a straw and he put the glass back on the side drawer and looked at me with clenched jaws

Heath: im sorry obim...please forgive me

I just looked away with tears coming out

Heath: I just panicked when she screamed while holding her belly and all that was on my mind was my baby...im sorry I neglected you obim im sorry please forgive me

I just closed my eye with yesterday's events running on my mind I cant believe what happened yesterday really happened...I warned him to not involve me on his complicated life but he didn't listen to me

Heath: she lost the baby

I just kept quiet with my eyes closed

Me: please leave

Heath: obim abeg (please) don't push me away

Me: heath leave please I don't wanna talk to you or see you or to even listen to you

he didn't say anything seconds later I heard the door opening then closing again and I sighed and opened my eye and I scanned the room appropriately and I was in a private ward....i started to panic a bit cause I don't have a medical aid and I can tell im in a private hospital then the door opened and Thandi who was carrying my bags and my grandmother and Lesedi walked in and koko immediately started crying..... she gave the sleeping Lesedi to Thandi and she walked to me

Koko: oooh modimo ngwanangwanaaka (oooh God

Sponsored

my granddaughter)

****I didn't say anything I just cried and she wiped my tears***

Thandi: im sorry mntase

***she said that with tears threatening to come out ***

Me: i don't have a medical aid Thandi why did he bring me here

Thandi: its sorted don't worry

Koko: who will pay for the bill Thandi cause I wont be able to

Thandi: my...my brother will koko he doesn't mind plus she got hurt at home so its only fair we make sure she's well taken of

koko nodded and I eyed Thandi and she looked away so they lied to koko

Koko: so where is the girl she fought with

Thandi: she was also badly injured so they took her to another hospital

Koko: nx god will punish her for doing this to my granddaughter

well the truth is im glad they lied to her imagine the shame when she knows that I got beaten up by some guy's baby mama cause she caught us naked on the bed and she lost her unborn baby because of that and worst part I hardly know the guy or his surname or whether he's south African or not since he speaks a foreign language every now and then so im glad they lied to her

Me: please put Lesedi on top of me I miss her

I said that to Thandi and she did gently since she was sleeping and I held her tight..... well we chatted lightly until visiting hours were over and they had to leave I kissed Lesedi all over her face making her to giggle(she was awake now)

Koko: I'll call you tonight ok

Me: ok koko

Koko: take care of yourself so they will discharge you ka pele(early) and you'll come home

Me: eya koko (yes granny)

***she kissed my cheek and she took the now crying Lesedi cause she didn't want to leave without me and they walked out with me all emotional cause I also didn't want her to leave ***

Thandi: we will talk during the evening visit ok

I nodded and she walked out and I just closed my eyes as tears gushed out and soon after the door opened I opened my eyes and heath was standing there with his eyes blood shot red he looked like a mess

Heath: im sorry

I looked away

Heath: I love you naleli so much it hurts and I can't lose you please don't leave me I know I fucked up big time but please don't leave me

I continued to keep quiet while looking away....mxm I told him I don't want him here and yet he still came back

Heath: please say something obim

Me: please leave

Heath: naledi

Me: please go heath its over

I said that with a shaky voice

Heath: no

Me: what happened between us shouldn't have happened and none of the things that happened afterwards wouldn't have happened too....i wouldn't be laying on this hospital bed with a messed up face and bruised ribs and lerato wouldn't have miscarried

he didn't say anything for a while

Heath: im sorry obim about what happened I know you probably hate me now but know that I love you and im never letting you go

then he opened the door and walked out and more tears came out

.
. .
.

*** its been a month since I was discharged from the hospital and let's say I've completely healed as for heath I haven't heard from him since and even though it hurts a bit but im glad he kept away from me who knows maybe he fixed things with lerato and they are happy again....well work is work and Thandi is the same old Thandi crazy as hell. As for my uncle thabo well he's back he came back about two weeks back and he looks skinnier and darker well koko said alcohol is the one that is making him look like this but I suspect he's sick I mean even his bottom lip is red and it looks burned (you know what I mean right)anyway I just knocked off from work and im ready to leave ***

Thandi: see you tomorrow mntase

Me: yep and say hi to hubby and the kids

well now she lives in soshanguve block vv with james and her kids they bought a house there and james even paid for her lobola(dowry) she looks happy shem and that makes me happy

Thandi: ok and wena say hi to magriza (your granny) and kiss nonos wa mmamogolo(Lesedi) for me

Me: ok I will bye

***I kissed her cheek and took my things and I walked away while saying goodbye to my other colleagues then bonolo spoke nx ***

Bonolo: mmmh the cursed bitch is leaving now eish thank God we can breathe clean air now

Me: atleast im cursed wena what about that drop (std) you have I mean you even smell like a dead animal mxm I would get checked out if I was you cause I also cant stomach that smell

*** whomever heard that gasped and looked shocked probably because I stood up to bonolo for the first time since I started working herewell the truth is she wasn't smelling or anything but I heard her talking to her friend earlier today that her nana has been itching ever since she slept with some guy three days ago Well it felt good to shut her up for a change so I left her embarrassed and I walked out with a smile on my face gosh it felt good.....as I reached the main exit of the mall I saw him.... He was talking with some guy while smoking(ummm ok he smokes) he looks different I must say his beard is not trimmed or cut and he looks like he lost a bit of weight but not too much though ...anyway I took a deep breath and I walked passed them not even looking at him and I could feel his eyes piercing right through me anyway I walked to where the taxis were that's until I felt someone grab my upper arm..... I turned and it was him he then let go of my arm and he put his hands inside his pockets and looked at me with an intense look***

Heath: hi

Me: hi

Heath: its knock off time I see

*** I nodded and attempted to walk away but he held my hand quickly***

Heath: let me drop you off at home

Me: nah Im good

I said that looking at his hand on my hand and back at his face

Heath: please naleidi

Me: no im good....please let go I have to go

he clenched his jaws while looking at me

Me: heath please its getting late

Heath: please let me drive you home obim please

obim again.....mmmh

Me: like I said im good now please let go

***he did slowly ***

Me: ok bye

I said that and walked away

Heath: YOU'RE STILL MINE OBIM NEVER FORGET THAT

he shouted and I just kept walking.... God I thought he moved on I guess I counted my eggs before they hatched cause I was sure he did and probably with lerato aarg

7

INSERT.....07

.
. .
. .

**** NALEDI****

**** I finally arrived at home and I found koko watching tv and Lesedi was nowhere in sight

Me: dumelang koko (afternoon granny)

Koko: aow naledi you back

Me: eyah koko (yes granny) where is Lesedi

Koko: sleeping... her day care nanny said she didn't sleep today she really kept them busy the whole day

Me: ke gale a robetse (has it been long since she slept)

Koko: not that long

Me: ok let me go wake her up or else I will be forced to do night shift with her tonight and im tired I cant.....anyway how was your day koko

Koko: just ok but thabo was having a runny stomach since vroeg (morning) he looks weak and im worried.....I think its something he ate

****mmmh something he ate neh well I still say thabo is sick she needs to go get his blood checked before its too late****

Me: is he ok now

Koko: mmmh I mixed vinegar with water and it helped him a bit

Me: ok let me go wake that little spoiled brat of mine

koko laughed

Koko: spoiled brat?

Me: mmmh and its you who spoils her koko

Koko: ai man leave my princess alone

I laughed and went to the bedroom and I woke her up shem she looked sleepy but no im not doing night shift with her tonight

Me: hey baby

I said that and kissed her pouted lips

Me: koko tells me you were troublesome today at day care

I kissed her cheek and she rubbed her eyes ncoh

Me: ok let go sit with koko neh

***we went to the sitting room and we sat down and watched tv a bit while chatting lightly with koko.....after some time I gave her to koko and I started with dinner after I was done I dished up for kokomyself and thabo and I took his food to his backroom... I got there and knocked and he said I should enter ***

Thabo: aow my albino girl

Me: mxm...here is your food

Thabo: sho mapakisha....so when are you gonna give it to me khante

yho shem the devil is a liar

Me: mxm wa gafa (you are out of your mind)you want to infect me with your diseases

***he frowned ***

Thabo: what the fuck did you just say

Me: n...nothing

I put his plate on top of the drawer and I headed for the door and I felt him grab my arm tight and he pulled me roughly to him

Thabo: what did you just say

Me: no...nothing

Thabo: nx vele nothing

***then he sniffed my hair and he licked my cheek and I felt like puking.... Tears filled my eyes

Me: please let me go

***I said that with a shaky voice and he grabbed my ass and squeezed it tight and I froze....god no please ***

Thabo: you know someone said if I have sex with an albino without protection I will get cured that the disease will leave my body and enter the albino's

Me: uncle thabo please don't please im begging you

I said that crying and the next thing he pushed me on top of the bed and he took off his boxers and his hard dick was staring at me

Thabo: don't tell me you don't want some of this...im a pro when it comes to sex trust me you'll enjoy it and also want some more

Me: please don't please

***I said that crying while moving backwards on the bed and he climbed the bed while jerking his shaft up and down and I quickly got off the bed but he also got off and blocked me ***

Me: KOKO...KOKO THUSA HLE (HELP)

I shouted out for her while crying and thabo quickly got to me and he pinned me against the wall and covered my mouth with his hand....for a sick person he was quiet strong.....i tried to scream and to push him off me but I couldn't then I felt his hand between my legs on my nana and more tears came out as I tried to get him off me....i wanted to bite his hand off but what if I do that to the extent that he starts bleeding no no I cant have that....

Thabo: will you stop fighting or I'll beat you up and fuck you while you are passed out then kill you

I just cried and I stopped fighting then he started sucking on my neck while his other hand was busy rubbing my nana on top of my jeanone thing I know is his aids ridden dick will not enter my pussy hole I've rather die than to have that....he was now squeezing my breast with his hand inside my shirt and I could feel his hard dick on my stomach he was moaning while he was busy meaning he was relaxed (good) then I positioned my knee right between his legs and without wasting time I kicked him on his balls hard and he screamed out loud while cursing and going down to the floor and I pushed him and he fell down and I ran to the door opened it and ran out.... I ran to the main house while crying and I opened the door with my shaky hand and I entered

Koko: naledi

***she rushed to me as I stood there shaking like leaf ***

Koko: what happened

Me: he...he

then the door opened and thabo walked in while limping with his hand on his shaft(he was now wearing his boxer shorts) and I quickly rushed and stood behind koko

Thabo: wena sfebe (you bitch) YOU'LL PAY FOR WHAT YOU DID

Koko: whats going on here...naledi

I couldn't even talk I was crying and shaking with fear*

Thabo: O TLO NNYELA WENA MMANNYWANA (some serious swear words) YOU'LL PAY IM TELLING YOU

Koko: what did she do

he didn't answer instead he limped his way out and he slammed the door shut and I just continued to cry until koko brought me plain water mixed with sugar and I drank it with my hands shaking while I held the glass

Koko: what did you do to thabo I've never seen him that angry

**** wow****

Me: so all you...all you care about is thabo koko what about me

Koko: im asking you what happened and you're not saying anything mos

Me: he...he tried to rape me when I took his food to him

she looked at me with her eyes popped out then she frowned

Koko: thabo would never do something like that to you naledi...first of all hes your blood uncle and hes not feeling well and weak

ooh my god I cant believe this

Me: koko

I said that with a low voice

Koko: hae naledi first you complained to me that he says nasty things to you when im not around and now he apparently tried to rape you hai suka

I swallowed hard with more tears coming out....gosh this is not my granny....this woman here is not my beloved granny

Koko: I know you don't like him but to accuse him of this

Me: koko he tried to rape me

Koko: stop it man my son wont go to jail for something he didn't do....you know hes sick and weak now where did he get the strength to try and force himself on you

Me: koko

I said that crying

Koko: naledi stop it man I know you hate him but this..... you know im disappointed in you nx

then she walked way and I slid to the floor and cried my eyes out

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

After some time naledi stood up from the floor and she went to the lounge and she found lesedi on her granny's lap and she took her and went to her bedroom and laid on top of the bed and she held her tight

.
. .

in the sitting room koko sat on the sofa feeling bad for what just happened but at the same time she couldn't let her beloved son her only and last born son to go to jail....she knew if she supported naledi she would report him to the police and he will go to jail she knew naledi wasn't lying because of the state she was in but thabo was his child and her only son so she had to make a choice and she made it by choosing her sonshe stood up and walked out to thabo's backroom and she knocked on the door and as soon as thabo opened the door she slapped him so hard he stumbled back

Koko: HOW COULD YOU THABO...SHES YOUR NIECE FOR GODS SAKE

Thabo: sh...shes lying mama

Koko: voetsek lying ya masepa

Thabo: mama

Koko: you better pray she doesn't report you to the police cause I wont have a jail bird as a son

he sat down on top of the bed looking down

Koko: why thabo mmh why

she said that crying

Thabo: im sorry mama

Koko: voetsek I don't want your sorries man why did you do than abdominal thing

Thabo: im...im sick ma....im hiv positive ma

Koko: wh...what

Thabo: im dying ma and someone said if I sleep with an albino I might get cured

Koko: ooh modimo wa kgotso (ooh God of peace)

***she just cried ***

.
. .

back in naledi's bedroom her phone rang and she ignored it for some time but then decided to answer it cause the caller wasn't giving up

Naledi: he...hello

her voice was a bit scratchy from all the crying she did

Voice: obim are you ok you sound like you've been crying

Naledi: he...heath?

Heath: whats wrong obim why are you crying

naledi started crying all over again

Heath: naledi whats wrong

Naledi: no...nothing

Heath: you crying and you saying its nothing

Naledi: yes its nothing

she sniffed

Naledi: I...I have to go bye

Heath: don't you dare hang up on me naledi

she then dropped the call and put her phone on flight mode and she picked her daughter up and she went to take her food from the microwave and went back to the bedroom and fed her daughter and after she was done she went to put back the plate in the kitchen and she went back to the bedroom and she took off her clothes and went to take a bath with her daughter and after she was done she dried both of them and lotioned then she wore her pjs and also got Lesedi dressed in her pjs and they got in the covers and she played with her daughter until she fell asleep....she didn't even eat her dinner.....The following day naledi called in sick at work and she spend the whole day with her daughter in her bedroom she was avoiding her granny and her uncle at all costs....she knew if she went to report thabo her granny will definitely testify against her in court cause she knows how much thabo means to her and she might even kick her out and turn against her if shove comes to push and even though she hates her now but shes the only family she has so reporting thabo was not an option now for her..... anyway later in the afternoon someone knocked on the door and she went to open and there stood Thandi with a worried look on her face *

Thandi: mntase

they hugged and Thandi kissed lesedi's cheek*

Thandi: you don't look ok whats wrong

Naledi: lets go talk in your car

Thandi: ummm ok

***she said that confused as to why she wont even let her in to greet granny..... well they went to hers and james car and they got in at the back seat and immediately tears ran down naledi's

face and Thandi held her tight until she calmed down then Thandi gave her phone to Lesedi to keep her occupied ***

Thandi: what happened ledi heath called me panicking last night and he said you were crying then you dropped a call on him and I also tried to call you and your numbers took me straight to voicemail

Naledi: uncle thabo tried to rape me yesterday

Thandi: WHAT?

she told her everything that happened and her granny's reaction and attitude towards the whole thing and by the time she was done telling Thandi they were both in tears

Naledi: and I cant even go to the police station to report him cause I know koko will stand by him and leave me out in the cold

Thandi: im sorry ledi

she said that wiping naledi's tears

Naledi: im just glad I fought him off cause besides him forcing himself on me he was gonna infect me with his hiv

Thandi: hes gonna pay for what he did to you ledi I may not know how but he will... so what are you going to do

Naledi: I need to move out as in yesterday cause he believes that if he sleeps with me he'll get cured of hiv so that means he might try again

***she said with a low tone ***

Naledi: you can move in with me and hubby until you find a place to stay

naledi shook her head no

Naledi: not happening Thandi

Thandi: look ledi im sure james wont mind

Naledi: im your friend Thandi and I wont beat around the bush with you so im just gonna say it...never in your life stay with a female friend or a female relative in your house Thandiit doesn't matter how much you trust your man or your friend or female relative the fact is you don't know when the devil might strike so never ever ok

she looked at naledi with a shocked expression

Naledi: but naledi...

she interrupted her

Naledi: Thandi promise me you'll always protect your marriage with james at all costs and you'll never do stupid things like putting other people first before james and your children....i'll never do you like that and you know it but next time it wont be me it might be one of your

friends or your female cousins and boom they bewitch your man and take what belongs to you so please mntase always be wary and be selfish when it comes to your family

she kept quiet looking down

Naledi: please don't invite a snake in your house just because you feel sorry for that person rather book her in a bnb or something but not in your house cause its bad this days Thandi and girls visits sangomas like it's a new trend so be careful....as for me I love you and I know you love me back and also see me as your little sister and we trust each other but I shouldn't be an exception Thandi ...you are married now you no longer single so start behaving like a married woman

Thandi: I hear you and get you ok

Naledi: good

Thandi smiled lightly

Thandi: even though you going through shit you still give a good advice

Naledi: im thinking of my nephews Thandi they've seen enough aunties and uncles and I know you are kind and all so one day you might invite a snake in a form of a bitch and that person might come between you and james and it will be back to aunties and uncles for my ninjas so no I cant deal shem

Thandi laughed

Thandi: you crazy

naledi smiled

Thandi: ok then since staying with me and james is out of the question

she took her phone and started typing and naledi's phone beeped and when she checked it her eyes widenedThandi send her R1500

Naledi: tha...Thandi

Thandi: go and look for a backroom or something to rent and also look for a new day care for Lesedi that also do after care

naledi started crying again

Naledi: Thandi

Thandi: it's the least I can do now ledi now stop crying or little miss here might start crying too

Naledi: thank you mntase

Thandi: don't mention it

**** well they talked some more then Thandi had to leave cause it was getting late and they said their goodbyes and naledi went back inside the house***

.

.
.
***back in the car Thandi called heath ***

Heath: how is she Tee and whats wrong with her

Thandi sighed

Thandi: her uncle tried to rape her yesterday his reason being if she sleeps with her the hiv virus in him with automatically leave his body and enter naledi's

Heath: wait did you just say rape

she sighed again feeling down

Thandi: yes heath she looks broken and worst of all her granny is calling her a liar and shes taking her son's side in all this....but I gave her some money to rent a backroom cause her and her daughter are not safe anymore in that house

by now heath was breathing heavily with anger

Heath: don't worry I'll fix this

Thandi: heath don't do what I think you'll do

Heath: Caesar has been sleeping for a while now Tee and that asshole poked him to wake up and trust me he'll regret ever hurting obim(my heart)

Thandi: Caesar....

**** tuu tuu tuu he dropped the call****

.
.
.

**** back in the house it was now night time around past 8 and naledi was in her bedroom in bed with her daughter when suddenly there was a loud knock on the main door and since koko was watching tv she went to open thinking its thabo and that he was drunk cause that's what he does when hes drunk he knocks as if its his house.....koko opened the door ready to swear at thabo but it wasn't thabo heath was standing there looking mad angry and ready to kill someone***

Koko: who are you and why are you....

he interrupted her

Heath: NALEDI....NALEDI

***he called out for her ***

Koko: hey don't come to my house and behave like a hooligan now get out

Heath: NALEDI

he called out to her and naledi got out of bed when she heard someone calling her but she didn't think it was heath and when she got out of her room all the way to the sitting room she stood there shocked to see heath by the door

Naledi: hea...heath

Heath: are you ok obim

Naledi: what are you doing here

Heath: pack your things and lets go

Naledi: huh

Heath: I SAID GO AND PACK SO WE CAN GO OBIM

naledi stood there shocked by this

Koko: shes not going anywhere who the hell do you think you are

Heath: SHU UP YOU OLD HAG

he roared

Naledi: he..heath

Heath: NALEDI I SAID GO AND PACK OR YOU WANT ME TO DO IT FOR YOU

Koko: you see now the kind of disrespectful people you bring in my house naledi

Heath: disrespectful? I'll show you disrespectful when than useless aids ridden son of yours spend the rest of his fucken days in jail

koko's eyes widened so did naledi's

Koko: you told him....how could you naledi after everything ive done to you I took you in when even your own mother rejected you and you betray me like that

heath laughed while naledi was just sobbing silently

Heath: wow and the Oscar goes to you old hag....the pretence you gave that day at the hospital of crying when naledi was admitted yho

Koko: nx listen here If my son goes to jail I will never forgive you infact I will disown you and your daughter dare me and you'll see the other side of me you wont like nx

then she walked to her bedroom and a loud sob escaped naledi's mouthand heath rushed to her and he held her tight

Heath: its gonna be ok obim don't worry

naledi couldn't believe her granny the one that raised her and showed her so much love is the one doing and saying all these things to her

Heath: go and pack obim please

Naledi: I have nowhere to go heath and im definitely not going to your house

she said that with a low voice while wiping her tears with the back of her hand

Heath: ok I wont take you to my house so please go pack

Naledi: heath i...

he interrupted her

Heath: naledi go and pack man

he snapped at her and she turned looking scared and went to her bedroom to pack.....even though she doesn't trust heath or know him that much but she knows she cant continue to stay in that house anymore..... she started thinking that what if thabo shifts his attention to Lesedi since shes a daughter of an albino.....she swallowed hard and started packing *

8

INSERT.....08

.
. .
. .

****HEATH****

*** well I can safely say my life is a complete mess now after I left naledi's ward in the hospital that time she was admitted I got so stressed that I felt like I was losing my mind. I really messed thing up with her and I have no clue on how to go about fixing things between us cause im sure in her eyes I chose lerato over her and in actual truth I didn't cause all I did was to try and save my unborn baby by rushing the mother to the hospital..... I don't know what was really happening to me that day cause I totally blocked anything else and concentrated om my unborn baby and through all that I forgot about obim I mean the same baby I wanted to save didn't even make it and now obim broke things off with me.... well the thing is I'll never give up on her cause my heart beats for her and her alone and as for lerato the last time I saw her it was when I got a call from her crying saying she needs me and like a fool I rushed to her place and yes she was in bad state we talked almost the whole night about our dead unborn baby and then one thing let to another and well we fucked luckily we used protection even though she was against it. The thing is I feel like shit about us fucking cause I feel like I cheated on naledi even though she was the one that ended things between us anyway concerning what happened to naledi with her uncle and grandmother let's say that man will wish that aids he has killed him the moment he found out he had it cause I'll make sure he pays handsomely for what he did or almost did to obim that's all im gonna say for now concerning that issue..... anyway after some time naledi walked towards me pulling a big travelling bag and she left it in front of me and she went back and soon after she came back out again with another

travelling bag and also leaves it in front of me and she goes back again and comes out with a sleeping baby in the arms ***

Naledi: im done packing

she said that to me with a low voice not even looking at me and then her grandmother stood by the passage with her arms folded on her chest

Koko: so you are choosing a man that might leave you tomorrow for another woman over your family

naledi didn't say anything

Me: lets go ledi

Koko: if you walk out that door naledi never I mean never ever come back to this house again even when im dead you hear me

the fuck

Naledi: koko please

Koko: please what huh....i raised you since you were a day old naledi ive always been good to you and I took care of you like you were my own child a child I gave birth to and now because of some family problems you pack up and leave as if I mean nothing to you

Naledi: koko you chose to keep a blind eye to what thabo did to me you called me a liar even though you saw the state I was in

Koko: thabo is my son naledi and I'll choose him over anything just like you'll do with Lesedi but that doesn't mean I don't care about you

***ive heard enough of this nx ***

Me: naledi lets go its getting late

Koko: you think he loves you naledi well my girl then you have a lot to learn in this world

Sponsored

family is everything naledi even if you fight and exchange harsh words between each other but your family will always be there for you in time of need and believe me when I say this boy once hes done with you he'll throw you away like yesterday's rubbish and you'll remember me my dear when life starts showing you flames

naledi just cried holding her baby and I could tell she was now reconsidering the whole thing

Me: ledi the same way shes putting her son first you should also put your child first.... What if that sick son of hers rapes Lesedi heh

Koko: SHUT UP YOU BASTARD MY SON WILL NEVER DO THAT

ME: HE TRIED TO RAPE YOUR GRANDDAUGHTER AND ALL YOU COULD DO WAS DEFEND HIM AND WELL FUCK NALEDI RIGHT WELL LET ME TELL YOU OLD WOMAN SINCE YOU FAILED TO PROTECT AND HAVE HER BACK I'LL TAKE THINGS FROM HERE AND DO YOUR JOB FOR YOU

Koko: GET OUT OF MY HOUSE

Me: with pleasure.....naledi lets go

I said that taking her bags

Koko: if you walk out of that door I'll curse the day I saw you for the first time and believe me when I say nothing will go well in your life you'll never find happiness and tha...

I interrupted her

Me: I DEFUSE THOSE CURSES IN THE NAME OF JESUS AND I SAY ANY CURSES AND EVIL DIRECTED TO NALEDI AND LESEDI GO BACK TO SENDER AND BURN HIM/HER IN THE MIGHTY NAME OF JESUS

they looked at me with their eyes popped out... well I grew up in a church going family and we do pray back at home all the time even though I hardly go to church here in south Africa but I do pray every now and then so im not gonna let this old witch to curse obim just like that

Me: you listen and listen good those curses you are busy putting on naledi know that they'll fall back on you and your useless son.....naledi lets go now

Koko: NALEDI!

Me: NALEDI I SAID LETS GO

*** she turned and walked out crying... we went to the car and I put the bags in the boot and naledi sat with her daughter at the back then I got in the car and drove away with naledi still crying..... I drove straight to my apartment in wonderboom I got in the complex and I parked my car ***

Me: stay here I'll be back ok

***she nodded slowly not even looking at me and I sighed and got out of the car and I went to the caretaker's apartment and he gave me my spare keys and I went back to the car ***

Me: let's go in

***I said that opening her door and she got out with her baby and I went to take out her bags in the boot and we went inside.....we got in and I showed her the main bedroom and she went to put the baby down and she came back to the living room probably to take her bags but I held her hand and she shook her head no trying to fight back her tears but I just pulled her in for a tight hug ***

Me: its ok obim

a soft sob escaped her mouth and I scooped her up and went to the guest bedroom and I put her on the bed and I also got in and I pulled her to my chest and I held her tight as she cried

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Heath: did he hurt you

naledi shook her head no

Heath: what happened

Naledi: I went take his food to him then he started making nasty comment to me he also asked when im gonna give it to him

heath clenched his jaws

Naledi: then I told him that will never happen and...and

heath tightened his arms around her and he kissed the top of her head

Heath: shhh its ok obim your safe now you and Lesedi

naledi sniffed

Heath: you have a beautiful baby girl

Naledi: she's the reason I live...shes my everything and the thought of someone hurting her...

heath interrupted her

Heath: no one will hurt her not while im still breathing

then they kept quiet

Heath: where is her father

naledi swallowed hard

Naledi: when...when I told him im pregnant he blatantly told me to abort

Heath: WHAT?

Naledi: he said he will never father an albino child but what he didn't know is she wasn't born a curse like me

Heath: hey hey listen here you're not a curse and you'll never be one even if you want to and don't ever in your life call yourself that ever again do I make myself clear

***he said that with a firm voice full of authority and naledi just kept quiet ***

Heath: I said did I make myself clear naledi

Naledi: ye...yes

Heath: good and about that dickhead called your baby daddy hes a fool and don't worry he's gonna regret ever saying those words to you ok

***naledi nodded and heath kissed the top of her head ***

Naledi: im sorry for your loss

heath sighed deeply

Heath: thank you...and im sorry about what happened obim I didn't chose her over you I just went into panic mode and all I could think of was my unborn baby....she miscarried before so I was scared she might miscarry again

then he sighed

Heath: what im trying to say is I love you naledi a lot and more than I love myself and im sorry about what lerato did to you...im sorry obim

naledi got off his grip and she got off the bed

Heath: obim please

naledi shook her head no with tears coming out

Naledi: you...you left me there all alone hurt and scared and you say you love me

she shook her head again

Heath: yes I love you naledi

Naledi: you got what you wanted from me heath so please by love of God stop pretending

Heath: askies

he said that getting out of bed

Naledi: look... the same way you chose your unborn baby over me and the same way my grandmother chose her son over me is the same way im choosing Lesedi over everyone you included

heath clenched his jaws while breathing heavily

Heath: so you saying I wanted only sex from you naledi

she kept quiet

Heath: I ASKED YOU A DAMN QUESTION

he roared and naledi jumped a bit startled...the look on heath's face could make one shit their pants and naledi started getting scared

Heath: YOU DEY SAY I WANTED ONLY SEX FROM YOU NALEDI THAT'S WHAT YOU SAYING TO ME

she looked at heath scared with her bottom lip trembling

Heath: ANSWER ME

***she shook her head no fast looking at heath ***

Heath: look I know you're are hurt and angry at me but never naledi ever in your life doubt my love for you...una dey hear me(do you hear me) abeg make you no vex me naledi abeg (please don't upset me naledi please)

he said that looking angry and naledi regretted saying that to him

Heath: I know I messed things up and I take full responsibility for all the mess I caused but you saying I wanted only sex from you is not what I'll take lightly

naledi kept quiet looking down and heath went to her and he sighed and pushed her chin up making her to look at him

Heath: I love you naledi and I'll make you mine again even if is the last thing I do and you me Omphile and Lesedi we will be a family and the sooner you accept that the better

***then he perked her lips and forehead ***

Heath: I'll come pick you up tomorrow for some shopping and to also look for day care school for Lesedi

Naledi: you don't ha...

heath interrupted her

Heath: its not up for discussion obim and just so you know I wont allow you to rent in some backroom

Naledi: heath I cant stay here for free I just cant

Heath: ok then open a bank account for Lesedi and whatever rent you were gonna pay to that backroom you wanted to stay in deposit it in there.... Hows that

Naledi: heath please understand

Heath: I'll never understand obim so its better we drop this conversation

he kissed her forehead

Heath: I'll see you tomorrow morning ok and call me if you need anything it doesn't matter what time it is ok

naledi nodded and heath walked to the door and he stopped and turned

Heath: are you hungry I can go buy you some macD's

naledi shook her head no

Heath: ok come and lock up

then he walked out and naledi went to lock the door and she took a deep sigh and she walked around the apartment admiring it.... It was big and open and it had a nice view....it was a two bedrooms and two bathrooms open space kitchen a dinning space and a lounge she could tell it costs a lot of money

Naledi: wow now im squatting at my ex's apartment whom I dated for less than three hours... just wow naledi you are just a disappointment mxm

***she said that to herself and she went to the main bedroom and Lesedi was sound asleep ***

.

.
.
**** heath was on his way to jabu's house and he decided to call him just to confirm if hes at home

Jabu: mshikaro bad timing man

***he said that breathing heavily and heath chuckled ***

Heath: im on the way to your house so you better finish up quickly before I get there

Jabu: no man mshikaro cant you come tomorrow its only my first round man and im hungry for this chick

Heath: ok then I'll drive slow and you can have another round but you better finish before I get there

Jabu: mxm o masepa waitisi (you're full of shit you know that)

heath laughed then he dropped the call and his phone immediately rang and the number was unsaved

Heath: yha

Voice: baby

Heath: mxm lerato what is it

lerato: I miss you heath....look im willing to change baby I'll be better I promise

heath sighed

Heath: its too late lerato

Lerato: no its not we can make us work heath I promise I'll be better

Heath: lerato listen here you need to move on and look for a guy who will tolerate all the shit you do cause that guy is not me and my heart now belongs to someone

Lerato: don't tell me you're talking about that albino cursed bitch heath. What's wrong with you im sure she bewitched you cause this is not you

heath clenched his jaws

Heath: you'll never change lerato and im glad I left your sorry ass before it was too late now stop calling me nx

***then he dropped the call..... soon after he arrived at jabu's house and he pressed the spare gate remote he has and he drove in and parked the car and he got out of his car and he went to the door and he unlocked the door with his spare keys and he immediately heard groans and screams and he just shook his head and went to the fridge and took out a beer and he went to sit down in the lounge and he switched on the tv.....after some time the groans and screams died down and heath took out his phone and called jabu ***

Jabu: mshikaro

Heath: im downstairs

Jabu: ok im coming

he dropped the call and soon after jabu walked in the lounge

Heath: I hope that girl upstairs is not dead

Jabu: why would she be dead

Heath: the way she was screaming you'd swear she was being killed

they both laughed

Jabu: what I can say is she won't be able to walk tomorrow

they laughed again

Jabu: z"khaphani (whats up)

he told him about what naledi's uncle did to her and her grandmothers behaviour towards the whole thing

Jabu: and why is that moeskond still alive

Heath: I wanted to make sure naledi and her daughter are safe first

Jabu: where is she

Heath: my apartment

Jabu: which one

heath chuckled

Heath: not that one man you know I fucked different hoes in there during my Casanova days so I wont take my mamiwota(mermaid) there I took her to that one in wonderboom

Jabu: good.... now back to that dying moeskond

Heath: I want him dead and it must look like he was robbed or something make sure they take his clothes off after killing him....he must be left naked for people to see the tolili (small dick) that he wanted to poke my mamiwota with

jabu laughed

Jabu: consider it done but its gonna happen after a few days for obvious reasons

Heath: ok

Jabu: how's your mamiwota

heath sighed

Heath: shes hurt by her grandmother's behaviour

Jabu: eish....and veder le ovile ka taba ya lena (did you talk though about your issue)

Heath: yah eish can you believe o nchaetse gore (she told me that) I got what I wanted from her so I can now stop pretending

Jabu: heeh

Heath: mxm but I made sure she swallows her words quick quick

Jabu: im sure you didn't threaten the poor girl

Heath: nah not like that man eish jabu my brain dey scatter when I think about her I don't even know what's going on with me...is it possible to love someone like this especially when you've just known that person for a short period of time

jabu laughed

Jabu: she go put love potion for you ooo

they both laughed

Heath: nawa oh! my broda you dey talk pidgin now

jabu laughed

Jabu: ah my broda I dey try ooo

they laughed some more

.
. .
. .

**** back at koko's house she sat on top of her bed and she dialled mamiki's numbers and she answered after the third ring***

Mamiki: mma llata so (this late)

Koko: she packed and left

Mamiki: who

Koko: naledi

Mamiki: what do you mean she packed and left mama naledi would never leave you all alone

Koko: well she did and even in my death she should never set her feet in my house do you hear me

Mamiki: whoa mma don't say that what happened

Koko: she lied about your brother thabo that he tried to rape her and when I caught her on her lie and I disciplined her she went to call her useless boyfriend to come and insult me in my house

Mamiki: what?

Koko: after everything I did for her ongleboga ka bakete e etletseng masepa (she thanks me with a bucket full of shit)

Mamiki: I told you let me give her up for adoption but you refused look now mama

Koko: I regret ever raising her I should have killed her when she was still a baby nx

Mamiki: calm down mama remember you have a heart condition....try to rest and I'll come see you tomorrow ok

Koko: ok

***they ended the call ***

9

INSERT.....09

.
. .
. .

*****NALEDI*****

***I woke up early in the morning and I unpacked my clothes and lesedi's clothes too and I went to bath...after I was done with getting dressed I woke Lesedi up and bathed her and dressed her up and I went to the kitchen and I opened the cupboards and the only thing that was in here was maize meal sugar and four tins of koo baked beans mxm....so I made soft porridge for Lesedi and I called Thandi and asked her to cover for me at work..... after I was done cooking the soft porridge I poured it in a small bowl and added sugar and I sat down and let it cool down a bit then I fed my baby then my phone rang it was heath ***

Me: hi

Heath: obim how are you...did you sleep well

Me: im ok and yeah I slept well

Lesedi: mama

she said that and started screaming wanting me to continue to feed her

Heath: why is princess screaming

Me: hold on please

I put my phone on my ear and balanced it with my head and shoulder and I fed Lesedi

Me: im sorry about that she wanted me to continue to feed her

Heath: ok but wait what are you feeding her cause there's no food in that apartment

Me: I found some maize meal and sugar in the cupboard

he kept quiet for a bit

Heath: im sorry about that obim

Me: sorry about what

Heath: that the isn't food in that apartment now princess is eating that

bathong

Me: that's what she ate most of the time back at home

Heath: ooh but not anymore

God take me now

Me: porridge and a little bit of sugar is what raised me and her heath

Heath: look we will talk about that later on now I called to check on you and to ask what Lesedi will have for breakfast

Me: Lesedi is sorted and I'll also eat the porridge

Heath: no you not im bringing proper breakfast

***I sighed ***

Me: ok

Heath: good I'll be there just now.... I love you

Me: bye heath

I ended the call and I continued to feed Lesedi

Me: shame you were hungry neh my nonos

I said that to her and kissed her cheek I continued to feed her until she was full and I cleaned her up and I went to wash the bowl and went back to the lounge and I watched tv..... after some time the door opened and heath walked in looking yummy holding takeaways and he put them on the glass table and he kissed my cheek and lesedi's forehead

Heath: hi mami and the beautiful princess lesedi

Me: hi

he sat down next to me

Heath: how are you feeling today

I just shrug my shoulders cause I don't know how I feel my emotions are just all over the place today

Heath: all will be well obim you'll see

I didn't say anything

Heath: ok lets eat so that we can go

Me: ok

***well we ate with Lesedi busy poking our food and after we were done I took my hand bag and lesedi's baby bag and we left.....after sometime we arrived at the mall and heath took Lesedi from me and he held her and Lesedi wasn't even scared of him or anything you'd swear he was her daddy the way they are together....anyway he made me buy a lot of things we bought Lesedi lots of clothesdolls a baby monitor a car seat and many other things for her and he even forced me to buy clothes for myselfwe even bought groceries and kitchen utensil that weren't in the apartment by now im tired as hell.....anyway after we were done with shopping

we went to offload what we bought to the car and we went to eat at spur restaurant..... we ordered and had drinks as we waited for our food***

Heath: you ok

I nodded Lesedi was sitting on his lap playing with one of her new dolls

Heath: so is there anything you forgot to buy

Me: nope

Heath: you sure

I nodded

Me: heath you know you didn't have to go all bankrupt because of us right

he chuckled

Heath: bankrupt?

Me: did you see the things you bought for us they are just too much

Heath: nah its nothing I'll do anything for the two of you naledi

I sighed

Me: why are you doing this all this heath I mean we hardly know each other for you to be doing all this

Heath: cause I love you naledi a lot

***I looked down cause I don't understand why heath loves me this much I mean my own mother doesn't even want me and my father wanted me dead so I just don't get it ***

Me: why... why do you love someone like me

Heath: what do you mean by someone like you

I sighed

Me: you know what I mean heath

Heath: no I actually don't

ok he looks upset and I just kept quiet and looked away

Heath: naledi why is it so hard for you to accept that you are not cursed or any of those things jealous and evil people say you are

I just shrug my shoulders and he sighed

Heath: you know I wish you could see yourself like the way I see you

Me: and how do you see me

***he side smiled gosh he's handsome bathong ***

Heath: besides your beauty flowless skin and that nicely shaped butt of yours that drives me absolutely insane I love your calm soul and your strength and kind heart and the fact that you always put on a smile on your face even though life keeps on throwing rocks at you

I looked at him and he was serious now

Heath: I love you naledi a lot and im never gonna give up on you on us

I swallowed hard and I looked down

Me: what about lerato

***he frowned ***

Heath: what about her

Me: I mean are you over her for real

Heath: yeah I am.... My heart belongs to you obim and only you

***wow ok...anyway our food came and we ate with heath busy feeding Lesedi his mash and us having a light conversation ***

Waitress: is there anything else I can get you sir

*** the waitress asked looking at heath with a smile on her face mxm***

Heath: no...what about you obim

I shook my head no and she walked away....anyway after eating she came and took away the plates and she came back again

Waitress: would you like to order something else sir

***she said that looking at heath ***

Heath: get me a beer Amstel

she then looked at me with a bored look

Waitress: what about you mam

Me: orange juice

Waitress: will that be all

*** she said that looking at heath ***

Heath: yah you can go now

he said that with a cold tone and she walked away looking rather disappointed mxm ai

Me: she has a crush on you

he frowned

Heath: I don't have time for hoes naledi..... I have a goddess sitting in front of me now so I don't have time for things like her

Me: a goddess you say

he smiled showing his perfect teeth lord Jesus

Heath: yeah that's why I said I wish you could see yourself the way I see you obim

I just blushed and my phone rang the number wasn't saved

Me: hello

Voice: hei wena jou gaat

gosh I may not know the numbers that called me but I'll never forget the voice

Me: ma...Mamiki

I said that looking at heath and he frowned looking at me and that waitress came back with our drinks and she wanted to say something but heath told her to leave....mmh that was a bit rude of him

Mamiki: nyanyiki nyanyiki ya masepa..... is this how you thank my mother sfebe ke wena (you bitch)

***I swallowed hard ***

Me: Mamiki you don't know what happened ok

Mamiki: ma told me what happened... how could you naledi

Me: Mamiki he tried to force himself on me and koko said im lying

Mamiki: voetsek my brother is not a rapist im sure you seduced him and when he refused you you cried rape

tears threatened to come out and I tried to swallow the lump that was on my throat

Me: how...how can you say that Mamiki

Mamiki: you know I should have aborted you when I found out I was pregnant with your albino ass nx I should have listened to your so called father and aborted you when he told me to you are an ungrateful bitch and if mama suffers a heart attack again because of all this I'll kill you wankutlwa(do you hear me)

tears rolled down my cheeks and heath snatched the phone from me and he dropped the call and put it inside his pocket and called the waitress while I quickly wiped my tears off well after paying the bill we left to the parking lot and he strapped Lesedi on her new baby car seat then a car parked next to heath's car and the passenger door of that car opened and that lady that was with lerato at thandi's grandparents house came out and she frowned when she saw me.... I ignored her and I gave Lesedi her new doll and I heard her call out heath's name....God I don't have the energy to deal with this*

Lady: so this thing is what you left my beautiful and sophisticated sister for nx heh heath

Heath: obim get in the car

he said that ignoring her and I closed the back door and I opened the front passenger door and i got in the car and she knocked on my window

Lady: I see that beating you got from lerato is not enough neh you want some more

Heath: KATLEGO!

he warned her and I just sighed deeply and I looked back at my daughter and she was playing with her doll with no worry in the world...how I wish I was her

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Katlego: WHAT HEH WHAT.... MY SISTER MISCARRIED YOUR BABY AND INSTEAD OF BEING WITH HER YOU ARE BUSY GALAVANTING WITH THIS BITCH

*** katlego's man got out of the car and went to Katlego***

Guy: baby this is not the place nor the time

Katlego: steven please let me tell this bastard what I think of him

Heath: and you think I give a fuck about what that empty head of yours thinks of me

Steven: man don't ok

Heath: don't what boy...don't what

he said that getting pissed by the second

Steven: don't call me a boy dude please

Heath: or what

***naledi got out of the car cause she could hear anger in heath's voice ***

Naledi: heath lets go please

Steven: yah you better listen to you little albino friend and leave

***heath charged to him and before steven could react heath punched him so hard and steven fell to the ground on his back and Katlego screamed as she went to him ***

Katlego: are you ok baby

Naledi: heath please lets go please

she begged him but it fell on deaf ears as heath walked to Katlego and steven with his eyes blood shot red with anger all over his face and he pointed at katlego

Heath: next time you see me or her

pointing at naledi

Heath: walk away or you'll regret it...you dey hear me.... I no be your friend na your mate

Katlego now if you dey value your waka life you dey waka look elsewhere when you dey see us ok or you go regret it now comot from here before I dey scatter your useless brains all over the ground nx (do you hear me..... im not your friend or your mate katlego now if you value

your miserable life you will look elsewhere whenever you see us ok or you will regret it now
leave here before I blow your brains)

***he said that with a firm tone looking scary he didn't care if they understood him or not..... as
for Katlego she kept quiet while steven was busy holding his broken and heavily bleeding nose
and heath turned and went to the drive side of his car ***

Heath: get in the car naledi

***and naledi did quickly and he also got in and he drove out..... the ride was silent with heath's
jaws clenched and naledi looking scared until heath broke the silent when he spoke ***

Heath: who's Mamiki

he asked looking at naledi trying to soften up his hard facial expression

Naledi : the woman that gave birth to me

Heath: what did she say that made you cry

Naledi: same old story

Heath: what

Naledi: that she should have aborted me and that she should have listened to my so called father
and aborted me when he told her to and that im an ungrateful bitch and so on

***she said that looking outside the window fighting back her tears and heath rubbed her thigh
gently and squeezed it a bit***

Heath: I know its hard now naledi but know that karma will visit them some day and believe me
when I say when that happens they'll come crawling back to you begging for your forgiveness

***naledi didn't say anything she just wiped her tears that just fell down her cheeks....as for
Lesedi she was now fast asleep..... After some time they arrived at the apartment and naledi
carried Lesedi inside while heath carried the shopping bags inside.....naledi went to put Lesedi to
bed and went to help heath carry the endless bags inside and they unpacked everything silently
after they were done heath grabbed naledi's hand and they went to sit down on the couch***

Heath: im sorry about what happened in the parking lot

Naledi: what if he opens a case with the police

Heath: don't worry he wont

Naledi: you don't know that heath

***heath laid on the couch and pulled naledi to lay on top of him and he rubbed her back
gently***

Heath: don't worry about it obim he wont ok

naledi sighed

Naledi: why...why do you always talk like Nigerians do especially when you are pissed off or angry

heath chuckled

Heath: cause im Nigerian

naledi raise her head and she looked at him

Naledi: what...for real

heath nodded

Naledi: but how cause you are cousins with Thandi and jabu

Heath: my father is Nigerian and my mother is south African

Naledi: oh ok

Heath: im sure you don't even know my surname

***naledi sighed and she attempted to get off him but heath tightened the grip around her ***

Naledi: everything happened so fast heath im sure you also don't know my surname

Heath: Naledi Shanelle Mogapi 23 years of age you have a 1 year and 9 months old beautiful daughter and you are the only child to....

she interrupted him looking surprised *

Naledi: how did...

he also interrupted her

Heath: I have my ways obim

***he said that smiling ***

Naledi: mmmh so what's your surname

heath smiled

Heath: Heath Ezeudo Owoh-Masden 35 years of age I have a 12-year-old daughter... I was born and bred in Nigeria but I moved here after I finished my secondary school and I have been here since mother is Zulu and my father is Igbo and I have two brothers and a sister

Naledi: wow

Heath: so now that's out of the way tell me when are we getting back together

naledi moved uncomfortably

Naledi: heath I hope you didn't do all this so that I'll get back together with you

Heath: besides loving you and wanting to keep you and princess safe it is another reason

Naledi: ohhk let me go check on Lesedi

*** she said getting off him and he let her go with a smirk on his face**

Heath: maybe I should have asked you this instead....when are we getting married

Naledi: you are crazy

Heath: in love with you yeah

naledi just shook her head with a smile on her face and she went to check on Lesedi and as she stood there looking at her sleeping peaceful she felt heath holding her from behind and he kissed her neck

Heath: she's perfect neh

he whispered and naledi nodded still looking at her

Heath: we gonna wait until she's 2 and a half years old and we will try for her little brother or sister right

he whispered again

Naledi: ASKIES

she said that out loud

Heath: shhhh keep it down you'll wake my princess up and she needs her beauty sleep

***heath whispered to her and he kissed her cheek and walked out before she can say anything**

Naledi: mxm wa gafa o (mxm he's mad this one)

.
. .
. .

back at koko's house

Mamiki: heh ma can you believe she dropped the call on me

Koko: I can't believe she's the one doing all this..... I mean this is not how I raised her

Mamiki: o gafisa ke pipi o le nx (she's driven crazy by a dick that one)

Koko: im just worried ka lesedi Mamiki

Mamiki: mmmh eish

Koko: maybe we should call social workers on her I mean Lesedi cant be exposed to different men because her mother suddenly chooses to whore around what if that boy leaves her and she moves to another man and another one gape don't forget she's your daughter

Mamaki: o batla goreng mama (what are you trying to say mom)

Koko: you know what im trying to say... so you'll talk to a social worker right

Mamiki: are you sure about this mama

Koko: mmmmh remember what maMnisi said Mamiki man..... having her around brings good luck and good health to me and even at night im feared and taken serious because of the strength and luck I draw from her

Mamiki: now how will taking Lesedi from her help

Koko: she'll definitely come back home cause I know she loves lesedi and she cant live without her...wena make sure the social worker gives her an option that if she wants her daughter back she'll have to come stay here with her

Mamiki: mmmh ok well I guess I'll have to find a social worker I can bribe

Koko: mmmh remember with her around I get my powers back and your business grows

Mamiki: I know

Koko: plus I raised Lesedi and I want to groom her to join me or take over from me when she's of age cause I couldn't with her mother because of her gift

Mamiki: don't worry I'll find someone who'll help us to forcefully bring her back home even though the sight of her disgust me

Koko: hai man Mamiki

Mamiki: what mama she looks like him and that gets me angry every time I look at her nx she was supposed to be my ticket to his pockets but she had to be born an albino and ruin everything nx

koko just shook her head looking at Mamiki

10

INSERT...10

.
. .
. .

****NALEDI****

***well later that day we also went to register Lesedi at one of the I must say "expensive" day-care centres around and even though I told him I wont be able to afford it with what I earn he just told me straight on that his princess will never go to some cheap day-care or public school for as long as he lives.... I tried to reason with him telling him that firstly we are not together anymore so he doesn't have to do all this and his response was "keep telling yourself that and maybe you might start believing it"...mxm heath is heath and as much as I want to the angry at him sometimes its hard and I can also see that he's a bit controlling when he wants to cause once he makes up his mind nothing can make him change it back like last night I left him in the lounge when I went to sleep cause he said hes sleeping over and I told him he better use the other bedroom and he said ofcourse then boom I woke up in the middle of the night with hands

wrapped around my body and I almost screamed until I realised it might be him.... I told him to go back to the other bedroom and he blatantly refused and he held me tighter and kissed the back of my neck and told me to go back to sleep and that he loves mearg..... anyway the following day we drove to lesedi's new day-care and my baby cried her eyes out when we left which broke my heart and made me cry too he then dropped me off at work and he stole a kiss from me and he told me he loves me then he left.....ai heath..... well its been two weeks now and I must say things have been good for me and my daughter yes even with heath being all clingy things have been good I remember one day I came back from work and I found a pink and purple baby cot in the main bedroom and other baby things in there so even though I think heath is going overboard with the whole thing I still say things have been good. Anyway now im on my lunch break with Thandi and Im busy telling her whats been happening lately and she seems amused by the whole thing mxm that's until my phone rang disturbing us****

Me: hello

Voice: hi may I speak to miss naledi Mogapi

Me: speaking

Voice: ok you are speaking to mrs chabalala a social worker and I have a case here against you concerning your daughter so I would us to meet so we can discuss it

God my heart started beating fast with my eyes popped out

Me: what...what case

Socialworker: please its important that we meet you'll get all the details of the case then

***I swallowed hard ***

Me: oohk whe..when

Socialworker: tomorrow

Me: ummm.... where

Socialworker: kolonnade mall at roco mamas at around 14h00

Me: ok

Socialworker: great see you tomorrow

I ended the call and put my hands on my face

Thandi: whats wrong ledi

Me: that was a social worker she wants to meet up with me

Thandi: why

Me: she said she has a case against me concerning Lesedi

***I said that with a breaking voice ***

Thandi: askies what

Me: that's what she said....im scared Thandi why would a social worker wants to meet up with me because of Lesedi

Thandi: I wonder too..... I think you should tell heath

Me: nope.... Thandi heath has already done a lot for me I cant trouble him with this too

Thandi: you just told me the bond he has with Lesedi is out of this world and you don't wanna tell him when a social worker called concerning her

Me: maybe its nothing

Thandi: they have a case against you naledi did you miss that part....it means someone reported you

I just kept quiet cause I was now getting emotional now

Thandi: I know heath and if you keep this from him you two will have a serious problem believe me and you don't want that naledi trust me

I just sighed....for Gods sake me and the dude are not dating bathong

Thandi: just tell him ledi cause this is not about you but Lesedi

Me: ok

Thandi: good

she pulled me In for a hug and we hugged briefly

Thandi: mmmh mrs Owoh-Masden

I gave her a confused look then it clicked that that's heath's double-barrel surname and I frowned

Me: heath and I aren't dating Thandi

she laughed

Thandi: mmmh but just so you know to him you two never broke up

I frowned looking at her and she just looked away smilingmxm.....anyway our lunch break was over and we went back to work and soon it was knock off time and we walked out and found heath outside the store sitting on the bench with Lesedi on his lap they were both concentrating on his phone with Lesedi busy laughing

Thandi: and you say you two aren't dating

I pushed her lightly and she laughed then we walked to them and Thandi and heath hugged and she took Lesedi from heath and kissed her cheek heath got closer to me and he kissed my forehead

Heath: you good

***I nodded and he stared at me and I quickly looked over to Thandi and Lesedi who was now playing with her braids..... the thing is my mind was on that call I had early on with that social worker and the truth is I have a bad feeling about our meeting tomorrow ***

Heath: we will talk about whatever it is that's bothering you when we get home ok

he whispered to my ear and he kissed my cheek....ai..... anyway after some time we said our goodbye to Thandi and we went to his car and drove to our new home we arrived and went in and we went to the lounge and sat down with Lesedi on my lap with the social worker's call troubling me and heath sat next to me

Heath: im listening

***my eyes filled with tears and I looked up trying to fight them back....i couldn't stomach losing Lesedi I just couldn't ***

Heath: obim whats wrong

*** I kept quiet trying to calm myself down so I'll be able to speak clearly and he took Lesedi from me and he put her down on the soft mat and he gave her his phone to keep her busy and he got closer to me and he held me tight***

Heath: talk to me obim who made you sad

Me: I...I got a call today during lunch time and it was from a social worker called mrs chabalala ***he let me go and looked at me with a frown on his face***

Heath: what did she want

Me: she said there's a case against me concerning Lesedi and she would like us to meet tomorrow

he kept quiet looking at me intensively

Heath: what time

Me: 14h00

Heath: don't worry we will go together ok

I nodded with tears in my eyes

Me: I cant lose her heath

he pulled me closer and held me tight

Heath: you wont obim I promise you that.....lets not jump the gun ok lets wait for tomorrow to hear about the stupid case against you ok

Me: ok

***I said that and wiped my tears....he cupped my face and perked my lips and he stared into my eyes and they were full of so much love and assurance ***

Heath: no one and I mean no one will take princess away from us ok

I nodded and he kissed my forehead

Me: let me go and start cooking

Heath: no lets order in obim

Me: ok

Heath: I love you ok

I nodded I just couldn't say it back and he smirked

Heath: one of these days you'll say it back while im busy hitting it hard from behind with my hands grabbing your fine ass tight

he said that to me with a smirk on his face and my eyes popped out looking at him and he just laughed standing up and he picked Lesedi up and they went to the kitchen

.

.

.

**** HEATH****

*** well im in love and with the way things are its safe to say im even obsessed with naledi as for her daughter Lesedi the bond I have with her is just out of this world and I'll do anything even lay down my life for both of them that's how much they mean to me....well two days ago my grandmother called me and she said she had something important to discuss with me and when I got there she told me something that got me a bit worried she said I should protect naledi and her daughter from her family cause they don't have her best interest at heart and that their lives are in danger cause apparently her grandmother is evil and she uses naledi's blessings and "gift" (and I didn't even ask what gift) for her evil ways and that she wants to groom Lesedi to take over from her....to tell you the truth all that was processed in my head was naledi and lesedi's lives are in danger and her family members are the ones that want to hurt them and that got me angry. Well what I know is its gonna be a cold day in hell if I let anyone hurt them and now that she told me about the social worker issue I have a feeling there's foul play there and im gonna get to the bottom of it..... well now its around 9 at night and Lesedi is safely sleeping peacefully on my chest after naledi fed her and also bathed her I stood up making sure I don't wake her up and I took her to the bedroom and I put her down in her cot slowly and I kissed her forehead and I went back to the lounge and I found obim busy cleaning up....shit my obim is domesticated people and that is a fucken turn on for me cause I've never being with a girl that clean up after herself or that even takes a cloth and dusts the house or let alone hand wash my clothes eish which reminds me I need to buy her a washing machine. Now don't be surprised

when my obsession for her escalates to another level cause ya'll can see I found myself a wife material with a fine ass that drives me absolutely insane..... anyway I was now sitting in the lounge catching up on football highlight when I see her walk towards the stairs***

Me: going to bed

she shook her head no

Naledi: Im going to shower first then im off to bed

Me: ok

she walked upstairs and I sat here for a minute or two then I switch off the tv and I checked if the door is closed and I switched off the lights and went upstairs when I got inside the bedroom I heard the shower running and I decided to take off my clothes and I went to join her

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

*** well naledi was facing the wall but quickly turned her head when she felt cold air coming in and heath was standing there naked with his dick getting harder by the second when his eyes roamed around naledi's naked body especially her round ass***

Naledi: what are you doing here Mr

Heath: taking a shower with you

he said that trying to compose himself but his voice gave him away as it was deeper than usually and cutting a bit as if hes running out of breath

Naledi: but...

***he interrupted her as he held her waist ***

Naledi: hea...heath

Heath: obim

he said that with his hands travelling down to her butt cheeks and he squeezed them tight while bringing his body closer to hers and she felt his hard dick poking her on her back and she swallowed hard

Heath: I miss you mara mma(beautiful)

Naledi: we...we cant

Heath: why not obim mmh

he said that with his hand now on her nana with his two fingers busy sliding up and down inside her pussy lips and she moaned softly

Naledi: we...i....you...i

***his lips met her neck and his middle finger was now stroking her clit and she was moaning out loud while heath was busy kissing and sucking on her neck ***

Heath: I want you obim..... please

he said that with his dick now fully erect and throbbing a bit

Naledi: hea..th

he switched off the water and turned her around and smashed his lips on hers and he kissed her hungrily with his one hand grabbing her breast and the other hand squeezed her butt...he then pinned her against the wall and his hands went to her ass and he picked her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist and heath pushed his dick in her pussy a bit hard after two or three failed attempts of doing so and she moaned out loud while he groaned louder

Heath: fuckkkkk.....i missed my home obim.....i missed you

Naledi: heath we cant....

he shut her up when he started moving back and forth a couple of times making naledi to moaned out loud then he stopped moving and he pulled out and he opened the shower door and got out with naledi and he went to the guest bedroom and he put naledi on top of the bed and he got on top of her and he smashed his lips on hers and they kissed hungrily with heath's hand busy playing with her clit....he then positioned himself and slid into her and he groaned out loud when he felt her walls hugging his shaft

Heath: fuck you are tight obim and warm

he said that kissing her lips and he started moving slowly going in and out of her swiftly and deeper which made naledi to call out his name and he smiled

Heath: I love you naledi...i fucken love you woman

***he said that and he pulled her right leg up and also increased his pace which drove naledi insane as she screamed out loud..... he fucked her fast hard and deeper while groaning out loud....he knew he wasn't gonna last long because of her moans that were driving him crazy and her warmth inside so he pulled out and kissed her lips and got off the bed and he opened the drawer and took out a towel and he gave himself a hand job with naledi watching wanting to cry cause she was actually enjoying the sex and he came fast since he wasn't that far then he cleaned himself and he gave himself another hand job to wake Eze(his dick) up and when he was fully up he went back to naledi who didn't look happy at all about what just happened and he turned her around (chest down and ass up) and he slid into her hard and deep and a loud groan escaped his mouth from deep down his throat while naledi moaned out loud Gosh and the things he did to her...yeses.... He fucked her hard and deep while he watched her ass shaking as

he pounced on her and that drove him absolutely crazy and he felt himself losing control as for naledi her body tensed up and an orgasm hit her so hard that she screamed out loud and her body shook uncontrollably and heath stopped then he pulled out and got off the bed and he pulled naledi to the edge of the bed and he opened her legs wide and bend down and kissed her nana then he slid into her with his hand holding her waist tight and he fucked her senselessly that a wild orgasm hit her hard again but heath didn't stop instead he fucked her throughout her orgasm hard.....he was sweating like nobody's business with his sweat dripping on naledi's body he went in and out of her fast with naledi screaming out his name***

Heath: do you love me obim

***he said that hitting it hard and naledi couldn't even say a word all she could do was moan out loud ***

Heath: DO YOU LOVE ME NALEDI.....ANSWER ME

he said that slowing down a bit

Naledi: ye..yes

Heath: say it to me obim

Naledi: heath

Heath: say it to me naledi

Naledi: i...I love you heath

he smiled with sweat dripping from his face and he increased his pace

Heath: how much do you love me obim

Naledi: ahhhhh hea..th

*** he went faster ***

Heath: how much do you love me obim

Naledi: a lot heath ok a lot

he went fast and another orgasm hit naledi and heath was still nowhere to the finishing line so he stopped and pulled out and he turned the now exhausted and numb naledi.....her one leg was on the edge of the bed while her other leg was on the floor and he was laying on the edge bed with her stomach..... and heath grabbed her ass tight pushing it up and slightly opened her butt cheeks and he slid into her and started pounding on her hard with his sweat dripping on her bare back.....after some time he felt his build up and naledi's body also tensed up and he increased his pace

Heath: come for me obim

Naledi: i...heath...i

she said that screaming

Heath: come for me obim...let go baby

Naledi: i... yes ahhh

Heath: LET GO NALEDI... FUCKKKK..... LET GO OBIM

he said that going faster and naledi let go and she climaxed hard and heath wasn't far behind and he slammed into her hard and he released his juices inside her and groaned out loud with his body shaking....he stood there for some time trying to catch his breath with his legs shaking and he pulled out and he slowly picked up the towel and he cleaned himself and naledi up then he picked her up and they went to the main bedroom and they got into bed all sweaty then heath quickly got out of bed and checked on Lesedi and she was sleeping peacefully and he went back to bed and he pulled naledi closer to him and she put her head on his chest while his arms were wrapped around her*

Heath: I love you naledi a lot

Naledi: I love you too heath

he kissed her forehead

Heath: fuck you don't know how long I've waited to hear you say that obim

he said that and kissed her forehead again

Naledi: heath

Heath: obim

Naledi: please don't hurt me

Heath: I promise my love and promise me you'll never leave me

Naledi: wena don't hurt me and I'll never leave you

he sighed

Heath: fair enough

after a few seconds they drifted off to a peaceful sleep cuddling

11

INSERT...11

.

.

.

****HEATH****

*** I woke up as a happy man with a huge smile on my face especially after the morning glory I had this morning... now I just dropped princess at day care and obim at college cause shes doing part

time there and plus shes off today at work I'll pick her up around past one 0r to 2 to go meet the social worker then we will go pick our princess up from day care..... anyway now im in my office day dreaming about what happened last night I cant believe that happened cause I was scared it might take forever for her to give me another chance but im glad she proved me wrong.....then my office door opened with lerato rushing in and my PA rushing in after her busy shouting at her to leave***

PA: sir im sorry I tried to stop her

I looked at lerato with a straight face cause I refuse to let her ruin my good mood today

Me: its ok Yvonne I'll take it from here you can go back to your desk

***she nodded and gave lerato a death stare and she closed the door on her way out ***

Lerato: you need to fire her heath shes getting too big for her cheap shoes

Me: why are you here lerato

she smiled and walked closer but I maintained my straight face

Lerato: I miss you heath.... I miss us baby please lets fix things between us

Me: never gonna happen.... So is that all

she frowned

Lerato: heath why are you being like this....you know I love you why are you doing this to me

Me: lerato I have plenty of work to do so I don't have time for all this please close that door on your way out

Lerato: no

Me: askies

Lerato: we love each other heath and I know you are just angry at me for insulting your family and im deeply sorry baby I swear I've learned my lesson now please stop with this punishment you giving me

she said that sulking and I couldn't help it but laugh..... what in Gods name did I ever see in this demented girl

Lerato: why are you laughing heath im serious I learned my lesson

Me: lerato

Lerato: baby

Me: im not punishing you in any way I just don't want you anymore period now can you just get that through your thick skull and move on please

Lerato: I refuse to accept that heath I know you love me

Me: well I know that I don't love you anymore

Lerato: whats so special about her heh I mean she's an albino and she has a disease that is genetic meaning her kids will be born with it

I chuckled looking at her and I just realised how dump she is even though she holds a degree

Me: well those kids will be my kids and I'll love them like I've never loved before.... anything else?

*** she looked at me with an angry face then she exhaled loudly***

Lerato: she must have bewitched you then and im sure mom knows a powerful man of God that can help you baby please

ok im getting pissed off now

Me: just leave lerato cause nothing you say or do will make me leave her

she then took off her dress and she was only wearing a bra and no panty and I immediately got a bonerfuckdont blame me people Eze has a mind of his own and I must say even though she has a stinking attitude and she lack a good home upbringing but damn she has a killer body and I know how good she is in bed but hey I cant and wont hurt obim like that she's way too precious for me to hurt her like that and on top of that I promised her I wont hurt her

Lerato: don't tell me you don't miss all this

I bit my bottom lips as she played with her clit....fuck my boner was getting harder and harder

Me: lerato stop it

she walked to my side of the desk and she went behind me and I felt her lips on the back of my neck and I felt shivers run down my spine...shit

Lerato: I miss you heath

she said that running her hands down my front and before she could touch my already hard dick I grabbed her hands tight

Me: this dick belongs to naledi and its only her pussy that it fucks

***she took her hands off me and I breathed out then she sat on the table and she opened her legs wide and her pussy was now staring right at me....fuck no no no Eze was now throbbing and this bitch didn't stop there she started fingering herself while moaning and I swear I felt my dick twitch..... to tell you all the truth right now my head is telling me to get up pull down my pants and boxer which I now believe is wet and fuck her senselessly like I used to do before I met naledi but my heart is telling me that what I have with naledi is way too precious to destroy because of lust.... Well she increased her pace while moaning out loud and I sat here watching with my dick painful from my really hard erection until she finished and she pulled her finger out of her pussy and licked it ***

Lerato: that could have been you in here

Me: nah I'll pass

I stood up and she laughed

Lerato: your dick doesn't want you too

Me: he has a mind of his own but my own mind is the alpha mind and whatever it says goes...and now it says naledi is too precious to me for me to hurt her like that

her face turned to anger and I smirked and went to pick her dress on the floor and I threw it at her

Me: thanks for the free porn it was just amazing now please leave I need to get back to work

Lerato: heath please don't do this

Me: lerato leave abeg

she got closer to me and she quickly grabbed my dick and I froze fuck

Lerato: please one round heath then I'll leave

Me: no

Lerato: please heath

she stood on her toes and kissed me and as much as I wanted to fuck her so I can release this tension on my body now I just couldn't cause I cant hurt naledi like that but fuck I wanted to fuck her so badI pushed her away from me and I also picked her bag and gave it to her

Me: lerato you have embarrassed yourself enough please leave with the little dignity you have left in you

tears filled her eyes

Lerato: heath please lets fix us

Me: LEAVE LERATO PLEASE MAN..... I WONT FUCK YOU NOW LEAVE

she wore her dress with tears coming out and she took her bag and rushed out crying..... fuck I felt bad but I had to do thatI cant loose naledi I just cant..... anyway I went to the in-suit bathroom and gave myself a hand job and after I was done I cleaned myself up and went back and I sat down and exhaled loudly

Me: fuck that was close

I said that to myself and I took my phone and dialled naledi's numbers and immediately when she answered with her sweet voice guilt washed up over me and fear of losing her took over and I felt my heart beating faster than normal and I became short of breath

Naledi: heath are you there

***I swallowed hard ***

Me: ummm yeah how are you obim

Naledi: im ok... are you ok

Me: I am now that I'm talking to you

Naledi: whats wrong

Me: nothing I cant handle obim..... I miss you

Naledi: I miss you too.....so we will meet at the mall

Me: no I'll come pick you up and we will go together

Naledi: ok

Me: I love you naledi never forget that ok

Naledi: I love you too heath

Me: ok bye for now

Naledi: bye

we ended the call and I sighed deeply and tried to do some work*

.
. .
.

****NARRATED****

It was now around past one and heath was on his way to pick naledi up and guilt was eating him up so he decided to call jabu

Jabu: mshikaro

Heath: fede (how's it)

Jabu: hai lekker my bra and jy (im good my brother and you)

Heath: im not good eish jabs I fucked up...infact I almost fucked up

Jabu: o bodisitse mang nou (who did you kill now)

Heath: o sa re ke bodisitse mang mxm go boda nna my bra (you are asking who I killed mxm im the one who's going to die my brother)

Jabu: jaive(what happened)

Heath: lerato came to my office a few hours ago and she got naked in my office and as I refused her advances towards me she finger fucked herself infront of me and I got hard mfowethu like really hard

Jabu: heath o sa nchaela o jele sfebe sele (heath don't tell me you fucked that bitch)

he said that with a serious voice

Heath: nah but eish I nearly did jabs my dick was close to busting but I just couldn't hurt naledi like that

Jabu: ejoh dlalla vir from dai sfebe (play far from that bitch) or you'll lose naledi for good and remember you just got her back

heath sighed deeply

Heath: I know jabs I know but I feel guilty jabu man I mean I promised naledi I would never hurt her again last night and today shit like that happened

Jabu: so you too are officially together now

Heath: yeah we even had the best make up sex ever

Jabu: mmmh.... play far away from that bitch mshikaro and make sure your mamiwota doesn't find out about what happened

heath sighed

Heath: yeah

Jabu: good

Heath: what about her uncle

Jabu: mxm you mean dai moeskond tomorrow is his last day on earth sa wara (don't worry)

Heath: ok eish look I have to go jabs we will talk later neh

Jabu: ok shap say hi to your mamiwota

Heath: I will.... shap

they ended the call and heath dialled naledi's numbers

Naledi: heath

Heath: baby would have sounded much better

she giggled

Naledi: ok hey baby

Heath: much much better....im parked outside

Naledi: ok I'm coming

Heath: ok

*** they ended the call and after some time she walked out of the gate and she spotted heath's car and walked to it and heath admired her as she walked towards his car with her pale but flawless skin glowing when the sun hit it and her moving her waist swiftly from side to side like models do he would give anything right now to be walking behind her to see her fine ass moving then he saw some guys walking behind her and you could see they were looking at her ass and immediately heath got out of the car feeling a ping of jealousy from the pit of his stomach....naledi smiled when their eyes met and heath opened his arms for her and she rushed to him and they hugged tightly and heath kissed her lips and smiled down at her with his love for her getting deeper and deeper then his face got hard when memories of what happened with lerato rush through his mind ***

Heath: I love you obim

Naledi: I love you too heath

he perked her lips with people watching and he opened the door for her and she got in and so did he and they drove away.....they arrived at the mall and they got out of the car and went to roco mamas and naledi dialled the number the social worker called her with as they stood by the entrance and her phone rang on the corner table and naledi and heath walked in to her and stood next to her table

Naledi: Mrs Chabalala?

she raised her head

Socialworker: Naledi Mogapi?

naledi nodded and they shook hands and she looked at heath

Naledi: and this is....

heath interrupted her

Heath: Heath Owoh-Masden her lawyer and you are?

Socialworker: Lydia Chabalala

he nodded and naledi gave him the "wtf" look but heath ignored her and pulled his hand out for a handshake with the social worker and they shook hands and sat down

Socialworker: ummm miss Mogapi I thought we were going to meet alone

Heath: why would she do that when you already told her that a case was opened against her concerning her daughter..... look mam if you feel uneasy you can call your lawyer to come join us too

***the social worker looked uneasy and uncomfortable but she just shook her head no ***

Heath: ok we can start

then a waiter came and asked if they would like to order and heath ordered orange juice for him and naledi and the waiter left since Mrs Chabalala's drink was still full

Socialworker: well miss Mogapi a case was opened against you with our department for child negligence

Naledi: askies what

Socialworker: the person or people said you left home with your daughter to go live with your boyfriend who's a drug dealer and that you sometimes leave the child with him the whole day when you go to work and the boyfriend exposes your baby to drugs since he deals with them in front of her

heath laughed his ass off with naledi's eyes popped out looking at the social worker shocked by what she just said

Naledi: askies what...what did you just say

Heath: ok lets stop beating around the bush lady who send you

Socialworker: im sorry what

Heath: ok maybe I didn't ask the right question..... who paid you to come here and vomit that rubbish out of your mouth

Socialworker: Mr...

Heath: Owoh-Masden

Socialworker: ummm yes Mr Owoh-Masden that's a serious accusation you are making

Heath: accusation you say first of all the same child you are here saying she's exposed to drugs now goes to one of the best and expensive day cares around and the same boyfriend you were told is a drug dealer is actually the owner and CEO of one of the biggest accounting firms in south Africa and probably Africa as a whole and naleidi and her daughter stay at one of the most safest and expensive apartments around and you're sitting your fat ass here vomiting rubbish out of that dirty mouth of yours without any proof of what you just accused naleidi ofdid you even investigate about the shit you were told

her eyes were popped out and she couldn't even hide the shock embarrassment and fear on her face

Heath: I asked you a damn question mrs social worker...who paid you to come here and talk all this rubbish

Socialworker: sir....

*** heath interrupted her***

Heath: voetsek answer my fucken question before I fucken lose it woman

he warned her

Socialworker: oooh God

she said that to herself and heath hit the table with his open hand and both naleidi and the social worker got startled and so did people around them

Heath: WHO PAID YOU

the social worker was now shaking with fear

Socialworker: sir please i....i think I should go now

Heath: before you get up from that chair you better make sure those fuckers that paid you paid you well cause I'll make sure you lose this same fucken job you are busy abusing

***the social worker sat still feeling like her whole world was coming to an end ***

Heath: you should be going after women who abandon their kids with their old and wrinkled grandparents without food while they go out there ravishing their kids' grant money with beer and useless things instead of taking care of their kids and you are here harassing a young woman who would do anything and even sleep hungry as long as her daughter is full because of a couple of hundreds you were bribed with.....you are a shameful woman and I should be spitting on your face

right now for this shit you just did but I wont because my mother raised a gentleman nx..... now im gonna ask you for the last time who paid you

the social worker was now crying

Heath: voetsek wipe those fucken crocodile tears and answer my fucken question

***everyone was now watching with others taking video's...as for naledi she was now seeing the other side of heath she never knew existed and it was scary for her....yes she was happy that she had someone who had her back but scared again to see her boyfriend like this ***

Socialworker: its....its her mother and grandmother

Naledi: what

Socialworker: yes your mother paid me

Heath: bribed...say bribed

Socialworker: bribed me.....shes the one who told me about the drugs and all that stuff..... please don't make me lose my job please im sorry I was greedy and I took the bribe not caring about the person that was gonna suffer because of me...please don't make me lose my job im begging you I have a family to take care of

***heath just clicked his tongue and he stood up and took out his wallet and took out R200 from it and he put it on the table ***

Heath: lets go obim

naledi stood up while wiping her now falling tears and heath held her hand and they walked out..... on their way to parking lot heath took out his phone and dialled a number

Voice: sir

Heath: shaun write this down

Shaun: ok im listening sir

Heath: Lydia Chabalala shes a social worker but I don't know from which branch shes a yellowbone with a full gold teeth and an average beauty spot on her neck shes married and she drives a Toyota corolla (he saw her car keys on top of the table) also find out if she knows a Mamiki Mogapi That's all

Shaun: got it shes married and she drives a Toyota corolla (he saw her car keys on top of the table) also find out if she knows a Mamiki Mogapi That's all

Shaun: got it when do you need all this info sir

Heath: asap

Shaun: ok

Heath: good I'll be waiting for your email

Shaun: ok sir

***then they ended the call and heath unlocked the car and opened the door for naledi and she got in and he also got in and they drove out and went past lesedi's day care and they picked her up and they drove back homeafter sometime they arrived at the apartment and they got in and as soon as heath took off his suit jacket naledi saw a lipstick on the collar of his shirt at the back ***

Naledi: heath whats that

Heath: what obim

Naledi: take off your shirt

and heath did and as soon as he saw the maroon lipstick his heart started beating fast

Naledi: who is she

***she asked with tears in her eyes and heath thought of making up a story but then he started thinking what if lerato bumps into naledi in the mall or somewhere and she tell her about what happened in his office and possibly add lies on top ***

Heath: I didn't cheat on you naledi

Naledi: I should have known never to trust you or anything that comes out of that lying mouth of yours nx

Heath: askies

Naledi: you are untrustworthy heath and I shouldn't have let you have sex with me

Heath: naledi!

he warned her

Naledi: what...what heath heh last night we made up and today you cheat on me...how could you

Heath: I didn't cheat on you naledi man

Naledi: then explain this

he rubbed his head roughly

heath: fine sit and let me explain

she did but far from him while wiping her tears off with Lesedi playing on the floor and that broke his heart

Heath: lerato came to my office in the morning ok and she started talking a lot of crap about us fixing things and stuff and I told her where to get off and also that I love you and only you and that I'll never hurt you especially like that then she took off her dress and naledi even though I got a boner I never touched her obim I swear on everything and everyone I hold dear I didn't touch her

naledi swallowed hard with tears gushing out

Heath: I wanted to kick her out of my office but im a man and I have a dick and it has its own mind obim so I just sat there frozen but after some time I regained my right senses back and I kicked her out with her crying

then he sighed

Heath: as for the lipstick as I was sitting there frozen she came behind me and....and kissed the back of my neck but I stopped her I guess that's when she planted that lipstick stain there..... I swear obim I didn't touch her I couldn't cause I knew you would leave me if I did and I cant lose you naledi please believe me

well she felt relieved that he didn't touch her she believed him cause she could tell he was being truthful but she was hurt that he got a boner because of her and that he didn't kick her out in time like he was supposed to do in the first place

Heath: believe me obim please believe me

Naledi: lerato again heath you failed to put her in her place the first time and you know what happened and now its her again I don't think I can do this im sorry I have a lot im dealing with and I cant deal with your stuck up ex too heath

she said that standing up and heath quickly stood up and held her upper arm

Heath: naledi please I didn't touch her please don't do this

he said that with a breaking voice what he couldn't stomach was to lose her again while he just got her back

Naledi: let go heath

Heath: no first tell me you wont leave me

Naledi: let go

Heath: tell me

***she looked up at him and the fear that was visible on his face was astonishing ***

Heath: please naledi

Naledi: let go heath please

Heath: ok then kiss me to show me that we good

she kept quiet looking away

Heath: im not letting you go until you do it naledi

Naledi: heath le....

***she didn't finish the sentence cause heath smashed his trembling lips on hers and he kissed her at first she didn't kiss him back but eventually did when heath sucked on her lower lip....the kiss got heated as heath deepened it but then naledi pulled out from it ***

Heath: obim

Naledi: put her in her place heath cause if you don't its over between us I have a lot of things im dealing with and im trying to be strong for Lesedi so I cant deal with your ex too heath I just cant

Heath: I'll fix all this and put her in her place I promise obim

Naledi: don't make promises you cant keep heath

Heath: im gonna keep this one cause I cant lose you

she just looked at him with a pained expression and heath felt his heart throb and he perked her lips and forehead and he went down and kissed leledi's forehead and he went to the bedroom.....he changed to casual clothes and went back to the lounge and he found naleli crying and he sat next to her and pulled her to his chest and held her tight

Heath: please don't cry naleli please you are breaking my heart obim....i'll never cheat on you naleli this dick belongs to you and you alone

she wiped her tears while sniffing

Heath: I love you ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Heath: I'll be back now now I need to deal with this lerato shit once and for all

she looked at him with tears in her eyes

Heath: im gonna put her in her place like you asked once and for all and im gonna do that in front of her parents.....please stop crying ok

she nodded and he kissed her lips

Heath: I'll be back ok

she nodded

Heath: what should I bring you when I come back

Naledi: dinner I don't feel like cooking

Heath: ok if you need anything call me ok

she nodded and he kissed her cheek and walked out

.
. .
.

*** HEATH***

***all I know is im not losing naleli because of anyone and if you've ever been in love before you'd understand what I really mean and whats going on in mind ya'll can call me weak and all that but just know that Im hardcore out there but with naleli im as soft as a sponge cause besides her tears being my weakness that woman owns my heart and I'd do anything to make sure I do not lose her..... anyway now im on my way to the Moeketsi residence (lerato's parents house) to deal with

her once and for all..... after some time I arrived and I parked outside the gate and I called naledi it rang unanswered the first time and I tried again and she answered and I breathed a sigh of relief***

Naledi: hey

Me: you good

Naledi: yeah

Me: and princess

Naledi: shes also good

Me: ok... I love you naledi and im sorry about the lerato issue I swear obim nothing happened

she kept quiet

Me: obim

Naledi: do you still love her

Me: no

Naledi: I can sense a but

Me: no "but" naledi the truth is I just care about her that's just it I just care

Naledi: what does that even mean heath

I could feel pain in her voice

Me: it means the only reason that I haven't slapped the shit out of her for what she did today is because she once carried my seeds but if she keeps trying to come between us or disrespect you in any way I'll forget all that and knock her teeth out with just one punch

I could tell she was now smiling

Me: I love you obim and soon you gonna wear my huge diamond ring on your finger and your surname will be Owoh-Masden with my daughter or son in your womb

Naledi: who said I will get married to you

Me: when I ask you to married me and you say no to me just know that I'll kidnap you and forcefully marry you

Naledi: no you wouldn't

Me: I'm crazy like that obim believe me I will

***I could hear she was smiling and blushing now ***

Me: so are we good obim

Naledi: make me scream tonight and I'll consider forgiving you

***I smiled...fuck ***

Me: you serious

Naledi: bye heath

she dropped the call and I just laughed....anyway I got out of the car and I went inside and I knocked on the door and lerato's mother opened the door

Mrs.moeketsi: heath

Me: mrs Moeketsi can I come in

I said that with a straight face

Mrs.moeketsi: ofcourse come on in and why the sudden formality

Me: is your husband home

i said that ignoring her

Mrs.moeketsi: yes hes in the lounge

Me: ok

***I walked to the lounge and he was there watching news bulleting ***

Me: mr Moeketsi

Mr.moeketsi: heath how are you

we shook hands

Me: im good sir and you

Mr.moeketsi: getting old but besides that im good...sit down sit down

*** and I did ***

Mr.moeketsi: anything to drink

Me: no im not staying long sir

Mr.moeketsi: ok so what brings you here or is it work related

Me: no sir

I cleared my throat

Me: its about your daughter lerato

Mr.moeketsi: ok what about her

Me: sir after I asked her out remember I came to you and I asked permission to date her cause I didn't want to seem disrespectful towards you especially since im your accountant

Mr.moeketsi: yes I remember that

Me: now im here to let you know that me and her broke up and reasons being shes disrespectful towards me and my family and that I can take anything but not people disrespecting my grandparents cause they mean everything to me and many other reasons I cant get into details with

Mr.moeketsi: mmmh

Me: sir you are an African man and as an African man you know respect is everything and im afraid lerato doesn't have any so I ended things with her and I moved on so now im asking you to talk to her to keep away from me cause im sure you've heard of the kind of person I am when I'm pushed

to my limits so for me to not get there and end up doing something that might make us enemies please kindly tell your daughter to stay away from me and my woman at any cost cause it seems like she thinks im bluffing where else im not

Mr.moeketsi: mmmh I wont say im not disappointed that you two ended things cause I am but I know lerato and I must say im not surprised

ok im glad hes not flipping on me cause I would hate for us to be enemies because of her spoilt brat

Voice: what do you mean you are not surprised wena james lerato is your daughter and you let this boy use her and dump her like that khante what kind of a father are you infact what kind of a man are you nx

***ok now this is my queue to leave ***

Me: sir thank you for understanding now I think I should leave

I said that standing up and he also did and we shook hands

Mrs.moeketsi: vele leave

***nx anyway one thing I like about this man is hes one understanding motherfucker if you are making sense to him and im glad he understands me cause I would hate for us to part ways business wise because of his uncultured and spoiled daughter cause I was gonna cancel his contract with my company if shove came to push that's how much naledi means to me ***

Mrs.moeketsi: JAMES IM TALKING TO YOU MAN NX

she shouted at him

Mr.moeketsi: WILL YOU JUST SHUT UP AND STOP EMBARRASSING ME WOMAN NOW I SEE WHERE LERATO GETS HER ILL MANNERS NX

Mrs.moeketsi: ASKIES what did you just say wena james.....

***ok I just walked out fuck Im glad I dodged a bullet with lerato no wonder mr Moeketsi is an happy man imagine dealing with all this shit for years and years in marriage shame as for me I would have long killed her and buried her in the woods where no one will find her body ***

12

INSERT...12

.
. .

****NARRATED****

Mrs.moeketsi: how could you james why would you be understanding to what that boy was saying

James: Mapula you are getting on my fucken nerves now why cant you act like a good wife for once
heh

Mapula: askies

James: you heard mel didn't stutter did I for years I've been tolerant to your stinking attitude and disrespectful ways but im this close to taking my shit and leaving your disrespectful ass

Mapula: you know what james go to hell you hear me go to hell if you didn't cheat on me I wouldn't be like this

mr Moeketsi laughed

James: you are pathetic infact I feel sorry for you first of all its been 23 years mapula 23 fucken years since I cheated and secondly I apologised and paid for it what more do you want from me

Mapula: I want you to be a man and not a weakling like you've always been all these years that's why you gave in to that bitch and destroyed our marriage

Jame: this fucken marriage got destroyed the moment we said I do cause that was the second worst mistake I've ever made

Mapula: ASKIES WHAT!

she shouted

James: you are disrespectful and lacks manners and you turned our daughters into other versions of you and look now lerato lost a real man to another woman because of that nx

Mapula: DON'T INSULT ME JAMES YOU HEAR ME DON'T FUCKEN INSULT ME

James: mxm you are just pathetic and im not gonna waste more of my energy on you

he said that taking his car keys and walking past her but she grabbed his shirt

Mapula: where the hell do you think you are going

James: let go of me mapula

Mapula: you are not going anywhere you hear me you are not going anywhere

James: I see its your plan to push me to my limits so I can lay my hands on you but guess what I wont give you that satisfaction

Mapula: I should have chosen him instead cause he's man enough I mean even in bed he's a stallion instead of your weak self nx

she said that and she let him go and james chuckled while shaking his head

James: well thats not what all the woman I fucked said

***then he walked out leaving mapula busy insulting and cursing at him behind and he got in his car and drove out angry as hell.....he drove for some time then he pulled over on the side of the road and he put his forehead on the steering wheel with regrets washing over him.... He thought of the

time he impregnated a woman he once had an affair with many years ago and he was so scared that his wife might leave him with their kids and he then had to make a choice and he chose his family and he told the other woman to abort but karma visited him earlier than expected and the woman he cheated with showed up at his house unannounced and spilled the beans and everything went south from there on that even his businesses started to suffer and when he went to consult to a sangoma the sangoma told him all this is happening because he reject his own flash and blood who is blessed and was gonna make him a proud father and his ancestors are not happy with him because of that and as if that wasn't enough mapula became worse and she made life difficult for him and she also turned their daughters into what they are today..... well he traced that woman he had an affair with four years back and she told him she didn't abort but she told him she gave the baby up for adoption and she doesn't even know the people that adopted her ever since then hes been searching for his daughter to no avail..... well the reason that made him cheat in the first place is he suspected his wife was cheating on him with her ex but he couldn't prove it but he could tell by her attitude body language and her secretive manner and the fact that she always picked unnecessary fights with him and that she was and still is disrespectful towards him the reason he hasn't divorced her is she knows about his illegal businesses and she told him straight on that she'll expose him if he even tries it so even though he wishes to choke her until her soul leaves her body most of the time he cant cause he still has some love left for her and again she's the mother to his children****

.
. .

*****HEATH*****

*** I finally arrived and I went up to the apartment with the takeaways in my hands I opened the door and I walked in and I found obim feeding princess and I kissed her forehead and I put the takeaways down***

Me: obim

Naledi: mmmh

Me: still mad I see

she ignored me and she continued to feed princess and I just took the remote control and changed to a soccer channel.... After she was done she cleaned her up and gave her to me and she stood up

Me: you good baby...mmmh

she nodded as if she can really understand me and I kissed her cheek.....anyway naledi came back and took her probably to bath her and I sighed and I continued to watch soccer highlights....soon after naledi came back with princess and she gave her to me and my princess laid her head on my chest sucking on her dummy

naledi: so how did it go with your parents in law

***she said that opening the takeaways ***

Me: don't start with me abeg naledi

Naledi: haw bathong did I say something wrong

Me: mxm

she laughed lightly mxm at least she's not mad anymore

Me: are you ok regarding that whole social worker issue

her face changed and she looked away

Me: obim

I heard her sniff while looking away ...eish

Me: naledi

***I said that sitting up straight with lesedi on my chest and I turned her around to face me ***

Me: obim

Naledi: why...why would they do that to me heath I mean koko told me I should never set my feet in her house ever again now why would they bribe a social worker to take my baby away

I sighed

Me: you know there's this African proverb that says " ONE WHO CAUSES OTHERS MISFORTUNE ALSO TEACHES THEM WISDOM" so obim your grandmother and mother just taught you something by the stunt they just pulled that they don't have your best interest at heart....i mean your uncle almost forced himself on you and what did they do mmmh they called you a liar and as if that wasn't enough they bribed some social worker to separate you and Lesedi

she wiped her tears

Me: and concerning your grandmother there's another proverb that says " THE SKIN OF A LEOPARD IS BEAUTIFUL BUT NOT ITS HEART" so just take heart obim and let God judge her for turning against you like this ok

she nodded and I pulled her closer and she rested her head on my shoulder and princess here pushed her away

Naledi: bathong Lesedi

Lesedi just held on to my shirt tightly and I just laughed

Me: you don't want mommy on your bed right

I said that to her and she nodded as if she can understand and I just laughed and kissed the top of her head

Naledi: mmmh ke go utlwe o re mama mama o tla bona mxm (if I hear you say mom mom you'll see)

***I laughed and obim just smiled while wiping her almost dry tears ***

Me: come closer

she did and I perked her lips and her forehead

Me: I love you

Naledi: I love you too but im still mad at you

I chuckled

Me: I know obim I know

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

**** Mamiki's phone rang as she was sitting in the living room with her mother waiting for feedback from Lydia (the social worker) ***

Mamiki: Lydia what happened did she buy the whole thing

Lydia: no and she came with her lawyer

Mamiki: WHAT...WHAT LAWYER NALEDI CANT AFFORD A LAWYER

Lydia: well it looks like her boyfriend does cause apparently the guys is a rich man who owns some big company

Mamiki: say you are joking Lydia

Lydia: im not Mamiki that lawyer embarrassed me in front of people and he threatened to have fired from work im sorry but the deal is off

Mamiki: you cant say that Lydia remember I paid you so don't give me that

Lydia: I don't owe you anything Mamiki that money you paid me will make up for the insults and embarrassment I suffered today

Mamiki: wanyela Lydia wankutlwa(you are shitting me Lydia you hear me) don't tell me that bullshit...is either you give me my money back and I'll go look for someone who will gladly do the job without chickening out or you make sure naleidi comes back home

Lydia: nx you are not even ashamed of yourself moloi ke wena (you witch) she's your daughter for heaven's sake im sure ga waiutlwa pila pain ya pelego Mamiki im sure o tswile ka dinko naleidi cause if oeutlwile pila nkabe o sa etse masepa a mo go yena (im sure you didn't feel labour pains

Mamiki im sure naledi slid out through your nostrils cause if you did you wouldn't do all this shit to her)

Mamiki: voetsek sefebe ke wena (you bitch) who the hell do you think you're talking to like that

Lydia: stay away from me and never call me ever again satane ke wena (you satan) you hear me nx

Mamiki: hehe by the time im done with you.....

*** tuh tuh tuh tuh Lydia cut the call***

Mamiki: nx this bitch doesn't know me... heh heh heh

Koko: so she failed

Mamiki: nx I shouldn't have picked her im sure ga waiutlwa pila pain ya pelego Mamiki im sure o tswile ka dinko naledi cause if oeutlwile pila nkabe o sa etse masepa a mo go yena (im sure you didn't feel labour pains Mamiki im sure naledi slid out through your nostrils cause if you did you wouldn't do all this shit to her)

Mamiki: voetsek sefebe ke wena (you bitch) who the hell do you think you're talking to like that

Lydia: stay away from me and never call me ever again satane ke wena (you satan) you hear me nx

Mamiki: hehe by the time im done with you.....

*** tuh tuh tuh tuh Lydia cut the call***

Mamiki: nx this bitch doesn't know me... heh heh heh

Koko: so she failed

Mamiki: nx I shouldn't have picked her I knew she was weak but I gave her the benefit of doubt nx don't worry I'll show her what im capable of she doesn't know me

Koko: eish now what are we going to do about naledi and Lesedi Mamiki

Mamiki: eish ma I don't know this was our long shot but sefebe sele Lydia (that bitch) ruined everything

Koko: we need another way to get her back home

Mamiki: mama lwena you shouldn't have reacted like the way you did about the whole thing remember she trusted you mama and we both know thabo did try to rape her

Koko: hey wena don't say that about your brother ok my son didn't do that finish and klaar

Mamiki: whether you're in denial or you're trying to protect him the truth is I know he did but that's not important now whats important is us making sure she comes back cause my business is struggling mama money is not longer coming in

koko sighed

Koko: you are not the only one suffering Mamiki I mean im no longer respected at night those women talk to me anyhow now and they always remind me how weak I am now

she clicked her tongue

Koko: I even send toki(her tokoloshi/zombie/ mfana omncane) to the Mkhize house to collect money since it was pay day four days ago and can you believe their dog saw him this time which is something that has never happened before and the dog almost attacked him but luckily he managed to escape

Mamiki: this is bad we need to bring her back mama we can't suffer like this while our meal ticket is out there opening her albino legs to useless boys nx

Koko: I think we should make Lesedi sick im sure that will definitely bring her back

Mamiki: mmmh I think that might work

Koko: ok i'll start tonight I know what I need to do

Mamiki: it better work cause you know me and poverty don't mix

.
. .

***back at heath's apartment Lesedi was now asleep and naledi and heath just had their supper and after tidying up the apartment naledi went to shower leaving heath in the lounge watching a soccer match and after she was done she wore her pyjamas and she checked on Lesedi then she got inside the covers and slept.....after 30 minutes or so heath switched off the tv and he went to check if the door is locked then she switched off the lights and he went to the bedroom and he took a shower after he was done he walked out of the bathroom naked and he went to the bed and pulled the covers off her and she raised her head with her eyes slightly opened ***

Naledi: and now

heath ignored her and he took off her short pyjama pants and she wasn't wearing an underwear and "Eze" got hard instantly.... He grabbed her ass and squeezed it tight and he exhaled loudly

Heath: fuck naledi I swear if you lose this ass I'll go mad you dey hear me

then he opened her legs wide and he went down and kissed her nana then he licked it

Heath: fuck you taste good obim

then he jerked Eze up and down a couple of times and he started getting wet then he positioned Eze on her nana and slid into her then she moaned while he groaned from deep down his throat with his jaws clenched he then pulled out and he got out of the bed and he picked naledi up and went to the spare bedroom with her and he put her on the edge of the bed and he spread her legs wide again and he entered her

Naledi: ooh heath...goshhhh

Heath: you like that

she nodded and he pulled out and slid into her again and she moaned out loud

Naledi: goshhhh heath

he pulled out but then this time he slammed into her hard and she screamed and heath groaned out loud as he went deep..... then he started moving with a fast pace with his hands holding naledi's waist tight..... he hit it hard fast and deep with naledi feeling like she was losing her mind after a few strokes he hit her g-spot and she screamed and heath immediately felt her body tense up and he increased his speed

Naledi: fassster heath... gosh yees... gosh yees

***she said that with heath increasing his speed faster and faster and as she was nearer heath quickly stopped moving and he pulled out leaving naledi in tears with her body shaking with the edge to cum....she put her hand on her nana closing her legs tight with tears coming out and heath smiled then he turned her around (chest down and ass up) then he bend down and licked her nana and sucked on it a bit and that made things worse for naledi as she begged him to enter her ***

Naledi: heath please

Heath: please what

Naledi: I need you heath please

Heath: but im right here obim

she cried

Naledi: heath please I cant....

she didn't finish the sentence as he slammed into her hard and he started moving with a fast pace and that made naledi to lose her mind.... He went fast that even naledi couldn't catch his rhythm he was so deep that naledi felt like his dick was poking her womb as for heath he was in a zone lost in her that he even didn't realise that she came hard cause he fucked her through her orgasm with sweat all over his body busy mumbling shit.....he stopped and pulled out then he turned her around and spread her legs apart then he went down and started nibbling and sucking on her clit making her moan out loud.... After some time he stopped and pulled her to the edge of the bed again with her lower body floating on air with his big hands on her ass holding it tight and he slid into her as she held on tight to the duvet for balance and the nikka just pounded her nana hard fast and deeper

Heath: fuck your...shit your pussy is delicious obim

he said that fucking her hard with sweat dripping with his muscles tightened all over his body...after some time he felt her body tense up and he wasn't far too and he gave it his all and he fucked her hard with her screaming from the top of her lungs while he groaned from deeper down his throat

Heath: come...fuck come with me obim...come with me

Naledi: fuck im coming heath

Heath: let go obim

he said that feeling himself getting closer to the finishing line

Heath: let go naledi...let go baby

Naledi: HEATH YESS...FUCK YESSSSSSSSSS

she let go and an intense orgasm hit her hard and her body shook uncontrollably

Naledi: HEEEEAAATTTTHHH

she screamed out loud his name and heath went in and out of her three times and the fourth time he slammed into her hard while pushing in deeper and deeper as he shot his juices inside of her and he groaned out loud then he cursed

Heath: FUCKEN SHIT.....SHIT....SHIT...SHIT...

then he gasped for air for some time....he stood there for sometime with his knees shaking while looking down with sweat dripping from his body to naledi's body and also on the floor....he then raised his head and he found naledi's eyes closed

Heath: obim

she opened her eyes slowly

Heath: you good

she nodded then he pulled out slowly and he went to the bathroom and he came back with a towel and he cleaned both him and naledi and he carried her to the main bedroom all the way to the bathroom and they took a really quick shower and they lotioned and checked on Lesedi and she was sleeping peacefully..... they then got into bed and cuddled

Naledi: you were on fire neh

heath chuckled lightly with a tired voice

Heath: that was make up sex since you were mad at me and plus you said I should make you scream so I was just fulfilling your wish cause you know your wish is my command

she just giggled

Naledi: I don't think I'll be able to walk tomorrow and I have classes heath

Heath: that's what you get for getting mad at me

Naledi: bathong what will you do when I get angry at you

Heath: when or if

Naledi: when

Heath: so you believe you'll get angry at me

she nodded

Heath: I see I wasn't rough enough neh

she laughed

Naledi: im joking haw

Heath: you better be because I have an appetite for sex obim im just lenient with you for now but when the time comes mmmmh Im gonna do you until your knees break

naledi laughed and heath joined her

Heath: im serious obim I can fuck like nobody's business if you think that was intense then you aint seen nothing

Naledi: haaah heath

Heath: what? Eze is made to pee fuck and release babies

*** she laughed then it started to click that shes not on a pill or injection and they've been hitting it raw she sat up***

Naledi: shit... ooh my God heath

Heath: whats wrong obim

Naledi: we haven't used protection and im not on any contraceptives

Heath: ooh ok

naledi looked at him "wtf"

Naledi: did you hear what I just said heath

Heath: yep now come and sleep you have an early morning tomorrow

Naledi: heath we.....

he interrupted her

Heath: I heard you obim sha now come and sleep abeg

he pulled her to him and made her sleep on top of him and he brushed her back gently until they both fell asleep with naledi's heart heavy about the possibility of her falling pregnant..... as for heath all he wishes for is for his seed to be planted in her womb that's all nothing else matters

.

.

.

Voice: naledi!

the voice whispered but naledi didn't move or attempt to wake up but heath heard it and he opened his eyes and he looked around the room then he closed his eyes again

Voice: Lesedi!

it whispered again and heath heard it again and he opened his eyes and looked around the room

Voice: Lesedi! Tsoga nana (wake up)

***it whispered again and heath pushed naledi off him gently and he switched on the side lamp and sat up straight just then he felt a cold shiver running down his spine ***

Voice: Lesedi tsoga nana bula matlho (Lesedi wake up baby open your eyes)

heath continued to look around and immediately as Lesedi slowly opened her eyes she saw a scary figure right in front of her tiny face staring at her and a loud cry escaped her tiny lips and she closed her eyes and cried with her eyes closed and heath immediately saw a shadow next to lesedi's crib and it rushed to the wall and disappeared through the wall and he rushed to Lesedi and picked her up and she was busy crying from the top of her lungs with her eyes closed.....by now naledi was with heath trying to calm Lesedi down but she was just crying while shaking a bit

Heath: tell daddy what's wrong my princess what did you see mmmh what did you see

he said that rubbing her back as she held him tight with her tiny arms wrapped around his neck and as she cried with her tiny voice

Naledi: we should pray heath something is wrong...why doesn't she want to open her eyes

she said that with a breaking voice with tears gushing out

Heath: yeah lets pray obim

they both put their hands on her and they started praying hard they asked God to protect her and to cast away any evil spirit or demon that is troubling her or that scared her to burn to ashes with the blood of Jesus they prayed like they've never prayed before and by the time they both said Amen Lesedi was no longer crying she was only left with hiccups and her eyes were now opened..... Heath sat down on the bed and he put her on his lap and naledi brought her bottle and she stated sucking on it like her life depended on it

Naledi: its ok nonos wa mamagae neh its gonna be ok baby

she said brushing her back gently as heath just watched her with his jaws clenched feeling all sorts of emotions when those images of his princess crying and shaking and naledi breaking down like that

Heath: I heard a voice whispering your name first then lesedi's

Naledi: what

Heath: it kept on saying to her wake up and open your eyes and almost immediately she started crying out loud then I saw a shadow disappearing on the wall

tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them

Naledi: what's going on heath

she asked with a shaky voice

Heath: I don't know obim but im going to find out....its gonna be ok my love I'd rather die than to let anything happen to either you Lesedi or Omphile ok

she nodded and he pulled her closer and kissed her forehead.....they then got into bed the three of them since it was now around past 3 in the morning with Lesedi on heath's chest now sucking on her pacifier with naleidi brushing Lesedi back gently

Heath: you should rest obim

she shook her head and heath sighed

Heath: come closer and rest you head on my shoulder obim I want you to rest

Naledi: mmh mmh she might wake up and push me away again with a frown on her face

they both laughed lightly

Heath: she's already possessive over her dad

Naledi: mxm that dad is my man so she better learn to share

heath chuckled

13

INSERT...13

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Koko: YHOOOOOO

***she screamed out loud as she felt like someone poured acid on her skin ***

Koko: THUSA HLE....YHOOOO THUSANG(help please help)

she screamed out loud rubbing her skin roughly all over as felt burning sensations all over

Koko: TOKI...TOKI ETLA LEMETSI KEA TUKA (toki....toki bring water im burning)

***she screamed out loud to her tokoloshi(zombie)....then she heard a low groan outside her bedroom door ***

Koko: TOKI....TOKI WEEH THUSA(help)

***she called out to it and only a low groan was heard outside her bedroom door..... she continued to rub her skin roughly screaming out loud calling her "TOKI" but toki didn't come only a low groan was heard outside the door ***

.
. .
. .

**** he walked out of the house where the Stokvel was held heading back home with some of his friends they walked for some time then out of nowhere bullets were fired and his two friends fell down and he tried to run but he was also shot on his leg and he went down screaming with pain.....two guys got out of a black car that had no number plates and they grabbed him and dragged him to the car and they threw him in the boot and they got in and drove away leaving the other guys wounded on the gravel road..... after some time the car stopped moving and he heard doors opening and almost immediately the boot opened and he was roughly pulled out and thrown on the ground..... he looked around and he could see he was in the local dumping site with three guys he didn't recognise ****

Voice: well well well if it isn't the moeskond named thabo....howzit jou hond (how are you dog)

Thabo: who...who are you

****he said that with a voice full of fear ****

Voice: mmmh im naledi's brother in law

Thabo: what

Jabu: nevermind that man star(naledi) orechaetse ka dai dang o zamileng go e chinda mo yena(star told us about what you nearly did to her)

Thabo: sa yaka sfebe sele my bra (that bitch is lying my brother)

****he didn't see it coming cause jabu kicked him on his face hard making thabo to land on his back hard on the ground with two of his front teeth missing now****

Jabu: sfebe ke dai tobenare "witch" called jou ou'lady jou bliksem (a bitch is that witch called your mother you bastard)

****he said that pissed off****

Jabu: you thought you were man enough right trying to force yourself on a defenceless woman well right now show me how much of a man you are nx

****thabo didn't say anything but cry out ****

Jabu: bona nou oe tsenyeditse dilo ka go zama go e tseya ka force mo chering ya Caesar bari ke wena nx(look now you messed things up for yourself when you tried to rape Caesar's woman you fool)

****he said that and he shook his head ****

Thabo: im sorr...sorry bra yaka (my brother)

Jabu: you should be lucky Caesar is not here himself nja or else nkebe oechacharela now (dog or else you would be shitting yourself now)

Thabo: im sorry bra yaka asseblief (please) take me to the hospital im bleeding out bra yaka (my brother)

they laughed at him

Jabu: lae utlwa bari ee (dou hear this fool)

Guy1: eish Ghabadiya bosso ya di bosso raeutlwa (eish Ghabadiya boss amongst bosses we hear him)

Guy2: look at the way hes crying and shaking nx fucken pussy

they laughed

Jabu: sale ya tsoga vele or neo ipotsa gore o moja e robetse seshimane ke wena? (did it wake up or you told yourself that you'll fuck her even though its down you fucken pussy)

they laughed again

Guy1: nah Ghabadiya I don't think he can get it up

Jabu: he might surprise you dollarman or kanjani T.man (am I right thabo)

***they chuckled while thabo was just crying ***

Jabu: maybe he should strip and show us if he can get it up or not

Thabo: please man I need a doctor

Jabu: voetsek strip

thabo shook his head no and jabu kicked him on his chest and he fell back

Jabu: strip jou moeskond

dollarman took out his gun and pointed it at him

Dollar: fucken strip or I'll put a bullet on that tolili(dick) of yours

Thabo took off his clothes slowly while flinching with pain and jabu took out his phone and called heath

Heath: jabs

Jabu: how do you want him dead

Thabo: please man im sorry

he said that crying

Dollarman: voetsek shut up

Heath: cut off his dick and put it in his mouth then shoot him until there's no more bullets left in your gun

Jabu: damn

Heath: yeah no one and I mean no one hurts my mamiwota and gets away with it

Jabu: noted mshikaro

Heath: shap

they ended the call and jabu went to his car and took out gloves and a machete knife and thabo cried out loud when he saw the knife

Thabo: man please don't kill me please man

Jabu: a stern message from Caesar....no one hurts his mamiwota and gets away with it.... after meeting your maker come back as a ghost and warn that your mother and sister to speel ver (play far) from her or they'll experience the same shit if not worse

thabo just cried then jabu went down to his level and he grabbed thabo's dick and he cut it off and thabo screamed out loud with pain and jabu grabbed him by his small dreads pulling his head back and he roughly put the cut dick in his mouth pushing it deep down his throat with thabo gagging....he stood up and took off one glove and he pulled out his gun and he emptied his bullets on thabo then he bend down and stabbed thabo's left eye with the machete and he left it there then he took off the other glove and he threw them on top of thabo's clothes and dollarman went to the car and came back with a two litre bottle of paraffin and he poured it on the clothes and he burned them to ashes then they went to their cars and drove off as it started to rain*

.
. .
.

***in the morning Mamiki woke up with a banging headache after she had a night of extreme nightmares where she dreamed of herself drowning in a deep ocean infested by big sharks with extremely sharp teeth she was screaming out for help but non came and as she was about to give up she would wake up gasping for air then coughing out loudshe would go back to sleep and she would dream of the same dream and wake up when she was about to give up again gasping for air and coughing out loud so yep she had one scary night..... anyway she went to bath and after she was done she got dressed and quickly went to her mothers place to find out how things went last night and to tell her about her nightmare and when she got there she went in the yard and knocked on the door but no one came to open then she took out her spare keys and opened the door and she was met by an unpleasant odour in the house.... She called out for her mother but the no answer then she walked to her bedroom and she was met by a horrifying sight of TOKI laying next to her mother's bedroom door with an extremely burned skin.... his eyes were popped out and you could see that he was dead....she quickly opened her mother's door calling out her name and she was met by her mother on the floor looking like acid was poured on her skin....the shocking part was her night dress she was wearing was fine it wasn't burned or anything but her skin was burned and wrinkled it was scary sight.....well Mamiki wanted to

scream for help but then she thought of the dead TOKI outside the door and if people rushed in to see whats going on she would have a lot of explaining to do concerning him infact she might be burned alive by the mob since TOKI is a neighbours “dead” husband whom his mother turned into his slaving zombie cause she was jealous of the way he was taking care of his wife and kids so them walking in to see whats left of “him was gonna get her killed for sure.....so she sat on the bed not knowing what to do with tears flowing down her cheeks as she cried silently then her mother moved a bit while groaning with extreme pain and she quickly rushed to her****

.
. .

****HEATH****

*** well last night that dickhead called thabo or whatever the fuck his name is met his maker and im happy cause no one and I mean no one hurts obim and gets away with it....well now I woke up when I heard naledi quickly getting out of bed and she rushed to the bathroom***

Me: obim!

I called after her then I heard some noise in there and I quickly but gently put Lesedi down and I rushed there and I found her vomiting in there and I just brushed her back gently until she was done and she flushed and went to the basin and rinsed her mouth with water and with mouthwash too then she brushed her teeth...after she was done with me standing by the door watching her she wiped her mouth and attempted to walk pass me but I just grabbed her arm

Me: obim

she just shook her head no and she tried to wiggle her arm off my grip but I tightened the grip

Me: naledi

Naledi: let me go heath

it looked like she wanted to cry

Me: talk to me

Naledi: I have nothing to say

Me: naledi

Naledi: what is there to talk about heath huh....what? you want to talk about the fact that I might be pregnant the fact that I just disappointed myself again..... how could I be so careless heath heh I knew im not on any contraceptives and I just.....

I interrupted her

Me: naledi.... First of all if you are pregnant we will go through it together and I hope you are not comparing me to that dickhead ex of yours who told you to abort princess and if you even think of killing my child naledi I'll kill you myself you dey hear me

she swallowed

Me: I said you dey hear me

I said that with a firm voice and she nodded

Me: good now after your classes we will go see a doctor to confirm ok

Naledi: im...im not going to attend

Me: Lesedi is ok obim you just cant miss your classes cause you doing part time if it was a full time course it would've been better

Naledi: but heath i....

Me: obim Lesedi is safe with me you know I'll never let anything happen to her look we will drop you off at school and go shopping then come pick you up after your classes ok

she sighed

naledi: ok let me go so I can get ready

*** she said that with a low tone and I just pulled her closer and I perked her lips ***

Me: I love you

she sighed

Naledi: I love you too

Me: its gonna be ok naledi I love you so much and if its true that we are expecting we will get through it together ok

she nodded

Me: you have nothing to worry about believe me cause I aint going nowhere

Naledi: you promise

she asked that with teary eyes

Me: I promise obim in fact I swear on everything and everyone I hold dear that I'll never leave you or let you go

she smiled looking down

Me: im not even gonna lie to you obim if it happens that we are pregnant I will throw a party and celebrate knocking you up

Naledi: bathong heath

Me: im being honest here

I said that smiling at her then I kissed her again and she went to shower while I went to make breakfast for me Lesedi and her Lesedi and her well I made oats for her and princess and a proper breakfast for myself.....after I was done I went back to the bedroom and she had a towel wrapped around her body and she was busy wiping princess with another towel....mmh so she bathed her too ok anyway I sat on the couch and I watched her lotion her and dressed her then she came close with her and gave her to me and she took off the towel and lotioned fuck Eze got hard instantly....well after she was done she got dressed in a blue skinny jean with a white vest and a gold necklace and a pair of sneakers and her ass and hips in the jean *** I whistled damn.....she looked simple but sexy as fuck eish now I regret forcing her to go attend imagine those small small fuckboys lusting over whats mine chai mxm I dey swear I go kill somebody oooo..... anyway she wore a blond wig that covered her forehead you know those wigs that cover your forehead the ones women with big foreheads like to wear mos..yah those ones...and she wore her glasses and she put on a nude lipstick... she looked beautiful no lies eish but the way her jean was hugging her ass and those hips wasn't sitting well with me anyway we went to the lounge and I fed princess while she ate and afterwards I also ate and we washed the dishes and left.... We finally arrived outside her school premises and I pulled her closer and we kissed with my hand rubbing her ass and squeezing it here and there***

Me: I love you

I said that after we broke the kiss

Naledi: I love you too heath

Me: don't stress about anything ok

she nodded and I kissed her forehead and she got out and opened the back door and she kissed Lesedi all over her face which made her to giggle then she closed the door and came to the driver side and stood outside the door leaning forward on the opened window

Naledi: take care of her ok and if she gives you trouble call me

Me: ok obim

Naledi: I love you ok both of you

***I smiled like a retard ***

Me: I love you more obim both of you

she rolled her eyes and perked my lips then she walked away and I whistled looking at her bum and she turned and laughed then she continued to walk towards the entrance gate

Me: take care of my son ok

***I shouted at her and she turned again smiled while shaking her head and she continues to walk away with her ass swinging from side to side driving me absolutely insane and making Eze

to twitch..... I watched her walking away then some boy rushed to her and he started talking to her.....you see you see now nx..... I felt a ping of jealousy and anger taking over then I took my phone and dialled her number and I saw her taking her phone out of her bag and answering it***

Naledi: babe

I smiled cause she has never called me that before

Me: tell that fuckboy to leave your sight now or I'll rip off his balls with my bare hands

she quickly turn and I felt her swallow over the phone

Naledi: ohk

Me: good

then I dropped the call and I saw her saying something to the guy pointing back at my car and the guy said something to her but she just ignored him and quickly walked away

.
. .
. .
. .

NARRATED

*** after heath dropped off naledi he drove straight to his grandparents house he arrived there and parked the car and got out and he opened the door and got back in the car and drove in then he got out and went to close the gate then he went back to the car and opened the back door and took Lesedi out who was sleeping and he also took out her baby bag and he walked in with her in his arms and he found her granny in the lounge drinking tea***

Gogo: shaka

she said that with a huge smile on her face

Heath: gogo

she stood up and met him half way and he bend down and kissed her forehead and gogo took a peak at Lesedi and she smiled and looked up at heath

Gog: im proud of you my boy

heath smiled wide and they went to sit down

Heath: how are you sthandwa sam

gogo laughed

Gogo: im good my son and you

Heath: im good too so where is everyone

Gogo: your grandfather went to a community meeting at the community hall and your lazy nephews are still sleeping at the backrooms

Heath: and Mkhulu left you all alone

Gogo: hai suka am I a small child

heath laughed

Gogo: whats wrong my son talk to me

***heath sighed ***

Heath: I love naledi gogo and im afraid that love is turning into a dangerous obsession

Gogo: mmmh shes one of a kind neh

heath chuckled

Heath: you have no idea

Gogo: try to control yourself shaka cause with the pace you are on you gonna end up like one of those obsessive partners who end up stalking their women left right and centre and we don't want that do we

heath just sighed and gogo rubbed lesedi's back gently then she stopped with her eyes closed.....she then opened them and looked at heath with a frown

Gogo: what happened to this child shaka

Heath: I don't understand gogo

Gogo: what did she see

heath kept quiet for a bit then he sighed when events of the previous night played on his mind

Heath: I don't know what she saw but I heard a voice calling her mother then her then I also saw a shadow near her crib then it disappeared on the wall as she was crying loud

Gogo: nkosi yam abantu baya thakakatha struu(my God some people are witches straight)

Heath: gogo

Gogo: its her grandmother and her mother is also involved.....no matter what happens Shaka never ever let her go back to that place ok

heath nodded looking worried

Gogo: promise me

Heath: I promise gogo

Gogo: and never let anyone or anything come between you cause believe me son its still going to rain hard but if you keep praying and holding on to each other nothing and no one will succeed in breaking the two of you

Heath: gogo is someone trying to break naledi and i

Gogo: that girl I don't like and her mother will try and other people too

heath sighed loudly feeling pain in his heart when the thought of him and naledi breaking up washed over his mind

Gogo: her gift is rare and beautiful and what I love about it is if you treat her good and make her happy you will receive unlimited blessing from above and live like a king you are but if you hurt her or let her go once you've tasted it you will suffer tremendously my boy

Heath: gogo what are you talking about

Gogo: this child saw something she was not supposed to see

***she said that changing the subject and heath sighed cause he knew once she changes the topic that's it ***

Gogo: come with me

she said getting up and slowly walking towards the passage that led to the bedrooms and heath followed her with Lesedi in his arms.... They got in her bedroom and she told heath to put Lesedi on the bed and she went to her walk in closet and she came back with a bottle of holy water and a bottle of anointing oil and she went to the bed

Gogo: take off her clothes

***heath did until Lesedi was left with her pampers.....she only wears them when they are not at home or at night ***

Gogo: I know we shouldn't be doing this without her mother's consent but my son that evil spirit was send to make her sick to a point that naledi was gonna be left with no choice but to go back home to seek help from those evil people and that will be the end for the two of you and more

heath swallowed hard

Heath: im sure naledi wont mind gogo cause we are saving our daughter

then gogo lotioned the sleeping Lesedi then she woke up and immediately when her eyes landed on heath she raised her small hands for him to take her and heath did

Gogo: she loves you the bond you two share is unbreakable and amazing at such short period of time

Heath: yeah you'd swear we share the same blood

he said that sitting on the edge of the bed with Lesedi on his lap and his grandmother also sat down next to him

Gogo: so when are you marrying her

heath sighed

Heath: trust me I can even marry her today but her family doesn't like me in fact I don't think they'll even accept my lobola and as for my side you know how your daughter is (his mother) im sure she wont accept naledi because shes albino

gogo sighed

Gogo: this are one of the challenges I was talking about

Heath: I cant lose her gogo I really cant I think I'll go mad if that happens and plus I suspect that shes pregnant

***gogo smiled ***

Gogo: and he'll survive.....this time you'll hold you son in your arms and see him grow up

heath smiled wide

Heath: so its true shes pregnant

***gogo shrug her shoulders ***

Heath: but sthandwa sam you just said he'll survive

Gogo: old age is messing with my head did I say that

she said that smiling and she stood up and heath laughed

Gogo: remember shaka as long as there's good in this world there's also evil so don't just relax when it comes to your new found family cause remember what I said naledi is blessed and she doesn't even know it and shes your soulmate so whatever life may throw at you never let her go shaka cause if you do you'll never know peace in your life

heath looked at his granny who was looking into space and he swallowed hard

Gogo: it wont be easy my grandson but always know that there's light at the end of the tunnel and once you reach it only happiness and everlasting peace will be what you and naledi experience until God remembers you two

Heath: gogo why are you talking like this

Gogo: cause shaka you have a rare gem that people are searching for why do you think her grandmother and mother want her to come back home..... because they know how blessed she is and they are using her blessings for evil purposes and selfish reasons you are the only person who is entitled to those blessing and you shouldn't let anyone take what is meant to be yours do you understand me

Heath: yes gogo

Gogo: good now dress her up and lets go back to the living room

Heath: ok

***he dressed her up and they went back to the living room and gogo took lesedi's bottle that was filled with water and she poured half of the water inside the sink in the kitchen and she

poured the holy water inside her baby bottle filling it up and she went back to the living room and she gave the bottle to heath and he helped Lesedi drink the water***

Gogo: she's gonna be ok you and her mother should continue to pray and the devil will be put to shame

Heath: Amen

well they spend hours with her granny and granddad and jabu who came after heath told him where he is...as for Lesedi she was all over the house moving things around in the house causing havoc everywhere you'd swear that was her father's house as she walked around with the dstv remote on her hand and busy moving things and screaming to anyone who tried to move back the things.....anyway later they had to go pick mommy up and they said their goodbyes with heath's grand parents telling heath to come back with her soon...anyway they left and went to pick mommy up and as soon as she got in the car and saw how dirty Lesedi was she looked at heath with her eyes popped out and heath laughed

Naledi: what happened

heath: kiss me first haw

***she rolled her eyes and leaned in and they smooched ***

Heath: I missed you obim

Naledi: I missed you too now tell me what happened to your princess

heath chuckled

Heath: you think shes dirty mmmh you should see my grandparent's house then obim

he laughed

Heath: yeses she was a busy madam today moving things around I mean she was even owning the dstv remote control not wanting anyone to touch it

naledi laughed

Naledi: you were with your grandparents?

heath nodded

Heath: they love her obim she practically entertained us since we got there that's why she's sleeping like a drunk woman now shes exhausted

naledi smiled and her eyes filled with tears and heath immediately frowned

Heath: whats wrong obim

Naledi: the love you and your family is showing Lesedi and I is just amazing heath what have we done to deserve all this love....if its not you its Thandi and jabu now its your grandparents

Heath: you deserve all this love obim cause I love you and that you are my soulmate so you deserve all this love and more

she smiled wide and heath leaned in and perked her lips and he started the car and drove to the doctor and when they got there they got out with Lesedi on naledi's arms and they went inside and heath filled in the form and they waited for their turn since they didn't make an appointment well the queue wasn't long so they didn't wait that long.....naledi's name was called and they went inside and exchanged greetings with the doctor and they sat down

Doctor: how can I help you good people

Heath: we are pregnant so we're here to just confirm it

naledi looked at him like "wtf" but he just ignored her

Doctor: mmmh ok so you did a home pregnancy test

Naledi: no doctor

***she said that looking at heath ***

Doctor: then how do you know you are pregnant

Heath: cause I know what I planted in her womb

the doctor laughed while shaking his head

Naledi: bathong heath

Heath: what...im the farmer and your womb is my farm so Im telling you that I planted my seed in there and whatever I planted is growing

***the doctor laughed and naledi gave heath a bored look and heath kissed her cheek with a smile on his face ***

Doctor: well then lets not argue with the farmer..... miss Mogapi lets go in there to check and see if the farmer is telling the truth

***heath and the doctor laughed while naledi just shook her head she gave the sleeping Lesedi to heath and they went to the other room along with heath and naledi laid on the bed and she pulled her vest up and heath clenched his jaws frowning looking at naledi and at the doctor and naledi just rolled her eyes.... Then the doctor switched on the monitor and he applied the cold gel on naledi's lower stomach and he moved some device on top of it and immediately they heard a very strong and loud heart beat on the monitor thing ***

Doctor: you better give this farmer a bells cause he knows his stuff

they laughed

Doctor: im sure you can hear that

naledi nodded with tears in her eyes as for heath he stood there with his jaws clenched fight back his tears

Doctor: well you are pregnant miss Mogapi and the baby looks healthy and his heartbeat is also strong....congratulations

well after they were done with the doctor they left going passed the pharmacy to buy the prescribed vitamin pills for mommy to be then they drove straight home with silence filling the car and heath holding naledi's hand tight while driving..... they soon arrived at home and they went up and put Lesedi on the bed and immediately heath pulled naledi to him and he wrapped his arms around her tight

Heath: thank you obim....thank you so much

*** he kept on saying that over and over with a breaking voice which made naledi to sob on his chest***

Heath: thank you obim... I love you so much...thank you for carrying my seed

*** he said that now with tears running down his cheeks still holding naledi tight***

14

INSERT...14

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Mamiki rushed to her and knelt next to her

Mamiki: mama... mma what happened toki is dead mama what happened who did this to you

she asked crying

Koko: le...se...di

Mamiki: heh

Koko: le...se...di

Mamiki: what about Lesedi

Koko: I... mmmh

she groaned in pain

Koko: call...Mam..nisi

Mamiki: ooh ok

she quickly took her mother's phone and called Mamnisi and after the third ring she answered

Mamnisi: Hunadi

Mamiki: it's not her Mamnisi ke Mamiki

Mamnisi: ok Mamiki o Kae (where is) Hunadi

Mamiki: I came to check on her and I found her with burned skin and toki dead

Mamnisi sighed

Mamnisi: mmao ga utlwelle ge motho a mo warner man mamiki (your mother doesn't listen when some one warns her man Mamiki)

Mamiki: what happened

Mamnisi: higher powers hit back when she tried to bewitch your daughter and granddaughter I told her what might happen if she continued with her plan but I guess she didn't listen to my warnings

Mamiki: antlek what's so special with them heh

Mamnisi: the fact that your business was booming when she was around and now your business is falling apart because she's not around should answer your question

Mamiki: mxm so what should I do with mama and toki

Mamnisi: at midnight take toki to the back and pour petrol on him and burn him to ashes then take his ashes and flush them down the toilet and after you are done with all that bring Hunadi to my house and I'll see what I can do to help her

Mamiki: ok I'll call you when I'm outside your gate

Mamnisi: ok shap

Mamiki: thokoza gogo

then they ended the call and Mamiki helped her mother up and laid her on the bed slowly with her screaming with pain then she opened the windows for fresh air to get in she then went to the kitchen and came back with a refuse bag and put toki inside and she went to take an air freshner and she sprayed the whole house then she took the plastic and she went to put the it in her mother's room

Koko: what...what's...in...there

Mamiki: toki

Koko: huh

Mamiki: toki is dead mama

Koko: ha...hai man Mamiki

Mamiki: oswile toki (toki is dead)

*** then she walked out leaving her mother crying for her toki she has been toki's master for years and years even before naledi was born and he's been loyal to her and never caused her problems

.

.

.

*** it was now the middle of the night and Mamiki did what Mamnisi said she should do with toki even though the smell of human flesh was all over the air luckily it was in the middle of the night...after she was done she put the ashes in a bucket and she went to pour it in the toilet and she rinsed the bucket and poured the dirty water inside the toilet and she flushed it and went to pack a bag for her mother and she went to put it in the boot of her car and she went inside and came out helping her mother to walk to the car and after she was inside she went to lock up and she opened the gate and drove out then she parked and got out then she went to lock the gate and she drove away going to mamnisi's house***

.
. .

the following morning she was sitting outside with a cup of tea in her hand thinking about the recent even that had befallen her and her mother until her phone disturbed her from her thoughts

Mamiki: hello

Voice: suster ke bhiza (sister its bhiza)

Mamiki: bhiza?

Bhiza: Thabo's friend suster

Mamiki: ooh ok

Bhiza: eish suster I don't know how to tell this but eish...

Mamiki: bhiza what is it

Bhiza: ke Thabo suster (its Thabo sister)

Mamiki: what has he done now

Bhiza: eish o bhodile suster (he's dead sister)

Mamiki: askies? (sorry?)

Bhiza: they found him shot multiple times and stabbed too with his private part cut off and put in his mouth he was naked suster

Mamiki: bhiza no...don't say that tuu please say you are joking

Bhiza: im not joking suster Thabo o bhodile le magata a mo le government mortuary (Thabo is dead even the police are here and so is the government mortuary)

Mamiki: modimo waka (my God) nooo bhiza.... God nooo

she cried and bhiza just sighed

Bhiza: etla mo dumping side ya mo di EF...sharp (come to the dumping side of block EF)

then he ended the call and Mamiki continued to cry then Mamnisi came out when she heard her loud cries and she sighed as she knew what she was crying about

Mamnisi: there was nothing that could have been done to prevent his death his fate was decided the moment he tried to rape your daughter

Mamiki: no Mamnisi he doesn't deserve to die like that

Mamnisi: it could have been worse believe me when I say that

Mamiki continued to cry and Mamnisi just rubbed her back

Mamiki: mama won't recover from this Mamnisi she wont

***Mamnisi just sighed ***

.
. .
.

****HEATH****

*** it's been two nights and three days since we found out we are expecting and im just over the moon the way im so happy you'd swear I won lotto or something I mean I can't even stop smiling im just happy man.... and last night was amazing with obim we made love like nobody's business almost the whole night and im glad she's not going anywhere today she called in sick cause I really showed her flames last night and early this morning so she really needs her rest and im also glad when I told her about what gran and I did for Lesedi she didn't throw tantrums or flip out she said the fact that I told her it means we didn't have any bad intensions towards Lesedi and that she knows I'll never hurt my princess so she understands and im not gonna lie that made me happy the fact that she trusts me with Lesedi brought joy into my heart. Anyway I think it's time I formally introduced her to Omphile as my girlfriend and the only woman I want to spend the rest of my life with well my princess's cries through the baby monitor disturbed me from my thoughts and I rushed there because I didn't want her to wake mommy but I was too late cause mommy dearest was sitting up on the bed with my princess in her arms***

Me: morning

Naledi: hey

I perked her lips and forehead and kissed Lesedi's forehead too and when she saw me she raised her arms to me and I took her then naledi quickly got out of bed and ran to the bathroom and I heard her throw up...eish that broke my heart soon after the toilet flushed and soon after I heard the shower running.... I decided to take Lesedi to the lounge and I went to the kitchen and I cooked oats for all of us and I fed her then naledi walked in looking much better and she kissed my cheek and sat down

Naledi: morning

Me: morning baby...I made oats

she smiled

Naledi: ok thanks...ummm should I dish up for you too

I nodded and she stood up and went to the kitchen*

.

.

.

we were now lazing around in the lounge watching tv well she was watching tv and I was busy brushing and kissing her belly while princess was playing on the floor with her toys

Me: did I tell you how happy I am

she smiled looking at me

Naledi: mmmmh

she said that nodding

Me: already I can't wait to hold him in my arms

Naledi: him?

I nodded

Naledi: what if it's a she

Me: I know what I planted in here obim so believe me when I say it's a he

***she laughed**

Naledi: ok Mr farmer

I laughed and kissed her flat belly again and I rubbed it.... Fuck im gonna be a father again and this time I believe my child will make it just like my granny said he will and I can't wait damn..... my phone rang it was jabu

Me: javas

Jabu: mshikaro

Me: Fider (how are you)

Jabu: hai grand and jy

Me: im good my brotha

I said it with a Nigerian accent

Jabu: o busy

Me: ummm im just chilling with obim and princess

Jabu: ooh ok so o ka kgona go shapa dry mo dladleng la ka (can you come to my house)

Me: ok....time ?

Jabu: nou

Me: ok o grand javas (are you ok jabu)

Jabu: wena zwakala and ke tla go chaela gore dintshang (just come and I'll tell you)

Me: ok ka zwakala (ok im coming)

Jabu: ok shap

Me: shap

***then we ended the call and I sighed.... Jabu sounded somehow I wonder what's wrong ***

Naledi: are you sure you are Nigerian

***I chuckled ***

Me: yeah 100% sure

Naledi: the way you speak your tsotsi taal is just amazing

Me: my mother is south African obim so it's in my genes

she laughed

Naledi: you should teach me your father's language is it Igbo or Yoruba

I looked at her with a raised eyebrow and a smile on my face

Naledi: what.... I watch Nigerian movies haw

I laughed then I kissed her cheek.... Damn I love my mamiwota

Me: he's Igbo obim

Naledi: ok you should teach me Igbo then so that when we are alone we will talk it

I chuckled

Me: for real

***she nodded and I perked her lips ***

Me: I love you

Naledi: I love you too nnaye

I just busted out with loud laughter and she joined me

Naledi: its what they say in the movies mos

I kissed her lips again and continued to laugh until I managed to calm down

Me: ok... ummm obim I need to rush to jabu's place he wants to see me

Naledi: ooh ok

I kissed her cheek

Me: I won't be long ok he seemed a bit off so maybe he wants someone to talk to

Naledi: its ok nnaye

I chuckled

Me: rather call me onye m

Naledi: ok what does that mean

Me: my one

she smiled wide

Naledi: ok onye m he seemed a bit off so maybe he wants someone to talk to

Naledi: its ok nnaye

I chuckled

Me: rather call me onye m

Naledi: ok what does that mean

Me: my one

she smiled wide

Naledi: ok onye m I'll see you later

I swear I smiled like a retard I remember lerato hated it when I spoke Igbo or even pidgin in front of her in fact she would flip and now naledi 'my star' actually wants to learn it.... Now I see why gogo said she's one of a kind

Me: ok obim

***I perked her lips and her belly ***

Me: a huru m gi n'anya obi m

she frowned

Naledi: mmmmh

I chuckled

Me: I said I love you my heart

she blushed

Naledi: I want to reply you in Igbo

I smiled wide

Me: ok say A HUKWARA M GI N'ANYA

Naledi: ok ummm a hukware gi....

Me: no no no a hukwara.... M.... gi.... N'anya

I said it slow so she gets it

Naledi: ok a hukwara m gi n'anya.... Did I get it right?

*** she said it slow and I nodded and she squealed with excitement and I laughed while Lesedi also laughed clapping her hands as if she understands what's going on***

Naledi: a hukwara m gi n'anya onye m (I love you too my one)

***fuck I blushed and she laughed and I just smashed my lips on hers and we kissed.... After some time we pulled out and I stood up with Eze up and hard ***

Me: you see what you're doing to me

she just blushed and I fixed myself and I kissed her forehead and bend down and kissed lesedi's cheek and I got up and picked up my car keys and I walked to the door and the little princess started to cry I turned and she was raising her hands up at my directed

Lesedi: dada ntjiye

she wanted to say "daddy/ dad take me"

Naledi: dada wa bowa nana ok (daddy is coming back baby)

***she got up and rushed to me crying and she hugged my legs and I picked her up with naleli laughing ***

Naledi: ba rile tshela ka teaspoon and wena wa tshela ka lebekere ankere (they said pour "it" (love potion) in with a teaspoon and you decided to pour it in with a cup... right)

***then she laughed ***

Me: mxm stop laughing and go prepare her baby bag

she stood up still laughing and she went to the bedroom and she came back with the bag and prepared her rooibos tea bottle and some snacks for her and she kissed both our cheeks and we left

.
. .

**** NARRATED****

heath and Lesedi arrived at Jabu's place and he hit the bell and the gate opened then he drove in and parked then he got out with Lesedi with her bag and he went inside and he found Jabu sitting in the lounge eating and he sat next to him with Lesedi on his lap and they greeted each other with heath taking a piece of meat on his plate

Jabu: and then why o hakile lebrakane (why did you come with her)

heath laughed

Heath: eeh my bra as I was leaving she started crying for me so I had to bring her along

he chuckled

Jabu: ntlhana ya teaspoon was enough mshikaro not bakete e yotlhe haw (a tip of a teaspoon was enough shaka not the whole bucket)

we both laughed out loud then his princess stood on his lap and hugged his neck with her pacifier on her mouth

Jabu: wa bona (you see)

they laughed some more

Heath: leave us alone please shes also my princess

Jabu: how is the first princess

Heath: shes good I talked to her last night and she sounded down so I'll go see her tomorrow after work... I want to introduce naledi to her formally as my woman and then I can propose having her stay with me and naledi permanently in my house since im planning to propose to naledi

Jabu: did you talk to naledi about it

Heath: I'll talk to her tonight

Jabu: ok

Heath: so what's wrong you sounded offish when you called

naledi was now laying on his chest

Jabu: after dealing with that bastard that nearly hurt your mamiwota I decided to put two of my guys to watch whats happening in dai magriza's (that old woman's) house and yesterday they brought me feedback on that and they said two nights ago naledi's mother came in the morning and she never left the house or went outside since she arrived then in the middle of the night they saw a huge fire burning in the backyard and a smell of human flesh all over the air and they were sure it was coming from that fire then after the fire went down after some time the main front door opened and she got out of the house with a huge traveling bag and she put it in the car boot and went inside and came out with someone limping and walking slowly and she helped the person inside the car and she locked up and they drove out and went straight to wintervelt and guess where they went to
Heath: where?

Jabu: to some well known witchdoctor and im calling her a witchdoctor cause we once went to her before I went to suncity (jail) for some strengthening before we went and bombed that ATM were we got caught afterwards.....that woman is a witch mshikaro I remember she send me a message when I was inside ko suncity (at jail) and she said she can help me get out and have the case against me disappear into thin air but the was a sacrifice I had to make

Heath: what

Jabu: I had to bring my mother's head to her after I was out I had to kill her myself then cut off her head and take it to her

Heath: WHAT....TELL ME YOU ARE JOKING

Jabu: im not my bra I refused ofcourse and that's why I spend 15 years inside and two years outside on parole

Heath: fuck...

he said that with a low voice minding Lesedi

Jabu: I couldn't bafo my mother is my pillar of strength joh you know how she was there for me and my son when I was in there she came and visited me for those 15 years I was in there praying with me every time with you sending me money for protection for those 15 years...

***then he breathed out loud ***

Jabu: and im asking myself what does your mother in law and im sure that was naledi's grandmother who was helped inside the car doing there

Heath: eish.....and again why was the granny limping and walking slow and what or rather who did they burn in that backyard

Jabu: I wonder too

Heath: did they find that bastard's body

Jabu: yeah

then he laughed

Jabu: the rumour is that he was caught cheating with someone's wife or girlfriend and the husband is the one that did that to him

they laughed

Heath: and im sure this whole " he was caught cheating " rumour is because of his cut off dick that you placed in his mouth neh

he nodded and they laughed

.
. .

MJ: heh its clear mom that you don't know your son

Mom: hai keep quiet junior what do you know you are just a child and I know my son

MJ laughed

MJ: his gonna be mad...no no no mad is an understatement he's gonna show you flames when he learns what you are up to believe me

Mom: why are you here if you not gonna support this...in fact you are just a child so keep quiet

MJ: well I know my brother thank you very much mother and believe me when I say all hell will break lose when he finds out you married a woman for him...dad tell him

Dad: its what's best for him Michael

MJ: what's best for him is him choosing the woman he wants to marry

Mom: junior just go do your homework or something cause this doesn't even concern you

MJ: it concerns me cause he's my brother

Dad: MICHAEL!

he stood up while shaking his head

MJ: you know at first I thought I was gonna snitch on you two to him but then again if he calls you yelling and stuff you'll know im the snitch and you might ground me and take away my phone and play station so I'll just wait and watch as hell will be brought down to earth just for the two of you and your brothers dad cause that's what will happen ooo..... mh anyway good luck

he said that and walked away while whistling well him and heath are close and he told him he has found the one and he wants to marry her and he's even supposed to meet her during school holidays he's going to fly to south Africa and spend his holidays there with him and now their parents just married a Nigerian wife for him without his knowledge even though they know how stubborn hard headed and heartless he is when he wants to and they still went ahead and did this....mmmmh

15

INSERT.....15

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

**** heath and jabu chilled some more then heath's phone rang it was Omphile***

Heath: princess

Omphile: daddy please come and take me

she said that crying and the was some shouting in the background

Voice: YES CALL YOUR FATHER TO COME AND TAKE YOUR DISRESPECFUL ASS OUT OF HERE IM TIRED OF YOU AND YOUR STINKING ATTITUDE..... YOUR PARENTS ARE SLEEPING WELL AT NIGHT WHILE WE HAVE TO DEAL WITH YOU NX.... VOETSEK TSAMAYA (GO)

heath stood up with a frown on his face

Heath: Omphile what's wrong who's that person busy shouting in the background

Omphile: its aunty Portia..... daddy please come...please

*** she said that crying some more and heath started breathing heavily***

Heath: ok im coming right now ok

Omphile: ok

***they ended the call ***

Jabu: what's wrong

Heath: its Omphile she's crying saying I should come and pick her up and someone in the background is busy shouting at her and insulting her

Jabu: I hope they are not abusing her

Heath: if then I'll burn that house down nx they clearly don't know me..... let me go

Jabu: lets go

*** jabu picked lesedi's bag and heath picked Lesedi up who was busy arranging things on the table and jabu locked up and heath buckled Lesedi up and they both got in the with jabu driving and they drove to omphile's grandparents' house***

.
.

*** they arrived and heath got out and took Lesedi out then they locked the car and went inside with jabu they knocked on the door and the grandmother opened and they greeted and the went inside to the lounge and they sat down***

Gran: who's this beautiful girl

Heath: my daughter Lesedi ma Omphile called me crying saying I should come pick her up what's going on

Voice: I'll tell you what is going on

it was the aunt

Gran: Portia hai man

Jabu: please call Omphile to come and sit in on this ma

the grandmother went to call Omphile and Portia sat down

Portia: did I hear you right that she's your daughter I don't remember Omphile saying you have another child

heath just kept quiet ignoring her he knows she's a trouble maker so if he entertains her things won't end well cause already he's pissed off as to who made his baby girl cry

Portia: yho ok can I at lease hold her

Heath: no

Portia: bathong (gosh)

***the granny walked in with Omphile who's eyes where swollen and red and heath clenched his jaws with a scary frown on his face she sat in between heath and jabu and heath pulled her to him and kissed the side of her head ***

Jabu: now can you all tell us what's going on

Gran: Omphile here has been disrespectful to her mother and she even made accusations concerning her step father

Heath: what accusations

Portia: that he touches her ass and makes nasty comments where else the truth is she doesn't like him im sure she still thinks you and Tsholofelo will get back together and be a family that's why she's trying to destroy my sister's marriage

Jabu: wait let me get this straight your granddaughter and wena your niece was touched inappropriately by that bastard and instead of believing her you are busy throwing stones at her

Portia: she's trying to break my sister's marriage

Heath: princess go and pack everything that belongs to you you are not an orphan you hear me your father is a multimillionaire and you won't suffer while im still alive you dey hear

she nodded while wiping her tears

Jabu: go and pack pumpkin.....take everything that belongs to you

she nodded again and stood up

Jabu: call me if you need help ok

Omphile: ok lume(uncle)

***she walked away and Portia clicked her tongue and heath looked at her with an angry face ***

Heath: Omphile!

she came back and heath stood up and he gave her Lesedi who didn't even cry or anything she gladly let Omphile take her

Heath: go with her

she nodded and walked away

Heath: so my daughter tells you that her mother's husband touched her inappropriately and all you can say is she's trying to break their stupid marriage

he said that with a firm voice

Gran: papa Omphile it's not like that

Portia: it's like that mama

Gran: Portia man!

Portia: no mama that spoiled little brat told my sister on her face to choose between her and her husband who does she think she is

Heath: VOETSEK... YOU'RE HERE TALKING AND DEFENDING TSHOLO'S MARRIAGE WHERE ELSE YOUR'S FAILED MISERABLY WHICH IM SURE IS BECAUSE YOU KEEP MINDING OTHER PEOPLES BUSINESS INSTEAD OF YOURS WHICH MAN DO YOU THINK CAN TOLERATE THAT NONESENSE

she looked at him with a pained and angry look

Portia: HOW DARE YOU

Heath: the father of the same spoiled brat is the one who makes sure you eat the same money your mother gives to you to buy grocery in this house is the same money I send to her for the same spoiled brat's upkeep what does your sister do for you huh more over what does she do for Omphile
the granny was now crying

Portia: you are a bastard heath you hear me

Heath: a bastard is that child you tried to pin on your ex but luckily he saw right through you nx

Granny: hai papa Omphile

*** as for Jabu he just laughed***

Heath: Ma that daughter in there is mine you hear me.... if all of you were tired of her you should have just told me and I would have gladly come and took her

Granny: papa Omphile its not like that Omphile has been disrespectful lately she doesn't even wash the dishes or help-out in the house anymore all she does is lock herself in her room

Jabu: and have you asked her what's wrong and why she's acting like that

Portia: do we look like psychologists to you

Jabu: wabona wena tikilaine ova le nna gape ekare o ko toilet wa nnya and ke tlo go bontsha marago a noga

Gran: Portia didimala man please

Portia: no mama these bastards come to my father's house and I should let them insult me

Heath: ooh the same house I renovated with my fucken money so that the same spoiled brat doesn't stay in that tin house you had before...Ma im disappointed in you you promised to take care of Omphile and now she tells you that her step dad touched her inappropriately and you don't believe her instead you defend Tsholofelo and her useless husband the same Tsholofelo that does nothing for you

Gran: papa Omphile your daughter still has the crazy idea that you and her mother someday you will get back together and be a family that's why she's lying against her

Jabu: wow.... mshikaro kganthe go etsagalang ka bo magriza ba batsatsi aa....first it was dai twebenare and nou ke oo

Heath: well let's see if you'll continue eating polonies Vienna's cheese and chicken every day after I leave with my spoiled brat

Jabu: o sa tlo shapiwa ke pap le morogo from now on

Gran: papa Omphile tlhaloganya tuu

Portia: wena o nagana gore o jeso neh

Jabu: ofcourse ne ele jeso wa gao askere ne a romela 6 block every month for Omphile so from now on no more 6 block

Heath: OMPHILE!

he called out to her and after some time she came out holding Lesedi

Heath: your bags

Omphile: they are in the bedroom daddy

Lesedi raised he arms to heath and he took her

Jabu: don't worry I'll go take them

he went to take them and he went to put them in the boot of the car

Jabu: a re vaiyeng (lets go)

Gran: Omphile

Omphile just walked out with tears running down her cheeks and heath and jabu followed her

Portia: TSAMAYANG MAN NX NONSENSE

.

.

.

heath dropped jabu and Omphile at his house and he went to the apartment with Lesedi to talk to her he opened the door and walked holding the now sleeping Lesedi

Naledi: hey you back

Heath: ummm yeah and little miss princess is asleep I'll go put her down

Naledi: ok

he went to put her down and he took a deep breath then he went to naledi nervous as hell about the bomb he's about to drop on her he kissed her forehead and sat next to her

Naledi: is jabu ok

Heath: umm yeah

he cleared his throat

Heath: obim there's something I want to discuss with you

Naledi: ok.... You look nervous what's wrong

he sighed

Heath: umm Omphile called while I was at jabu's place crying that I should come take her and jabu and I rushed there and when we got there her gran and aunt started talking shit and stuff they said she said her step dad touched her inappropriately and that she's lying

then he sighed

Heath: the thing is I want Omphile to move in with us me you and Lesedi

naledi swallowed hard

Heath: I know its too much and too soon obim but the thing is she's my daughter obim and I can't let her down she needs me obim and its long overdue now it's time to be a full-time father to her as much as I am to Lesedi especially now that her mother chose a dick over her

naledi sighed

Naledi: she's gonna come stay here with us

Heath: umm I was thinking we move to my house since its big

naledi looked down while biting her lower lip

Heath: obi m I know this is too much to ask but I need you now more that ever Omphile needs a mother figure the same way as Lesedi needs a father so please omalicha nwa say yes

Naledi: why...why don't you live with her in your house and Lesedi and I will be fine here I m.....

he interrupted her

Heath: no

Naledi: heath you haven't even....

he interrupted her again

Heath: if what you want to say is anything to do with us living separately then the answer is NO

Naledi: what if she doesn't like me

Heath: then I'll make her like you

Naledi: bathong heath

he took her hand and put it where his heart is

Heath: this heart beat for you naledi and you alone and I told you before and im still gonna say it again I will never let you go and I will never let you leave me and I'll never leave you so for now please agree to this and leave the rest to me

she sighed

Naledi: heath I don't know about us moving in together I mean...

***he interrupted her with a kiss on her lips ***

Heath: I love you naledi please do this for me

Naledi: ok

Heath: ok?

she nodded and he pulled her into a tight hug

Heath: thank you obim thank you so much

Naledi: where is she now

Heath: at the house

she nodded

Naledi: when do you want us to move in

Heath: can we sleep there tonight and tomorrow we will start with packing other things

Naledi: did you at least tell her about me

he sighed

Heath: no I will when we get there

Naledi: heath why don't you sleep at your house tonight so you can talk to her and tomorrow or the day after tomorrow Lesedi and I will move in

Heath: im not sleeping without you in my arms naledi forget it

Naledi: but heath...

he interrupted her

Heath: don't try to change my mind naledi because you won't succeed..... im not sleeping without you next to me naledi and that's that

naledi sighed

Naledi: ok

Heath: good...umm did you cook

she nodded

Heath: you can pack the food inside containers and I'll go start packing our bags

***she nodded and heath kissed her ***

Heath: I know this is too much but please do this for me obim please

Naledi: its ok heath im just nervous

he kissed while rubbing her belly

Heath: I love you obim a lot

Naledi: I love you too onye m

he smiled wide

Heath: you don't know what happens to me especially to Eze when you speak my forefather's language

naledi just blushed

.

.

.

****HEATH****

*** We arrived at my house and we parked then naledi carried Lesedi while I carried the containers and lesedi's bag other bags I'll bring them in later.....we got in and found Omphile and jabu siting in

the lounge with a box of pizza on top of the table and naledi greeted them and sat down and I also sat down and cleared my throat***

Me: babygirl I want you to meet someone that means a lot to me

Omphile: I remember hershes that lady who works at mr price

Me: ummm yeah

Omphile: wait daddy what do you mean she means a lot to you

Me: shes my girlfriend infact shes the woman I want to spend the rest of my life with

Omphile: what about aunty lerato

jabu and I cleared our throats

Me: me and lerato broke up long ago baby

Omphile: why...I thought you two are happy...wait is she the reason why you two broke up

Me: Omphile!

I cautioned her

Omphile: no daddy if its not you its mom you don't care about me

Me: omphile how can you say that

she started crying

Omphile: this woman is gonna kill you and I'll be left alone since mom don't care about me

Me: omphile....

Omphile: I will never accept her shes gonna kill you daddy please don't bring her in our family I cant lose you

Me: OMPHILE STOP IT!

I shouted

Omphile: if you continue seeing her I swear I'll run away

God she stood up and ran upstairs leaving me and jabu shocked.... I turned to look at naledi and she was wiping her tears I clenched my teeth at that sight...why is this happening why would omphile react like this

Naledi: jabu please drive me and lesedi to the apartment

Me: you are not going anywhere naledi

Naledi: heath please I don't wanna argue with you.... you heard her

Me: I DON'T CARE OK YOU ARE NOT GOING ANYWHERE...DARE ME AND WALK OUT OF THAT DOOR AND YOU'LL KNOW ME NALEDI

I warned her and stood up and I walked upstairs to lesedi's bedroom.... Luckily the door wasn't locked so I just i walked in

Me: whats going on omphile

she kept quiet

Me: I asked you a question young lady

Omphile: I don't want her

I took a breath in and exhaled slowly to calm myself down cause I might end up taking off my belt and whipping her butt

Me: why

Omphile: because you gonna die if you stay with her

she said that with a low voice looking down

Omphile: I cant lose you daddy mom doesn't want me and she's gonna kill you

ok enough of this

Me: who told you that....i know someone told you that and I want to know who

she kept quiet

Me: is it your mother

she shook her head no

Omphile: it...it was aunt lerato

I felt my blood boil instantly....that bitch is now using my daughter for her shameful and disgusting reasons nx

Omphile: she called me and told me your new girlfriend is an albino who is sick and her sickness will also get you sick and you'll die

Me: what did I teach you about listening to other people when they tell you things about me or jabu

she cried

Me: ANSWER MY QUESTION BEFORE I GET MAD OMPHILE

Omphile: im sorry daddy I know I was supposed to talk to you or uncle before I reacted on them but I was scared daddy

I just shook my head while looking down

Me: naledi is pregnant omphile and you better pray nothing happens to your brother or sister.....you know better than to do what you just did and worst of all you listened to lerato whos bitter because I left her and her rude disrespectful and uncultured self and concluded things instead of talking to me your father first

she cried

Omphile: im sorry daddy

Me: now you gonna go down stairs to naledi and apologise to her and we will sit down and you'll tell me whats wrong with you cause I don't know this omphile my daughter would never do what you just did

she nodded and I stood up

Me: lets go

she got out of bed and followed me

.

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.

****NARRATED****

***they got to the lounge and found naledi holding lesedi with her eyes bloodshot red and swollen which broke heath's heart into pieces...he quickly went to her ***

Heath: im sorry obim

he said that kissing her cheek

Jabu: let me rush to my place to close the windows ka bowa nou nou (I'll be back now now)

heath nodded and jabu stood up and took heath's car keys and walked out

Omphile: ummm im sorry aunt naledi im sorry for all the things I said...i... I didn't mean to say them

naledi nodded

Heath: you can go upstairs Im coming

she stood up and walked upstairs

Heath: lerato is the one that told her all that nonsense

naledi didn't say anything

Heath: im sorry obim for shouting at you and threatening you I just didn't want you to leave

Naledi: I need to rest can I go upstairs

Heath: im sorry for shouting at you obim

Naledi: I heard you heath now can I go lay down

he sighed and nodded and she stood up with lesedi in her arms and walked upstairs

Heath: I swear you gonna curse the day you met me lerato I swear it on all my dead unborn babies

nx

he said that to himself and stood up going upstairs he went to check on naledi and she was sleeping next to lesedi in the main bedroom and he went to omphile's bedroom and she was still awake crying and he felt his heart aching

Heath: pumpkin

she raised her head

Heath: come to your dad

Omphile: im sorry dad

Heath: come

she got out of bed and went to heath and he pulled her into a tight hug and he sighed

Heath: its ok my love...im not mad at you ok im just disappointed ok

she nodded

Omphile: will aunty naledi forgive me

Heath: she has my love she's just still hurt but she has forgiven you ok

Omphile nodded and heath pulled her to the bed and they sat on its edge

Heath: what happened at your mother's house and why did Portia say you are disrespectful

Omphile: when mom brought me back to granny's house she told aunt Portia that I accused uncle john of him touching me where he's not supposed to touch me and she called me liar and that its my plan to break her marriage...i was hurt dad and I was mad that she didn't believe me so when aunt Portia started shouting at me and calling me names I talked back at her and she slapped me then I called her a b- word (bitch)

heath sighed

Heath: did he really touch you Omphile

she nodded and tears started running down her cheeks and heath pulled her into a hug

Heath: tell daddy when it started to happen

Omphile: December when I went to visit for the holidays and I came out of the pool in my swimwear and he looked at me while biting his lower lip which made me uncomfortable daddy

heath clenched his jaws

Omphile: then he would say to me that he can't wait to see me in my swimwear again and maybe we can swim together when mom is not around

by now heath's heart was beating fast and he was getting angrier

Omphile: and he would touch my lower back every now and then or squeeze my butt when mom wasn't around that's why I never wanted to visit mom since last year December until recently when mom threw a party for Oratile and... and... and I was in the kitchen watching dishes when he held me from behind and he squeezed my breasts and he said he...cant wait to see me naked on his bed and I felt something poking me on my back

she said all that crying and heath let her go and he stood up with his body shaking with extreme anger and he started pacing up and down busy saying " not my daughter" over and over while breathing heavily and scaring Omphile in the process

Omphile: da...dad

its like he didn't hear her as he kept on pacing saying " not my daughter" over and over and Omphile quickly left the room scared and she went downstairs looking for naledi since jabu left and she was nowhere to e found then she rushed upstairs to the main bedroom and she found her sleeping and she woke her up

Omphile: aunty come its dad

Naledi: huh

she said that sitting up

Omphile: its dad I don't.....he's pacing and he's angry and talking to himself

naledi quickly got out of bed and rushed out after Omphile and they found him sitting on the floor with his head between his legs and his shoulders moving indicating that he's crying

Naledi: Omphile go to the main bedroom and lay down with Lesedi and let me talk to him ok

Omphile nodded and naledi wiped her tears off with her hands

Naledi: go now

she quickly walked out and naledi went to sit next to heath

Naledi: onye m (my one)

Heath: he touched her obim he touched my baby and said some nasty things to her that a girl her age is not supposed to hear especially from an old men like him

Naledi: what are you talking about heath

he raised his head and looked at naledi with tears in his red eyes

Heath: her mother's husband has been touching her inappropriately

Naledi: ooh my God heath what

Heath: I failed her naledi I failed her obim

Naledi: no you didn't heath did she say he went further that touching her

*** heath shook his head no***

Naledi: thank God now onye m please pull yourself together and be strong for your baby girl im sure she's scared confused and hurt she wants her strong daddy now please

Heath: im sorry for shouting at you obim

Naledi: you know what you need to do to make me forgive you

she said that smiling at him and he smiled too

Heath: I love you naledi

Naledi: I love you too heath.....now go and hug he and ensure her that all will be well from now on and no one will ever hurt her or even attempt to ever again

heath sighed but happy that naleidi was his and his love for her just escalated beyond his control it just got deeper and deeper.....he stood up and helped her up and they walked out of the bedroom with heath pulling himself together *

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.
. .
.

***he waited for naleidi to go to sleep as Omphile was already sleep she fell asleep in his arms after he assured her that he believes her and that he'll never let anyone hurt her again....he was now on his way to lerato's apartment since jabu had already arrived from his place and he left when he went upstairs to take a shower.....he parked his car far from the complex and he walked to there and used the spare card to open the small gate since he never returned it to her and he walked in making sure he avoids the cameras since he knows where they are.....he knocked on the door for some time until he heard her say " geez I said im coming damn it" then the door opened and as soon as heath laid his eyes on her extreme anger took over from him an " Caesar" took over and he grabbed her by her neck squeezing but not too tight while pushing her inside ***

Heath: is there someone else in here

she shook her head no and since he did not trust her he went to every room with his hand still on her throat and he checked all of the and he pulled her to the living room and he pinned her on the wall

Heath: you stupid useless whore you thought I wouldn't find out about you using my daughter for your stupid plan

Lerato: heath please

***she was crying**

Heath: PLEASE WHAT? YOU FED MY DAUGHTER LIES WITH THE AIM OF USING HER YOU FUCKEN WHORE

Lerato: she...she's lying

***he punched her on her stomach still holding her by her throat ***

Heath: you can mess with me all you like lerato but not with naleidi and my kids you hear me they mean the world to me that im willing to kill for them

Lerato: please im sorry heath I was stupid

Heath: fuck you lerato and fuck your stupidity I regret the day I met you in fact I curse it..... no one and I mean no one hurts my baby girl and get away with it

then he took out a machete knife from his hoody pocket and as soon as lerato saw it she started shaking

Lerato: plea...please heath im...im sorry please

Heath: VOETSEK SHUT UP YOU FUCKEN WHORE

16

INSERT.....16 todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Heath: do you know what I do to people like you lerato..... I chop them into pieces then I feed their remains to jabu's pit bulls

***he said that running the machete knife on her face cutting her in the process ***

Lerato: hea...heath please im sorry

she said that scared to death she has never seen this side of heath it was like he was a different person altogether...his eyes were cold and dark

Heath: I want to stab this knife right through your fucken heart and watch you die so bad but you know what I want to teach you a lesson cause I can see you are a dumb bitch so death is just too extreme for youso you told Omphile I'll die because of naledi and because of her being an albino abi?(right)

Lerato: im sorry heath please forgive me

Heath: ANSWER MY FUCKEN QUESTION

he roared and lerato jumped a bit shaking

Lerato: ye....yes...im sorry heath

she said that crying

Heath: ok since she's ugly and contagious then im gonna show you what ugly is

he then put his one hand on her mouth preventing her from screaming and used the machete knife with his other hand and he cut her on her face he left deep cuts on both of her cheeks and on her forehead and chin while lerato was busy screaming through his hand that covered her mouth as he pinned her on the wall hard

Heath: let's see who's ugly between you and naledi nowooh and if you tell your family or the police what happened to you or anyone for that matter just know I'll leave your family broke to a point that you'll go back to the bundus to live there cause you definitely won't get a blesser with you scared face remember im your father's accountant and I can damn sure send him to jail for fraud and many other things by being an anonymous whistle-blower to SARS

all along lerato was crying with blood all over her face

Heath: know this.... I have eyes and ears everywhere and one word to someone about what happened here and its back to the bundus for you and your family nx

he let go of her and she fell to the floor crying while trying to touch her face as blood dropped to the floor

Heath: ooh another thing stay away from Omphile and naledi or else next time I'll stab this knife right on your stomach and twist it until you take your fucken last breath nx

he clicked his tongue and walked out making sure the cameras don't see him

.
. .

*** The following morning heath was busy in the kitchen making breakfast for his girls and brother then jabu walked in***

Jabu: mshikaro

Heath: javas

he sat down and heath continued frying eggs

Jabu: how did it go with pumkin when I left her you looked like you were ready to give her the worst beating of her life

heath sighed

Heath: it was lerato who fed her all that rubbish

Jabu: Oreng? (what?)

heath huffed and clicked his tongue

Heath: I can't believe that bitch used my daughter to do her dirty work

Jabu: yeses antlek how desperate is that chick

Heath: I went to pay her a visit last night... Fuck I was angry jahas I wanted to kill her so bad but then I figured she was not worth it

Jabu: ok but I hope o mmontshitse marago a noga (I hope you taught her a lesson)

Heath: yeah let's say I disfigured her face a bit

Jabu: diswhat?

Heath: disfigured man jabu stop playing dump you have a degree in supply chain and management for God's sake

Jabu: mxm anyway how did you "DISFIGURE" her Mr Masden

***he asked that with an English accent and heath laughed ***

Heath: I left her with deep cuts on her precious face

Jabu: e re wa dlala(you joking right)

heath shook his head no

Jabu: mshikaro wa jaja what you did go tshwana le ge omo bhodisitse right (shaka you know what you did is just like you killing her right) gape dai cheri oithata blaen (that chick fancies herself too much) and you "disfigured" her joh

Heath: it was either that or I kill her and plus she always calls naledi and other people ugly so now she will know what ugly is

jabu laughed

Jabu: and what if a ya magateng (what if she gets you arrested)

Heath: then I'll show her my other side and that father of hers will go to jail for fraud and tax invasion and she'll go back to the bundus with that rude bitch called her mother and that gold digging whore called her sister

Jabu: chisa mshikaro

they laughed then heath suddenly frowned while clenching his jaws

Jabu: what

Heath: Omphile said something that...

then he breathed heavily

Jabu: what did she say mshikaro

Heath: that john touched her inappropriately.... She said he used to tell her he can't wait to see her naked on his bed and staff and during oratile's birthday party he squeezed her breasts and she felt his dick poking her on her back

***jabu stood up from the barstool ***

Jabu: WH...WHAT DID YOU SAY?

heath just looked down while clenching his jaws

Jabu: not pumpkin....he's dead....he's fucken dead

Heath: I failed her jabu

Jabu: no you didn't that bitch Tsholo is the one that failed her what kind of mother is she... choosing a dick over her own flesh and blood nx.... Heeh Im gonna show that bastard masepa(shit) o tlo nnyela kao chaela (he'll shit himself im telling you)

Heath: calm down javas remember our rule

Jabu: mshikaro whether I go to him now or after a month or a year the fact is o tlo nnyela(he'll shit himself) ke tlo mmontsha mmae nx (I'll show him his mother)

heath sighed

Heath: let me deal with him first then you can do whatever you want to do to him

Jabu: what do you mean deal with him

Heath: I want to hurt him where it hurts the most first

jabu looked at him

Jabu: that would be his nuts... right?

heath chuckled

Heath: yes that and his bank accounts and his company

jabu sat down

Jabu: im listening

Heath: im gonna wipe him out clean and use that money to take naleli and our kids on a long holiday and spend all of it on the holiday

jabu smirked at heath

Jabu: you fucken devil

heath chuckled

Heath: I thought of killing him but that will an easy way out for him I want him to suffer first

Jabu: ok but after that he's mine

heath nodded

Jabu: how's pumpkin

heath sighed

Heath: her cries and sobs just cut right through my heart bros...that bastard broke my daughter jabu

Jabu: eish

he brushed his head

Jabu: what about what lerato told her why didn't she talk to us cause she knows our rule

Heath: she said she was scared of losing me since her mother doesn't care about her

jabu sighed

Jabu: all this is fucked up.... I need a smoke before I lose my mind

he said that standing up while taking out a pack of cigarettes and lighter and he walked out while talking to himself

Jabu: hehe ke tlo kgaola motho marete nna nx dai bleksem o tshwere..... (im gonna chop someone's dick nx that bastard touched)....mh mh mh ga nkitsi dai moeskond im sure wankutlwela nx rubbish (he doesn't know me im sure he has only heard about me)

he said that feeling walked up and heath just chuckled while shaking his head cause he knows what jabu is capable of as much as jabu also knows what he's also capable of.... He finished up with making breakfast and soon after his girls walked down the stairs and he kissed Omphile and lesedi's foreheads and he kissed naledi's lips

Heath: you ok

she shook her head no

Naledi: im tired I feel like I haven't slept for days heath

he kissed her forehead

Heath: why don't you skip work today

Naledi: I didn't go yesterday heath

he breathed out

Heath: obim you know how your job is like you'll be on your feet the whole day and already you look tired please obim

Naledi: heath I need this job ok

Heath: Omphile take Lesedi to the lounge

Omphile: ok

she took her from naledi and they went to the lounge

Heath: im gonna give it to you straight.... I don't like it that you work at a retail store

Naledi: askies? (sorry)

Heath: look dont get me wrong obim I don't mind or have a problem with you working I just don't like you working where you are working

Naledi: what about Thandi she's your cousin and your close one at that why don't you tell her that

Heath: we have been telling her to go back to Abet or something so she can finish her grade 11 and twelve since she dropped out of high school but you know her she's stubborn but now she's getting married and James said he had the talk with her and she said she'll start next year January and concerning you you are my woman and the mother of my children both biological and not and as the father of your children im saying im capable enough of supporting you and our children so you don't have to work there

Naledi: heath please don't ok I love my job ok and I wont be a stay at home mom period!

Heath: why are you fighting where else im not

she took a deep breath

Heath: look you can concentrate on you studies until you give birth you are already close to finishing with your course and after you are done with it I'll help you find a good company where you'll do your practicals at

she sighed*

Naledi: are you saying I should quit my job

Heath: yes and concentrate on your studies until you give birth

***she kept quiet for a bit... the truth is she doesn't like working there cause her colleagues are competitive and sometimes they can throw you under the bus just so they get ahead and they are backstabbers not forgetting Bonolo who constantly harasses her every chance she get and it would be nice for her not to wake up early everyday cause this days shes always tired and sleepy and hungry and also dealing with people's different perfumes that smell horrible this days is another challenge but she's scared of depending on a man even though the man loves her but the fear of the unknown is giving her doubts ***

Naledi: heath I cant i...

he interrupted her

Heath: you are scared to depend on me right

***naledi sighed and nodded she hated how he can read her like an open book then heath took his phone and got busy with it for some time then naledi's own phone beeped indicating that she just receive a message and when she opened it her heart nearly stopped ***

Naledi: HEATH ARE YOU CRAZY!

*** she shouted at him and he looked at her with a serious look on his face***

Heath: yeah im crazy in love with you

***he send R100 000 into her account ***

Heath: anymore excuses from you to not quit that job

Naledi swallowed hard looking at him then at her phone screen

Naledi: heath one hund...one hundred thousand rands

he perked her lips

Heath: its still not enough but for now that will do or else the hawks might start to investigate you for being deposited with a million rands into your account

Naledi: wuuuh let me sit down before I faint

*** she sat down and looked at her phone screen again***

Naledi: you know I can't accept this money right

Heath: why not

Naledi: because heath

Heath: well you gonna say thank you and go and spoil yourself

*** he perked her lips again***

Heath: I know you are not a gold digger or a platinum digger obim so please don't give me that" I can't accept this money " talk please

she just looked at him in awe and not knowing what to say

Heath: so you are resigning effective immediately right ?

she was still in shock and heath chuckled

Heath: ok while you still counting the zeros in your head let me dish up for my princesses

** he kissed her forehead and dished up for Omphile and Lesedi and went to give them their food and also dished up for him jabu and naledi then they went to the lounge and sat down and once they started to eat with Lesedi on heath's lap eating with him on his plate jabu walked in***

Jabu: pumpkin come here

*** Omphile put her plate down slowly and she stood up and went to him and she stood next to him while looking down and jabu pulled her into a hug and she just cried and heath clenched his jaws as her cried broke his heart.... After a while they broke the hug and jabu wiped her tears***

Jabu: you are safe now ok and no one will never hurt or touch you inappropriately again ok

she nodded and jabu kissed her forehead and Omphile relaxed a bit that at least her father and uncle believes her unlike her own mother granny and aunt

Jabu: go and finish eating

Omphile: ok uncle

she sat down while wiping her tears

Heath: your food is in the microwave

he went to take his plate and took out a bottle of beer and he went back to the lounge and he sat down and started to eat

Naledi: ummm since im....im not going to work i... I was thinking Omphile should not go to school today her eyes are swollen and red from the crying shes been doing so can she take a day off she will go tomorrow

Omphile looked at naledi and she didn't understand why she cared about her especially after what happened last night when she said those awful things to her

Heath: yeah I agree her eyes are swollen...ok but tomorrow you're going ok

Omphile: ok daddy

then she looked at naledi who just smiled at her and she looked down still feeling bad about what happened last night

Naledi: umm Lesedi will also miss day care

Heath: ok....ummm let me go get ready for work then....javas which car will you use

Jabu: the 3 series is ok

Heath: ok I'll use the jeep then

he put his plate down and stood up

Heath: obim you'll clear this for me

Naledi: yeah go

*** he kissed the top of her head and he walked upstairs with Lesedi in his arms and jabu stood up too and he went to the kitchen and put the now empty plate in the sink and he took the 3 series car keys and went back to the lounge and he kissed omphile's forehead***

Jabu: I'll come see you later ok

she nodded and he looked at naledi

Jabu: congratulations on the pregnancy

Naledi: thank you

Jabu: you'll tell your man I left ok I'll see ya'll later

Naledi: alright

he walked out

Naledi: I hope I didn't inconvenience you by saying you shouldn't go to school today

***she said that to Omphile ***

Omphile: no aunty.... I didn't want to go to school today but I was scared to tell dad cause he's serious about education and stuff

naledi smiled

Naledi: ok

Omphile: ummm aunty im sorry about last night

Naledi: all is forgiven ok

*** she nodded***

Omphile: ok thank you

she stood up and took the dishes and went to the kitchen and washed them and as she was about to dry them naledi walked in

Naledi: leave them I'll finish up wena just go and change your school uniform

Omphile: ok

she walked out and she felt at peace inside cause she thought her father's girlfriend will abuse her or dislike her since her own mother doesn't treat her like shes her daughter she always shouts at her and always says to her " you are just like your useless father" whenever she shouts at her so shes surprised that naledi is nice to her even though she hurt her feelings the previous night

.
. .
. .

NALEDI

*** Well I don't have much to say about the events that took place last night to say I wasn't hurt by what heath's daughter said about me I would be lying but im glad all that she said wasn't what she really felt she was just manipulated lied to and used by that bitch lerato and she has been apologising since then and I have already forgiven her. But my heart broke when I saw heath cry last night I feel Omphile's pain and what she's going through about what her step father did to her even today im still traumatised about what thabo did and still hurt about koko's reaction to all that so I can imagine what shes going through and well im glad heath and jabu are there for her and I'll also try my best to be there for her..... speaking of that I want the three of us to go to the mall and just do some retail therapy at least to take her mind off things..... well heath walked in the lounge with Lesedi in his arms and he put her down gosh he looked hot and handsome in his maroon body fitting three piece suit I swear I got wet down there instantly that I even had to cross my legs cause my clit is vibrating he came and sat next to me***

Heath: will you be ok with both of them

Me: yeah don't worry

we kissed and broke the kiss and he kissed my forehead

Me: please don't come back late I need some serious servicing

he laughed and kissed my forehead

Heath: ok I'll come back early

I nodded

Me: you look dashingly handsome in that suit onye m

***he smiled... gosh this guy is handsome people ***

Heath: well thank you obim

Me: and remember you are taken ok

***he laughed ***

Heath: trust me I know and I'll never do anything to make you leave me ok

I smiled and nodded... we kissed and he stood up and he went to the busy Lesedi and kissed the top of her head and he called out for Omphile and soon after she came down and he kissed her forehead and left

Me: Omphile how about we go to the mall and do some shopping

Omphile: aunty I was thinking maybe I should just go and sleep

Me: sit for a minute please

*** she did***

Me: I know how you are feeling Omphile cause I also went through something similar to what you went through

she looked at me

Me: with me it was my uncle and just like you when I told my grandmother she called me a liar and my mother said I asked for it if it wasn't for your aunt Thandi and your father I don't know where I would be now or how I would have been

tears fell from her eyes and I moved closer and I pulled her to me and held her tight

Me: you are safe now Omphile and your father uncle and I believe you ok

she nodded

Me: but what I wont allow is you feeling sorry for yourself and isolating yourself from us don't give him that power over you baby he's not worth it

Omphile: he touched me on my private part and put his finger inside aunty while he kissed my neck and it was painful and I was scared...I hate him...I hate him soo much

***I swear my body froze and my blood became cold instantly ***

Me: he did what?

***she just cried and I held her tight while brushing her back until she calmed down I was also crying

Me: look at me

she did

Me: hes gonna pay for what he did to you ok

she nodded and I wiped her tears

Me: just go upstairs and change and we are going to the mall to shop and have fun no more tears because of that evil man ok hes not worth it I know its not easy believe me but that evil man is enjoying himself out there and wena you are here crying no no no we are going out I'll be damned if we let him win ok

she nodded

Me: go and get ready and please go with the madam so I can clean her mess

Omphile: ok aunty

she stood up and picked Lesedi up from the floor and they went upstairs and I couldn't hold them they just opened like a tap of water.... I cried as I held my chest as what thabo did to me played in my head over and over and how scared I was at that time.... After some time I calmed down and cleaned myself up and I stood up and cleaned lesedi's mess and I went upstairs to get ready

17

INSERT..... 17

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

***Three months went by fast and naledi bump was now showing and her and Omphile's relationship was growing and they were now close Omphile respected her and naledi treated her like her own daughter and she even shows her love that Omphile has been longing for from a mother.... As for Tsholofelo and john cracks in their marriage were now showing cause his business was going under money was disappearing in his business account and no one know who is stealing it and that also affected their personal accounts too courtesy of Heath Owoh-masden . Even though she was told that heath came and took Omphile from her mother's place she has never called to check on her or to ask if she's ok and naledi could see that it hurts Omphile so she's been trying to make her happy and loved. And when naledi finally told heath what Omphile told her about what john did to her he lost it for the first in front of naledi...he drove to Tsholofelo's house breathing fire and when he got there he beat the fuck out of john to a point that he landed him in hospital with a broken nose jaw and ribs and he even threatened both Tsholofelo and john that if he reports him john will go to jail for attempted rape of Omphile and since prison is jabu's second home they will make sure he commits suicide himself once he's inside..... and well he didn't report him but heath and jabu are still going ahead with their plans of dealing with john their own way before they make him meet his ancestors Well in other news Mamiki called naledi the first day naledi went to the mall with Omphile and Lesedi and she told her that koko suffered a severe stroke after she learned of thabo's death and naledi told her that she hopes koko gets well and as for thabo its good ridden to bad rubbish and that made Mamiki angry that she even started insulted her over the phone then naledi just hanged up

the call feeling bad for what happened to koko but then she remembered her words that even if she's dead naledi should never set her feet in her yard so she just cried all of it out when they went back home on heaths chest later at night and she never went to the funeral.... well now its Saturday and heath went to jabu's place and Naledi Omphile and Lesedi went to the mall to do some grocery shopping... naledi now can drive she even passed her learners and heath bought her a drivers licence ***

Omphile: Ma can I take two different cereals

yep that's what she calls naledi now

Naledi: ok baby

she smiled excitedly and she took them and they kept on moving taking other things from the shelves and putting them in the trolley with Lesedi wanting everything she sees

Omphile: Ma I think we should have let her go with dad to uncle jabu's house

***naledi laughed ***

Naledi: you are right look now o llela everything okare checkers hyper e owner ke papagae mxm (shes crying for everything as if checkers hyper is owned by her father)

*** they laughed and kept on moving until naledi saw a familiar face and she froze it was lesedi's biological father Kitso.... She took a deep breath and fought back the tears as that faithful day she told him she's pregnant and he insulted her and also told her to abort played in her mind... she took another deep breath and she swallowed hard ***

Omphile: Ma are you ok

Naledi: ye...yes baby lets go

they kept on walking then Kitso spotted naledi and called after her

Kitso: NALEDI!

naledi ignored him and kept on moving and he rushed to her and tapped her on her shoulder and naledi turned and looked at him with a frown.... kitso swallowed hard as he stared into her eyes and he saw nothing but hate

Naledi: what is it

Kitso: I can't believe this is you...wow you look good and beautiful

he said that admiring her beauty and her amazing body that used to drive him crazy but he stopped when he saw a baby bump

Naledi: baby lets go

***she said that to Omphile who was giving kitso the evil eye (mmmmh like father like daughter) and kitso quickly blocked naledi from leaving ***

Kitso: wow you are pregnant

Naledi: what do you want kitso

she said that with a cold voice

Kitso: did you get rid of the pregnancy or.....

then his eyes darted to Lesedi and within a blink of an eye he saw himself in her and his eyes popped out

Kitso: is...is this... is this her?...but I thought she was.....

naledi interrupted him

Naledi: an albino right no she's not and just so we are clear this is my daughter and her father is heath and this is her older sister and this is her baby brother

she said rubbing her belly

Naledi: and if you know what's good for you you will walk away and never look back nx

she clicked her tongue and attempted to push away the trolley but kitso held her upper arm

Kitso: she's my daughter naledi I mean she even looks like me look I know i....

naledi interrupted him with a hot slap on his cheek then she pushed him with both her hands and kitso stumbled back almost falling but he found his balance quickly

Naledi: YOUR DAUGHTER?... DID YOU JUST SAY YOUR DAUGHTER YOU BASTARD.... LISTEN AND LISTEN GOOD YOUR BABY DIED THE DAY YOU TOLD ME TO ABORT JUST BECAUSE YOU SAID YOU'LL NEVER FATHER AN ALBINO CHILD AND NOW THAT SHES NOT AN ALBINO SHES YOUR DAUGHTER..... DON'T MAKE ME MAD KITSO OR ELSE O TLO NNYELA LETLAKALA KE WENA (you'll shit yourself you piece of rubbish)THIS IS HEATH'S DAUGHTER YOU HEAR ME NOW VOETSEK FROM MY FACE BEFORE YOU MAKE ME PUKE NX..... RUBBISH.....

*then she looked at Omphile***

Naledi: lets go Omphile

They walked away with people all around giving kitso an evil eye and looking at him with disgusted faces with some even clicking their tongues at him..... they went to pay without even finishing with their shopping after they were done they went to the parking lot and loaded everything to the boot with naledi having minor cramps on her stomach.... After they were done she told Omphile to buckle Lesedi up and she took out her phone and dialled heath

Heath: obim

Naledi: heath please come to the mall I have cramps on my stomach

she said all that trying not to panic

Heath: wha....what...ok im on my way ok

Sponsored

after they were done they went to the parking lot and loaded everything to the boot with naledi having minor cramps on her stomach.... After they were done she told Omphile to buckle Lesedi up and she took out her phone and dialled heath***

Heath: obim

Naledi: heath please come to the mall I have cramps on my stomach

she said all that trying not to panic

Heath: wha....what...ok im on my way ok stay where you are im coming.... try to do a breath in and out im coming

Naledi: we are at the ground parking lot

Heath: ok obim

***you could tell he was running.... She heard doors closing and a roar of an engine starting ***

Heath: are the cramps too painful

Naledi: not really... please hurry

Heath: we are coming obim

he said that with a panicking voice

Naledi: ok

***she ended the call and slowly got in the car and she closed the door and opened the car windows a little for fresh air to get in and she put her head on the steering wheel and she clenched her jaws as the cramps where getting a little painful ***

Omphile: Ma are you ok

Naledi: ye...yes baby im ok

Omphile: ok why are we not leaving

Naledi: your...your dad said we should wait for him hes coming

Omphile: ok

after what felt like forever for naledi with tears now coming out while her head was still on the steering wheel she heard heath screaming out her name and she raised her head and saw him he was even breathing heavily.... She then unlocked the doors and heath opened the door and peeped at the back to Lesedi and Omphile

Heath: are you guys ok

Omphile: yes daddy

Heath: ok

Lesedi: DADA

*** heath took naledi out of the car and went with her to the car him and jabu came with and he put her in the passenger side and buckled her up then he closed the door and jabu rushed to the car naledi was driving.... Heath also got in and drove out in total speed with his heart beating out of his chest.... Naledi put her hand between her legs and it came out clean and she sighed with relief***

Naledi: did... did you see blood when you took me out of the car

Heath: no.... how is the pain

Naledi: my belly feels numb and the pain is still there

she said that wiping her falling tears as for jabu he was driving behind them busy asking Omphile what happened

Jabu: what happened while you were shopping pumpkin

Omphile: some man came to us and he talked to Ma but she was angry at him then Ma said we should go and the man held her arm and started saying Lesedi is his daughter and Ma slapped him and pushed him then she started shouting at him saying Lesedi is daddy's daughter then we left to pay and came to the car

Jabu: mmmmh

he said that clenching his jaws..... soon after they arrived at the hospital and heath quickly got out and he shouted for help then a porter came with a stretcher and heath took naledi out of the car and he put her on the stretcher and they rushed inside with her.....as for jabu he parked the car and quickly got out and he took Lesedi out and Omphile also came out of the car

Omphile: what are we doing at a hospital uncle.... Is it Ma

she asked with tears already in her eyes

Jabu: its nothing serious baby she just has pains on her stomach and pregnant women are not supposed to have pains so shes here to make sure the baby is ok...don't worry ok

***she nodded and they went inside and found heath sitting in the waiting area filling in some forms while looking frustrated after he was done he took back the forms and came back and sat down ***

Lesedi: dada ntjiye (daddy take me)

***and heath took her ***

Jabu: Omphile said a guy approached them and started talking with naledi who seemed angry and he kept on saying Lesedi is his daughter and when naledi tried to walk away he grabbed her arm then naledi slapped him and pushed him while shouting at him

heath clenched his jaws looking angry

Heath: he's gonna regret it

he knew who that guys might be so that's all he said and he just stared into space he was worried about their unborn baby.... lerato miscarried every time she fell pregnant when they were still together so he was scared that naledi might too.... Even though his granny said the baby will make it but he was still scared.... He suggested that she resigns from work to minimise chances of her getting worked up and strained by her job for their unborn baby's safety and now some fucker comes from nowhere and makes his mamiwota angry to a point that she's at a risk of losing the pregnancy... he sighed and swallowed hard..... after some time a female doctor walked up to them

Doc: naledi mogapi?

she called out and they went to her

Heath: how are they?

Doc: are you family

Jabu: yes now he asked you a question

Doc: they are both fine for now

she emphasised that "for now" part

Doc: her blood pressure was very high and it's still shocking to me that the pregnancy is still intact

Heat: so they are both ok

Doc: yes for now but im afraid the next time the baby won't be this strong enough to hold on cause already the baby's heart beat is low

***heath sighed heavily ***

Heath: can I see her

Doc: yes but don't stay too long she needs to rest... please follow me

heath didn't say anything to her

Heath: please call Thandi

and he looked at omphile

Heath: I'll be back ok

she nodded and he gave jabu Lesedi who was now sleepy and he followed the doctor

Heath: doc please make sure shes moved to a private ward immediately

Doc: I'll let the nurses know and to have that arranged immediately

they got inside her ward and heath rushed to her and held her hand and he kissed her forehead then naledi opened her eyes and was met by heath's eyes

Heath: obim

Naledi: hey

Heath: how are you feeling

Naledi: the pain stopped

Heath: ok

then he sighed

Heath: Omphile told us what happened is that bastard that made you angry your sperm donor?

she nodded looking away

Heath: hey look at me

she did

Heath: I want you to do a favour for me

Naledi: ok

she said it with a low voice

Heath: I want you to leave that fool to me lesedi Is my daughter naledi and no bastard will come from nowhere and claim her unless they wanna meet their maker so please don't stress yourself and let me deal with him while you make sure our son is healthy and well can you do that for me

she nodded

Naledi: im sorry I let him get me angry like that

he kissed her lips

Heath: its ok now no more stressing ok.... You don't know how scared I was obim so please no more stress for you ok

she nodded

Naledi: where are my girls

Heath: outside with jabu

Naledi: ok

Heath: I love you too much obim ok

Naledi: I love you too onye m

*** heath smiled he loved it too much when she called him that especially in his native language..... well he stayed with her until she fell asleep and heath kissed her lips and forehead and he rubbed her belly and walked out... right then his phone rang it was an international number****

Heath: hello

Voice: ooh my babyhow are you

Heath: ooh mom hey... im good and you

Mom: im good now that im talking to you

Heath: ok...how's dad and MJ

Mom: they are good and MJ is just being himself always getting into trouble at school....

Anyway I have exciting news to tell you

Heath: ok im listening

Mom: next week friday we are coming to visit you and we will also pass by Ma and baba's place too

Heath: ok that's good news

Mom: ooh and your dad and I have a surprise for you

Heath: oohk should I be worried

Mom: nah it's a good surprise

Heath: ok then I also have a surprise for you too

Mom: I hope it's good

Heath: it's the best

Mom: I can't wait...ok my boy take care of yourself... we will see you next week

Heath: ok mom

Mom: I love you

Heath: I love you too

then they ended the call

Mj: nc nc nc I hope you and dad are up to date with your life insurances cause I don't want to be left as an orphan and broke at the same time when heath kills the two of you.... I have to mourn your passing with style mommy

Mom: will you just shut up and go do something like to clean your filthy room before I slap you
nx

Mj: well I said my piece mommy... I hope your Will with dad is up to date too and that you shared your assets equally I don't want unnecessary drama with my brothers and sister

***her mother threw a cup towards him and he ducked and it hit the wall and shattered into pieces ***

Mom: LEAVE MY SIGHT MICHAEL BEFORE I KILL YOU WITH MY BARE HANDS
NX.... WHAT KIND OF A SON ARE YOU HEH IF YOU DIDN'T LOOK LIKE YOUR FATHER I WOULD SAY THEY CHANGED YOU IN THE HOSPITAL NX NONSENSE

Mj: well heath will kill you with his bare hands when he learns what you and dad did without his consent dearest mother

Mom: LEAVE MY SIGHT MICHAEL....NOW

***he just shook his head and walked away while whistling and Mrs Owoh-Masden just held on to the kitchen counter and she breathed out trying to calm herself down because Mj just raised her blood pressure**

18

INSERT.....18

.
. .
.

NARRATED

*** he got home greeted his wife and just went straight to take a bath and he then went straight to the bed and he lay on it soon after his wife got in the bedroom and sat at the edge of the bed and looked at him***

Wife: baby are you ok?

Kitso: yeah im just tired

she saw that his cheek had four fingers printed on it

Wife: what happened to your cheek kitso?

kitso sighed

Kitso: nothing Otsile just leave it

Otsile: did you fight with anyone

Kitso: Otsile I said leave it for God's sake.... Just drop it please

he said that with an annoyed voice

Otsile: mxm

***she stood up and walked out of the bedroom and kitso sighed loudly.... His mind drifted off to naledi and the beautiful little girl he was sure was his daughter. He could feel from the depth of his stomach that she was his he saw some bits of him on her... now he regretted everything he said to naledi back then he wished he had done things differently and now he hoped it wasn't too late for him to at least try and fix things so he can have a father and daughter relationship with the little girl. Then there's naledi "he whistled" he couldn't believe that was her.... she looked sexy and beautiful even with her baby bump he couldn't believe he left naledi to be with Otsile who doesn't respect him like naledi did and on top of that she can't give him a child because of her endless abortions she had years back that resurfaced after she confessed to kitso before they went to get checked out.... As for kitso a prophet once told him that he will never get any

woman pregnant cause he denied his own blood a child that his ancestors gave to him along with the mother of the child who is special. Naledi wasn't his to begin with but his ancestors made sure they meet and they even made sure naledi falls pregnant but kitso messed things up and now they are preventing him to have any more children even with another woman since his wife can't give him a child because of her abortions.... He took his phone and dialled his father***

Dad: kitso

Kitso: pa I found them

Dad: found who

Kitso: naledi and my child.... I bumped into her at Mall of Africa and she was with my daughter...she looks like me papa and she's not even an albino but it didn't matter if she was or not I just want to do right by her

Dad: what did naledi say

he sighed

Kitso: it looks like her man is raising my daughter pa...she was angry that she even slapped me

Dad: did you at least take her number or something

Kitso: I got her number plate

Dad: she has a car

Kitso: I don't know it could be her boyfriend's cause it was a bmw x6

Dad: ok so what do you want to do now

Kitso: I just want her phone numbers so I can apologise and beg her to let me be part of my daughter's life

Dad: mmmmh what about your wife

Kitso: I'll talk to her tonight I need her support on this....eish pa she looked good I wish I didn't listen to what my ex friends said about her being an albino cause I loved her and seeing her today made those feelings to resurface again....i messed up pa and look what I ended up with

Dad: that's what you get for choosing glitter over a rare diamond now these are the consequences..... look now you ended up with a whore who opened her legs to every man and getting pregnant for them then aborting their babies nx no wonder she cannot carry a child for more than four months in her womb like the doctor said it's because that useless womb of hers is already a fucken graveyard

Kitso: dad please even at that she's still my wife

Dad: wife se gaat (wife my ass).... didn't she know about condoms or even contraceptives? You see now the things you kids choose to bring into our family kitso you bring prostitutes to my house as daughter in laws nx

Kitso: pa enough she's my wife whether you like it or not!

he warned him

Dad: then let that stupid wife of yours help you with your daughter's issue then nx

he said with a pissed off voice

Kitso: dad come on i....

Dad: hai fosek man

he then dropped the call and kitso sighed

Kitso: fuck... eish I wish I can turn back the hands of time

he said that to himself rubbing his head roughly

.

.

.

**** after their dinner they sat at the lounge watching tv then kitso took the remote and switched off the tv and turned to look at his wife****

Otsile: kitso ke eng nou (what it is now)

he breathed out loud

Kitso: I have something to tell you

Otsile: ummm... ok im listening

Kitso: I saw naledi today

Otsile kept quiet a bit then she spoke

Otsile: which naledi

Kitso: my ex

Otsile: that albino girl

kitso clenched his jaws

Kitso: yeah

Otsile: ok you saw her so?

Kitso: she didn't abort that time I told her to

Otsile: askies what

Kitso: she didn't ...

she interrupted him

Otsile: I heard you....is this some kind of joke kitso

Kitso: no...look the little girl even looks like me

Otsile: don't test me kitso you hear me don't

Kitso: she's my daughter Otsile ok

Otsile: I WILL NOT ALLOW A BASTARD ALBINO CHILD IN MY HOUSE YOU HEAR ME OVER MY DEAD BODY

Kitso: MY CHILD IS NOT A BASTARD OK DON'T PISS ME OFF OTSILE CAUSE YOU WON'T LIKE THE OUTCOME

Otsile: YOU STILL WANT HER BACK THAT'S IT RIGHT... YOU STILL WANT THAT CURSED ALBINO BITCH BACK RI.....

*** she didn't finish her sentence cause a slap landed on her cheek and she held her cheek with shock on her face ***

Otsile: you slapped me kitso me your wife because of that bitch

Kitso: that bitch is the mother of my child ok I wronged her before and who knows maybe its because you used love potion on me which made me leave her but now im not blind or weak anymore Otsile I can see clearly now

she laughed with disbelief with tears running down her cheeks

Otsile: how... how dare you kitso

Kitso: YOU HAD MULTIPLE ABORTIONS OTSILE AND YOU NEVER TOLD ME EVEN WHEN I ASKED YOU TO MARRY ME YOU KEPT QUIET CAUSE YOU KNEW I WOULDN'T HAVE MARRIED YOU....YOU LIED TO ME AND I FORGAVE YOU AND NOW INSTEAD OF ACCEPTING MY CHILD YOU CALL HER AN ALBINO BASTARD ***he shouted***

Kitso: I LOST A GOOD AND FAITHFUL WOMAN BECAUSE OF YOU AND NOW SHE HATES ME AND MAY NEVER LET ME SEE MY CHILD AND NOW I'M STILL MARRIED TO A LYING MANIPULATIVE ABORTION QUEEN WHO HAS BROUGHT NOTHING BUT BAD LUCK TO ME

he said pointing at her

Kitso: I LET SO MANY THINGS YOU FUCKEN DID SLIDE BECAUSE I LOVE YOU AND YOU HAVE THE FUCKEN GUT TO CALL MY CHILD A BASTARD TO MY FACE

Otsile: HOW...HOW DARE YOU KITSO...HOW DARE YOU SAY ALL THAT TO ME...ME OTSILE

Kitso: listen here im gonna find naledi and beg her to let me have a relationship with my daughter even if I have to beg on my knees I will

Otsile: dare me and bring that thing to my house and I'll fucken poison her... you are my husband and this is my house...its clear you don't know me now dare me and bring her here then you will see

Kitso: you know what I don't even know what possessed me to a point that I cheated on naledi with you and even ended up being married to your useless self nx

he said that and walked to the bedroom and changed into a jean and shirt and sneakers then he took his car keys phone and wallet and he walked out

Otsile: where do you think you are going kitso

he ignored her and walked to the main door

Otsile: KITSO COME BACK HERE NOW!

Kitso: nx

he walked out and got into his car and drove out then Otsile picked her phone while crying and she dialled her mother's numbers and after the third ring she answered

Ma: Otsile

Otsile: mama he's gonna leave me I can tell

*** She said that crying***

Ma: what are you talking about Otsile?

Otsile: that albino girl didn't abort the baby that time and now he wants to have a relationship with the child and I can tell he still loves that useless cursed bitch mama I love him I can't lose him

Ma: you see what lies do to marriages

Otsile: mama I don't want that "I told you so" speech I want a solution mama I cant lose him

Ma: accept his child then that's all you can do now Otsile

Otsile: mama no I can't ok I can't raise that thing's baby.... never

Ma: can you carry your own babies for your husband Otsile?..... that same thing as you just called her has a child with your husband something you failed to do because you decided to sleep around and do abortions left right and centre and when I warned you what did you do you swore at me and told me that I should stay out of your business cause its your body...look at you now

Otsile: I didn't call you so you can remind me of my past mistakes ok

she said that with a hard tone

Ma: ok then girly listen..... you are a married woman now and you told me you know what you are doing when I advised you to tell kitso about your many abortions before you got married now do what's best then.... Goodnight

***then she dropped the call.... Otsile has always been a troublesome child she partied a lot before kitso and slept around with different men and whenever she fell pregnant she would get rid of the pregnancy and when her mother advised her about her ways she would swear at her

and tell her to stay out of her business her mother always prayed that she changes her ways and she finally did after getting married but then you know in life there's always KARMA and now it has visited both of them for what they did to naledi***

.
. .

****NARRATED****

Naledi: hea...heath what are you doing

he was on one knee holding an opened small gold box with a diamond ring inside.... She was discharged just a few minutes ago and she just came out of the bathroom with her toiletry bag on her hand..... she came out of the bathroom and found him on his knee and with the gold box on his hands

Heath: please make me the happiest man on earth and marry me naledi

she stood there with tears now coming out shocked by this.... She couldn't believe heath wants to make her his wife

Heath: aren't you gonna say something obim

Naledi: are...are you sure heath

Heath: like I've never been sure of anything before

Naledi: you...you know you don't have to marry me because im pregnant right

Heath: I know that now please answer obim my knee hurts.... Will you marry me?

she nodded a couple of times with tears gushing out while laughing

Naledi: yes..yes I'll marry you

heath breathed a sigh of relief and he stood up and slid the ring on her finger and he then smashed his lips on hers.... After some time they pulled out of the kiss and hugged tightly

Heath: thank you obim thank you so much

.
. .

****HEATH****

**** It was now Friday around 3 in the afternoon and i was in my office busy..... Lately my company has been doing very well and we are even signing new clients almost every day which is something that has never happened before my HR department already is busy hiring new staff

cause work is piling up tremendously im happy that everything is going well in my life. Naledi agreed to marry me and her and Omphile are closer than I anticipated they would be and that just soothes my heart cause I can even tell that Omphile is free and happy to have a mother figure in her life who gives her attention and that makes me happy and im glad our unborn baby is ok and healthy and as for princess Lesedi she's just being Lesedi with her naughty self. Well as for lerato my guys are keeping a close eye on her and she did as I told her to do being to keep her mouth shut about who hurt her and im glad cause I really don't want to deal with her father cause besides his illegal businesses on the side he's actually a down to earth good man..... well my phone rang and it was my baby girl Omphile ***

Me: baby girl

Omphile: daddy mama said I should tell you that you shouldn't forget her McDonald's big mac when you come home

I chuckled

Me: ok my love I won't forget and what about you what should I bring you

Omphile: a big mac too

Me: mmmh like mother like daughter neh

she laughed

Omphile: aaah daddy

damn my daughter is happy people and that makes me happy...hearing her laugh brings joy to my heart

Me: ok tell you what tell your mom that I'll bring takeaways so she shouldn't cook tonight

Omphile: ok I'll tell her

Me: good so what is she doing now?

Omphile: she's baking for grandma and grandpa daddy

Me: ok tell her to take it easy ok or else she'll go back to the hospital

Omphile: ok I'll tell her I'll make sure she takes it easy because I don't want her to go back to the hospital

Me: ok my love I'll see you later ok

Omphile: ok daddy I love you

Me: I love you too my baby

then we ended the call and I smiled...the fact that they get along makes me happy I don't wanna lie... anyway my phone rang again and it was lerato's father calling

Me: Mr Moeketsi

Moeketsi: heath how are you?

Me: im good and yourself sir?

Moeketsi: im not good son

he sighed

Me: im listening

Moeketsi: I need your help man it's my daughter lerato she was attacked about a week or so ago and she refuses to tell us who hurt her

Me: ooh im sorry to hear that so how may I help you

Moeketsi: please come and talk to her maybe she can tell you who did that to her I would have asked you to search for the bastard who hurt her but even the cctv footage doesn't show anything suspicious so lerato is the only one who can identify the culprit but she refuses to tell us all she does is cry

I smiled wide then I cleared my throat

Me: ummm sir I would like to do that but I have a pregnant fiancé who would be angry at me if she knew I went to talk to my ex cause im sure lerato would say something to her about it cause she's like that so I don't want trouble so im afraid I can't do that

Moeketsi: please heath I know she'll tell you

Heath: Mr Moeketsi my fiancé is my first priority ok and I don't want problems between us so please I can't please understand my situation... even though you are my client but lerato is my ex and I have a pregnant and hormonal fiancé who won't like me helping out my ex im sorry

he sighed

Moeketsi: ok but if you change your mind call me

Me: ok

we ended the call

Me: mxm

*** then the door opened and my father stood there with a smile on his face... mxm trust this old man to just budge in just like that***

Me: im sure Jane decided to ignore you when you walked past her desk cause she didn't even tell me you are coming in

*** I said that standing up and walking to him***

Dad: this time around I decided to give her the look and she just froze

*** we laughed and hugged ***

Me: mgbe I biara (when did you arrive)

Dad: otu awa gara aga naani m choro ka oge ufodu puo na mama gi ekpebiri m ibia hu qi (an hour ago I just wanted some time away from your mother so I decided to come see you)

I laughed and he went to sit on my chair (he likes sitting there every time he comes here) and I went to sit on the visitors chair

Dad: everyone is busy down there going up and down

Me: yeah it's been busy lately it's like blessings from the heavens have decided to fall straight to this company because new clients are signing with us almost every day now and we are even hiring new staff because work is piling up

Dad: wow bu ezigbo okposite naewuli qi elu (wow that's good news son im proud of you)

*** I smiled wide***

Me: ekele nna o bu otutu ihe n'onu qi (thanks dad it means a lot hearing you say that)

*** then he cleared his throat***

Dad: so any special woman in your life

*** I smiled like a retard.... fuck naledi drives me crazy ***

Me: yes her name is naledi and she's my life dad she makes me so happy that I feel like I didn't know what love was until I met her

***he started coughing and I quickly poured him some water and he drank it ***

Me: I bu papa di mma (are you ok dad)

Dad: ye..yes...so her name is na..what?

Me: naledi which means star in English

I breathed out loud

Me: and...and she's pregnant dad she's carrying my boy dad

Dad: pre...pregnant?

Me: yeah...look dad I know you are disappointed that im having a child out of wedlock but I love her and even live for her.... And I even proposed marriage to her and she said yes

***he looked down while shaking his head ok what's happening ***

Me: dad

Dad: ummm son ummm im happy for you and im happy things are going well for you

Me: thanks but are you ok cause you've suddenly started to sweat ***

he stood up and I also stood up

Dad: nothing to worry about I forgot to drink my blood pressure pills so now I think its high...look let me go back I'll see you tomorrow with your mother ok

Me: are you sure you gonna be ok

Dad: im sure son don't worry

*** we hugged and I walked him to the door***

Dad: remember son to keep an open mind tomorrow

Me: with mom involved I doubt I will that wife of yours knows how to bring out the devil in me sometimes

he smiled

Dad: but through all that remember she's still your mother

Me: yeah yeah

he chuckled and walked out and I closed the door and went back to work

.

.

.

**** NARRATED****

Mr.masden: nomvula I think we made a mistake

Mrs.masden: what are you talking about Michael?

Mr.masden: I went to see Ezeh and he told me he's now engaged and the fiancé is pregnant

Mrs.masden: WHAT? NEVER.... MY SON WON'T BE TIDE DOWN BY SOME USELESS THING WE MARRIED HIM A WIFE AND THAT'S IT... I WONT HAVE JUST ANYBODY AS MY DAUGHTER IN LAW MICHAEL ADANMA IS HIS WIFE AND THAT'S THAT

Mr.masden: you know your son Nomvula.... all hell will break loose when he finds out that we married a wife for him cause I could tell he loves this naledi girl

Mrs.masden: he's my son so he'll listen to me I didn't carry him for nine months for absolutely nothing Michael

Mr.masden: well I said my piece woman

then he turned and looked the other way and slept

.

.

.

****at heath's house....it was night time and they lay in bed naked after their steamy session with naledi's head on his chest and him holding her tight***

Naledi: im nervous about tomorrow onye m

Heath: well my father is a nice man although he looks intimidating but as for my mother... eish she's a different story all together obim but whatever she says don't mind her cause nothing and no one is gonna break us up ok not even my parents

Naledi: you promise

Heath: I promise obim

they kissed

Naledi: well even Omphile doesn't like your mother much she said whenever she goes to Nigeria to visit them she always orders her to wear dresses only and you know your daughter loves jeans

heath chuckled

Heath: like I said mother is just....a pain in the ass some times

Naledi: bathong heath don't say that about your mother

*** she said that pinching him and he flinched and laughed***

Heath: ok ok sorry obim.... I love you ok

Naledi: I love you too

he kissed her forehead

Naledi: goodnight onye m

Heath: goodnight obim

**** and they closed their eyes and slept****

.

.

.

Naledi: heath are these glasses ok to serve them with

Heath: ummm what's wrong with them

Naledi: I don't know what if your mother thinks they are out of fashion or something

heath breathed out loud cause she's been fussy all morning making sure everything is ok and everywhere is spotless...he went to her and held her hands

Heath: obim please breathe before you faint abeg

Naledi: I want everything to be perfect heath

Heath: obim I know you want my parents to accept you and love you but one thing you seem to have forgotten is me Lesedi and Omphile are all the family you need and the same applies to me about you three ohh I mean four....whether they like you or not I don't give a fuck cause one way or another im gonna wife you even if we do it via the magistrate court it doesn't matter cause only death will do us apart obim

***she looked at heath with tears in her eyes.... She didn't understand why heath loved her this much she could tell he loves her more she even loves herself and it was just amazing ... she just threw herself to him and he held her tight ***

Naledi: I love you heath and thanks for loving me so unconditionally

Heath: I love you too obim God knows I love you too much

***they kissed and heath wiped her tears then jabu walked in the kitchen ***

Jabu: khante what's taking them so long some of us have places to be you know

he was here because heath asked him to come so he can make sure he doesn't lose it cause he has a bad feeling about her mother's reaction to the fact that naledi is an albino then they heard a car driving in

Jabu: eish finally

*** And they went to the lounge and joined Omphile who was watching tv and Lesedi who was busy playing with her toys and they waited for them to come in***

Heath: I know you can't tolerate your aunt but can you at least pretend that you are happy to see her just for today

Jabu: ai lwena mshikaro why o sa nna ncosi ya Betty instead of ya nomvula heh (shaka why didn't you become betty's son instead of nomvula's)

***heath and naledi laughed**

Heath: you can't choose family jabu

Jabu: well I choose not to be her nephew

they laughed then there the bell rang and heath went to open the door and it was his mother his father(who didn't look comfortable being here) his younger brother MJ and some young beautiful dark woman

Heath: come on in

they did and heath hugged his mother and did a stylish handshake with his little bro and shook his father's hand and the mysterious lady's hand too and they went to the lounge and jabu and naledi stood up and Omphile reluctantly went to her grandparents and hugged them and she just greeted the lady and hugged MJ..... well jabu went to shake their hands too well except the lady's hand cause by the look of heath's fathers' face shit was about to hit the fan. Well as for heath's mother she had a disgusted looked on her face while looking at naledi..... well heath went to stand next to naledi ready to introduce her to his parents

Heath: well mom and dad I would like to....

his mother interrupted him

Mrs.masden: before you speak son I would like you to meet Adanma Okoye your wife...Ada this is your husband Heath Ezeudo Owoh-Masden

***the whole room went quiet instantly and naledi's heart started to beat fast ***

Heath: what did you just say?

then MJ cleared his throat

MJ: well parents please just do me this one favour when you arrive in heaven tell Angel Gabriel or whomever it is that is the bookkeeper up there that I say my name had better not be removed

from his books under no circumstances whatsoever cause I did a good deed by warning ya'll about your deaths but you refused to listen so please tell him oooo...ok then

*** he looked at Omphile***

Mj: well princess O take the little princess and lets go upstairs so we can leave the old people to talk old people's stuff

Omphile nodded while looking at naledi who was holding her tears and she went to pick Lesedi up and they went upstairs

Jabu: mshikaro just calm down please

he could see that he was about to lose it

Heath: I asked a question now somebody better answer me

Mr.masden: son look we didn't

his wife interrupted him

Mrs.masden: my boy your father uncles and I decided to marry a good wife from a well-respected family for you

naledi's tears just ran down her cheeks as she felt like her whole world was about to come to an end

Heath: YOU DID WHAT?

Mrs.masden: yes my son you deserve to get married to a good girl from a good and well respected family and not just anybody

Jabu: wow I can't believe this

heath looked between his parents and the lady with rage all over his face

naledi got off heath's grip and attempted to walk away but heath held her hand quickly and pulled her to him

Heath: you see this woman right here is my fiancé and the mother of my children and the woman that owns my heart so if you know what's good for you you'll take this prostitute out of my house to where ever you picked her from

Mrs.Masden: HEATH HOW DARE YOU CALL YOUR WIFE A PROSTITUTE WHATS WRONG WITH YOU BOY AND ALL BECAUSE OF THIS ALBINO THING ARE YOU MAD...LOOK HERE WE WILL NEVER ACCEPT HER INTO OUR FAMILY SO THE SOONER YOU END THINGS WITH HER THE BETTER WE WILL JUST TAKE CARE OF OUR GRANDCHILD THAT IS IN HER WOMB AND THAT'S IF THE BABY IS YOURS...ADANMA IS YOUR WIFE WHETHER YOU LIKE IT OR NOT

Naledi: hea...heath let go please

she said that with a breaking voice and that pushed heath to his limits

Heath: the three of you have exactly 10 seconds to leave my house before I do something I'll probably regret afterwards

Mr.masden: son please under...

he interrupted him

Heath: 10..9...8...

Mrs.masden: HEATH STOP ALL THIS MADNESS OK WHATS WRONG WITH YOU WHAT DID THIS "THING" FEED YOU HEH... WHAT LOVE POTION DID YOU FEED MY SON YOU CURSED DEMON

*** she said that looking at naledi who just cried a painful cry while holding her chest***

Mr.masden: NOMVULA STOP IT MAN

Mrs.masden: LEAVE ME ALONE MICHAEL NO CHILD OF MINE WILL GET MARRIED TO AN ALBINO...NEVER I REFUSE IT IN THE NAME OF THE LIVING GOD I SERVE

Jabu: uncle I suggest you all leave now

Heath: 7...6...5

mrs masden slapped heath and heath looked at her with cold and hard face with his eyes bloodshot red

Mrs.masden: YOU ARE MY SON AND YOU'LL LISTEN TO ME YOU HEAR ME

*** she then looked at naledi ... as for heath's body it was shaking with rage...he was fighting the edge to strangle his mother to death with his bare hands***

Mrs.masden: little girl if you know what's good for you... you will go upstairs and pack whatever rags that you own and leave heath and Adanma's house this instant

Heath: obi m go upstairs now and stay there im coming

*** he said that letting go of her and she didn't even argue or anything she just walked upstairs sobbing so painfully***

Heath: I said get out of my house all of you

Jabu: uncle take your wife and this thing and leave immediately

Mrs.masden : shut up Jabulani this is my son's house ok we are not going anywhere nx

*** she clicked her tongue and heath walked to his study and Mrs Masden pulled Adanma's hand and she instructed her to sit down cause this is her husband's house and jabu went after heath....well heath got to his study and opened his safe with his hands shaking with extreme anger with naledi's sobs playing in his mind and he took out his gun and closed the safe and as he was about to walk out he bumped into jabu***

Jabu: mshikaro theola moya assomblief (shaka please calm down)

Heath: move jabu

Jabu: bona they are not worth it believe me wena just go upstairs and talk to your mamiwota
***heath pushed jabu out of the way and went to the lounge and his mother and Adanma
screamed when they saw a gun on his hand ***

Heath: GET THE FUCK OUT OF MY HOUSE NOW!

he roared

Mr.masden: Ezeh just calm down please

***heath pointed the gun at the glass table and pulled the trigger and screams filled the room
then he pointed the gun at his mother who was now shaking with fear because of the look that
was on his face***

Heath: IF YOU EVER TALK LIKE THE WAY YOU DID TO NALEDI EVER AGAIN I
WILL KILL YOU AND MOURN YOUR DEATH DO YOU HEAR ME WOMAN...NOW
TAKE THIS WHORE OUT OF MY HOUSE BEFORE I KILL HER..... TAKE HER OUT
NOW!

he roared

Mrs.masden: heath shes your

***he pointed the gun at Adanma and jabu saw that he was gonna shoot her for real and he
jumped on the gun as heath was pulling the trigger and it missed Adanma by an inch on her left
cheek and the bullet hit the wall and everyone screamed with Adanma covering her head while
ducking ***

Heath: LET GO OF ME JABU AND LET ME KILL THIS WHORE THAT'S MAKING MY
OWN MOTHER TO DO THIS SHIT TO ME

Jabu: SHES NOT WORTH IT MSHIKARO BELIEVE MEDON'T DO THIS WITH
NALEDI AND YOU KIDS UPSTAIRS

***he didn't care he pushed jabu off him and pointed the gun at his mother and shot next to her
on the couch and she screamed out loud and he pointed the gun at her again then his father stood
in front of his wife shielding her from being shot this time***

Mr.masden: EZEUDO STOP THIS NONSENSE NOW..... THIS WOMAN IS YOUR
MOTHER FOR GOD'S SAKE

Heath: I SAID GET THE FUCK OUT OF MY HOUSE NOW..... DON'T THINK I WONT
SHOOT YOU DAD CAUSE I WILL JUST SO I CAN GET TO YOUR EVIL AND WICKED
WIFE...NO ONE AND I MEAN NO ONE HURTS NALEDI IN ANY WAY AND GETS
AWAY WITH IT NOT EVEN MY OWN MOTHER NOW MOVE OR I'LL MAKE ALL
YOUR CHILDERN ORPHANS

*** he roared with his father watching in total horror looking at an angry heath...he could see that this was not "his" heath but an angry animal that they just unleashed unknowingly ***

Heath: I SAID OUT

*** he roared again and Adanma quickly took her hand bag and rushed out with her body shaking from her head to her toe and heath quickly grabbed her by her weave with the hand that held the gun and landed a hot slap across her face with another hand and let her go and she fell on the floor screaming out loud and before he could rush to her with an attempt to kick her jabu grabbed him ***

Jabu: GET UP AND LEAVE THIS HOUSE NOW WOMAN

he said that to Adanma and she quickly stood up and ran outside wailing

Jabu: Caesar calm down please just calm down

his mother was wailing out loud while his father was frozen with shock as he looked at his son

19

INSERT.....19

.
. .
. .

****HEATH****

To say im angry is an understatement Im fuming with rage and Im baying for blood. Seeing naledi cry like that moved something in me cause I never want to see her cry ever and now it's worse cause she's pregnant..... Im now pointing a gun at my parents ready to pull the trigger with jabu begging me to drop the gun but it was like he it wasn't registering in my mind well I only came back to my senses when I heard her call out my name.... I turned and looked at her and my heart broke into thousands of pieces when I saw her face it was pink and her eyes were swollen and red along with her nose

Naledi: onye m

***she said that in a low tone with her eyes on the gun and I slowly lowered the gun and jabu quickly took it from my hand and I walked to her with a worried look on my face ***

Me: are...are the two of you ok

she shook her head no

Naledi: cramps

*** that's all she said with tears coming out and I swear I died a million deaths at that instant... I turned and looked at Jabu with a panicking look***

Me: Jabu look after my princesses and make sure these people leave my house

Jabu: she'll keep me updated

I nodded and I rushed upstairs and took my wallet and I rushed downstairs and I took my car keys and picked her up bridal style and rushed outside and I found that bitch outside. I unlocked the car and put her down and she slowly got in and I also got in and drove out.... As soon as I arrived at the hospital I got out and quickly rushed to the passenger side and got Naledi out then I picked her up bridal style and rushed inside with her and as soon as the nurses saw me they came with a stretcher and I put her on top of it and they wheeled her away with me rushing next to the stretcher

Nurse: sir what's wrong with her

asked one of the nurses

Me: she's pregnant and she has pains on her belly but she's not bleeding

Nurse: ok we will take it from here..... I promise we will take good care of her so please go to the reception and fill in the forms

*** she said that stopping me from getting inside where they wheeled her in and I nodded with my hands on top of my head.....she went inside and I went to the reception..... after what felt like forever I saw a doctor approaching***

Doctor: Naledi Mogapi!

he called out and I stood up and went to him

Me: how is she?

Doctor: are you the father

nx

Me: yes now how are they

Doctor: her BP was extremely high and I'm even surprised that the babies are still holding on

*** I breathed a sigh of relief....wait a minute***

Me: babies?

Doctor: yes she's carrying twins

I just froze with shock

Me: ho...how...I mean she was admitted not long ago and the doctor that did a scan on her didn't say she's carrying twins

Doctor: I don't know about that sir maybe the other baby was hiding and his/her heart beat was low or the doctor was just incompetent but what I know is she's carrying twins

I moved to the couches to sit down cause I just felt my knees shaking and he followed me wait didn't my grandmother say she's carrying my son but then again I asked her to repeat what she said but she pretended as if she didn't say anything

Doctor: I saw on her file that she was admitted the last time because of her Blood pressure so I plead with you to make sure nothing stresses her or the next time the babies might not make it carrying multiple babies is a risk at its own so stress might harm both the babies and the mother so please make sure nothing stresses her

*** I nodded cause I was blaming myself for her being here cause the real culprits involved here are my parents***

Me: can I see her and when will she be discharged

Doctor: if in two hours' time her BP is stable then I'll discharge her but if it's not then she'll spend a night or two here.... And yes you can go see her

Me: thank you Doc

he nodded and I stood up and followed him to naledi's ward..... I got in and her eyes were closed I got closer to her bed and as soon as I touched her hand she opened her eyes

Me: how are you feeling now?

*** she didn't say anything***

Me: im sorry about what happened obim

Naledi: me and the kids will move to the apartment

Me: what are you talking about naledi?

Naledi: you are married heath and your mother said...

*** I interrupted her***

Me: you are not going anywhere and if you want to experience my wrath then dare me and leave me naledi!

I warned her...well more like threatened her and she didn't say anything tears just came out and I sighed

Me: im sorry obim....i shouldn't be stressing you im sorry ok

I said that wiping her tears and I kissed her forehead

Me: I didn't know about their stupid plan obim and Im not married ok I love you so much naledi to a point that I almost shot my own mother because she made you cry

I sighed

Me: this heart beats for you obim and only you I meant what I said naledi that only death will do us apart so don't stress yourself please

she didn't say anything she just closed her eyes and I pulled a chair and sat next to the bed and held her hand tight....nx no one makes my mamiwota cry and gets away with it..... I got up and walked out of her ward and I took out my phone and called Jabu

Jabu: how is she?

mxm that's how he answers his phone

Me: they are fine.... How are my princesses

Jabu: they are fine too but pumpkin is worried about naledi

Me: is she next to you

Jabu: yeah hold on

I heard some shuffling in the background

Omphile: daddy

she said softly

Me: my love

Omphile: where are you and mama

Me: I took her out for some fresh air cause your grandmother made her sad remember she's not supposed to stress out

Omphile: where is she can I talk to her?

Me: she....

*** I sighed***

Me: ok hold on

*** I went inside and I woke naledi up and told her its Omphile and that she's worried about her and I put the phone on loud speaker***

Naledi: baby

Omphile: mama are you ok and when are you coming back Lesedi was crying for you and daddy

Me: we are coming back like I told you I needed to take your mother out for some fresh air so she can calm down ok

Omphile: ok

Naledi: is Lesedi still crying

Omphile: no uncle Jabu made us some food and she stopped crying now she's sleeping

I saw a tear run down naledi's cheek and I sighed

Me: ok princess we are coming back just now Take care of your little sister ok

Omphile: ok daddy

Me: should we bring you something

Omphile: McDonalds daddy

Me: you and your mother with this McDonalds of yours

*** she laughed and naledi didn't even attempt to smile... fuck that hurts***

Me: ok then see you in a bit

Omphile: ok daddy I love you

Me: I love you too princess

Omphile: I love you mama

Naledi: I love you too my baby

Me: give your uncle the phone

then I took it off loud speaker and I walked out again

Jabu: mshikaro

Me: did they leave

Jabu: nah jou ou'lady (your mother) refused to leave

*** I clenched my jaws***

Me: I see my message to her and her husband along with that bitch they brought to my house wasn't clear enough

Jabu: I give up with her mshikaro that woman is just wicked I don't care gore ke jou ou'lady (that she's your mother) and my aunt nx o nale pelo ya masepa (she has an evil heart) I mean what if naledi o luzitse ncosi (lost the baby)or worse she ran out of the house and got hit by a car or something.... Why asa go biletsa ko lesaiteng (Why didn't she call you aside) and talked to you ko sephiring (in private) instead of saying all that shit to naledi

*** I felt my anger rise up again when the thought of naledi losing the baby crossed my mind ***

Me: I can't believe my own parents did that to me javas

Jabu: I hate judgemental people mshikaro and you know that so they better leave and go back home before I lose my fucken cool too nx

he sounded angry but not as angry as I am cause right now I don't even care that they are my parents I just want them to fucken leave my house

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

*** well two hours passed and the doctor discharged naledi since her BP was stable now and health and her drove passed McDonalds and bought takeaways and drove home with naledi quiet all the

way they soon arrived and heath parked the car and turned to look at naledi who was looking outside the window ***

Heath: obim

she didn't say anything

Heath: obim please look at me

she did slowly

Heath: I love you

***she looked down and he lifted her chin up with his finger ***

Heath: I love you naledi

she looked away instead of saying anything

Heath: I said I love you naledi

she sighed

Naledi: I love you too

Heath: say it like you mean it please

she sighed again

Naledi: I love you too heath

he looked at her for some time

Heath: can you do me a favour

she nodded

Heath: please trust me and don't stress yourself

she sighed

Naledi: their car is still here so it means they are still here too..... I don't know heath maybe you should just take me and the kids...

he interrupted her

Heath: not happening naledi forget it

she kept quiet and looked outside the window

Heath: what happened to trusting me naledi?

Naledi: I do trust you heath but they are your parents I've been disowned by my family so you can't have issues too with your family especially because of me

Heath: naledi

Naledi: heath

Heath: naledi!

he called out her name again

Naledi: heath

Heath: how many times did I call you?

Naledi: two times

Heath: good cause now im gonna say this once and we are never to discuss it ever again.....you and our kids are what is important to me naledi and I'll choose you and our kids anytime and any day over my family do you understand me

she sighed and nodded

Heath: I love you naledi a lot in fact more that you can ever imagine so please trust me obim as much as I trust you

Naledi: I trust you heath im just scared

Heath: you have nothing to be scared about obim cause I got you ok

she sighed

Naledi: ok..... Im hungry

he smiled

Heath: let's go inside

she didn't move

Naledi: heath please can i sleep at the....

he interrupted her

Heath: no this is your home naledi so now we are going inside and im gonna feed the three of you and I'll service you later at night ok

she nodded slowly and they got out of the car and heath held her hand and pulled her closer to his body and smashed his lips on hers and they kissed for some time until they pulled out of the kissed and heath stared into her swollen and puffy eyes

Heath: I love you obim

Naledi: I love you too onye m

and that made heath smile wide and he kissed her forehead then they went inside and as soon as Omphile saw them walking into the lounge she stood up and rushed to naledi with Lesedi in her arms and heath kissed her forehead and took the sleeping Lesedi from her and she hugged naledi

Omphile: mama are you ok

naledi nodded smiling a bit

Jabu: she's been holding the little princess ever since ya'll left she refused to put her down

Heath: she's just being an overprotective older sister

Jabu: yeah and I already feel sorry for Lesedi

they chuckled and heath's face got serious when his eyes landed on his parents and Adanma sitting down on the couches with the TV on then MJ walked in holding a plate with food on it

Heath: I thought I told you all to leave

Mr.masden: son sit down so we can talk

*** he said that with a serious tone***

Heath: Omphile go to eat your takeaway in the cinema room

Omphile: ok

she then took the paper bag and walked away then naleedi tried to take Lesedi from heath and he shook his head

Heath: sit obim

Mrs.masden: this is a family issue heath let her go

Heath: whatever you want to say to me you can say it in front of her

mrs masden wanted to say something but her husband stopped her by raising his hand up to her indicating that she should keep quiet

Mr.masden: its ok she can also sit in

they both sat down and so did MJ and jabu

Mrs.masden: junior go join Omphile

Mj: what for

Mrs.masden: Im not in the mood for your nonsense junior just go join Omphile now

Mj: im not going anywhere mom so just save your energy please

Mr.masden: junior listen to your mother

Mj: why

Mrs.masden: because you are too young to be sitting in on adults conversations

Mj: well mom im old enough to have sex and impregnate a girl so I think im old enough to sit in on this

*** jabu chuckled and heath just smiled looking down cause he knew how crazy his little brother is***

Mrs.masden: MICHAEL TALK TO YOUR SON PLEASE BEFORE I LOSE IT WITH HIM

Mj: dad just start with the talk cause im not going anywhere

he said eating his food and his father sighed while shaking his head

Mr.masden: Ezeudo we chose a wife for you cause you have never introduced a girl to us before and we were worried that you might end up choosing a woman like omphile's mother to marry so we chose a good girl from a good family for you believe me we meant no harm we were just looking out for you

Heath: ok then now that you know im engaged and that my fiancée is pregnant take your ‘ good girl from a good family” back to where you took her from cause she’s not needed or welcomed here

Adanma just sobbed silently

Mrs.masden: heath what has happened to you my son I mean you pointed a gun at me your mother all because of her..... you pointed a gun at me your mother heath who carried you for nine months and suffered 48 hours of labour and you nearly shot me

she said that crying and heath clenched his jaws

Heath: that’s what happens when you make my naledi cry Ma

Mrs.masden: how can you say that heath.... IM YOUR MOTHER FOR GOD’S SAKE

Heath: AND SHES THE MOTHER OF MY KIDS AND MY SOUL MATE FOR GOD’S SAKE

Mrs.masden: I can’t believe this what did you feed my son you witch

she said that pointing a finger at naledi while standing up and heath stood up too with Lesedi in his arms

Heath: call her a witch again and you’ll see what I will do to you

Mr.masden: WILL YOU TWO JUST STOP..... FOR FUCK’S SAKE SHUT THE HELL UP AND SIT DOWN

*** he roared and they both did with heath looking at his mother with an intense look on his face as for naledi she was busy wiping her tears off feeling hurt that heath’s mother thinks she fed him a love potion as if she doesn’t deserve to be loved unconditionally without any love potion involved ***

Mj: mother you never learn abi..... I mean brother heath pointed a gun at you not long ago but you still go on and insult his woman again like really mom

Mr.masden: MICHAEL!

MJ: ok.... Sorry oooo

***he continued to eat his food ***

Heath: dad say what you want to say to me naledi and my kids need to eat and rest

his father sighed then he looked down feeling defeated*

Mr.masden: look Eze Adanma is already your wife since we already married her for you so I propose you accept her as your first wife and you can take her as your second wife

*** he said pointing at naledi and naledi stood up but heath grabbed her hand and pulled her to sit down***

Heath: obim what did I say to you outside

*** he asked looking at naledi and Adanma’s heart broke into pieces when he called her that..... the thing is she was shown a picture of heath before she agreed with the arranged marriage thing and

she immediately fell in love with him and now she's looking at him reject her and again love another woman in front of her more especially an albino woman***

Naledi: let go heath please

Heath: no sit!

***he said that with a firm voice and she sat down with tears running down her cheeks ***

Jabu: ee ke mehlolo straight (this is unbelievable)

he said that and laughed while shaking his head

Mj: and who came up with that idea dad....wait let me guess its mom right?

Mrs.masden: junior will you just shut up!

*** she warned him***

Mj: I will not sit back and watch you do this to my brother mom if you like this lady so much then why don't you marry her off to big bro Ray and watch him chop her tiny body into pieces right in front of ya'll or better yet.... Dad why don't you take her as your second wife instead since you want her to be part of this family so bad

Mrs.masden: MICHAEL CHUKWUEMEKA OWOH-MASDEN!

she warned him but she was ignored

Jabu: I second that Small

he said that at MJ with a smile on his face while his father just shook his head looking down as for his mother she was fuming with anger

Mj: thanks bro and Im sure brother heath doesn't mind so its three against one mom its settled dad you are taking Adanma as your second wife..... now I just solved this problem so can we stop with all this fighting

***jabu laughed while heath chuckled... heath looked at his mother and he saw that she was fuming with anger and he sat back and let MJ handle this cause he knows he's the only one who manages to drive their mother to the Looney bin by being himself ***

Mrs.masden: leave us junior

Mj: mom this is my brother's house and not yours now please let me be ooo

Mrs.masden: Michael talk to your son please before I kill him with my bare hands

Mj: and you think he'll let you kill his last born son..... I don't think so mom

Mr.masden: JUNIOR ENOUGH!

***he warned him and MJ raised his hands up in surrender ***

Mr.masden: Eze what do you say about my proposal

Heath: I decline it Mj spoke word right out of my mouth..... since you two love this girl so much then its best you take her as a second wife cause naledi is the only woman who will bear my surname and give me more children

Mrs.masden: over my dead body

Mj: mmmmh so its fine if Ada gets between brother heath and his woman but it's not ok if she gets between you and dad mom aren't you being hypocritical

Heath: yes mom answer him

Jabu: im also waiting for an answer auntiza (aunt)

Mrs.masden: Adanma is heath's wife and this girl better accept it or take her shit and leave with her bastard child....

heath quickly gave Lesedi to naledi and rushed to his mother but jabu saw it all and he quickly stood up too and blocked him from reaching her... his father also stood up

Heath: call Lesedi a bastard again and see what I'll do to you

he said all that with tightened jaws and a scary look on his face

Mrs.masden: so you would beat me up heath your own mother because of her

Jabu: mshikaro calm down assomblief

Mr.masden: Ezeudo shes still your mother now stop all this

Heath: shes no mother to me a woman that gave birth to me would never be this wicked my mother would want to see me happy and not forcing this thing down my throat and she would never judge or belittle or discriminate against another human being!

he said that looking angry and hurt

Heath: mother I love naledi and there's nothing you or anyone can do about it and if she loses this pregnancy because of you know that I will kill you and there's nothing your husband can about it

then he looked at his father

Heath: now dad please take both your wives and leave my house and only come back or call me when you have decided to accept naledi and all my bastard children

his father held his chest as all this got too much for his weak heart..... he then bend down as extreme pain pierced through his chest and he fell on the floor clenching his chest

Jabu: uncle....

Heath: dad...dad

he also said rushing to him and so did MJ

Heath: fuck someone call an ambulance

***mrs masden knelt next to him panicking ***

Mrs.masden: Michael what's wrong..... don't do this to me Michael please..... don't do this to me im begging you

she said that crying with jabu busy on the phone

Heath: try to breathe dad help is on the way ok..... breathe

*** naledi just walked upstairs with Lesedi and she put her down and she sat on the edge of the bed crying she blamed herself for what happened cause heath was defending her to his parents and if he didn't his father wouldn't have collapsed

Sponsored

she cried holding her baby bump with koko's words running in her mind***

Naledi: I knew my happiness won't last for long..... They were all right im cursed im cursed and I don't deserve to be happy

she said that to herself over and over while crying a heart piercing cry she lay on her side and she cried silently not wanting to wake Lesedi..... After some time the door opened and heath rushed in with his eyes bloodshot red

Heath: obim im rushing to the hospital an ambulance just left with dad and jabu Mj and I are rushing there as well

***naledi just nodded and heath kissed her cheek and he rushed out and she continued to cry..... after some time she got up with her pounding head heavy heart and swollen eyes and she went to the walk in closet and took out her bag and started packing her clothes after some time she was done and went to lesedi's bedroom and she packed her clothes too then she went to omphile's bedroom and packed her clothes too cause she couldn't leave her behind not now that she just experienced a mother's love and affection from her and she also promised she would never leave her and she wasn't about to break her promise to her..... after she was done she took the bags outside to the car she always uses and she put them in the boot and she went upstairs to the main bedroom and she took out a page from a notebook and she wrote a letter to heath and it read:

“ Dear onye m

I tried to hold on to you and not let go but what just happened is the last straw I guess everyone was right when they said im a curse cause look at what happened to your father. it's all my fault cause if I wasn't in your life he wouldn't have collapsed like that. I can't sit back and watch you insult and threaten your mother because of me so me leaving is the best thing right now im sure everyone will blame me like “ the cursed witch” I am for what happened to your father and I don't think I will stomach it I took Omphile too cause even though she's not mine biologically but she' s also my

daughter and I promised her I'll never abandon her like her real mother did. Im not running away im just walking away so there could be peace between you and your parents. I love you onye m so much but let's not fool ourselves heath im not your type to begin with and your parents will never accept me into your family unless you take that Ada woman as your first wife and I WILL NEVER be anyone's second wife I've rather remain single than do that so me leaving is the best thing.... take care of yourself and even though I have a feeling you'll find us right after reading this letter please don't take Omphile from me I'll live anywhere you want us to live as long as It's not here cause I've grown to love her like my own.

Love..... Naledi"***

*** then she left the letter on top of the bed and she picked Lesedi up and went downstairs to the cinema room and she called Omphile***

Omphile: mama what's wrong

Naledi: let's go

Omphile: where's everyone

Naledi: they rushed to the hospital your grandfather is not well

Omphile: ok are we going to the hospital

Naledi: no im leaving cause your grandparents don't want me and your father to be together so if you want to come with us your bags are already in the boot of the car and if you don't want to I can drop you off at the hospital where everyone is

she looked at her with tears in her eyes cause she saw how naledi's face was with all the crying she did and tears ran down her cheeks and she wiped them

Naledi: im not running away Omphile im just leaving this house but if you can't come with its ok baby I understand

she shook her head no

Omphile: I want to go with you and lesedi mama

Naledi: you sure

***she nodded ***

Naledi: ok let's go

they walked out going to the car..... naledi had to do this cause she feared she might miscarry with all that has been going on especially all the insults she receives from heath's mother

.
. .
.

*** meanwhile after some time of waiting for the doctor heath decided to call naledi and check up on her and the kids and her numbers went straight to voicemail.... He tried again and again and again and still it went to voicemail and his heart started beating fast***

Jabu: what wrong

Heath: her phone is not going through..... I have a bad feeling about this jabu

Jabu: try omphile's numbers

Heath: yeah

he called omphile's numbers and it rang for some time and she finally answered

Omphile: daddy

***she said with a low tone ***

Heath: my love what's wrong and where is your mother

Omphile: ummm hold on

then he heard some shuffling from the background and naledi's voice talking

Naledi: hey ummm I took the kids and we left the house im not kidnapping your daughter or running away I just can't stay there anymore it's too much heath look i....

heath interrupted her

Heath: wait what?

Naledi: I'll send you the co-ordinations of the hotel we will check into and you can come see....

***he interrupted her ***

Heath: naledi if you know what's good for you you will go back home now with my kids and wait for me....don't make me come and look for you cause believe me you'll hate me once I find you

he said that with his heart beating fast

Naledi: fine I'll come and drop off Omphile at the hospital and...

Heath: NALEDI! DON'T TEST ME YOU HEAR ME DON'T FUCKEN TEST ME TURN THAT FUCKEN CAR AROUND AND GO BACK HOME WITH MY KIDS NOW!

*** he roared while rushing out of the hospital with jabu behind him***

Naledi: I cant heath im sorry

Heath: naledi take my kids back home now!

Naledi: heath im not going back there im sorry I cant you can come see your kids at the hotel

Heath: NALEDI!

*** then jabu snatched the phone from heath cause he could see he was fuming with anger now***

Jabu: Ledi look since you don't want to go back to his house you can go to mine it's not that far from his house. Look ka jaja gore die julle ding is too much suster but running away ga e solve jaive naledi man instead e oketsa mathata jy verstaan and mshikaro o tlo go bodisa ge o vaiya le ncosi

tsa gae so wena zaiya o ye ko dladleng laka and re tla kopana daar ok (look I know all of this is too much but running away doesn't solve the problem naledi but instead it multiplies it and shaka will kill you if you leave with his kids so just go to my house and we will meet there)

Naledi: o...ok

Jabu: sho o sa gopola tsela mos (you remember the way right)

Naledi: yah ke sa e gopola (yes I do)

Jabu: ok shap drive safely re tla kopana daar (we will meet there)

Naledi: ok

*** jabu gave heath the phone and they got in the car and drove to jabu's house and so did naledi few minutes after they arrived naledi drove in and she parked next to heath's car and Omphile got out and went to her father and she hugged him then jabu went to the car and took lesedi out and instructed Omphile that they go inside and they did..... then heath went to naledi but then naledi locked herself in the car when she saw the look on heath's face..... heath tried to open the door but it was locked***

Heath: open this door

she shook her head no

Heath: don't make me break this fucken window naledi just open this fucken door now

by now tears were running down her cheeks then he breathed out trying to calm himself down..... her face was pink and her eyes were swollen and puffy she looked horrible

Heath: open this door naledi please

she unlocked it and heath opened it and stood there looking at her he wanted to slap her back to her senses so bad but he couldn't lay a hand on her under no circumstances

Heath: lets go in so you can rest im sure your BP is high

she looked surprised he said that as she thought he will beat the crap out of her..... she slowly got out of the car and she immediately got dizzy and held on to the car for balance and heath quickly scooped her up and he went inside with her all the way to the bedroom he uses when he sleeps here and he put her down on the bed and also got in and held her from behind

Heath: do you still feel dizzy

she nodded

Heath: so you were trying to run away from me

she shook her head no and she sniffed

Heath: then what it is

Naledi: I cant do this anymore heath its too much for me

Heath: naledi don't even think about it ok if you want me to go crazy try whatever you're trying to do and you'll see my crazy side

she didn't say anything

Heath: I told you that only death will do us apart and I meant every word so we are stuck together until God remembers one of us or both of us at the same time and the sooner you accept that the better for the both of us

***she didn't say anything she just swallowed hard ***

Heath: rest we will talk about that stunt you almost pulled when you wake up

*** he said that tightening the grip around her and he kissed the back of her head***

Heath: I love you even though you turn me into a mad man sometimes

she just closed her eyes as she felt the room spin a bit and soon after sleep took over and she was out of it

.
. .
. .

*** after some time heath got out of bed and he covered naledi with a throw blanket and he wore his shoes and went to the lounge and found Omphile and lesedi eating and he kissed their foreheads***

Omphile: daddy is mama ok

Heath: yeah she is she resting now

Omphile: ok

Heath: I love both of you so much ok

she nodded

.
. .
. .

**** he stayed a few minutes with them then he told jabu he needs to rush back to the hospital and asked jabu to make sure naledi doesn't run away again and he got into his car and drove off.....

when he got there he found them still waiting and he sat next to MJ***

Heath: has the doctor came out yet

he shook his head no and they stayed in silence until MJ spoke

MJ: she's beautiful

Heath: who

Mj: naledi bro

heath smirked

Heath: and stubborn

they chuckled

Mj: I've never seen an albino like her before her skin is flawless I mean if she were mine I'd also pull out a gun on mom too

they laughed

Heath: you do know you gonna drive your mother crazy one of this days

Mj: she needs to chill and mind her own business..... I cant wait for next year to pass so I can leave her house and come this side to further my studies

Heath: well you know she wants you to study overseas

Mj: let me see her try and force me to go to the UK and I'll just get three girls pregnant at the same time on purpose and watch her turn grey instantly.... I know that will teach her a lesson and you and big Ray will help me take care of the babies financially while she's admitted in a mental institution and dad will take Adanma as a second wife and everyone will live happily ever and after

they laughed

Heath: you are crazy you know that right

Mj: I try bro...I try

they laughed some more then a doctor walked towards them

Doctor: Michael Owoh-Masden

they stood up

Mrs.masden: how is my husband doctor

Doctor: well he's gonna be fine he just suffered a minor heart attack but luckily I didn't cause any damage so hes gonna be fine

they all breathed out loud relieved

Mrs.masden: can I see him

Doctor: well he asked to see his son Heath first

Mrs.masden: what? but im his wife he should see me first

Doctor: he wants to see his son first mam

Heath: im heath doc please show me the way

mrs masden just clicked her tongue as heath and the doctor walked away

Mj: oh oh I see trouble in paradise loading..... ohh and Ada you should just use this opportunity to win dad's heart since you're gonna be his second wife cause my brother would rather kill you than marry you and big brother Ray is a no go area

*** mrs masden threw her shoe at him and he ducked and laughed***

.

.
.
*** well heath walked in his father's ward and he found him staring into space***

Heath: dad

his father turned and looked at him

Heath: I see death rejected you mmmh

his father chuckled lightly

Mr.masden: im sorry son I just...

heath interrupted him

Heath: I know it wasn't your idea dad cause I know you

Mr.masden: you know me but with you I see sides I never knew existed every time

Heath: love can turn you into a mad man dad

Mr.masden: you love her abi

heath nodded

Heath: more than I love myself and I think I have also reached the obsession stage too

his father smiled while shaking his head

Heath: then what about Adanma im sure you know your mother already made deals with her parents right

Heath: marry her..... that will teach her a lesson that you are the head of the house and for her to mind her marital affairs and leave her children in peace I mean even now Yvonne doesn't come home anymore because of her and now im next and as for big Ray they don't get along at all so its time you dealt with her dad or your children will be scattered all over the world and they won't come back home to Nigeria to visit all because of her

***Mr Masden sighed deeply cause heath was right... he has always overlooked his wife's bullshit for years now that even his eldest son Ray can't stand her sight even though she gave birth to him..... well she thinks she's above him but all that stops now cause he won't have his children hate him because of her its time she knew her place" he thought to himself" ***

20

INSERT.....20

.

.

.

****HEATH****

*** Mom Mj and that woman walked in and she looked at me but I just gave her a death stare and she looked away nx***

Me: dad I should go now

Mom: if you leave who's gonna drive us back to your house

Me: im sure you can drive mom so ya'll will use my car and I'll use an uber

Mj: or I can drive

Mom: shut it Mj im not in the mood for you right now

Mj just shook his head smiling

Adanma: brother Ezeh can I talk to you

*** and now?***

Me: about what

Adanma: it's...its private

Dad: go talk to her Ezeh before your mother kills you with that stare of hers

Mj laughed

Mom: is that how you talk about me now Michael

Dad: im sick woman so please don't start with me

I just shook my head and walked out and she followed me and we stood outside the ward

Me: im listening

I said that looking at her with my hands inside my pocket.... The truth is she's a beautiful caramel skinned woman but hey my mamiwota takes the cup no lies

Adanma: Ezeudo I didn't ask for any of this this was an arranged married by both our parents so I don't get why I have to be beaten and threatened where else I didn't plan any of this

Me: what is your point Adanma?

Adanma: even though we don't know each other I fell in love with the man your parent sold to me and now im here being rejected and slapped even shot at for things I know nothing of

Me: let me ask you this why on earth did you agree to this nonsense I mean you look like an intelligent young woman and not forgetting this is the 21st century and im not from royalty so why would you even entertain all this shit

Adanma: because your mother said you'll love me and that you are looking for a Nigerian well raised woman to marry and when.... And when I saw your picture I fell for you

*** I chuckled while shaking my head***

Me: I love naledi Adanma and its her im gonna marry and grow old with I don't know what my mother promised you but she lied to you cause this heart beats for one woman and one woman only and I

don't want a second wife ever so I suggest you go back home unless you want to be my father's second wife then it's cool

she was now sobbing silently and I didn't care

Adanma: my bride price was paid Ezeh what will people say mmmmh please will laugh at me so please talk to naledi and convince her to let me be your other wife please or I'll be a laughing stock back home im begging you

Me: no..... I don't want a second wife Adanma I love naledi and as much as I'll go crazy if I were to share her with some other guy then I won't let her share me with another woman period

she got closer to me and touched my chest and I looked at her like "wtf"

Adanma: please Ezeh im begging you

***I pushed her off me ***

Me: women who throw themselves at me are a fucken turn off to me in fact I see them as hoes

she swallowed hard and took a step back

Adanma: fine then I'll go to the press about this whole thing and im sure they'll have a filled day with tarnishing your family name

I laughed...nx how desperate is this bitch

Me: go ahead sweetie you think I care about what people say about me? Mmmm well let me tell you woman the only opinion that matters to me is naledi's opinion so anyone else can go fuck themselves including you

I walked inside leaving her outside..... fuck I was pissed off

Dad: you ok

*** I guess he can see im not ok***

Me: that bitch you came here with threatened to go to the press about this whole arranged marriage thing

Dad: WHAT!

Me: you see the things you bring into our family mother

Mom: you are lying she would never do that

I chuckled

Me: I guess you don't know her like the way you thought you do dearest mother..... anyway let me go my mamiwota is waiting for me

Mj: can I come with you bro

Me: ok.....umm dad I'll see you tomorrow

*** I patted his shoulder a bit and Mj hugged him and we walked out and found Adanma on the phone outside she looked angry while she was talking on the phonemmmh I don't trust this bitch one bit***

Me: calling the press already

she quickly turned and she immediately dropped the call

Mj: well step mom to be clearly you don't know who you are dealing with remember you are far from home and anything can happen to you.....so before doing anything stupid think about the consequences ok

her face instantly turned pale and we walked passed her

Me: and now

Mj: what?

Me: "remember you are far from home and anything can happen to you"

*** I mimicked his voice and he laughed***

Mj: I know what you dad and big bro Ray are capable of bro... ya'll seem to forget I see and hear things around me

Me: what things

I said that raising an eyebrow

Mj: bad things ooo That's all im gonna say

*** I chuckled and we got outside and I called and uber and minutes later it came and we got in and we went passed my house and we packed some clothes and left I asked him why he also packed and he said the is no way in hell he'll stay with dearest mother in south Africa too that it's enough he does back home so he can't here too well he came to spend his school holidays with me..... anyway we left with our bags to jabu's place and soon we arrived at his place and Mj went to make himself some food immediately after we got in the house...mmmmh I guess he's feeding his big muscles you know for a senior secondary SS 3 learner (grade 11) he's way too buffed up and muscled***

Me: javas

Jabu: ma se kind (my brother) how is he?

Me: he'll be fine they said the heart attack didn't cause any damage so he's gonna be fine... and how is naledi?

Jabu: she came down to cook and eat then she went back to bed with Lesedi and as for Omphile she's in the TV room watching her teenage shows

Me: ok.... thanks for all this bafo

Jabu: we family mshikaro man so don't sweat it

I nodded...im lucky to have jabu in my life im not even gonna lie

Me: let me go check up on her

Jabu: sho

I went upstairs and she was sleeping with Lesedi and I took Lesedi to another bedroom and I went back to our bedroom and locked the door and took off my clothes and I got on top of her and I whispered in her ear

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Heath: obi m

naledi slowly opened her eyes and she was met by heath's eyes and he perked her lips

Heath: hey

she just sighed and heath whispered in her ear

Heath: I love you so much obi m

*** she didn't say anything and he kissed her neck and sucked on it and a moan escaped her mouth and he knew he had her where he wants her and he stopped after sometime and he took off her clothes and he got between her legs and they started kissing with heath caressing her body her skin was smooth and he couldn't stop caressing it***

Heath: fuck I love you naledi

he said that sucking on her breast now which made naledi to moan out loud

Heath: tell me you love me too obi m

*** he said that sucking on her nipple and also fingering her which drove naledi crazy***

Naledi: ooh heath goshhhh....aaahhhh

that's all she could say and he increased his pace with his fingering game

Heath: don't you love me obi m

Naledi: i...love...you heath....ohh God I love you

he then stopped what he was doing and he pulled his finger out of her nana and he sucked on it and he smashed his lips on hers making her taste her own juices then he slowly entered her and she moaned out loud while he groaned out loud when he felt her warmth and her walls hugging his dick and he didn't move an inch

Heath: look at me obi m

***she did while biting her lower lip as she felt him fill her up completely ***

Heath: never in your life should you ever run away from me you hear me

she nodded and he started moving slowly and naledi eyes rolled back as a wave of pleasure washed over her

Heath: look at me

she moaned then she looked at him

Heath: you are mine and im yours until death do us apart and if you take my kids and try to run away ever again I'll find you then fuck you until you pass out since I will never lay a hand on your precious self you hear me

she nodded fast and he kissed and he increased his space and they made love until they both came at the same time and naledi immediately fell asleep after they were done and heath got out of bed after cuddling her for some time then he wore his clothes and went to check on Lesedi and she was awake busy playing with a stuffed bunny animal that was on the bed and he picked her up with the stuffed animal

Heath: wow you are growing up abi you don't cry now when you wake up alone mmmmh?

***he said that kissing her all over her face which made her giggle and he went down stairs with her and found Omphile laughing at Mj's jokes and he kissed her forehead and sat down ***

Heath: my love please bring me my food

Omphile: ok daddy

she stood up and went to the kitchen

Heath: where is jabu

Mj: she went to see his girl

Heath: what girl

Mj shrugged his shoulders

Heath: mmmmh

then he stood up and went to the balcony with Lesedi in his arms and he took his out his phone from his pocket and dialled his elder brother's number

Ray: Ezeh haw far? (Eze hi)

Heath: I dey fine bros (im fine brother) but dad is not

Ray: wetin dey happen (what's going on)

Heath: mother happened and he ended up in hospital

Ray: I no sabi Ezeh (I don't understand)

he confused and heath sighed

Heath: she dey cause wahala bros (she's causing trouble brother)

Ray: wetin she dey do(what did she do)

Heath: she married a wife for me and brought her here to south Africa and I lost it

Ray: wetin? (what?)

Heath: I nearly shot her and that thing she brought for me bros if it wasn't for jabu I swear she'd be dead

he said that getting angry again

Ray: that woman is unstable in the head im sure she forced father to do that

Heath: true..... and the things she said to my woman bros nc nc nc nc

He said that and he took a deep breath to calm himself down

Ray: is father ok

Heath: he suffered a small-small heart attack but the doctor said he'll be fine it didn't cause any damage

***ray breathed out heavily it didn't cause any damage

ray breathed out heavily heath could tell he was getting angry by the second

Ray: I'll land there in two days to come just make sure dad doesn't leave before I see him

Heath: ok

Ray: how is princess omphi

Heath: growing up and it scares the shit out of me bros

Ray: we better prepare for the worst bros shes beautiful so wolves in sheep's clothing will be all over her soon if they haven't started already

Heath: then they better be prepared to die cause I'll chop off any dickhead that will try her luck with her

they both laughed

Ray: so tell me about your woman

heath chuckled

Heath: ooh my mamiwota

ray laughed

Ray: ooh na so? (is that so?)

Heath: eeh bros that girl don do shakara for me oooo (she drives me crazy)..... God don butta my bread with her bros (God has answered my prayers with her)

Ray: nawa oh! (wow)

*** they laughed**

Heath: she's also pregnant with twins

Ray: wow congrats

Heath: thanks bros

Ray: don't worry im coming so all that nonsense mother is doing im gonna put a stop to all of them

Heath: bros bros bros I know you will even Mj tried his best by suggesting that dad takes that Adanma chick as his second wife instead

ray chuckled

Ray: he's still crazy I see

*** Heath chuckled***

Heath: and he's getting worse if you hear what he said when they walked in the first time after mom just said she married a woman for me you will crack up..... When he said it back then I didn't find it funny cause I was extremely mad but now....

*** he laughed***

Ray: I wonder what he said

***they both laughed and someone talked in the background

Voice: jefe hes agui (boss he's here)

the voice spoke in Spanish

Ray: bueno estoy llegando ahora mismo mantenlo ocupando..... mientras tanto (good im coming just now keep him.... Busy in the meantime)

Voice: ok (de acuerdo)

Ray: sorry about that bros

Heath: I see you are about to be busy mmmmh

Ray: mmmmh I forgot you know Spanish..... Anyway yeah some fool thinks he can steal from me and gets away with it now im about to show him why they call me LA PARCA (the grim reaper) here

heath chuckled

Heath: ok bros go do your thing I'll see you in two days' time

Ray: ok take care and make sure the old man takes it easy and greet javas Mj and my princess

Heath: will do

***then they ended the call and he also called his sister Yvonne and she said she'd call their father to check on him and he went back inside and ate his food and later on Omphile and Lesedi fell asleep and him and Mj picked them up and went to put them to bed and soon after jabu came back and they went to sit in his study leaving Mj busy watching TV ***

Heath: mmmmh Mj told me you went to see your girl and I wonder which girl you went to see

he said that with a smile on his face

Jabu: well you don't know her mshikaro

Heath: ok so is it serious?

Jabu: yah.....the thing is ka mncanywa dai cheri mshikaro but eish flopo ke lethaima lagae joh (I love her shaka but eish the problem is her dad man)

Heath: what about her father

Jabu: ke moruti

Heath: heh?

Jabu: ka gochaela mshiko ke moruti dai thaima(im telling you shaka he's a pastor)

***heath just busted out with laughter ***

Jabu: oska laga mshikaro (don't laugh shaka) im serious

Heath: askies man but bafo a pastor's daughter

he said that wiping his tears

Jabu: my heart wants what it wants bafo jy veet mos (you know right)

Heath: I know bafo but a pastor's daughter

Jabu: hai man mshikaro

Heath: ok...ok so where did you meet her

Jabu: at the mall eish mshikaro dai cheri is moooi yong (eish shaka that girl is beautiful damn)

Heath: so you are committing now mmmh no more Mr fucking around

Jabu: yeah eish she drives me crazy

Heath: wow im happy for you bros finally man

they fist bumped

Jabu: but eish I wonder how her father will react when he gets to know about my past

Heath: he's not God jabu you paid for your sins so if he tries to separates you two then I'll be forced to dig up his skeletons which im sure he has

jabu chuckled while shaking his head

Heath: im telling you jabu let him try to separate you two and I'll show him flames

they laughed and chatted some more then they went to bed

.

.

.

*** Two days later around 10 in the morning heath was at the airport waiting for his brother he was holding a board written "BIG RAY" and soon after his brother saw him and he walked towards him with his two bodyguards behind him and he got to heath with a big smile on his face***

Ray: bros haw far? (How are you)

Heath: I dey fine bros I dey fine (im good brother im good)

then they bro hugged

Heath: let's go

they went to the car and the guards got at the back and heath drove out while holding a conversation with his brother about his trip..... they finally got to heath's house and they got out while Ray's bodyguards got his bag out....the brothers went inside and they found their mother and Adanma sitting in the lounge while drinking tea

Ray: mother

he said that without even a smile on his face or even attempted to hug her

Mrs.Masden: son

she said that not even attempting to stand up.....she knew how Raymond felt about her and she just stopped trying to win him over

Ray: young lady

*** he said that with a cold tone as he could see that she was the Nigerian "wife" for heath because of her attire***

Adanma: hi

then he looked at heath

Ray: where is my father?

Mrs.Masden: upstairs he's resting

Heath: let's go

then he looked at his bodyguards

Ray: vuelvo enseguida(I'll be back)

***they nodded and went to wait outside while the brother's went upstairs and got inside the bedroom used by their parents and they found him reading a book ***

Ray: nna (father)

he looked up from his book and smiled wide

Mr.masden: nwa (son) come

ray got closer and they hugged and heath hugged him too

Ray: I heard you cheated death

he laughed

Mr.masden: remember I have nine lives son

Heath: mmmh and now you have 5 lives left

Ray: you can say that again

*** They laughed again***

Mr.masden: how are you son?

Ray: im always good father but im worried about the turn of events that made you to have a heart attack

his father sighed

Ray: you better take that girl back to where you found her father you can't let your wife to strengthen her relationship with that girl's parents with the expense of my brother's happiness

Mr.masden: we've already paid the bride price

Ray: how can you do that without Ezech's permission or consent?

he didn't say anything

Ray: im sure the girl's mother is one of your wife's friends that is why she's pushing her to heath but know this no woman will be forced down my brothers throat he has a fiancée and twins on the way and if your wife is hell bend on making her a wife in this family then I'll marry her but know that she'll be dead within a week of our marriage

*** he said that with a serious look on his face and heath chuckled while their father just shook his head feeling defeated cause he knows he's dead serious***

Mr.masden: ray you know that family will make things hard for us if we take her back right

Ray: then I'll marry her

Mr.masden: no....not happening cause I know you'll make her disappear just like you did with that girl your mother arranged for you so no

Ray: well then take her back and don't worry I'll sit in on the meeting with her people when you take her back

Heath: mh mh mh

he said that shaking his head

Ray: what?

Heath: nothing just ask someone to document that meeting for me cause I would like to see the drama that will unfold then

Ray: mxm

Mr.masden: her father is a politician son so trust me it won't end well

Ray: and im LA PARCA father ofcourse it won't end well

heath laughed and their father just shook his head defeated then heath's phone rang it was naleli so he excused himself then he walked out of the bedroom while answering it

Ray: it's all your wife's fault so it is what it is father

Mr.masden: shes your mother and she gave birth to you..... you know that right

Ray: and I wonder whether she sniffed me out of her nose or she actually gave birth to me and also experienced labour pains

Mr.masden: RAY!

Ray: it's the truth father and im sure Ezech is also asking himself that question right now

his father sighed

Mr.masden: will you ever forgive her

Ray: forgiveness is between her and God father so don't involve me in their thing

Mr.masden: son I have forgiven her so why can't you

Ray: cause you always choose to see the good in her and that's your weakness and mother is aware of it so she does things knowing fully well you'll pardon her shortcomings even at the expense of your children

***Mr Masden kept quiet cause what Ray was saying was true ***

21

INSERT.....21

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Ray: look im not gonna hurt you ok im actually a doctor by profession and I have a sister and nieces so relax I won't hurt you ok

Mbali nodded but she didn't relax a bit

Ray: where were you coming from anyways?

he asked looking at her briefly

Mbali: my boy..... my now ex-boyfriend's place

Ray: why would he let you go at this time?

Mbali: we....he....

then she kept quiet when the events that happened in her boyfriend's place played in her mind then more tears came out

Ray: he cheated?

he asked her with his deep scratchy voice and she nodded

Mbali: and the girl he cheated with is pregnant....i.... I thought she was my friend but.... But she was....

she cried some more

Ray: Mbali look at me

he was now stopping at the robots and she did slowly trying to wipe her tears

Ray: fuck both of them you hear me they don't deserve your tears and im sure your stupid "which I presume is now you ex-friend" is not as beautiful as you are so just cry out all the pain and once you done letting it all out pick yourself up and make sure you look good so that when they see you they see that they didn't bring you down but instead they made you stronger ok

he said that to her and smirked raising his one eyebrow and mbali managed to smile a bit and she nodded

Ray: good now I don't know if you'll feel comfortable coming with me to my place so I can check you up and give you something for the shock cause you still shaking but the decision is all on you you can still give me directions to someone you can stay with tonight cause its not wise to stay alone when you like this

*** she thought of her brothers especially Smiso cause he's terribly scary when he's mad and right then a cold chill ran down her spine when she thought of them finding out she has or had a boyfriend and on top of that he hurt her and she ended up almost being hijacked because of that..... if she was coming from a friend's place or something it was better but she wasn't and she knows she can't lie to them.... she just knew Kyle will just disappear from the face of earth without any trace left behind and they will be responsible for that and she can't have that on her conscience***

Mbali: i.... ummm.... You...ummm.... You can check me doctor

Ray looked at her briefly and he saw worry on her face and he asked himself what is it that she just thought of cause she kept quiet a bit like she was thinking of something

Ray: ok

then he drove to his apartment and he parked and Mateo and Diego also drove in and parked

Ray: let go in

she slowly opened the door and got out and she closed the door and she continued to hug her body as it shook and ray went to Mateo and Diego

Ray: did you wipe them off Mateo

Mateo: sí jefe (yes boss)

Ray: good search for her phone I saw her searching for it under the seat and also bring her bag upstairs and check her background Mateo

*** they nodded and ray went back to Mbali and they went inside and got in the lift and it opened on the second floor and they went to his apartment (or rather heath's apartment) door and he opened it and she slowly walked in and ray followed***

Ray: sit down I'll go get my medical bag

Mbali: ok

she went to sit down and looked around she didn't know why she was trusting ray like this cause he was a total stranger to her. Even though she knows she shouldn't be here with a strange man in his apartment and worst part no one knows right now where she really is but she couldn't help but notice that something in her felt somewhat.... "safe " with him.... Crazy she knows but it was what it was..... Well Ray came back and he put the bag on top of the table and he went to the kitchen area and he poured her some juice and he went back and gave her the glass

Ray: drink up..... the sugar in it will calm you down a bit

***she started drinking it... and ray pulled the table closer to her and he sat on it facing her ***

Ray: may i

he said that showing her that he wants to hold her hand and she swallowed and nodded and he checked her heart beat and he kept on checking his hand watch while felling it like doctors do and after some time he stopped and looked at her beautiful green glowing eyes

Ray: I don't like how fast your heart beat is going and you still shaking I can give you a sedative to calm down your vital signs but I'll do that with your permission ofcourse

***she knows about sedatives cause her other brother is also a doctor ***

Mbali: ok

Ray: ok..?

Mbali: I feel like my.... My heart is gonna stop beating anytime cause its beating too fast so I need to calm down

he nodded and he wore some gloves and took out a new needle and injected in the sedative in it and he looked at her and she had that " im scared of needles" look on her face

Ray: look at me

she did and swallowed hard

Ray: close your eyes and count to ten can you do that?

she nodded and did as told and when she got to four she felt the needle enter her skin on her upper arm gently and she grinded her teeth together and he was done and he put a plaster where the needle injected since small blood was coming out and he went to dispose the gloves and the used needle and he went back to her and closed his bag

Ray: let me show you where you'll rest

she stood up and followed him and they got in the main bedroom and he put the bag down

Ray: no one will disturb you ok

she nodded

Mbali: thank you for all this

*** ray nodded and he took a pillow and duvet and he walked out closing the door on his way out and Mbali kicked off her sleepers and she opened the covers since it was a chilly night and she got in them and she hugged a pillow and she cried until the sedative knocked her out***

.
. .

*** in the lounge Ray was in the kitchen taking out a beer in the fridge when the door opened and Mateo and Diego walked in with Mateo holding his laptop and Diego holding mbali's hand bag and phone***

Mateo: ella esta en el bano? (she's in the bathroom?)

Ray: no I gave her some sedative to help her sleep she's probably knocked out by now

he nodded and they went to the lounge and Diego put the handbag on top of the table after pushing it back a bit and they sat down on the couch and ray brought them beers too and gave them

Ray: so what did you find?

Mateo: I decided to unlock her phone and I went to "ICE" numbers (in case of emergency) cause that's where important numbers are stored and I found eight number's saved there

he said with his spanish accent

Ray: im listening

Mateo: five of them where saved as brother jay brother jase brother mazi (muzi) brother nh..laka brother smyso (smiso) daddy and m...khu...llu (mkhulu) and Ma

Ray: and?

Diego: he did background checks on the numbers and you won't believe who they belong to jefe (boss)

*** he said that with a Spanish accent too then he sighed***

Mateo: spilotro kray snakes mazi (muzi) the doctor beast and daddy and m...khu..llu im sure belongs to nighthawk and killer the dragon slayer since their numbers are hard to find and Ma well it must be her grandmother cause her mother died while giving birth to her

ray stood up with his eyes popped out looking at them

Ray: wait...what did you just say?

Mateo: this girl shouldn't be here jefe (boss)

Ray: FUCK...FUCK...FUCK....

he said that and paced up and down

Diego: but maybe us helping her might come in handy between the meeting you having with kray in four days to come

Mateo: yeah jefe (boss)

ray shook his head while still pacing up and down

Ray: you know how fucked up those brothers are they might simply imply that I arranged that hijacking myself to score points with them with regards to the meeting

Diego: sí tienes razón (yeah you right) they are crazy those fucken brothers

Ray: fuck.... So now I know why she didn't force to call her family cause she knows who exactly her brothers are

Diego: but why?

Ray: if you had a sister like that would you allow her to date

Mateo: hell no

Diego chuckled

Diego: I'll lock her up somewhere until she's at least 40

he said that with that Spanish accent of his and they laughed

Ray: and guess what her boyfriend cheated and got her friend pregnant so that's why she was driving that night alone she was coming from his place

Mateo: Olare esta muerto (ok he's dead)

they laughed

Diego: sí muerto y enterrado (yeah dead and buried)

they laughed some more

Ray: but fuck.... Where were they hiding her all along?

Diego: jefe no

Ray: ¿Qué? (what?)

Mateo: she's 20 years younger than you

Ray: so?

Mateo: she's old enough to be your daughter since kids nowadays have children as early as nineteen years old or even eighteen years

Ray: well she's not my daughter Mateo and as long as her womb can carry my child and she's not underage then she's a woman to me

Diego laughed while Mateo just shook his head with a smile on his face

Diego: well jefe remember your granny said your soul mate is closer than you think maybe..... just maybe.....

they laughed

Ray: then God would be punishing me dearly for all the sins I've ever done in my life to have nighthawk as my father in law not to mention killer

Mateo and Diego laughed out loud

Ray: im glad she didn't call them when she had the chance to imagine us meeting tonight....it would have jeopardised our coming meeting and we can't delay our shipment any longer

Diego: mmmh..... well like I said jefe she might be your....

ray interrupted him

Ray: mxm ooh shut up my friend...

*** he said that with his Nigerian accent and they laughed some more while drinking their beers***

.
. .
. .

HEATH

*** well I did talk to my obim about us getting married in court and I explained everything and after a lot of convincing she agreed and as a small thank you I just gave her two rounds of some hot steamy love making and now im cuddling with her as she slept damn this pregnancy make her sleep a lot Well im happy now that we are good and that she didn't succeed in leaving with the kids cause one thing I know is there is no me without her period anyway as for that piece of shit called kitso or whatever the fuck his name is im gonna show him why they call me Caesar one of these days. And as for john I just decided on using the money I took from him to buy that building his company offices are at and turn it into naledi's non-profit organisation and have her run it at least that way I'll know she's not working under anyone and she doesn't have to wake up in the early hours of the morning to go kiss some fucker's stinking ass by doing what he/she wants and whenever they want....anyway I think now it's time I killed that motherfucker that touched my little princess sexually since he's only left with 40 grand in his personal account at least that will feed his two kids when he's dead..... Anyway I guess I fell asleep while still lost in thoughts cause I woke up when my alarm went off and I was hard as fuck so I turned my obi m and I got on top of her between her legs and I entered her slowly and she moaned softly while I groaned.... Fuck I love how she feels inside it's like her pussy was made for my dick and it's also like it shrinks tight every time after we make love cause I feel her walls expand every time I enter her sweet tight nana anyway I moved slowly in and out of her with her moans doing things to me. She also started to move underneath me and shit that made me groan out loud cause what I was feeling was just pure pleasure***

Me: fuck obim I love you... I love you so much.... I love you so damn much woman

***you know it's true when they say "when the pussy is good and she doing you good you can even spill out your family's secrets unknowingly" well that's what I wanted to do now cause our rhythmic sync was just doing things to me...i then raised her both her legs and I put them on my shoulders and I increased my pace and just went faster and faster hitting the right places cause she was busy calling out my name.... I pushed both her legs closer to her upper body making sure I don't press them on her baby bump still going in and out of her fast and I kissed her lips fuck my obi m is flexible

Me: I...i... love you obi m

*** I said that going fast***

Naledi: I.... gosh i..... i.... love you too onye m

*** I went faster going deeper hitting it real good while groaning and i felt her walls tightening around my dick and she shook under me and well I fucked her right through her orgasm soon I also felt my build up and I just fucked her senselessly while hurrying to my finishing line then I slammed into her hard releasing inside of her pushing in deeper and deeper and I released a loud groan and I cursed***

Me: FUCK.....

I kissed her sweaty forehead while breathing heavily

Me: fuck that was good obi m thank you

she smiled and I perked her lips and I pulled out slowly and got off her and cleaned her up with the towel we used last night and I got off the bed naked and went to the bathroom luckily jabu's house has two en-suits. I ran the shower and I went to wake her up and we went to shower together and after we were done she wore leggings and a vest which showed her baby bump perfectly and I found myself smiling like a retard looking at it God she looked sexy as fuck with that baby bump

Naledi: what?

Me: nothing you look sexy with that baby bump

I got closer to her I was only in my briefs and I brushed it and I kissed her forehead

Me: thank you for loving me obim and for agreeing to marry me especially in court

Naledi: I love you heath I can even marry you inside a toilet with just us a priest and God

***I smiled like a fucken retard God thank you for this lovely soul... we kissed for some time until she pulled out ***

Naledi: let me go wake the princesses up

Me: ok

***I perked her lips and she wore her gown and walked out and I continued to get dressed I was gonna go passed the office first before I come and pick her up for our appointment..... well after

our breakfast with Jabu the kids excluding MJ cause he was still sleeping we kissed mommy and I dropped them off at day care and school and I went to the office while Jabu went to his work place I also told him about us getting married last night and he said he will join us at the magistrate court as Naledi's witness while Ray will be my witness....im one lucky son of a gun***

.
. .

*** Well I've been here for some time now and its around 10 and I have to leave this office soon cause our appointment is at 13H00 I even got a message from Ray saying that Mkhulu and Gogo loved their presents yesterday and that today they went to fetch Mkhulu's car and he was even scared to drive it busy saying he's scared he might crash it or even scratch it.... I must say im proud of what Ray bought for them and hearing that they are happy makes me happy too.... Then out of the blue the door bust open and Tsholo walked in with my PA behind her busy shouting at her and I just got bored to the core nx***

PA: sir im sorry I tried to stop her

Me: its ok Jolene I'll take it from here but next time just call the security guys for her if she doesn't have an appointment

Jolene: ooh sir believe me I'll do just that

then she gave Tsholo the evil eye and she walked out and Tsholo looked at me not believing I just said that

Me: what?

Tsholo: how can you tell her that heath?

*** nx bitch***

Me: what do you want Tsholo

she sighed and she sat down

Me: and I don't remember saying you should sit down

***well she sat down anyways and I just clicked my tongue ***

Me: what are you doing here?

Tsholo: I need your help heath and you are my last option

Me: im listening

Tsholo: I need you to borrow me some money like seriously and I promise I'll pay you back

Me: tell me here Tsholo what kind of a mother are you?

Tsholo: askies

Me: so money is the first thing that you asked me of instead of your own daughter

she rolled her eyes

Tsholo: I know she's fine cause she's staying with her favourite parent being you so there was no need for me to ask

Me: you are a despicable woman you know that

then I chuckled while shaking my head

Me: I'm sure might have been high on nyaope to have even planted a seed in that thing you call a womb

Tsholo: heath I didn't come here for you to insult me please

Me: THEN WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING HERE WOMAN!

I shouted at her angry as hell and she just kept quiet

Me: YOUR OWN DAUGHTER TOLD YOU ABOUT WHAT YOUR FUCKEN HUSBAND DID TO HER AND YOU CALLED HER A LAIR WHAT KIND OF WOMAN ARE YOU MMMH NOW YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NERVE TO COME TO MY FUCKEN OFFICE LOOK ME IN MY FUCKEN FACE AND ASKE ME FOR MONEY..... YOU ARE A FUCKEN USELESS PIECE OF RUBBISH AND IF YOU THINK YOU ARE SUFFERING NOW THEN YOU AINT SEEN NOTHING YOU STUPID BITCH NOW TAKE YOU FLAPPY ASS AND GET THE FUCK OUT OF MY OFFICE!

I was now standing up and I pointed at the door.... She was now crying and that made me even more angry

Tsholo: im...im sorry heath but I was just saving my marriage ok.... I mean he didn't really rape her he only touched her

I don't know what happened but I found myself slapping her so hard and I don't even know when I picked up my heavy chair but I saw it flying over the table and landing on the floor luckily she ducked

Me: GET OUT!.... GET THE FUCK OUT NOW BEFORE I KILL YOU YOU FUCKEN WHORE.... GET OUT YOU BITCH

I said that charging towards her and she quickly ran out of my office...fuck I was fuming I wanted to kill her this instance I then took my phone and called jabu

Jabu: mshikaro

Me: I want him to go to prison then raped in there until death visits him

Jabu: john?

Me: yeah

Jabu: you don't sound ok what happened

Me: that bitch Tsholo came to my office and asked for money can you believe it..... she didn't even ask about Omphile and she had the rotten nerve to say that she called Omphile a liar when she told

her what john did because she wanted to save her fucken marriage just because he “really” didn’t rape her that he only touched her

Jabu: WHAT?

Me: I want it done ASAP jabu I have things that might land him in jail I just want them planted in his house and now vacant office

Jabu: don’t worry im on it

Me: sho

then we ended the call and I send Ray a message cause now I was just too angry to talk

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

*** earlier Mbali woke with a heavily head and she looked around the room and she saw her hand bag and phone on top of the side drawer and she sighed when last night’s events played in her head..... a tear escaped her eye and she wiped it and got out of the bed and she saw a half opened door on her far right and she went in there hoping it’s the bathroom and luckily it was..... she peed and washed her face and rinsed her mouth with a mouthwash she found in there and she walked out she took her phone and checked the time and it was around past 10 in the morning and she sighed when she realised she missed her classes today.... Well she made the bed and took out a hair band in her bag and she tide her hair into a ponytail and she wore her sleepers and walked out ...only to find Ray shouting over the phone in the lounge***

Ray: SHE HAD THE FUCKEN NERVE TO SAY THAT TO YOU ABOUT PRINCESS SHE’S GONNA PAY....SHE DOESN’T KNOW WHO THE FUCK I AM IM GONNA MAKE HER WISH HER USELESS MOTHER ABORTED HER INSTEAD OF GIVING BIRTH TO HER NX USELESS WHORE.....SHE’S GONNA SWALLOW THOSE WORDS.... NOT WITH MY PRINCESS

he said that shouting while pacing up and down and when he turned he found Mbali standing there looking at him with a scared look on her face

Ray: look bros I’ll call you back ok

*** then he dropped the call and he breathed out heavily trying to calm himself down ***

Ray: good..... you are awake

***mbali cleared her throat ***

Mbali: ummm yeah....i

he interrupted her

Ray: Breakfast is ready now come and eat

***she wanted to say she's good but that "don't mess with me" look that was still on his face made her kept quiet and she just nodded.... They went to sit down and ate silently until Mbali broke the silent ***

Mbali: ummm Mr....ummm doctor

Ray: just call me Ray

Mbali: ok ummm bhuti Ray

Ray: did I say call me bhuti Ray or just Ray

she wanted to roll her eyes but she decided against it

Mbali: ok "just Ray" do you know where they fix car windows

he chuckled because of that "just Ray" thing she just said

Ray: yes I do you can take it to PG glass fit and they'll do it for you

Mbali: ok ummm where is it?

Ray: I'll have Mateo find one that is closer to you and he'll take your car there and send you the coordinates to the place

Mbali: oh ok thank you and your Mateo

ray smiled..... he couldn't fathom how beautiful she is and her eyes just did things to him not forgetting her body he was just smitten by her forgetting that she is nighthawk's daughter

Ray: did you call your family

she cleared her throat

Mbali: no ummm not yet but I'll call them when I get to my place

Ray: why?

Mbali: im safe now right.... So no need to scare them and have them worry and obsess over my safety

Ray: mmmh if you say so

***he said that eyeing her cause he knew her reason for not wanting to tell them was to protect her dickhead boyfriend cause knowing them if they found out what led to her getting hijacked in the first place well he won't see the light of day tomorrow ***

Mbali: "just Ray" thank you for saving me last night I'll forever be grateful to you and your bodyguards

Ray: don't mention it

he said that looking straight in her eyes and she started feeling somehow when their eyes locked and she quickly looked down and continued to eat and Ray just smirked

INSERT.....22

.
. .
. .

****MBALENTLE****

*** Yho God is good im telling ya'll if it wasn't for "just Ray" I don't know what would've happened to me. Im grateful to him and his bodyguards and im also glad that I trusted him cause he did take care of me well talking about him I don't know but there's just something about him but I can't put my finger on it. He has this "don't fuck with me" look but at the same time his smile just melts my heart I could tell he's way older than me but there's something about him that just wants me to get to him better. Well as for Kyle my now ex-boyfriend all I can say about him is I feel sorry for him cause I know Phindile (my now ex friend the girl he cheated with) and she's a gold digger and master manipulator so he's in for a long haul shem. (Sighed) I love him yes I still love him "crazy right?" and I can't help it Kyle is my first love guys my virgin breaker and even though he hurt me deeply but my heart still yearns for him. But hey my granny taught me that sometimes love is just not enough and I guess now I see what she meant when she said that cause the two people I loved and trusted just broke my heart to pieces.it hurts just by thinking about it but hey im a Khumalo and I know my worth so now I just need to pick myself up and concentrate on my studies and let karma deal with Kyle and Phindile for me even though I still love him. Well ever since I got home from "just Ray's place" all I did was to cry my eyeballs out about the whole thing that happened last night and now I have a headache from all the crying and that loud knock on my front door and the shouting is not making things easy.... I got out of bed and wore my gown and took my phone and I went to the door when I get closer to the door I heard his voice saying "Mbali open this door now" then he banged on the door again Jesus it's my brother Nhlaka I quickly opened the door and he quickly engulfed me with a tight hug his body is even shaking ooh God they know about the attempted hijack.... SHIT!***

Me: im ok bhuti

*** I say trying to assure him***

Nhlaka: WHY DIDN'T YOU CALL US PRINCESS DO YOU KNOW HOW CRAZY I GOT WHEN I FOUND OUT YOUR SECURITY TEAM WAS FOUND SHOT DEAD

*** I looked down and tears came out and he held me tight as last night's event played again in my head for the umpteenth time then bhut Jay bhut Jase and bhut Smiso rushed as if someone was chasing them the three of them hugged me and I just cried some more after some time I

calmed down and bhut Nhlaka picked me up and we went to the lounge and he sat down with me and held me tight as I rested my head on his chest..... then bhut muzi budged in looking like he was running while holding his medical bag and he rushed to me and sat on the table facing bhut Nhlaka and I just like “ just ray” did last night***

Muzi: are you ok princess did they hurt you...let me check you

he was speaking so fast and I put my hand on his knee as he was busy opening his medical bag

Me: bhuti im ok they didn't get to me the car is bullet-proofed remember and I didn't open the doors even though they demanded I do

Jay: they are lucky they are fucken dead I swear to God I was gonna rip their hearts out of their fucken chest

*** oooh Lord***

Jase: me too bafo they are lucky they are dead nx

Smiso: what happened there my princess?

he calls me that and Jesus the look on his face would even make Lucifer himself to tremble with fear well they all looked angry but him yho

Me: I was coming from a..... a friend's place and when I stopped by the robot a white golf GTI parked in front of my car and three men got out holding big guns and demanded I opened the door well I didn't and I quickly took my phone about to press the panic button when one guy hit the driver's window and I got startled then my phone fell under my seat

I took a deep breath the room was so tense with them breathing loud and hard

Me: they kept on hitting the side windows but they wouldn't break so they were busy shout out calling me names saying I should unlock the doors

more tears came out

Me: then I heard car tires screeching close by and soon gun shots were heard and soon they stopped and they continued to hit the windows as I curled in my seat then out of the blue more gun shots were heard and I heard a car driving off and it became quiet

Jay: then what happened

***now the lies begins well more like half-truths ***

Me: a man with his hands up said its ok im safe now and he said he's an ex-cop I don't know why but I believed him and I got out and when I saw the dead bodies I just couldn't stay there and wait for the cops to arrive so I asked him to take me home and he did I didn't even get his name or numbers plus he said he doesn't want any limelight on him because he chose to help me he said he did what he did cause he's still a cop at heart even though he's retired

Muzi: you were brave my love im proud of you

*** I just snuggled closer to bhut Nhlaka and he tightened the grip around me***

Me: I was really scared

*** I said that with a low voice with more tears coming out***

Jase: im sorry we weren't there to protect you princess

Me: you are here now and I feel safe

he got closer and kissed my forehead

Smiso: so who took your car to go get fixed?

I swallowed.... Oooh Shit

Me: i.... I asked my neighbour here to take it for me cause he works closer to PG glass fit

Nhlaka: why

*** shit***

Me: cause I was hoping you won't find out about what happened cause I know you'll up my security and probably add bodyguards this time

I said that with a low voice

Jase: damn right we are

Me: but bhuti....

Smiso: it's not up for discussion my princess!

he said that firmly and I kept quiet sulking cause his word is final mxm....i stood up

Jase: where are you going

Me: to sleep

I went to the bedroom and I remembered the number plate "just Ray" gave me and I went back to the lounge with the paper and I found them sitting down with their hands on top of their heads while looking down

Me: take bhuti

I gave it to bhut Nhlaka

Nhlaka: what's this?

Me: the number plate of the getaway car....the ex-cop gave it to me to give to the cops but we don't deal with cops right...so...

*** I turned and walked back to the bedroom but I stopped when I heard bhut smiso talk***

Smiso: she's hiding something from us fozas or protecting someone I can feel it and also see it in her eyes

Nhlaka: and don't worry I'll get to the bottom of it

ooh shit Lord have mercy....i went back and they turned and looked at me and my heart pounded hard against my chest you see the thing is “just Ray” asked me not to mention his name to my brothers he said last night when I was sleeping he did some research about me and found out who I really am and apparently he knows my brothers and how crazy they are he said he helped me cause he wanted to so he doesn’t want to deal with them. Well I don’t blame him cause I know how ruthless they can be so we agreed that I’ll protect his identity the guy saved me ok and he also took care of me without wanting anything in return so the least I can do is do as he asked and that’s to protect his identity

Me: I lied ok i.... I asked the cop or rather ex-cop to drop me off at my....

I took a deep breath...here goes nothing

Me: my boyfriend’s place and I spend the night there and i... I asked him to get my car fixed

God the look on their faces.....i just swallowed hard

Jay: askies?

I kept quiet

Jase: uya jola manje Mbali (you are dating now Mbali)

I continued to keep quiet

Jase: I ASKED YOU FUCKEN QUESTION MAN

*** he roared and I jumped with fear and tears ran down my cheeks***

Me: im sorry bhuti

Jay: SORRY FOR WHAT HUH?

he shouted

Muzi: so you saw it fit to go to some dickhead’s place instead of calling one of us after almost being hijacked heh Mbali?

Me: im sorry

I said that crying

Jay: KEEP QUIET AND WIPE THOSE TEARS OFF YOUR FACE BEFORE YOU GET ME MAD

*** he shouted and I quickly wiped them off***

Jay: so we are no longer important to you Mbali

*** I kept quiet***

Jase: IM TALKING TO YOU DAMN IT

Me: but you said I must keep quiet bhuti

Jase: uzonya uyangizwa (you’ll shit yourself you hear me)

he said that pointing at me and I took a step back with my bottom lip trembling

Jase: NOW ANSWER ME

Me: you are important bhuti all of you I was just scared that you'll get me bodyguards if you knew about the hijacking and plus they didn't get to me so...

Nhlaka: Mbali

Me: bhuti

Nhlaka: ufuna ukungicasula angisho? (you want to make me mad right?)

*** I shook my head no***

Nhlaka: since when do you have a boyfriend?

Me: it's...it's been six...six months now

Jay: I can't believe this nx

he said that to himself

Smiso: what's his name?

God no.... I kept quiet

Smiso: its either you tell me his name now or I'll find out myself and believe me you won't like the outcome of that

*** he said firmly and I swallowed hard***

Me: k...kyle

Smiso: Kyle what?

Me: Kyle Sibanda

then he got closer to me and I swear I nearly peed on myself I know he will never ever hurt me but I can't control the fear I get when he's angry

Smiso: listen and listen good you gonna break things off with that dickhead and concentrate on you books you hear me

*** I nodded a couple of times***

Smiso: I hope we never have to have this talk again until you finish your studies capish?

I nodded again

Nhlaka: and this had better be the last time you go through something like this or even close to this and not call us first you hear me

***I nodded God he looked angry.... Well at least I kept "just ray" out of all this like I promised.....Anyway guys my name is Mbalentle Charlotte Khumalo but those who know me call me Princess and im the only daughter to Tyrell Bhekisizwe khumalo and the late Charlotte Mbalenhle Khumalo and I have five brothers yes I said five brothers named Jason and Jaden who are twins Nhlakanipho muzikayise and smiso who is my late uncle's son...well they were six but one of them "Brandon" passed away years back. Well my grandparents from my

father's side are still very much alive while those from my mother's side are both dead and since her side of the family never accepted my parents relationship they disowned her so we have never had a relationship with them before and it looks like they don't care about us so yah anyway I have or had a boyfriend called Kyle and I also had best friend named Phindile well I saw her as a best friend but only to find out that she's actually snake and im glad she showed me her true self now rather than later... then my phone beeped it was a message from Kyle so I went to my bedroom leaving my brother's discussing whatever and sat down on my bed and I opened the message and it read;***

Kyle: " my love im sorry about what I did it was a message from Kyle so I went to my bedroom leaving my brother's discussing whatever and sat down on my bed and I opened the message and it read;***

Kyle: " my love im sorry about what I did I love you so much princess and it hurts that I hurt you like that. I live for you princess so believe me when I say it was a stupid mistake I don't love her and I never will cause my heart belongs to you. I know I messed up my love but please don't leave me I won't survive it if you do so please don't break up with me I love you so much and know that I'll fight for you until my last breath and its gonna be a cold day in hell the day I'll let go of you.....you are me and im you always remember that..... Kyle"

*** I just deleted the message and laid down in bed curled into a ball and I just cried.....it hurt like hell that the guy I loved enough to give my pride to and still love just hurt me like that and worst part he got the girl whom he cheated with pregnant who happened to be my best friend well now ex-best friend..... yah love sucks neh and im only 20 years old***

.
. .

**** NARRATED****

***well Naledi and Heath did tie the knot in the magistrate court and everything went well heath even bought rings before he went to pick naledi up. And as for Naledi she looked good in her white over the knee tight long sleeves lace dress that shaped her body especial her round butt curves and baby bump perfectly which made heath a bit uncomfortable cause yeses her body was doing wonders in that dress she was also wearing beige toe peeping stilettos and her weave and make up were on point. She looked beautiful and heath was proud of himself when he looked at her speaking of heath well he went to change into a new suit at his house and his father became

suspicious of him cause he looked nervous all along but he brushed it off by thinking maybe he was going on a lunch date with naledi maybe to propose right this time since he gave their relationship his blessings in a way. Anyway now they were driving home after picking up the princesses from school and day care while Ray and Jabu went to buy meat and booze since they decided to have a small braai instead of eating out to celebrate heath and naledi's union they even called Thandi and her husband and also convinced jabu to bring his church girl***

Omphile: mama why are you and daddy dressed up I hope you not going out without us
heath and naledi laughed*

Naledi: ofcourse not my love

Omphile: good cause Lesedi and I are also coming with
they laughed again

Heath: Omphile

Omphile: daddy

Heath: how.... How would you feel if naledi and I got married?
she kept quiet a bit

Omphile: ummm will I help plan the wedding
they laughed

Naledi: ofcourse baby in fact you'll be my maid of honour and Thandi will be my matron of honour
Omphile smiled wide

Omphile: for real mama

Naledi: yep for real you and Thandi are the closest females in my life well and Lesedi too so Lesedi will be a flower girl and you'll be my maid of honour and Thandi my matron of honour

Omphile: ok..... ooh my God I can't wait to tell my friends that im gonna be a maid of honour
she said excited and heath and naledi laughed with Lesedi laughing with them

Heath: you didn't answer me young lady

Omphile: daddy you should be asking me how much I would need for a shopping spree for the wedding
*** they laughed some more***

Omphile: so mama can I invite my friends

Naledi: whoooh we haven't even set the date yet

Omphile: ok when is the wedding

Heath: well I need to pay her dowry first my love

Omphile: dowry?

Naledi: lobola

Omphile: ooh ok so when are you paying her “dowry” daddy

they laughed

Heath: soon don't worry you'll be the first one to know the date so you can invite your friend

she beamed with happiness

Omphile: ok and my shopping spree?

Heath: you'll discuss that with your mama im not getting involved

Omphile: ok...mama?

she said that looking at naledi and naledi laughed

Naledi: bathong!

Omphile: but mama daddy just said I should discuss it with you

Naledi: mmmmh privately haw do you want your dad to know how much of his money we gonna use

***they laughed and heath just shook his head looking happy that his girls are happy he never knew he could be this happy in his life and he's thankful to God for blessing him with them....

Soon they arrived at jabu's place and went inside with Lesedi on heath's arms and Omphile went upstairs to change***

Naledi: im going to change and start with some salads and pap

Heath: ok wifey

*** they kissed and she walked away shaking her ass and heath groaned loud for her to hear him and she turned***

Heath: that ass obim mh mh mh

Mj: kids in the room so behave please

he said that walking in the house from the back

Heath: ooh you are a kid now?

Mj: no I mean princess lee and my imaginary friend next to me

heath and naledi laughed out loud

Heath: mxm you need Jesus

Naledi: amen to that

Mj: haw sister Star you agreeing with him

Naledi: everyone needs Jesus in their lives MJ even your brother here does

Mj laughed

Heath: aow obim why now?

She stuck out her tongue at him and she laughed and swayed her ass as she walked upstairs which made heath to get a boner he was even biting his lower lip

Mj: love abi?

Heath: mxm shut up my friend

then Mj walked away chuckling

.

.

.

**** well everyone arrived and Thandi helped naledi by cooking pap while conversing in the kitchen the guys were busy with the meat at the back****

Thandi: you're lying you mean heath pointed a gun at his parents

*** naledi nodded***

Naledi: I have never seen him that angry Thandi yho

Thandi: yho pussy must be good for him to do that neh

Naledi: mxm

naledi threw a dish cloth at her and they laughed

Thandi: so how's Omphile with the whole..... you know

Naledi: she's good heath took her to talk to someone and she's doing great and plus the talk I had with her about what Thabo did to me I think it kinda showed her that she's not the only survivor you know

Thandi: you did good mntase..... well as for me if Omphile was my daughter and she told me what my husband did that to her I swear with everything I hold dear ne keile go mo tlhaba lerete ka screwdriver a robetse (I would have stabbed his dick with a screwdriver while he's sleeping) then cut it off before calling the police on him.... You know I don't play around when it comes to my kids even James knows that. Remember i nearly showed him his dead mother that time he gave his skank my kids' winter clothes money

*** they laughed***

Naledi: well I might have been weak with Thabo but if any man does that to Omphile again and Lesedi I swear to God I'm going to jail for murder for the first time ever you'll hear of an albino woman that killed a man then mutilated him and harvested his organs only to feed them to her dogs

they busted out with loud laughter

Thandi: thatha star (you go naledi)

*** they laughed again***

Thandi: You know im happy for you finally you got your happily ever and after

Naledi: mmmmh finally yho..... and you too mntase im happy you also found your happily ever and after

they smiled to each other

Thandi: I think this year is our year

Naledi: mmmh I mean look at us now

***they chatted some more until jabu walked in with a beautiful fair lady who looked a bit shy

Jabu: aow mapyatla a malome (uncle's beautiful ladies)

*** they laughed***

Thandi: so malome o re tletseng (so uncle what did you bring for us)

Jabu: MmaMalome (an aunt)

*** he said that and kissed the lady's cheek and she turned pink instantly and Thandi and naledi laughed out loud***

Thandi: mmmmh ok so how are you MmaMalome (aunty)

*** the lady laughed a bit***

Lady: im good and yourself motlogolo (my niece)

they laughed again

Thandi: I like her already

Naledi: me too

and that made jabu smile wide with happiness as hearing them say that soothed his heart

Jabu: ok bo nunus ba malome (ok uncle's little ones) this is Amogelang ok Amo for short and she's a new addition to the family she's the one that managed to melt this cold heart

*** he said that beating gently his left side of his chest and Amo blushed***

Jabu: waka (mine) this is Thandi and that is naledi

Amo: it's nice to finally meet you guys

Thandi; it's nice to meet you too Amo

Naledi: yeah it's nice to meet you too

Jabu: ok my putjutjus (my little ones) please take care of her ok im gonna go help out at the back

Them: ok

then he kissed Amo's forehead and whispered something to her and she blushed then he walked out

Thandi: yah neh this year it's happening in our family new makotis(daughter in laws) and love left right and centre

they laughed and Amo smiled more like she blushed

Amo: what can I do to help ladies

Naledi: well were are almost done so just relax

Amo: ok

*** she sat down on the barstool chair***

Thandi: so Amoza mmmmh you and jabuuu?

*** she laughed lightly***

Amo: well all I can say is the heart wants what it wants

Naledi: Amen to that

*** Thandi looked at naledi***

Thandi: and then wena(you)

Naledi: what? It's the truth haw

Thandi just shook her head laughing lightly and she went to check on her pot..... well heath walked in with his hands in his pockets he was now wearing a white golf shirt black chino pants and some black with a touch of gold semi-formal shoes.....he looked yummy and handsome no lies and he smelled good too and when his eyes locked with naledi's he smiled wide and went to her and he cupped her face and kissed her

Thandi: we are also here you know

they broke the kiss and he kissed the tip of her nose..... he couldn't believe that finally naledi was finally his wife then he held her

Heath: mmmmh you know James is at the back right

Thandi: so?

Heath: don't worry I'll tell him to come and kiss you too

Thandi: mxm tsek

heath laughed

Heath: I love you too sis

Thandi showed him the middle finger with a smile on her face and heath just shook his head with a smile on his face then he turned to Amo

Heath: you good Amo I hope this two are not corrupting you especially Mrs loud mouth here

Amo giggled and Thandi showed heath the middle finger again

Amo: no they are not

Heath: mmmmh good

**** then he whispered to naledi's ear****

Heath: I need you obim

naledi looked up at him

Naledi: what's wrong?

Heath: Ezeh is up he wants little star so bad

naledi laughed

Naledi: ok im coming

Heath: ok hurry abeg

*** then he kissed her forehead***

Heath: Thandi!

*** he called out at her and she looked at him***

Thandi: mmmmh

*** then heath showed her the middle finger and rushed out laughing and the girls laughed too***

Thandi: mxm if he wasn't my brother and your husband I would have kicked his balls

they laughed

Naledi: ka mina ka wena mntase you kick heath's balls I'll kick James' balls too

*** they laughed again***

Thandi: ok let's stop gape that area below the belt is our daily meal so let's not kick their balls rather we punch their stomach wa bona (you see)

loud laughter filled the kitchen

Amo: you girls are crazy and I love it

they laughed some more and naledi walked out saying she's coming back.... She went upstairs and found heath naked in their bedroom with Ezeh up hard and dripping wet and naledi swallowed hard as she felt her underwear get wet she closed the door and locked it and she started taking her clothes off and she was left naked with heath smiling like a retard and she climbed on the bed and climbed on top of heath and she bend down and started kissing.....his hands travelled to her butt and he squeezed it hard as the kiss got heated then naledi stopped kissing him and she kissed his chin going all the way down to his upper body then to his dick. she kissed it and it was so warm and she licked tip of it and heath cursed out loud.... She didn't know what she was doing cause she has never done this before but she wanted to do this often for heath cause she knows if she doesn't do her bit in the bedroom he will look for it outside

Heath: fuckkkk..... naledi..... baby

he said that in almost a whisper and when naledi put half of it in her mouth he cried out loud..... she started sucking on him slowly and that made him cry out like a little girl.....he was literally losing his mind well she felt like puking when she tasted the slimy and salty white colourless thing that came out of his dick but she fought the feeling back and continued to suck on him with him busy groaning out loud..... she increased her pace while her hand was busy stroking it round and round and he grabbed her wig and tossed it away and grabbed her hair tight as the pleasure he was feeling was intensifying every minute. As for naledi she went faster trying by all means to take him all in her mouth while still stroking him..... the sounds he was busy making made naledi feel like a boss as she continued to suck him like her life depended on until heath stopped her as his build-up started he then smashed his lips on hers and kissed her hungrily with his eyes all red and veins popping all over his body he then got out of the bed and took her of it too and he went to the wall with her legs wrapped around his waist and he pinned her to the wall and he entered her slowly and groaned out loud when her walls hugged his dick then he cursed while naledi moaned out loud..... he started going in and out of her slow but then he increased his pace and he fucked her fast as he pinned her on the wall he fucked her so fast and hard to a point that she lost all sense of reality the things heath did to her were just wow even when she reached an orgasm he didn't stop instead he fucked her right through it as if he was possessed or something and by the time she was nearing her second orgasm he stopped and put her down but her legs were wobbly and heath quickly held her before she fell and he bend her down a bit making her hold on to a chair that was closer to them and he entered her from behind and he fucked her hard with naledi moaning out loud busy calling out his name he hit it hard until he felt his build-up and he went faster forgetting that she's pregnant

Heath: COME WITH ME OBIM..... FUCK.... COME WITH ME BABY

*** he said that and he continued to fuck her.....he went on and on until they both came at the same time and heath shot his cum in her pushing in deeper and deeper and he growled out loud then he gasped for air for some time and he cursed***

Heath: FUCKKKK!

after some time of catching his breath he pulled out slowly and went to the bathroom and came back with a wet and warm towel cleaning himself and he cleaned her up too then he went to run the shower and they took a quick shower with heath busy smiling like a retard.... After they were done they got dressed again naledi put some make-up on again and also put her wig back on her head

Naledi: will you stop smiling like that

Heath: how can I when you made me cry like a little girl earlier

naledi laughed and he held her tight

Naledi: I guess I did good mmmmh?

he kissed her lips

Heath: you have no idea obim I hope im getting some more later on at night

she giggled

Naledi: I loved seeing you squirm and cry out so yep

heath laughed

Heath: I love you my wife

Naledi: I love you too my husband

they kissed again and they went downstairs and Ray just chuckled while shaking his head when he saw them

Ray: you couldn't even wait for us to leave mmmmh

naledi walked away from them feeling embarrassed and they laughed

Heath: leave me alone jorr

Mj: bros you know I heard a man upstairs screaming out loud like a woman being chocked to death and I almost called the cops until I remembered that it might be brother Ezeh

he said that to Ray and Ray just laughed and heath chased after Mj threatening to beat him up with MJ laughing out loud while running

23

INSERT.....23

.

.

.

*** RAYMOND***

*** well it makes me happy to see my brother happy and Im not gonna lie I was surprised that the woman he loves is actually an albino but damn she's a beautiful one at that I mean even her body is fine I must admit and I can see that Ezeh most of the times in fact all the time he's possessive when it comes to her and I don't blame him I also would be if I were in his shoes. Well I must say im proud of him because he chose well and well as for saving that girl Mballi I must say whatever happened to me that night is still a mystery to me even now. That feeling I had that edged me to take that short left was just creepy if I may say well she's one beautiful young lady in fact she's extremely beautiful and im glad I was her knight in shining armour last night but I was disappointed when I learned

which family she belongs to but hey I'm La Parca and I always get what I want and this time I think I want her even though she's way younger than me cause since she left my place she's all I think about I just hope she doesn't mess up and mention my name to his crazy brothers cause now I don't have the strength to deal with them. Anyway now im on my way to Tsholo and John's place (princess O's mother and step father) with Diego while Mateo with stay behind and deal with some things well jabs gave me their home address and I'm just gonna pay them a little visit before we head for the airport cause we are flying to Nigeria tonight with my father and his "wives" like Mj said.....well we finally arrived and we parked outside the yard and we both went inside and I knocked on the front door and Tsholo opened and the shocked look on her face was just priceless***

Tsholo: R...Ray

Me: the one and only..... can we come in?

she swallowed hard and made way for us to get in and we did mmmmh this bitch's house is actually nice

Me: this is my friend Diego and bros this is Tsholo princess O's mother

*** and Diego just nodded and we sat down***

Me: where is your husband?

Tsholo: he's resting ummm this is a shocking surprise so what are you doing here

Me: be a sweetheart and call your husband for me will you

Tsholo: why

I gave her the look

Tsholo: hey he's my husband so I want to know why my ex's brother wants with him

Diego: esta perra está tan llena de ella y su jefe molesto (this bitch is so full of herself and its annoying boss)

*** I chuckled***

Tsholo: what did he say?

Me: he said he wishes to fuck you senselessly

*** Diego laughed ***

Tsholo: askies?

Me: yeah so are you gonna call him or should I go wake him up myself

Tsholo: mxm

she stood up and walked down the passage

Diego: what drug was your brother smoking when he got this shit of a woman pregnant boss?

*** I laughed***

Me: maybe she used witchcraft Diego I mean I wouldn't put it passed her

*** we chuckled and soon she came back with her dick of a husband and he greeted us and also sat down and I looked at Diego and we spoke with our eyes and I looked at my watch and he stood up and locked the door and stood there***

John: what the hell are you doing?

Me: SHHHH!

*** I indicated that they should shut up but the bitch decided to talk nx***

Tsholo: you know I knew you brought nothing but trouble here now get the fuck out of our house

*** I chuckled***

Me: john tell me who's a man between you and her cause now I have a feeling she calls the shots in here

John: im the man and I also say leave my house

Me: not convincing I mean when she said it it sounded masculine but with you you sound like a horny bitch

Diego chuckled

John: who the fuck do you think you are coming to my house and insult me you bastard

Me: still sound like a horny bitch to me..... Estoy en lo ciento Dee mi hombre? (am I right Dee my man?)

Diego: sí jefe (yes boss)

*** he said that and chuckled***

Tsholo: you know what im calling the cops

Me: go right ahead I mean I wonder what they will say about your husband molesting a child more over your own daughter..... mmmmh I wonder what the press will say

*** john's eyes popped out and Tsholo swallowed hard.... All along I was smiling at them but deep inside I was fuming I wanted to chop this motherfucker to pieces but nope I couldn't do it I had a mission at hand and plus heath was right death is too easy for this piece of shit I want the both of them to suffer first***

Diego: they will have a filled day with them boss

he said that with his Spanish accent and he chuckled

Diego: imagine this boss: husband rapes step daughter and the girl's mother cheers him on....mmh mmh mmmmh

*** he said that and laughed and I joined him he can be crazy when he wants to***

Me: mmmmh lovely heading Dee my man

*** they didn't say anything all I saw is Tsholo's skin turning pale and John looking like he wants to die***

John: what do you want?

Me: to divorce this bitch ASAP

Tsholo: WHAT?

Me: mmmmh and you should contact your lawyer before midnight and tell him to start with the procedure immediately

John: you are fucken crazy I won't divorce my wife you hear me

Tsholo: yes tell him baby

Me: 1 million Rands cash

*** he kept quiet a bit***

John: what?

Me: R500 000 after signing the papers and making sure she does too and another R500 000 after the divorce is finalised

he swallowed hard

Tsholo: baby tell him to fuck off

the nigga kept quiet....mmmh got him exactly where I want him nx fucken pussy and Diego chuckled

Diego: oh oh he's thinking about it jefe

I just smirked looking at him believe me if you see Diego fooling around know that he's amused as fuck

Tsholo: baby.... John tell him to fuck off

John: will you keep quiet please im trying to think eish!

*** he said that with an annoyed voice and I looked at Diego and he smirked while holding a laugh***

Me: so?

he brushed his head looking down

Tsholo: jo...john tell him to leave us in peace please

she said that with a shaky voice and I smiled...." Mmmmh it hurts right bitch when someone you love chooses another thing over you mmmmh" I thought to myself..... nx he's taking too long to think about it so let me add more gasoline on the already burning fire

Me: look I know your business is liquidated and your money was stolen or something like that and you are in debts man I mean Kenny also wants his money so think about it carefully this bitch is a liability to you and she's what's standing between you and a million Rands chale

John: how...how do you know about money being stolen from my company and Kenny?

Me: I have eyes and ears everywhere so what is it gonna be make it snappy I have a flight to catch

Tsholo: john I love you please don't give in to this can't you see what he's trying to do

Me: well I want him to divorce your fucken ass that's not a secret

she cried and I sighed annoyed

Me: YOU HAVE 10 SECONDS TO ANSWER ME OR THE FUCKEN DEAL IS OFF

I shouted annoyed

John: im.... Im sorry Tsholo but i.... I need the money

Tsholo: john don't do this please

she said crying

Me: 109876...

John: fine I'll do it I'll divorce her

*** I smirked***

Tsholo: NOO I WONT LET YOU DO THIS TO ME JOHN YOU HEAR ME NEVER....AFTER EVERYTHING IVE DONE FOR YOU AND THE SACRIFICES I DID FOR YOU AND YOU DO THIS TO ME

she shouted crying looking hurt and angry.....mmmmh good....pain I like it

John: I NEED THIS MONEY OK IF I DON'T PAY KENNY HES GONNA KILL ME DO YOU GET THAT HES GONNA KILL ME OR BETTER YET KILL YOU AND MY KIDS

he shouted back and I smiled like a retard I guess my job here is done and I stood up

Me: I'll transfer half of the money once you two have signed and the divorce is filed

I took out my card and threw it at him

Me: remember I have eyes and ears everywhere and Tsholo is not nice abi when someone you love is choosing something else over you mmmh but hey its life right just like you chose to save your marriage over believing and protecting your own daughter well he also just chose to save his ass over you and that makes me fucken happy

I sad that and I smirked at her she was busy crying and I just walked to the door and Diego unlocked it and we walked out

Diego: and i thought we were gonna beat him until he agrees or even threaten to kill his children

Me: john loves money more than anything oohh and little girls too so I knew he was gonna do as I said but he doesn't know he won't even enjoy a cent from that money

we laughed driving away

Diego: I wish I did the same thing to Ricardo

*** I sighed***

Me: well this is nothing compared to what you did to him

Diego: he broke her boss when I met her she was just a shell

Me: but you brought her back to life and today you are married to her and you even have kids together and she's happy and that bastard was raped until he died of a heart attack in prison

Diego: and I wouldn't have done it without you

Me: well even though you and Mateo call me jefe (boss) but the three of us know we are brothers and we got each other's backs always remember only death will do us apart as brothers

Diego: hear hear!

Me: yeah now let's stop with all this emotional talk shit before we start crying like little bitches

we laughed

Diego: yeah we should stop

*** well Mateo and Diego may call me boss but we are more like brothers we even went to some witch doctor in the deep woods in some village in Congo and took an oath of loyalty they even have some shares in my businesses so forget about this jefe(boss) business they just used to being my bodyguards and calling me jefe that I got tired of telling them to stop well the thing is I saved them from some drug lord in Cuba after they failed their mission that was given to them by him he wanted to execute them and something in me told me to save them and I did and I don't regret my decision even today and since then they just behave like they owe me their lives even though I told them they don't....anyway we continued to laugh and we conversed about other things until we arrived at the airport and we took our bags and went to my private jet and we got in and found father and his "wives" waiting and Diego and I went to sit with him mother was busy reading a book while Adanma was sleeping***

Dad: you took your time

Me: was busy dealing with some things

Dad: what things

I sighed

Me: Tsholo's husband molested princess O weeks ago and that retarded bitch called her a liar and chose her husband over her own daughter

Dad: WHAT?

Me: its ok dad relax will you Heath Jabs and I got this he's gonna pay more than he already is now so relax remember you have a plastic heart it might start melting now if you heat up

*** Diego chuckled and dad smiled looking at me***

Dad: you do know you are not too old to be butt whipped right?

***we laughed**

Me: ooh please you only did that once and I didn't speak to you for like two days and you couldn't handle my silent treatment and you got sick

we laughed again

Dad: fine I can just pay junior 200 000 naira just to annoy the hell out of you and I'll be happy

*** we laughed again***

Me: don't even dare it father please that son of yours can be a sharp thorn in the butt..... Mmmmh
You can even ask your "first" wife over there

I whispered the last part and we cracked up with laughed..... Well we changed our topic to business and soon the jet took off

***well the name is Raymond Sambulo Akunna Owoh-Masden (pheew) I know its three fucken names and it's all mother's fault for opening her damn legs to every Dick and Tom she meets (well except for my father Michael) well im the first child to Michael Owoh-Masden and Nomvula Owoh-Masden and well concerning the Zulu name that I never use is because im not Michael's biological son. Many years back my mother met a married Portuguese man from Portugal who came to south Africa for business and well they fucked and when he was done with his shit in south Africa he went back to his home country to the comfort of his flat ass wife and he left his fucken sperms in mother's womb and nine months later I was born then when I was four or five months old the old lady did the unthinkable again and she met another foreigner a Nigerian this time in the country for business. Well this time she was working at a hotel as a cleaner and well she got lucky cause he didn't just tap it and move on like my fucken sperm donor Michael actually fell in love with her and they dated and eventually got married and he took me and mother to his home country and raised me as his own the old man loves me people im not even gonna lie not even once did he treat me otherwise he always treats us equally. I may not tell him but he's my hero my mentor and my sanity this man knows me more than I know myself and vice versa so that's why I knew that this whole Adanma bullshit wasn't his idea. Well as for the beef have with my mother well it started when I caught her cheating on my father me and her we were once close I was actually a mama's boy in a way but when I saw her and that man kissing and him grabbing her ass walking out of a hotel I lost all the respect I have for her I remember it was Friday in the morning when I landed in Lagos from the US where I was studying medicine and I was early since I took an earlier flight without telling them cause I wanted to surprise everyone and I immediately called my " friends with benefits" girl and met up with her at a hotel so I can get some cause I missed her like crazy... we booked in and I had some and as we were about to walked out I head her laugh I knew mother's voice even in my sleep cause we spoke on the phone almost every day. So when I heard what sounded like her voice I quickly turned only to be met by the horror of her kissing some pitch black motherfucker with a

potbelly I quickly pulled the girl I was with to hide and I decided to take a video of them after I was done I went straight home.

I remember my mind was working overtime as I kept pacing up and down trying to convince myself that what I saw wasn't real that it was a figment of my imagination but when I looked at the video I saw that I wasn't hallucinating what I saw kept troubling me until my father decided to talk to me in private cause he could see something was troubling me and I couldn't even hide the anger I was feeling towards mother. I remember giving up and telling him the truth when he literally forced me to talk and the look on his face when he saw the video still haunts me every time I look at him what I saw kept troubling me until my father decided to talk to me in private cause he could see something was troubling me and I couldn't even hide the anger I was feeling towards mother. I remember giving up and telling him the truth when he literally forced me to talk and the look on his face when he saw the video still haunts me every time I look at him he was beyond hurt cause I knew he loved mother in fact he worshipped the ground she walked on at that time I was scared scared that father might kick mother and I out since im not his biologically and believe me I didn't enjoy those holidays just the thought of not seeing father again depressed the shit out of me and I just isolated myself from the rest of the family until father called me to his study and we had a talk I remember I blatantly asked him if he's gonna kick me and mother out and I also remember him almost giving me a hiding for asking him that. He told me im his first son his heir and it should be the first and the last time I even dream of me being anything other than that and he hugged me afterwards then when we broke the hug he twisted my ears warning me to never ever disrespect mother again and I shouldn't fight his battles for him especially that concerns his marriage he said he got this and he knows how to deal with everything. And well dad may have forgiven her after some months of being separated but I don't think I ever will if only i heard about it and not seen it then yeah maybe just maybe I might consider forgiving her but I saw her being touched and kissed by that fool looking happy and giggling like a bitch while my father was out there working his ass off trying to provide for her corny cheating ass nx.....Anyway enough about her before I get angry***

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

*** well they arrived and they found cars waiting for them and they drove home and immediately went to their chambers to rest in the middle of the night Ray woke up to someone knocking on his bedroom door and when he opened it was Adanma***

Ray: what is it?

Ada: please make me feel better

Ray: huh?

he asked confused

Ada: please Ray my heart hurts ok just make me feel better please

she said that taking off her gown and she was stuck naked Ray took a deep breath as he felt his dick getting hard

Ray: Adanma trust me you don't wanna do this especially with me

Ada: I want to Ray please just make me feel good

Ray: you sure

***she nodded ***

Ray: ok then go lay on the bed im coming

she went to the bed and Ray took his phone and he walked out of his bedroom and he dialled Heath's numbers and he answered with a sleepy voice

Heath: yah

Ray: wake up man

Heath: Ray? Why are you calling me at this time man

Ray: I have a situation man wake up

***he heard some shuffling in the background ***

Heath: im awake what's wrong is it dad?

Ray: no its Adanma

Heath: huh?..... what about her

Ray: she just woke me up now man saying I should fuck her she's inside my room naked as we speak

heath laughed

Heath: really bros you woke me up for that shit

Ray: well technically she's still your wife traditionally so

Heath: hey stop right there ok I have one wife and that is Obim my mamiwota my omalicha. My star ok

Ray laughed

Ray: yho chill I get you

Heath: now stop being a pussy and tap that ass even though I kinda feel sorry for her cause after fucking her you gonna throw her out like trash

Ray: so no wahala I can tap it

Heath: dude you can even marry her I don't give a shit if it was naledi then dude I would chop off your dick first make you eat it raw before chopping off your head

Ray laughed

Ray: ok let me go rip that pussy apart

they laughed

Heath: ok enjoy bros but make sure you wear protection and she doesn't cry rape when you show her your true colours tomorrow cause I know you

Ray: let her try and I'll introduce her to La Parca

heath laughed

Heath: well let me go back to my mamiwota bye

Ray: bye

***then they ended the call and Ray went back and he found her busy playing with her clit with her legs wide opened and he smiled while shaking his head he pressed record on his phone and he put it down and he went to his wallet and he took out a condom

Adanma: you know im clean and on contraceptives right

Ray: ok

***he then took off his pyjama pants along with his boxers and he was hard as a rock and Adanma bit her lower lip when she saw his size he was big and that made her happy Ray then put the condom on and he went to the bed ***

Ray: turn around

Adanma frowned

Adanma: come on let's kiss and play around first

Ray: I don't do foreplay woman you came here for me to fuck you right

she swallowed and nodded because he has a serious look on his face

Ray: then turn around and let me fuck you so I can go back to sleep

*** she wanted to tell him to forget it but the way his dick was hard and huge she decided against it as she wanted to feel him inside her nana so she turned (ass up and chest down) then he inserted his middle finger in her nana and she moaned then he circled it around for some time and he took out his finger and he positioned himself then he entered her slowly and she moaned out loud when his dick expanded her wall and filled her up completely. He just clenched his jaws when his dick slid in deeper and he felt her warmth around it he started moving slowly with Adanma moaning out loud

and he increased his pace while holding her waist tight his dick was long and big so she felt like he was pocking her uterus....he was silent all along with only Adanma's moans filling the room he fucked her hard and fast with his grip getting tighter and soon Adanma felt her orgasm getting closer and she held on tight to the sheet***

Adanma: fuck me harder baby fuck yes take it it's yours Ray!

she said that loud and Ray went harder deeper and faster giving it to her harder and harder until an orgasm hit her hard and she called out Ray's name and her body shock and Ray didn't stop he fucked her through it all and by the time he came she had already come once more then she collapsed on top of the bed after Ray pulled out and he went to the en-suit bathroom..... He checked the condom for any leakage and it was still intact then he rolled it with a tissue and he flushed it down the toilet and he washed his hands and he went back to the bedroom and he found Adanma inside his covers sleeping and he chuckled with disbelief and he wore his boxers and pyjama pants and he went to his phone and saved the recording and he went to the bed and shook Adanma

Adanma: mmmmh?

*** she said that with a tired voice***

Ray: get up and go to your bedroom

Adanma: come and sleep Ray im tired

he took the cover off her body and she was still naked

Ray: get out of my bed woman before I drag you out

and Adanma looked at him with disbelief

Adanma: you can't kick me out of your bed after having your way with me Ray

Ray laughed

Ray: you dey craze? (are you mad)

he said that pointing at the side of his head with his finger

Ray: I had my way with you huh?..... You came to my fucken bedroom and wanted me to fuck you and I just did now get the fuck out of my bedroom or I'll fucken drag you out stupid bitch

she swallowed hard as she didn't think Ray would treat her like this she thought after sex he will cuddle with her and maybe in the long or short run he will fall for her since his younger brother rejected her she didn't expect this at all

Adanma: Ray please

Ray: out woman

he said that pointing at the door and she slowly got out of the bed and she picked up her gown wore it and walked out with a tail between her legs and as soon as she walked in her bedroom tears fell from her eyes and she sobbed as the pain of failing washed over her

.
. .

**** the following morning around past 10 Ray was in the kitchen making himself a sandwich since he missed breakfast with the family as for Diego he left with Ray's father to his warehouse cause he needed his expertise concerning his merchandise. Anyway Ray's phone rang on top of the counter and it was Mbali calling and the smile that crept up on his face was just priceless****

Ray: Mbali

Mbali: hey "just Ray"

ray laughed

Ray: you'll never stop abi?

Mbali: wait a minute you are Nigerian

Ray: are you asking or telling me

Mbali laughed

Mbali: abi means something like " isn't it? Or right? " in Nigerian pigin right?

ray chuckled

Ray: yeah I see someone is a fan of Nigerian slang language

Mbali: yes ummm wow you are Nigerian but you don't look a man from Nigeria at all

Ray: and how does a Nigerian man look like

Mbali: big dark and scary but not that ugly scary no but that" I go slap you now now" scary if you catch my drift

Ray busted out with loud laughter and Mbali joined him

Ray: fuck.... You are a crazy chick you know that

Mbali: I dey try bros i dey try ooo

Ray laughed some more

Ray: ok ok stop abeg

***he said that still laughing ***

Mbali: so I guess you are like Ramsey Tukumbo Noah and Ghananian actors abo Majid Michel and Van Vicker

Ray: you watch too much Nollywood movies

Mbali: im a fan actually of Nollywood movies

Ray: mmmmh so how are you princess

she sighed

Mbali: surviving and you

*** then Adanma walked in the kitchen and Ray's mood changed***

Ray: princess let me call you back just now ok

Mbali: ooh ok

Ray: cool

*** Then he ended the call and finished with making his sandwich***

Adanma: girlfriend?

Ray: soon to be wife actually

she swallowed hard

Adanma: tell me here is the something wrong with me ray I mean your brother rejected me and you are also treating me like trash

Ray chuckled

Ray: you act like trash so im gonna treat you like one

Adanma: how dare you say that to me Ray who the fuck do you think you are

Ray: you have no self-respect and I hate bitches who throw themselves at me I love to pursue a woman Adanma not the other way around

Adanma: I'll tell everyone you forced yourself at me you bastard

Ray laughed

Ray: mmmh and everyone including your parents will hear you busy saying "fuck me harder baby fuck yes take it it's yours Ray!" in a recording I did last night

he eyes widened at that and Ray smirked

Ray: I know bitches like you Adanma I train them weekly in Cuba to do better than the shit you tried to pull on me.....now look whatever you thought you'll gain failed bitch cause Im not like all those fuckers who fall in love at the sight of a new pussy

then his mother walked in as Adanma was crying and she gave Ray a death stare

Nomvula: what the hell did you do to her Raymond?

she asked that with an angry voice and Ray chuckled

Ray: well let me see ummm well she came to my room last night and she said I must fuck her and I did now she's busy crying rape cause I refuse to make her mine or something like that..... hmmm well let me warn you dearest mother since MJ is not around to do that this bitch has an agenda and you are just a foolish pawn in all her plans and soon she's gonna go to your husband and seduce him too im telling you

then he took his food and walked out of the kitchen going to the lounge while whistling *

Nomvula: what is he talking about Adanma?

she continued to cry totally ignoring her question

Nomvula: I asked you a question young lady!

she asked with a firm tone

Adanma: YES I SLEPT WITH HIM SO WHAT MMMH AND DON'T ACT ALL SHOCKED CAUSE YOU FAILED..... YOU FAILED ME AND MY MOTHER YOU MADE PROMISES AND NOW YOU CANT DELIVER NX WAIT UNTIL MOM HEAR ALL THIS YOU'LL BE KICKED OUT OF THE WOMAN'S LEAGUE AND YOUR NAME WILL BE DRAGGED TO THE MUD AND BELIEVE ME WHEN I SAY I'LL MAKE SURE OF IT NX USELESS WOMAN

****Then she stormed out of the kitchen all the way upstairs to her bedroom to finish packing****

.
. .
. .

*** well ray called princess back and they chatted some more and he even asked her to have lunch with him tomorrow since him and Diego are going back to South Africa later today.....after his phone call with Mbali he received a call from Mateo***

Ray: Mat howzit ?

Mateo: not good jefe

Ray: what's wrong is Cathy sick again

Mateo: no no it's....

then he sighed

Mateo: I found out who snitched on us to the authorities and got our containers stuck in customs

Ray: who's the motherfucker?

Mateo: Derrick

Ray: who the fuck is that

Mateo: Derrick jefe Deshaun's right hand man

Ray: WHAT?

Mateo: I was as shocked as you are now jefe in fact im still shocked

Ray: how I mean why..... Wait do you think Deshaun is also part of this

Mateo: I don't know I only found out that derrick is the snitch but boss why would Deshaun sabotage us I mean you two are more than close friends you are practically brothers and remember he also invested a lot of money in that container so why would he order Derrick to do this

***ray was now pacing up and down trying to make sense of all this Deshaun was his closest friend in USA they met when he was doing his third year as a medical student there and they clicked he later found out that Deshaun's father was a leader of some gang there when Deshaun's younger brother was shot during a gang shoot out and they asked Ray to save him since they couldn't take

him to the hospital because gunshots wounds are reported to the police. Well after he successfully saved him he became their “unlicensed student doctor” in the gang and he got paid for his services soon he got more involved in the gang’s day to day business and at the same time Deshaun’s father made sure he is not disrupted with his studies then him and Deshaun worked hand in hand with the day to day business in the gang even when Deshaun’s father died of cancer they were always there for each other and when Deshaun took over from the gang Ray was there for him supporting him so now Ray can’t stomach the thought of Deshaun betraying him***

Ray: I hope he’s not involved Mat cause I swear on his dead father’s grave I’ll fucken rip him to pieces if he is

***he said that with no care in the world..... well soon Diego and Ray’s father came back from the warehouse and they all left going to Adanma’s home ***

24

INSERT.....24

.
. .
.

NARRATED

*** They finally arrived at Adanma’s fathers’ house and they got out of the cars and Adanma ran to the door***

Ray: let me guess she’s going to cry to daddy and mommy

Mr.masden: Ray behave please

ray smiled

Ray: ofcourse father

Nomvula: yeah right

she said that rolling her eyes

Ray: father please tell your wife not to start with me please I don’t have the energy for her

Mr Masden just huffed and walked to the door leaving them and Nomvula followed him and Diego just chuckled

Ray: we won’t take long

Diego nodded he knew he had to remain in the car.... Well Ray went after his parents.... they finally got inside and a house maid showed them to the lounge and they sat down

Maid: Mr and Mrs Nwokoye will be with you shortly

**** Mr Masden nodded and the maid walked away****

Nomvula: and ray you better sit there quiet and let me and your father handle this ok

Ray chuckled

Ray: only father has a right to tell me that dearest mother

Nomvula: and im your mother Raymond in case you have forgotten

Ray: ooh who can forget to have a mother like you

he said that to Nomvula and her eyes popped out then she frowned looking hurt and angry

Mr.masden: enough you two!

he warned them

Mr.masden: chai.... (God why?)..... Can't you two at least pretend to tolerate each other until we leave this place for Pete's sake?

Ray: sorry father

*** then he smirked at his mother who was breathing heavily with anger brewing inside of her as she looked at her son she knew he lived to make her suffer for cheating on her husband and she had learned to ignore him but it's like every time he's around he has a new way of getting to her.... Anyway Mr and Mrs Nwokoye walked in the lounge with Adanma who looked like she was busy crying a river and they sat down***

Mr.Nwokoye: mike is this why you called for this urgent meeting to bring back my daughter whom the two of you came here in my house and claimed that you want her to be your daughter in law

he asked with an angry voice

Mr.masden: can you just give me a chance to explain things Jasper

Mrs.Nwokoye: WHAT IS THERE TO EXPLAIN MICHAEL YOU CAME TO OUR HOUSE AND ASKED FOR HER HAND IN MARRIAGE FOR YOUR SON AND NOW YOU BRINGING HER BACK CRYING AND YOU WANT TO EXPLAIN THINGS

she said that looking angry

Ray: with all due respect Mrs whomever your surname is don't raise your voice when you speak to my father if your husband is used to you disrespecting him well do that to him and not my father I hope we understand each other

he warned her and she looked at him with an angry face

Mrs.Nwokoye: heeeeh.... Repeat what you just said to me

she said that holding her ear dramatically waiting for ray to repeat himself

Ray: in simple terms what I said is respect yourself or some of us will teach you how

Mr Masden just shook his head defeated at Ray and Mrs Masden just threw her hands up also defeated

Mrs.Nwokoye: boy do you know who the hell I am who do you think you are talking to me like that in my house!

she said that looking like she's ready to skin Ray alive

Ray: well Madam are you the president's wife perhaps?

Mr.Nwokoye: ENOUGH!

Ray gave him a bored look

Mr.Nwokoye: if you have nothing better to say just shut up or better yet leave my house.... You won't come to my house and insult my wife you hear me

Ray: ooh but its fine for your wife to disrespect my father

Mr.masden: Raymond please my son stop

he pleaded with him as he could see that he was getting angry and Ray clenched his jaws looking at Adanma's father with deadly eyes

Mr.masden: Jasper I called for this meeting so I can bring back your daughter cause my son rejected her and there's nothing I can do to change his mind you see my son is already engaged and the girl is pregnant for him so that's why we are here

Mr.masden: is this a return goods address mike

Ray wanted to say "YES" but he held himself

Mr.masden: ofcourse not Jasper but there's nothing I can do he made it clear that he doesn't want her

he said that with an annoyed voice

Mrs.Nwokoye: so Rain (Nomvula) you failed to keep your promise mmmmh

Nomvula: I tried Joy ok but I don't know what that girl fed my son bu.....

Ray interrupted her

Ray: I see that gun that was pointed at you didn't make you put a tight leash on your mouth

he said that to his mother

Adanma: she's right that sick whore bewitched him I mean why would he choose an albino girl over all this mommy

Ray: because you are a useless whore who sleeps around

everyone gasped and her eyes popped out

Mrs.Nwokoye: don't talk to my daughter like that ok my girl respects herself

Ray laughed out loud

Mr.masden: son what's going on

Ray: well dad you know im a man right and you also know that when a naked woman stands in your opened door way naked what happens to little man below our belts

Mr.masden: AKUNNA!

Ray chuckled

Ray: ok ok... Well Adanma here came to my room last night and asked me to have sex with her and I did

everyone gasped

Adanma: HE'S LYING MOMMYI CAN NEVER SLEEP WITH THE LIKES OF HIMNEVER

she said that with a shaky voice then Ray took out his phone from his pocket and he played the recording and as soon as they heard her voice and the things she said before they started fucking they all gasped with shock..... as for her father he stood up while her mother was in tears

Mr.Nwokoye: enough switch it off!

Ray: wait for the part when she starts screaming my name

Mr.masden: SWITCH IT OFF NOW AKUNNA!

he shouted and Ray did

Mr.masden: nx now I see why my son rejected her your daughter is loose ad im glad Ezeudo saw the woman she is and rejected her who would want her a wife

he stood up

Mr.Masden: let's go

he said to his wife and son and they also stood up

Mrs.Masden: ooh and Joy I'll see you at the woman's league and I hope my new seat will be waiting for me

she said that smirking at her and Ray just shook his head as he saw what his mother just did.....by now Mr Nwokoye walked out of the lounge going upstairs embarrassed as hell and Mr Masden was already by the door and he walked out and his wife also walked out

Ray: word of advice to the two of you whatever diabolical plan you had with my family you better abort it this minute or else this recording will be send to your husband's associates with your daughter's face plastered all over it.....ok

all this time Adanma was busy crying and Ray walked out and he got in the car and Diego drove out of the yard

Nomvula: wow that went well

Mr.masden: SHUT UP! SHUT THE HELL UP!

he warned her and everyone went silent in the car even Ray

Mr.masden: ITS ALL YOUR FAULT NOMVULA YOU BROUGHT THAT BITCH INTO OUR HOME AND BECAUSE YOU KNEW I WOULD DO ANYTHING FOR YOU YOU THEN MANIPULATED ME INTO AGREEING WITH THAT DIABOLICAL PLAN OF YOURS BUT NO MORE YOU HEAR ME NO FUCKEN MORE NOW IM UP TO HERE WITH YOUR UNGRATEFUL SELF IM TAKING A SECOND WIFE AND IF YOU DON'T AGREE TO THAT THEN YOU BETTER BE READY FOR A DIVORCE

He roared leaving everyone in the car shocked

Nomvula: w....what?

*** that came out like a whisper***

Mr.masden: I DIDN'T STUTTER DID I

Nomvula: you...you are just angry my love you don't mean it

Mr.masden: oooh I mean it Nomvula im taking a second wife and that's that and if you have a problem with that then take your shit and leave my house I see you have forgotten who I am Nomvula and that you are taking an advantage to the fact that I love you and that I will do anything for you

he said that with no care in the world and a sob escaped nomvula's mouth

Mr.Masden: and if you know what's good for you you will accept Ezeudo's fiancée and treat her good or else you'll know me nx

*** and silence filled the car.....well soon they arrived at home and they all got out and went inside the house Diego and Ray went upstairs to get ready to leave while Nomvula went after her husband and she found him in his study pouring himself a drink***

Nomvula: my love please let's talk about this look I know im difficult sometimes and im sorry my husband I love you Michael please don't do this

Mr.masden: are you done?

he asked not even looking at her

Nomvula: Michael please im sorry ok

Mr.masden: Nomvula please leave my study I need to call my elders about the second wife issue

tears ran down her cheeks

Nomvula: Michael if you take a second wife I swear I'll kill myself

Mr.masden: and don't worry I'll mourn your death now leave I have an Important call to make

Nomvula: Michael plea.....

he interrupted her

Mr.masden: LEAVE WOMAN!

he roared and she got startled a bit

Mr.masden: I SAID LEAVE!

*** he roared again and she walked out crying she couldn't believe Michael was doing this to her..... she never thought he would speak to her like that or let alone take a second wife she now realised that she pushed him too far but one thing that she will never let happen is another woman coming to reap where she didn't sow***

.

.

.

*** Upstairs ray was with Diego in his room they just got off the phone with Mateo***

Diego: do you think the old man was serious jefe?

Ray: to tell you the truth I don't know he sounded serious though..... but whatever decision he makes I'll support him he deserves some happiness and respect too even if it's from a second wife cause for years now mother has been calling the shots without father even being aware I just hope he get a tough and fearless woman cause I don't think mother dearest will accept all that just like that

*** Diego chuckled***

Diego: yeah you're right..... mh mh mh there's gonna be world war 15 in this house if he's serious about the second wife issue im telling you jefe

*** Ray chuckled***

Ray: true..... I just hope his heart will be able to handle all of it anyway give me the burner-phone and let me call Deshaun

he handed him the phone and Ray dialled his numbers and he answered

Deshaun: yeah

Ray: is that how you answer your phone now Dee?

Deshaun chuckled

Deshaun: SAM BULL (Sambulo) my man

he said that with a happy tone... well he calls him that

Ray: yeah..... how far naw (how are you)

he asked with a cold tone

Deshaun: im kickin and screamin my man and you

Ray: well im surviving

Deshaun: what's up Sam bull you sound cold or is it me?

Ray: what have you done Dee?

he asked him with a serious voice

Deshaun: what are you talking about man?

Ray: how long have we been friends and brothers Deshaun?

Deshaun: like forever man

Ray: so now why would you betray me man

Deshaun: what are you talking about I don't get you man?

Ray: well I found out who snitched on us and guess who that person is

Deshaun: I hope you not saying it's me Ray you know I also invested millions in those containers so I also stand to lose if the authorities don't release them

Ray: I didn't say it was you who snitched but someone close to you did

Deshaun: what? Who?

Ray: Derrick

Deshaun: which Derrick

Ray: your right hand man

then Deshaun chuckled

Deshaun: no no you are mistaken man Derrick would never do that to me

Ray: im not asking you Dee im telling you and if you don't sort that piece of shit out know that im coming there and I'll do it myself and you know how I roll his family will also suffer

Deshaun breathed out

Deshaun: I'll handle him you don't have to come man

he said that defeated

Ray: you are getting soft Deshaun and your enemies might strike when they learn that.... pull yourself up and stop letting boys do as they want right under your nose you are becoming a fucken liability and that's not on man pull your fucken self-up or im coming that side and I'll beat you right back to your fucken senses nx

then he dropped the call looking angry

****MBALENTLE****

*** well I have been good and im trying to pick all the pieces of my broken heart and also trying to put them together slowly but surely and im sure I'll get there soon mmmmh well yesterday I had a chat over the phone with "just ray" and I must say I enjoyed our conversation. He's a funny man and I couldn't believe that he's actually Nigerian because he looks coloured or something mmmmh well yesterday I had a chat over the phone with "just ray" and I must say I

enjoyed our conversation. He's a funny man and I couldn't believe that he's actually Nigerian because he looks coloured or something aarg well I also look coloured or white and im actually a Zulu lady so I understand.... Anyway I can't wait for our lunch date today I know he's way older than me but I can't help it cause he's just handsome and again there's something that pulls me towards him even though I try by all means to hold myself and I can't explain it and again besides the fact that he looks way younger than his age there's something about him that just make me want to know him more (Gosh my brothers are gonna skin me alive).....anyway the doorbell rang and I got up to open it and boooooom Kyle was standing there looking like he hasn't slept for days***

Me: what are you doing here?

I asked him with a frown on my face

Kyle: can we talk please

he pleaded

Me: I have nothing to say to you Kyle so please leave

Kyle: im not going anywhere until we talk princess im sorry ok I know I messed up big time and im sorry my love but please forgive me

Me: Kyle please leave ok I have nothing to say to you so leave and go to your baby mama

Kyle: I can't princess I love you and only you ok and not her

Me: then why did you sleep with her if you loved me mmmmh tell me Kyle what is it that I didn't give you that made you cheat mmmmh

i said that with tears in my eyes

Kyle: nothing baby im...

i interrupted him

Me: if it's nothing then why did you cheat?

Kyle: I was drunk princess ok I know it's not excuse for what I did but I was drunk

*** I wiped my tears as they fell uncontrollably***

Me: so what you are saying to me is every time you are drunk I should expect you to cheat mmmh ?

I asked him getting angry now that hurt I felt was slowly being replaced by anger

Kyle: ofcourse not baby look I've learned my lesson ok I swear I'll never cheat on you ever again my love please forgive me baby im nothing without you

Me: just leave Kyle we are over and the sooner you accept that the better

***he then grabbed my arm as I was about to close the door and he tightened the grip ***

Kyle: you are mine Mbali you hear me we will never be over and the sooner you accept that the better for you

Voice: you wanna bet boy

gosh I know that voice..... and he soon stood next to Kyle by the door and my eyes popped out Kyle looked at me and then he looked at me wait what was he doing here I thought we were meeting later anyway I quickly freed my wrist from Kyle's grip and i wiped my tears off gosh I look like a mess

Ray: move boy

he said that with a straight face and I swallowed

Kyle: baby what's going on who's this

I kept quiet cause first of all im no longer his baby and secondly im still surprised by "just Ray's" unexpected visit

Ray: I thought I just said move little boy

he said that taking one step closer to kyle's face and I saw Kyle swallow and he moved out of the way and "just Ray" walked to me and within a blink of an eye he kissed me..... his one hand was cupping my face while his other hand was holding my waist tight.....gosh I found myself kissing him back with my eyes closed after the sweetness off the kiss washed off all that shock I had when the kiss started well that's until he violently moved away from me and I opened my eyes to find Kyle holding his expensive suit jacket violently and my eyes popped out with shock

Kyle: WHO THE FUCK DO YOU THINK YOU ARE YOU BASTARD TO KISS MY GIRLFRIEND INFRONT OF ME

he roared and "Just Ray" chuckled

Ray: well I must commend you for your guts but boy boy if you don't get your filthy hand off my expensive jacket I'll break it into pieces

he said that with a chilled voice which held so much authority in it and I swallowed hard

Kyle: YOU DON'T FUCKEN SCARE ME YOU HEAR ME I SEE YOU CLEARLY DON'T KNOW WHO THE FUCK I AM NOW LISTEN HERE AND LISTEN GOOD PRINCESS IS MINE AND MINE ALONE..... IM WARNING YOU FOR THE FIRST AND FUCKEN LAST TIME TO LEAVE HER ALONE OR ELSE YOU'LL REGRET IT

*** Well out of the blue "just Ray" grabbed Kyle with his throat and he roughly pushed him to the wall and Kyle hit it hard with his back and I saw "just Ray" squeeze his hand tight around Kyle's neck..... I could see he was struggling to breathe and I just stood there frozen I couldn't even utter a single word ***

Ray: first thing first you should never in your fucken life touch me like that ever again and secondly you gonna be a little good boy and walk out of here and never set your little feet here again or I'll chop of that little dick that you go around drilling in every hole you meet do I make myself clear?

*** Kyle was busy chocking trying to free "just Ray's" hand from his neck but his attempts were just futile so he quickly nodded and "just Ray" let him go the truth is I wanted to go to Kyle and help him up from the floor as he slid down coughing hysterically but I couldn't cause "just Ray" looked deadly***

Ray: now get up from that floor and get the fuck out from here before I fucken kill you this time!

he said that with a chilled voice again and I swallowed hard again..... I've seen this "chilled voice" thingy with my brother Smiso and I know when he's like this he's extremely angry and I think the same thing was happening with "just Ray"

Me: Kyle please go

I said that with a low voice and he looked up at me with a shocked expression but I looked down

Ray: let's get in princess

then he looked at Kyle

Ray: when I come out I better find you gone cause if you don't pick your teeth on the floor one by one you'll fucken end up in ICU if not dead

then he pushed me inside gently and he also got in and closed the door and he locked it and turned to look at me and I looked down I then felt his long fingers under my chin and he lifted up my face and I looked up and our eyes locked..... gosh what's happening to me I suddenly felt my knees go weak...." Mbali he's way older than you" is what was playing in my head but my heart was busy beating fast out of its rib cage

Ray: did he hurt you

I slowly shook my head no and he breathed out

Ray: ok anyway something told me to come passed by your place before heading for my meeting and im glad I listened to it

I tried to swallow but I couldn't gosh my throat just decided to be dry all of a sudden and I didn't know why and as for my pounding hard heart im not even gonna say anything about it now

Ray: call me if he troubles you again ok

*** he said that with a soft voice with his eyes still locked with mine and I nodded like a small child then he got closer and he kissed my lips then my forehead and the tip of my nose***

Ray: I'll see you after my meeting ok

Me: Ooohk

I said that in a whisper then he whispered to me

Ray: you better stay away from that stupid boy cause you are mine now and I hate sharing

he kissed my forehead and he walked out leaving me shocked to the core..... I managed to walk to the couch slowly and I sat down and I exhaled loudly gosh I didn't even realise that I was holding my breath

Me: ooh my God what just happened

***I said that to myself not believing what just happened I mean "just Ray" kissed me on my lips and not once but twice or is it three times...no I think it was twice ***

.

.

.

NARRATED*

*** well after ray left Mbali's apartment he went to his car with a smile on his face and Diego drove to Jase's company for the meeting Ray had with him.....soon they arrived and Ray got out with Diego and they went inside they got to his floor and they found his PA busy on his computer and Ray told him about his appointment with Jase and after making a call to Jase he allowed him to go in while Diego waited outside on the couches***

Jase: La Parca himself

they shook hands

Ray: mmmmh Kray my man howzit?

Jase: surviving man and you

Ray: also surviving man you know how the jungle is out there

Jase chuckled

Jase: I hear you man so when did you arrive this side

Ray: well it's been days now

Jase: mmmmh you know I was shocked that you made an appointment to come see me where else you could've just called me

Ray: I decided to do things that normal people do like making an appointment to see someone

they both laughed

Jase: drink?

Ray: of course

Jase went to pour them drinks and Ray went to the wall where different pictures of the khumalo family members were and he saw princesses pictures and he smirked admiring her beauty

Ray: nice family you have here

he said receiving a glass from Jase

Jase: yeah but they are a handful I must say

Ray: I know what you mean man

they went and sat down on the couches

Jase: so what's up

Ray: im here to cash in on that favour you owe me

Jase raised his eyebrow

Jase: ooh

Ray: yeah

Jase sighed

Jase: ok im listening

Ray: my containers are being held by authorities off shore in Cape Town so I really need them released as in yesterday

Jase: ooh ok what happened don't tell me your papers weren't straight man that's so unlike you

Ray: nah it's not that someone snitched on me

Jase: and who's that fool

Ray: someone who's about to regret it so?

Jase: how long have they been in customs?

Ray: a few days

Jase: ok I can work with that

Ray: so how long will it take?

Jase: two to three day

Ray: ok not bad

Jase: so are you thinking of moving this side

Ray: I haven't decided yet but lately I think I found a good enough reason to make me want to move this side

Jase raised his eyebrow

Jase: a woman?

Ray chuckled and he gulped down his drink and he stood up

Ray: yeah the future Mrs La Parca

he said that with smirk on his face and Jase laughed

Jase: mmmmh I hope I'll get the wedding invite to come see you being tide down by a woman with my own eyes

Ray laughed

Ray: believe me you'll definitely get one

Jase: good

Ray: ok then Kray my man let me get going I'll wait for your call

Jase: yeah

they shook hands again and he walked to the door and he stopped and turned

Ray: marriage life suits you chale I mean we had a decent conversation without you insulting or threatening me

Jase laughed

Jase: fuck off Ray man

Ray laughed

Ray: oops I guess I spoke too soon

***they laughed and Jase showed him the middle finger and Ray walked out laughing..... then

Jase dialled his brother's numbers and he answered on the third ring***

Snakes: bafo

Jase: foza guess who just left my office

Snakes: Ray

Jase: yeah and he came to cash in on that favour I owe him

Snakes: ok what did he want?

Jase: his containers are being held by authorities off shore in Cape Town so he needs them released ASAP

Snakes: at least he didn't want us to help him win a war or something

Jase: yeah at least

Snakes: so why are his containers held in custom

Jase: someone snitched on him and he said his papers are legit

Snakes: then it won't be a problem I'll handle it

Jase: thanks foza

Snakes: sho...ohh and did you get my messages

Jase chuckled

Jase: those messages about shamba or simba the lion that was killed for attacking its owner

Snakes: mmmmh our brother from another mother was killed man taken down in cold blood for defending our land from the white man

jase laughed

Jase: what are you talking about now mamba?

Snakes: shamba the lion bafo

Jase: ok a lion is our brother from another mother?

Snakes: yeah I mean we have half human half animals in our family so in a way he's our brother from another mother you get me

jase laughed out loud

Jase: you are sick mamba seriously sick

he continued to laugh and snakes joined him

Snakes: yeah you should have seen the condolences on new24 pouring in for shamba's family it was hilarious bafo others were even claiming to rename itiger (R10) after shamba

Jase continued to laugh

Snakes: they even said Kruger national park should be named Shamba national park

they laughed

Snakes: im telling you south African are messed up in the head bafo I mean no one cared to ask about the white dude shamba attacked they only send #RestInPeace messages to shamba praising him about the battle he fought with the white man

Jase: snakes stop please

Snakes: dude even Julius malema said an inquiry should be opened for the authorities to investigate further cause shamba was defending himself from the white man that wanted to take his land

jase was now in stitches

Snakes: eish shambiro tried but he failed foza I also say he must rest in peace at least he died trying to take his land back from the white man so my respect to him

they both laughed jase even had tears running down his cheeks

Snakes: eeh shap bafo let me get back to work

Jase: sha...shap.....

***they ended the call and Jase continued to laugh

25

INSERT.....25

.

.
.
NARRATED

***At the Mogapi's household kitso his father and Mamiki were sitting in the lounge while naledi's grandmother was sleeping in her bedroom ***

Mamiki: so what can I do for you gentleman

she asked looking at them

Tsietsi: we are here because of naledi

kitso's father said

Mamiki: nx what did that girl do now?

kitso frowned well he knows that Mamiki despises naledi cause he used to console her whenever she would put her down or say something that broke her spirit even more and luckily kitso already told his father of the kind of woman Mamiki is

Kitso: she didn't do anything im the one that actually did something to her

Mamiki: I don't understand

Tsietsi: Miss Mogapi my son kitso is your granddaughter's father

Mamiki: oooh

***Kitso's father was surprised by her reaction cause if naledi was his daughter he would be punching kitso's teeth out by now ***

Tsietsi: yeah ummm look I know my son wronged your daughter in the most despicable way ever but he's sorry miss Mogapi and he's here to ask for forgiveness and even pay for damages for impregnating you daughter out of wedlock

***Mamiki smiled when he heard about the "damages" part..... after trying so hard to raise some funds to pay loan sharks she owes now an opportunity just presented its self just like that ***

Mamiki: wow that's good a man does that my boy

kitso clenched his jaw when he saw her smiling like that cause he knew it was about the damages money that made her smile like a cheap prostitute

Mamiki: so are you here to pay for the damages

she asked a bit excited

Kitso: is naledi here

Mamiki cleared her throat

Mamiki: ummm no but don't worry im sure she won't mind you paying damages for Lesedi I mean she's your daughter after all

kitso got angry looking at Mamiki he wished he could strangle her he remembers how naledi would cry every time she said Mamiki said hurtful things to her

Kitso: no I need to ask for forgiveness from naledi first and to hear from her that she actually is ok with me paying for the damages and that she's willing to let me have a relationship with my daughter

mamiki's face fell when kitso said that cause that meant for her to get the damages money she first has to beg naledi to allow kitso have a relationship with lesedi

Tsietsi: so miss Mogapi can we see naledi so my son can apologise to her and maybe find a way forward with the whole thing

Mamiki cleared her throat

Mamiki: well she moved out and I don't know where she is

Tsietsi: what do you mean

Mamiki: she had a fall out with my late brother some time back and she moved out and I haven't see her since

Kitso: what did Thabo do to her?

Mamiki: wait you know Thabo?..... anyway that is not important now

kitso huffed he prayed Thabo didn't touch her

Kitso: I hope he didn't succeed in forcing himself on her

he said that looking angry and Mamiki swallowed

Mamiki: what...what do you mean by that?

Tsietsi: son that's not why we are here please stop ummm miss Mogapi please get in contact with your daughter and please plead with her on my son's behalf so we can do right by our granddaughter we need to introduce her to our ancestors so they can know her and protect her

Mamiki: I know don't worry I'll talk to her

Tsietsi: ok thank you you can contact me using these numbers to give me feedback on your talk with her

he said giving her his card

Mamiki: ok I'll do just that

Tsietsi: thank you

then he stood up and kitso also stood up and they shook mamiki's hand

Tsietsi: we will wait for your call

*** she nodded then they walked out going to their car***

Mamiki: shit.....nx now i have to beg that ungrateful girl just because I need that money nx and its all thabo's fault if only he didn't do what he did and I wouldn't be in this predicament and mama

wouldn't be in that state she's in nx I hope he burns in hell for putting mom and I through all this rubbish

he said that to herself looking angry then her mother slowly walked in the living room

Koko: who were those people and what did they want

Mamiki: aarg it was that boy that got naledi pregnant and his father

Koko: what did they want?

Mamiki: the boy said he wants to have a relationship with Lesedi and he also wants to pay damages

Koko: I hope you told them naledi is no longer part of this family

she said that sitting down slowly

Mamiki: mama not now please

Koko: Mamiki I thought i told you I don't want your useless daughter in my house ever again

Mamiki: ma we need that money ok and im sure this might even make naledi to come back home

she said that trying to convince her mother

Koko: I said I don't want her in my house and that's that..... She chose that boy over me the person that raised her since she was a baby and she had the guts to let that boy insult me in my own house so she's dead to me!

she said that with a firm voice

Mamiki: mama we need her ok please just let her come back this once I really need that money

Koko: if you want that money then go hold that meeting at your house and not here

she said that and slowly got up and she flinched with pain then she slowly walked to her bedroom and Mamiki sighed frustrated then she took her phone and called naledi and she didn't answer her call but then she tried again and still nothing..... She tried once more and luckily naledi answered this time

Naledi: Mamiki

Mamiki: naledi we need to meet and talk

Naledi: talk about what

Mamiki: about Lesedi

Naledi: what about her

Mamiki: lets meet and talk don't make beg naledi assomblief (please)

Naledi: well I can't meet up with you so it's either you say what you want to say over the phone or forever hold your piece

Mamiki: o nale lleme nou mogirl neh? (you talk to me like that now naledi)

Naledi: im my mother's daughter after all now bua (talk) or hang up cause I don't have all day

Mamiki

***she said annoyed and Mamiki laughed a bit as she couldn't believe that naledi was the one talking to her like that but then she decided to leave the issue for another day and focus on an important issue being the moola ***

Mamiki: ok then your baby daddy was here with his father

Naledi: askies what?

she asked shocked

Mamiki: yes and he wants to have a relationship with Lesedi I mean he's even ready to pay for damages

naledi laughed not believing what she was hearing

Mamiki: I know you are still hurt by what he did to you but girly you should be grateful that he saw the light and he's willing to right his wrongs unlike your useless father who's enjoying his life with that fat ugly bitch instead of looking for you

naledi swallowed hard as Mamiki said that cause this thing about her father was still painful to her

Naledi: look I want nothing to do with kitso Mamiki you hear me

Mamiki: stop being selfish man nx why are you preventing Lesedi to have a relationship with her father or keng (what) you want her to despise you when she's old and she learns that you are the one that kept her from having a relationship with her father cause believe me girly I'll make sure she knows you refused point blank

she said that with no care whatsoever

Naledi: ooh please Mamiki we both know all you want is the money and nothing else so stop pretending as if you care it doesn't suite you

she said with an annoyed voice

Mamiki: mxm well you are right girly well since I know no one will ever marry you then its better I get the damages money as consolation of sending money for your upkeep when you were growing up

she said that with no care in the world

Naledi: WOW!

she said that hurt a bit

Mamiki: look man tell your blesser gore kuku eo ya gao ga e tshabe (that your vagina is not going anywhere) that you have some things you need to take care of for Lesedi im sure he will understand

Naledi: Mamiki I don't want that bastard near my daughter you hear me so tell him to take his fucken money and fuck off

Mamiki: heeh ebile o kgona le go rogana (you can even swear) this days..... Anyway listen here mogirl lesedi need to be introduced to her father's ancestors so they can know her and protect her or else she will get sick as time goes on or get bad luck for the rest of her life just like you or even die now listen here you are not doing this for that boy but for Lesedi unless you are prepared to lose her to death then cool..... cause as for me I'll just find another way to raise money

naledi kept quiet not knowing what to say

Mamiki: I may be a bad person and mother to you mogirl but I never stopped you from finding your father even though he hurt me badly so stop with your selfishness and let lesedi have a relationship with her father man jealousy ke ya eng(why are you jealous) just because papagao ke setlaela sa monna le pipi enyane (your father is a fool with a small dick) it doesn't mean you should punish that boy even though he realised his mistakes while lesedi is still young

Naledi: yho bye Mamiki

she was just enough with her

Mamiki: hey wena naledi im still talking to....

tuh tuh tuh tuh..... naledi hanged up

Mamiki: nx

she clicked her tongue and threw her phone on top of the sofa

.
. .

**** well naledi sat there in the lounge as tears streamed down her cheeks she didn't understand why kitso was now interested in Lesedi cause he point blank said she should abort and now he's back wanting to claim her.... She then wiped her tears and sighed deeply she was a bit down cause since yesterday Heath has been distant emotionally it was like something was bothering him but he refused to tell her. He kept on saying that its work related and that she shouldn't worry about it but she worries cause he looked really troubled even this morning he didn't have breakfast saying he has an early meeting..... anyway she decided to take lunch to him since he didn't eat his breakfast so that she can tell him about mamiki's call cause even though she despises her and that she's a coin lover but some of the things she said made sense..... So she took a shower again and changed her clothes then her driver drove her to Heath's company.....they finally arrived and she got off and went inside well it's her first time here and she was mesmerised with how the place looked professional and upper class is what the inside of the building looked like..... anyway she walked to the reception area and she told the lady that she's here to see the CEO and since the lady sees naledi's portrait in heath's office whenever he summons her to his office she didn't give her

problems she told her where heath's office is and naleidi thanked her and went to the elevator and it took her to his floor..... when she got to that floor it was quiet in the far corner there were cosy couches and a table in the middle and she also saw a desk not far from the door and she concluded it's the PA's desk but it was empty so she walked to the door and it was slightly opened and she heard a woman talking and heath replying so she decided to eavesdrop on the conversation with her heart beating fast cause the way they spoke was suspicious even heath's voice was soft and the lady was busy sniffing as if she was crying***

.
. .
. .

****HEATH****

well im at work and it's been hectic since I got here my business is doing so well that im thinking of expanding it and as for obim and I things are great between us I love that woman people and I thank God every day for bringing her into my life. Im a happy man and my wife and kids are also happy so I can safely say that " God don butta my bread ooo" (God has answered my prayers) im just on top of the world..... but last night I think I got her worried because of my sour mood well the thing is yesterday I decided to do some research on her absent father because of the dowry (lobola) issue cause I know for a fact that her granny and mother will never accept dowry for naleidi from me and what I found out just shocked me to the core and it also got me worried. Well obim once told me her father's name and surname and even though she said his name is James Moeketsi I never thought for a moment that it will be lerato's father because I mean there are many James Moeketsi's out there. Now I don't know how to go about it cause guys I just realised that I dated two sisters and married one of them it's just fucked up cause I was sure I was done with lerato but now I just found out that she's my sister in law and I don't even know how to tell obim..... mxm all of this is just fucked up im telling ya'll. Anyway im now laying on the couch taking a break before my next meeting and I hear a knock on the door and it opens I sat up straight and it was Jolene my PA... she was holding a brown paper bag it's probably my lunch

Jolene: your food sir

I smiled

Me: thanks

she put it on top of the table and I opened it and it was pork ribs (my favourite) and French fries and I saw her looking at a huge portrait of naleidi that is on the wall with a pained look on her face..... ummm ok

Jolene: she's beautiful

Me: yeah she is

I said that smiling

Jolene: ummm can I sit down for a minute sir

Me: umm sure

ok she looked a bit down now

Jolene: so your ring...does it mean you are married now

***I looked at my ring ***

Me: yeah

Jolene: and I didn't get an invite I thought I meant something to you sir

ok what is all this now

Me: it was an intimate thing but don't worry you'll be invited to the white wedding

Jolene: ok....ummm sir can I ask you something and please be honest

Me: sure

Jolene: am I attractive

I cleared my throat....what sort of a question is that

Me: ummm yeah you are

Sponsored

I thought I meant something to you sir

ok what is all this now

Me: it was an intimate thing but don't worry you'll be invited to the white wedding

Jolene: ok....ummm sir can I ask you something and please be honest

Me: sure

Jolene: am I attractive

I cleared my throat....what sort of a question is that

Me: ummm yeah you are why are you asking me that?

Jolene: cause ever since that time we slept together I've.... I've been in love with you but you don't even notice me

the fuck?

Me: Jolene...

she interrupted me

Jolene: I know it's inappropriate to say all this cause you clearly told me you love someone and I shouldn't catch feelings and the fact that you are my boss and now you are married but I...I just had to tell you how I feel cause after lerato I thought maybe you'll see me and notice I how much im in love with you but you didn't and now you are married

I sighed God not this please

Me: look Jolene you are a beautiful girl and you have an amazing body and a kind heart but I don't see you like that im sorry you feel like that but I don't

a tear escaped her eye and I got closer to her and I held and she cried fuck why is Jolene doing this to tell you the truth I never knew she felt this way.... I mean not even once has she seduced or even fluttered with me after we fucked one time when I was at my lowest that time when naledi broke up with me after lerato beat her up

Me: look I need you to do me a favour

she nodded

Me: I want you to bury or get rid of those feelings cause I belong to someone else now Jolene and I love her with my all and I can never cheat on her no matter what

Jolene: don't you think I tried Heath but every day they grow stronger

fuck no

Me: then im afraid I'll have to let you go then cause I can't give you what you want and I also can't have an awkward working relationship with my PA

*** she sighed looking down and I lifted her face up and looked in her eyes....shame she's hurt ****

Me: we've come a long way Jolene please don't do this cause I would hate to lose a good PA like you over some one sided feelings

tears ran down her cheeks and I wiped them*

Me: please

Jolene: ok I'll try harder

it came out as a whisper and I sighed with relief and I held her as she sobbed....the truth is I don't have time to be looking for another PA and still give the new PA time to get used to how I do thing already work is piling up so I need Jolene I mean this girl has been with me for years and she has been good to me and she's also been doing an amazing job as my PA

Voice: wow this looks cosy

*** I swear my whole body froze and I let go of Jolene slowly..... I looked at the door and obim was standing there with tears in her eyes fuck I can already see on her face what she's thinking***

Me: obim it's not what it looks like

she didn't say anything she just walked in and put the basket she was holding on top of the table and she walked to the door.... I got up and ran towards her and I grabbed her arm with my heart beating fast

Me: let's talk please

she swallowed looking away with her bottom lip trembling and I know that happens when she's extremely hurt or angry.....I turned to look at Jolene who was standing there while whipping her tears

Me: Jolene excuse us and reschedule the rest of my meetings today to another day

Jolene: but sir you....

I interrupted her

Me: now Jolene!

***I said that with a firm voice ***

Jolene: ye...yes sir

she walked out and closed the door then naledi yanked her arm from my grip and she attempted to walk out but I grabbed her arm again

Me: obim its not what you think ok...look at me please

Naledi: let go of me heath

*** this is not happening***

Me: look naledi I was just comforting her ok nothing more

she turned her head and looked at me

Naledi: when you look at me do you see stupid written on my forehead

Me: ofcourse not obim i...

she interrupted me

Naledi: I heard your little chat ok!

she yelled and I sighed

Me: so you eavesdropped on our conversation tell me what where you hoping to hear mmmmh

Naledi: wow you are just unbelievable..... just let go of me please

*** she said that with a breaking voice***

Me: no we gonna sit down and talk like married couple should

she's not going anywhere until we resolve this

Naledi: I have nothing to say to you now let go of me

I clenched my jaws while looking at her intensely

Me: naledi listen carefully cause im gonna say this once..... we are not going to fight over Jolene cause besides the fact that she's just my PA she's not an important factor whatsoever!

I warned her and she just kept quiet

Me: im not cheating on you and I'll never cheat on you cause I love you and you know that

she rolled her eyes.... Wait did she just roll her eyes at me

Me: do that again just roll your eyes at me again and you'll see what I'll do to you!

I warned her and she looked away

Naledi: just let go of me Heath

she said that trying to wiggle her arm out of my grip but I didn't let her go

Me: what do you want me to say to convince you that nothing is going on between me and her?

Naledi: nothing you don't owe me any explanation I mean it's your life and you can do whatever you wanna do with it

I was getting upset cause I can see what she's trying to do..... so I let her go and I went to lock the door and I put the key in my pocket and I looked at her..... she looked upset and I sighed feeling like shit cause im the reason she is

Me: naledi.....

she interrupted me

Naledi: you know I knew you were too good to be true but because im a fool I fell for your charms

***I gave her the "wtf" look...fuck I sincerely hope it's her hormones that made her say that to me ***

Naledi: I mean why would a guy like you fall for an albino girl like me mmmh

I closed my eye while clenching my jaws getting pissed off by the second now

Me: naledi!

I warned her but she continued

Naledi: I mean my own mother despises me my father wanted me dead my baby daddy abandoned me and the only person I trusted with my life chose his son who tried to rape me over me and then disowned me when I tried to stand up for myself I mean why would you stay faithful to a damaged thing like me i....

*** I interrupted her***

Me: SHUT UP.....SHUT THE FUCK UP!

I roared and she kept quiet with tear running down her cheeks

Me: TALK THAT SHIT ABOUT YOURSELF AGAIN AND YOU'LL SEE WHAT I'LL DO TO YOU NX
YOU DEY CRAZE(ARE YOU OUT OF YOUR MIND)

I said that breathing heavily

Me: if you're saying all this to hurt me naledi know that it's working ok its fucken working!

*** she didn't say anything she just looked away while breathing heavily***

Me: look it might have been wrong of me to console Jolene I get that and im sorry ok

she continued to keep quiet then she went to the couch and sat down and she buried her face in her hands I sighed and i went to sit next to her..... im not fighting with my wife because of my PA NEVER!

Naledi: do you have feelings for her

she finally spoke

Me: no I don't I've never looked at her like that before obim

Naledi: if so then why is she still your PA

*** I sighed***

Me: cause she's good at her job naledi and I don't have time to be looking for another PA

Naledi: please open the door I wanna go home

Me: naledi!

Naledi: please heath I don't wanna be here ok I shouldn't have come in the first place

Me: you are not leaving this office until we solve this

Naledi: heath please

she said standing up and she wiped her tears

Me: im dead serious naledi we're not fighting because of Jolene

she kept quiet and sat down again and I sighed

Me: obim im sorry you walked in on that I swear with all my kids' lives im not cheating on you or even have feelings for her..... I love you naledi only you

she looked away and I got closer to her

Me: I love you obim please let's not fight over this you're not supposed to stress you'll upset my kids please

I said putting my hand on her belly

Naledi: you once got mad when kitso called me and you even told me to stay away from him and I did even though he's my baby daddy and now I find you holding your fuck buddy and im supposed to smile cause im the wife and she's a non-factor

Me: ofcourse not obim

Naledi: then what is it heath how do you think it makes me feel to find out that you once slept with your PA and she's still working for you and now she just confessed her undying love to you

I looked down...shit she heard the whole thing

Naledi: I came here to have lunch with my husband only to find another woman in his arms how do you expect me to feel heath mmmmh

Me: im sorry obim..... I love you naledi and only you

Naledi: please open the door I want to leave

Me: obim please

Naledi: you'll find me at home please open the door

I sat there looking down.... Fuck she's hurt

Naledi: its either her or me heath im tired of always being someone's second best or being forced to understand certain things even though I don't.... I want you to make your decision now so I know where I stand with you

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

*** heath looked at naledi with a pained look cause he just realised that naledi doesn't believe how much she means to him for her to be making him to choose between his PA and herself***

Heath: naledi

he called her name and naledi didn't even look at her

Heath: do you even know how much you mean to me

Naledi: I thought I did but not anymore

he swallowed

Heath: the fact that all that rubbish that happened with Jolene made you doubt my love for you it means you don't know how much I love you and live for you

she didn't say anything

Heath: fine I'll fire her but know that im disappointed at you

*** she continued to keep quiet.... Then he remembered his granny's words when she told him about the obstacles they will face before they reach the end of the tunnel and he sighed***

Heath: I love you ok and im sorry you walked in on that obim

Naledi: Mamiki called

she said not even looking at him and he frowned looking at her

Heath: your mother

she nodded

Heath: what did she want?

Naledi: kitso and his father went to see her and he convinced her to try and convince me to let him have a relationship with Lesedi

*** Heath chuckled not believing what he was hearing***

Naledi: why is it that every time im happy people try to ruin it

Heath: obim!

Naledi: I was happy heath for the first time in my life I relaxed and let my guard down and let all the happiness I was feeling take over then kitso happens and he's trying by all means to push his way into my life after breaking me and then I come to seek comfort from my supposed husband and I find him with another woman in his arms what have I done to deserve all this heath am I such an abomination that happiness refuses to stay with me

she said that crying and heath held her tight feeling like someone just punched her below her belt

Heath: im sorry obim..... im really sorry I promise I'll fix things please don't cry

*** she just cried on his chest as mamiki's words played in her head..... heath then cupped her face and planted a kiss on her lips***

Heath: I'll fire Jolene and I'll have a talk with that dickhead ex of yours ok..... please don't stress ok

she nodded

Heath: and im sorry you found me comforting another woman and I swear on my unborn babies never again my love ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

.
. .
.

**** well Mbali was attending only two lectures today and she was done with one and she was on her way to another one when her phone rang and it was Ray.... She smiled with her heart beating fast then she answered***

Mbali: hey

Ray: princess change of plans Im gonna send you a new address where we gonna meet

Mbali: ooh ok

Ray: yeah you know how your brother's are so meeting in public might get you in trouble and we don't want that right

Mbali: ummm yeah sure

*** she said disappointed "so he doesn't wanna be seen in public with me" she thought to herself***

Ray: ooh and pack an overnight bag cause you gonna need it tomorrow morning and don't forget your books cause you'll leave from here to your lectures tomorrow morning

Mbali: huh? But I thought we are just gonna have lunch

Ray: just pack an overnight bag princess I'll see you in three hours' time and please don't be late

Mbali: oh ok

*** she said confused a bit then he dropped the call and soon her phone beeped and it was an address and the apartment number she sighed and dialled her brother nhlaka's numbers ***

Nhlaka: baby girl

Mbali: bhuti unjani(how are you)

Nhlaka: im good my love and you

Mbali: im good too.....ummm bhuti tonight im gonna go for a pyjama party at one of my friends place it's her birth day and that's how she wants to celebrate it instead of going to a club or something

Nhlaka: mmmmh

Mbali: so im going and I'll come back tomorrow

she said that crossing her fingers

Nhlaka: what about your lectures princess

Mbali: i'll attend bhuti I'll go straight from her place

Nhlaka: alright and you better call me if something happens ok

Mbali: I will bhuti I love you and thank you

Nhlaka: I love you too and take care of yourself ok

Mbali: I will bhuti bye

Nhlaka: bye

then he ended the call and she breathed out loud her hands were even shaking and she felt bad lying to her brother like that but she also was curious of how her date with Ray will be like.... Anyway she went to attend her last lecturer

.

.

.

*** Well she arrived at the address Ray sent her and she was nervous as hell she drove in and found a parking spot and she got out and also took out her over-night bag and she locked the car and walked in she got in an elevator and she got off on the second floor and walked to the door and she knocked then ray opened he was shirtless and Mbali swallowed hard when her eyes landed on his hard abs ***

Ray: princess come in

he said that with a smile on his face and she did and when she turned around to face him she found him standing behind her with his hands in his pocket

Ray: hey

Mbali: hi

she said shyly and Ray got closer to her and he took her bag and put it on the floor and he put his big hand on her waist and cupped her face with another one and he planted a wet kiss on her lips

Ray: thank you for coming

she just nodded with her cheeks turning red and Ray leaned in for another kiss and this time he deepened the kiss making Mbali to moan softly his hand that was on her waist travelled to her ass and he squeezed it tight and he groaned as he pushed her closer to his body and she felt his boner.....she pulled out of the kiss and looked down shyly

Ray: I cooked something for us but for now I just want to bury myself inside of you

he said that and kissed her forehead and Mbali just swallowed hard at that statement

Mbali: huh?

she asked confused and Ray kissed her forehead and he smirked

Ray: what did I say earlier on today at your apartment?

she swallowed

Mbali: that...that im yours and you hate sharing

Ray: mmmh and now I just wanna bury my face between your legs then have you for dessert

he said that and smashed his lips onto hers and she just stood there frozen

26

INSERT.....26

.
. .

NARRATED

*** she kissed him back when he sucked on her bottom lip slowly she wanted to stop him so bad but the way he was holding her tight and the way he was kissing her just drove her crazy the kiss got heated and Ray grabbed her ass and picked her up and Mbali wrapped her legs around his waist and Ray went to the bedroom with her while they continued to kiss they got in the bedroom and Ray put her on top of the bed gently and he got on top of her and they continued to kiss. Ray was busy touching and squeezing her body while groaning here and there yes he has been with different woman from different countries and races but what he was feeling was just foreign to him. He was feeling things he has never felt before by just kissing and touching her so he wondered what he will feel once he's inside her he then stopped kissing her lips and he went to her neck and he sucked on

it going down with Mbali moaning loud he then bite her chin gently then he stopped and he took her shirt off and she wasn't wearing a bra and he cursed***

Ray: fuck.....

then he also took off her jeans along with her now wet lacy thong and as soon as his eyes landed on her freshly shave pussy his body shivered as for Mbali she had her hands covering her eyes..... then ray went up to her face and took off her hands and planted a wet kiss on her lips

Ray: are you a virgin my flower

he goggled the meaning of Mbali.... Then Mbali blushed and she shook her head no and he perked her lips again

Ray: is that boy the reason you are not

she bite her bottom lips looking away embarrassed and she nodded and Ray clenched his jaw then he kissed her jaw line

Ray: ok so let me make this clear to you my flower you are about to lose your real virginity now and I hope you are ready

Mbali: huh?

*** he kissed her chin***

Ray: I said you are about to lose your real virginity now..... cause that boy was just paving the way for a real dick to enter you all along

Mbali looked at him shocked by his statement.... She swallowed hard and Ray smirked

Ray: fuck im gonna enjoy this

Mbali swallowed hard again then Ray kissed her again and as soon as she got in the mood he left her lips and he kissed her going down on her with Mbali moaning loud while grabbing the bed sheets he kissed and gently bites both her inner thighs. And when he got to her nana he blew cold air on it and he licked it with Mbali moaning out loud then he gently sucked on her pussy lips and that made Mbali to lose it he would leave the other one and suck on the another one gently for some time then he would stop and lick her nana again and blew cold air again. He then started sucking on her clit gently while his hands were holding his waist tight stopping her from jerking up and down he would bite gently and suck making Mbali to lose her mind. Then she felt his tongue pushing it on her entrance and she just lost it she grabbed the sheets tight moaning out loud as she felt extreme pleasure take over Ray did things to her pussy that made her come hard on his face and he licked her clean and he went to her face and she had her eyes closed with her lips patted a bit while she breathed heavily

Ray: look at me my flower

she slowly opened her eyes and looked at him

Mbali: what... what did you do to me?

he smirked and kissed her lips

Ray: I just simply took you to muff town my flower and now im about to take you to paradise

Mbali: huh?

he just kissed her making her taste herself while rubbing her clit..... all this time Ray was still dressed in his jeans. After some time of kissing hungrily he pulled out of the kiss and he got off the bed and took off his jean and when Mbali saw the bulge of his erect dick printed on his now wet briefs she froze and when he took off his briefs she swallowed hard with her heart pounding hard against her chest with her eyes popped out

Ray: you look scared my flower

he said that while jerking his huge and hard anaconda up and down with a smirk on his face

Mbali: i.... maybe we shouldn't..... I mean i...

she stammered and Ray got on top of the bed between her legs and he rubbed her pussy entrance with the tip of his dick and she moaned out loud

Ray: are you on any contraceptives my flower

Mbali: ummm ye....yeah....injection

Ray: good cause I wanna have you raw don't worry im clean and I hope you clean too

she just nodded that's all she could do she was at his mercy and there was nothing she could do she wanted to tell him she cant do this but it was like something inside of her stops her every time and her seeing the size of his dick wasn't helping... he then smashed his lips on hers and they kissed hungrily he then tried to push himself in but she was just too tight he tried two times and he couldn't get in so he resorted to fingering her for some time with her moaning out loud then out of the blue he stopped and he pushed himself in and Mbali shut her eyes tight as she felt some pain when her walls expanded.... Ray groaned and cursed when he felt her warmth and tightness around his shaft

Ray: fuck..... you are tight my flower

***he said that and started moving slow and he groaned from deep down his throat ***

Ray: look at me my flower please

***he begged her and she did and he kissed her lips while moving slowly and she moaned when he went deeper she dug her nails on his back as he moved at a slow pace but deeper. He was groaning from deep down his throat he then pulled her right leg up and he went in and out of her increasing his pace a bit she was moaning out loud..... He increased his pace going in and out of her fast and she screamed out loud as felt extreme pleasure kicking in as for Ray he was in his own world. He went faster and faster and Mbali screamed out loud ray's name as an orgasm hit her out of the blue

and well Ray stopped and pulled out then he got out of bed and pulled Mbali to the edge of the bed and he got between her legs and spread them wide and he entered her again and a loud groan escaped his mouth while Mbali just gasped her body was numb from that orgasm that hit her but when Ray started moving again her body came back to life..... All this things she was feeling were foreign to her cause she has never experienced any of them when she was with Kyle the way he held her and the way he moved his waist and the size of his dick just drove her crazy by now Ray was fucking her senselessly while holding her waist tight he was going so deep that she felt like his shaft was poking her womb. He was going so fast that Mbali would lose her breath every now and then and when she caught it she would scream out loud and the slapping of their bodies and Ray's loud groans was just out of this world. Well a second orgasm hit her and her whole body shook and her toes curled up and she screamed out loud his name and Ray stopped moving with sweat dripping from his body he pulled out and he pushed the mattress off the base a bit and made her kneel on the base of the bed and he spread her legs apart and he slammed into her and started moving by going faster and faster making Mbali to lose her breath. His grip on her waist was getting tighter and tighter as he fucked her hard***

Mbali: goshhhhhh Rayyyyyyy

*** she screamed out loud when another orgasm hit her and Ray this time fucked her through it as he felt his build up***

Ray: SHIT..... FUCKKKKKK

**** he said that getting nearer to the finishing line and he just fucked her hard and way faster and he quickly pulled out ***

Ray: FUCCCCCKKKKK!

**** he cursed with his deep voice as he shot his cum on her back then he cursed again and gasped for air for some time then he stood there for some time trying to catch his breath with his knees shaking then he pulled out***

Ray: don't move ok im coming

he said to Mbali and she nodded then he went to the bathroom and he came back with a wet towel and he cleaned himself and Mbali's back and her nana too and she got off the base and she balance herself with the side drawer as her knees were failing her and after Ray was done they got into bed and Ray pulled her to lay on top of him with both their hearts beating too fast

Ray: are you ok my mamiwota

*** Mbali laughed a bit with a tired voice then she nodded***

Ray: I hope I didn't hurt you

she shook her head no but yho her pussy was on fire it was burning

Ray: you sure?

he asked her then she sighed

Mbali: my nana is burning up

Ray: nana?

he asked with an amused voice and Mbali giggled

Mbali: yeah I mean pussy

Ray: mmmh well I told you you were about to lose your virginity for real today

she giggled

Mbali: "just ray"

Ray: mara mma? (beautiful?)

she giggled again

Mbali: why did you.... You know I mean it was our first date so I thought maybe we will get to know each other first but we...you know

ray chuckled then he cleared his throat

Ray: well do you regret what just happened

Mbali: umm no I don't

*** then he flipped them over and he was on top looking down on her***

Ray: well im glad and to answer your kinda confusing question or rather your kinda confusing statement.....well my flower this is me meaning im a different breed all together I don't do things like ordinary men do im me and I do things my way when I want to do them and whenever I wanna do them

she swallowed looking at him

Ray: so you my flower you need to keep up cause firstly I love sex and now I think im addicted to your "nana" and secondly like I told you I hate sharing and you don't even wanna know what I'd do to you if you were to give another nigga what's mine

she swallowed hard cause he said that with a smile on his face but the tone of his voice was scary

Ray: look I've never been in a committed relationship before in fact I never thought I'd be in one ever but now here I am now so be you and never change yourself for me cause I think I prefer this you let me just say you are a fresh of breath air but one thing you should never do is to cheat on me my flower cause you'll regret it ok

she nodded right after swallowing again

Mbali: and I hope you won't cheat on me too cause I can go crazy if I want to remember the same blood that runs through my brothers veins also run through my own veins too so I can go savage if Im pushed

Ray smiled wide at that impressed by her then he kissed her lips

Ray: mmmmh I like that

she smiled a bit

Ray: another thing I hope you'll never run away or give up on us when your family learns about us

he asked her with a raised eyebrow and she sighed

Mbali: konje there's still that

Ray: yeah so?

Mbali: well know that im not gonna run or give up but I'll probably pee on myself when my brother smiso learns of us

Ray: scared of him?

she nodded

Ray: mmmmh so do you promise

she nodded

Ray: I want you to say it my flower

she sighed

Mbali: I promise

Ray: good and stop calling me "just Ray"

*** she giggled***

Mbali: ok so what would you like me to call you?

Ray: Eze m

Mbali: ohk so what does it mean?

he perked her lips and smiled

Ray: my king

she smiled wide

Mbali: wow ok Eze m

Ray chuckled and Mbali giggled

Ray: and as for me besides calling you my flower I'll also call you Eze nke obi m

Mbali: wow ummm what does it mean though?

Ray looked at her with a serious look

Ray: queen of my heart

she swallowed and blushed looking away

Ray: look at me my flower

*** and she did***

Ray: look I know im way older than you but know that im young at heart and I'll try to be romantic like all those small boys are you are now my priority Mbali and I just marked you by hitting it raw which is something I've never done before with any other woman so promise me that you'll hold on and never let go

she swallowed and nodded

Mbali: I promise Eze m (my king)

Ray smiled

Ray: good and we will go get tested next week Monday cause im never using a rubber with you

he said that and got between her legs and they started kissing until Mbali pulled out of the kiss

Mbali: im sore down there Ray

Ray: I'll be gentle my flower I promise

he said that entering her slowly and she closed her eyes shut as she felt a bit of pain but when he started moving she started moaning and he smirked and smashed his lips on hers they kissed passionately as he moved in and out of her slowly yho the pleasure she was feeling was just out of this world even with Kyle she has never felt anything close to this. The way he holds and squeezes her body drove her absolutely crazy and not to mention the way he moves his waist when he goes in and out of her it was clear that he knows how to please a woman in bed. Anyway they made slow passionate love and they both came at the same time and this time he came inside of her

Ray: remind me to get you morning after pills in the morning just to be on the safe side ok

***she nodded and he kissed her forehead and pulled out slowly and he went down to her nana and he kissed it ***

Ray: now let me go prepare us a bath then we will go eat alright

she nodded and he went up to her face and perked her lips and got out of bed naked and he went to the en-suite *

.
. .

****HEATH****

*** fuck I feel like shit now cause obim is distance when we got home and she just asked me to fetch the kids and she went upstairs to our bedroom and she has been napping ever since. i know I didn't

cheat but she shouldn't have walked in on that I mean she's been through hell and I promised I'll never hurt her and now I just did unintentionally but I know I'll make things right cause I don't think I'll cope with her being distant cause her attention and smile are my daily source of energy so I need to make her happy again and also reassure her that her heart is safe with me. Anyway earlier I called some dude who owes me a favor he owns an advertising company so I want him to hire Jolene in his marketing department since she studied marketing in college and he agreed to hire her since there was already an opening and I also called HR in my company and told them to send me top five candidates who qualify to fill in as my new PA and that they should be male preferably gay and I'll have to interview them for me or we will do that together. I know Jolene is gonna get hurt when I let her go but my wife comes first so she's gonna have to be strong at least I got her another job so not all will be lost for her. Well now I'm sitting in my study lost in my thoughts I'm trying to find a way around Lesedi's issue I mean I can't let that dickhead pay damages money for my daughter never! Lesedi is mine she might not have my blood flowing through her tiny veins but she has Naledi's blood and whatever belongs to Obim also belongs to me so she's also mine. Anyway I decided to call my gran cause I believe she's the only one who can give me a sound advice about this it rang twice and she answered***

Gogo: shaka my baby how are you

*** I smiled wide God I love and appreciate this old woman***

Me: my love I'm good and you?

Gogo: hai man stop lying to me shaka what's wrong?

*** I sighed loudly***

Me: Naledi is mad at me in fact she's hurt gogo

Gogo: what did you do?

Me: she.... She found me comforting my colleague or rather my PA it was a harmless hug but I get why she's hurt cause I would have probably landed the guy in ICU if I were in her shoes

Gogo: well I'm glad you can put yourself in her shoes cause it means you will never do what you did again and also you know what to do to make her forgive you right?

*** I sighed***

Me: yeah gogo

Gogo: good now what is really troubling you shaka

you know sometimes I forget that she's a seer

Me: Lesedi's biological father is the problem gogo he just came out of nowhere and now he wants to have a relationship with her after hurting Naledi like he did and abandoning her when she needed

him the most i..... I just want an advice on how to handle the issue gogo cause what I have in mind with lead to a blood bath between him and i

she sighed

Gogo: shaka listen to me carefully what you need to do is to put lesedi's interest first and on this instance her health is at stake

Me: what do you mean gogo

Gogo: you need to make sure Lesedi is introduced to her biological father's ancestors for them to know her and protect her

Me: but gogo.....

she interrupted me

Gogo: no shaka she needs to be introduced to them don't get me wrong im not saying give Lesedi to him all im saying is Lesedi needs to be introduced to her father's ancestors and the good part of all this is since you are married to naledi then he can communicate directly to you so you have the upper hand

I swallowed hard because of that "married to naledi " part

Me: ummmm how did.....

*** she interrupted me again***

Gogo: we will talk about that some other time when I'll pinch those big ears of yours for doing things behind our backs but for now you need to deal with lesedi's issue in the right way

Me: ummm ok

Gogo: shaka you better stay away from that girl that you were comforting she's one of those obstacles I told you about

Me: yeah I already figured that out gogo

Gogo: good and my boy never trust lesedi's father with naledi cause as much as naledi despises him but now that he knows her worth now and the fact that she's a rare precious jewel and he will try his luck with her

Me: if he knows what's good for him then he better stay away from naledi gogo

I said that with an angry voice I felt myself worked up with what she just said I swear someone will die first before I lose obim

Gogo: calm down shaka remember naledi is yours and only you can make her leave you

Me: huh?

Gogo: look I have to go you know what to do now do it cautiously and remember he may have gotten naledi pregnant with lesedi but you are her father and nothing is gonna change that..... Bye my son

she just did that “changing topic” thing of hers

Me: ok bye gogo

we ended the call well what she said before changing the topic hit home but I guess she’s right only I can make naledi to leave me so I need to pull myself together and do right by her and to never entertain other woman no matter how innocent our encounter is anyway I went through my contacts on my phone and I called the numbers that i saved as “dickhead” and he answered on the third ring

Kitso: hello

Me: yah its naledi’s husband can you talk

Kitso: naledi’s what?

Me: dude if you are slow in the head just let me know so I can send you a message instead and you’ll keep on reading it over and over until you understand it

Kitso: don’t fucken insult me you bastard

I chuckled

Me: ok then slow learner listen carefully if you are serious about doing that fucken ceremony for my princess Lesedi then you will communicate with me about everything and not naledi

he chuckled

Kitso: wa gafa (you are mad) naledi and I share a baby together so I have nothing to fucken discuss with you

Me: ooh is it which baby are you talking about is it the one you told her to abort or is there another one I don’t know about

***I could hear him breathing hard nx ***

Kitso: look I don’t give a fuck who you are but naledi is my baby mama and I’ll communicate with her with regards to our daughter and not with you

Me: well boy guess what naledi is my wife and Lesedi’s surname on her birth certificate is my own meaning im her father now if you want to have a relationship with her then you’d better abide by my rules or fuck off

Kitso: what...what do you mean naledi is your wife her mother never said anything about her being married

Me: well they disowned her when her uncle almost raped her so they weren’t invited

Kitso: wha...what?

Me: well look im prepared to be civil with you for my princesses’ sake so if you overstep your boundaries even by an inch you are dead capish?

Kitso: are you threatening me man

Me: I don't do threats boy I'm merely promising you that if you come after my wife then consider yourself dead....you can save this numbers and contact me using them

***then I dropped the call and sighed heavily this nigga better stay in his lane or he's dead....

Anyway I checked my watch and I had 30 minutes before I have to go and pick my princesses up so I went out of my study room and I heard some noise in the kitchen and I went there and I found obi busy chopping some vegetables***

Me: hey

***she looked up and our eyes locked and she quickly looked down ***

Naledi: hey

she continued chopping and I went closer to her and snaked my arm around her waist and I turned her around to face me and cupped her face

Me: I love you obi m

she sighed

Naledi: I love you too heath

*** she said that and I smiled but the sadness in her eyes broke my heart***

Me: so am I forgiven obi m

she nodded looking away

Me: look at me

she did and I perked her lips

Me: never again ok never again..... now I know that if I were in your shoes someone would have lost his teeth or even end up in ICU if not dead so im sorry obi m

she sighed

Naledi: its ok heath I know you are sorry and I have forgiven you

Me: then prove it prove that you have forgiven me

she raised her eyebrow... fuck she looked cute doing that and I just found myself smiling like a retard while looking at her

Naledi: how should I prove it to you mmmh?

Me: go out to dinner with me tonight I'll have jabu look after our princesses

she bit her bottom lip

Naledi: ohk

*** and I just smashed my lips on hers and we kissed passionately..... well I know she forgave me but I also know that she doubts my love for her and I don't blame her after all she's been through she shouldn't have walked in on me holding another woman like that but I'll prove it to her that her heart is safe with me***

.
. .

**** Narrated****

*** Ray and Mbali were now in the lounge and they just finished eating and Mbali was laying on top of Ray wearing only his shirt and Ray was laying on the couch on his back he was busy brushing her hair gently while they watched a movie.... Then Ray's phone rang and it was Mateo so he answered***

Ray: Mat

Mateo: jefe you need to get out of there now..... princesses' brother just parked in the parking lot there

Ray: what?

he said that with a frown on his face

Mateo: yes jefe now you need to leave that apartment as in now cause he can't know you are seeing her younger sister before they help release our containers

Ray: yeah you are right where is he now?

Mateo: he's walking towards the building

Ray: ok

then he dropped the call and quickly but gently got Mbali off him and he cupped her face

Ray: listen and listen good my flower you brother is downstairs coming up here

Mbali: wha...what?

she said with her eyes popped out and fear written all over her face

Ray: now listen to me I want you to put on your best act for him im going outside so he doesn't find me here now go change out of my shirt and wear something else and my flower you better make sure you don't leave with him cause you are sleeping over now show daddy what you are made of

*** he then kissed her lips for some time and he rushed to the bedroom and he wore a shirt and hid his bag and he wore his shoes took his phone car keys and wallet and he walked out going to the opposite direction from where the lift was as for Mbali well she got hold of herself and limped to the bedroom and quickly changed as she remembered telling her brother that she's going to a slumber party and she tried to walk normally as she walked back to the lounge and she got rid of the beer bottle ray was drinking from and she cleared the plates and almost immediately she heard a knock on the door and her heart started beating fast with her hands shaking***

Mbali: ooh shit Mbali.... You can do this I know you can

she said that to herself and she swallowed hard

27

INSERT.....27

.
. .
. .

MBALI

I walked to the door and I took deep breath and opened the door and when my eyes landed on which of my brothers was here I just froze with fear

Me: "ooh God not him please God not him maybe im dreaming and he's not here"

I thought to myself with my heart beating out of my chest I swear im gonna pass out any minute now

Me: bh...bhut smiso

Smiso: my princess can I come in

Gosh he wasn't even smiling..... I just bit my lower lip to prevent it from trembling with fear ooh Lord im scared I think im gonna pee on myself....yho now I regret being here....God I shouldn't have come why did I come konje...anyway I made a way from him and he walked in with his dark aura all over him and I swallowed hard and he walked around in the lounge

Smiso: mmmh it doesn't look like a slumber party is held here maybe nhlaka was wrong he didn't hear you correctly.... And this apartment doesn't look like a young lady lives in it but rather a man

he said that checking out the apartment in the lounge and he turned to look at me and his look....Jesus..... I don't know what happened but I found myself feeling dizzy and I held my head and soon I saw myself going down and it was lights out

.
. .
. .

*** I woke up when I felt what felt like some drops of liquid falling on my face and I slowly opened my eyes and blinked a few times and when I looked on my left side I found him sitting on top of the table looking at me with a serious look and I swallowed hard.... "Gosh Mbali get a grip on yourself he's your brother for God's sake" I thought to myself***

Smiso: sit up

he said with a firm tone and I swallowed again and slowly sat up and I fiddled with my fingers looking down

Smiso: guess what I went to buy my wife her hot wings at KFC and I saw that girl that is your best friend.... What's her name..... Phumzile or Phindile

*** nx that backstabbing bitch I wonder what she said to him....ooh God ***

Smiso: and well she came to me and asked about you and she said she hasn't seen you in a while since you started dating

I clenched my jaws that fucken bitch nx

Smiso: and guess what again she didn't know about any slumber party and any of your friends also didn't say anything about it so Mbali what the hell is going on I want the truth now before I get mad

God why my bottom lip was trembling so was my hands the thing is I started getting really scared of bhut smiso one time when all my brother's wives and their kids with me included we were kidnapped four years back by some guy who called himself psych or psycho when they finally found us and budged in the warehouse we were held in just as one of psych's guards was trying to force himself on aunt nomhle while other two guards were there cheering him on I remember hearing shots being fired and we covered the kids so they don't see all that but I forgot to also close my eyes and I regretted not doing so I remember seeing bhut smiso rushing to the guard that wanted to rape aunt nomhle and he grabbed him by his throat and he ripped his throat off (yeah he did) and blood oozed from the guy's neck and he snapped his neck and tossed him on the floor and I just passed out right then and there. He looked scary and even though they found a therapist for me to speak to about the trauma I experience and even took a trip for two days with just me and him so we can talk about what I saw well the thing is im still scared of him but that only happens when he's angry or pissed off. When he's happy and jolly im not scared of him in fact he's funny and fun to be around but when he starts getting angry yeses all that fear comes rushing down to me like a tornado.....look I know he can never hurt me but that day he looked scary people and that image I saw that day will forever be imprinted in my mind. Anyway here goes nothing.....*

Me: bh...bhutiPhindile and I are no longer friends she..... ummm that guy I was dating and you said I should stay away from well the thing is even though I went to him after that hijacking attempt well we had broken up cause I found out that he was sleeping with Phindile and that she's pregnant with his child

he didn't say anything he just looked at me.... I guess he wants me to continue.... Lord help me

Me: she wasn't invited to the party cause our friends know about what she did

Smiso: then where are your friends

Me: to...to buy drinks and snacks

Smiso: Mbali

Me: bhuti

Smiso: when you look at me do you see a fool

I swallowed hard

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then why are you lying to me

tears streamed down my cheeks maybe my tears will make him stop interrogating me

Me: im not bhuti

Smiso: mmmmh ok now tell me why does a bag with man's clothes doing in the main bedroom's closet and that love bite on your neck what is it doing there and don't tell me you were bit by a mosquito not forgetting those beer bottles in the fridge and the empty beer bottle in the trash bin that smells like it was opened and drank a few minutes ago ooh and not to mention that man's shirt in the closet that has your scent all over it and a man's perfume too

can I just die already.... I just cried... Gosh im dead

Smiso: so you have the guts to lie to nhlaka through your teeth now Mbali

Me: im sorry bhuti

Smiso: who is he?

I just continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you who he is damn it!

he raised his voice and I jumped from my sit and continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you a question mbali

Me: it's..... It's some guy from varsity bhuti

I lied

Smiso: so you move from one guy to another now Mbali within a short period of time mmmmh? is that who you have become now is that how you were raised!

he said shouting a bit and I just cried out loud

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then what is it

Me: im sorry bhuti

I was crying hysterically now

Smiso: didn't we agree that if you give us a degree we will back down a bit and let you live your life the way you see fit

Me: you did bhuti

Smiso: now what's all this why are you jumping from one guy to another like it's a new fashion trend and you even have the guts to lie to us

***I just cried I was standing at the far corner by now ***

Smiso: are you even still pure Mbali

*** he asked with his eyes squinted and I didn't answer him I just cried and he just shook his head disappointed and he stood up***

Smiso: now go and take your bag we are leaving

Me: bhuti please i.... the.... The pyjama party

yho Ray said I shouldn't leave for God's sake

Smiso: so you still have a mouth to talk about your fake pyjama party heh?

I shook my head no quickly..... Gosh I can't believe he saw right through me

Smiso: now go in there and take your bag and let go

*** he said with an angry voice and I tried by all mean to walk properly going to the bedroom and I took my bag and packed my things I even put Ray's shirt inside my bag and I also took my car keys and I went to the lounge and took my phone and we walked out.....I locked the door and put the key under a flower pot that is next to the door and I walked behind him trying so much to walk properly my nana was sore people..... We got in the lift and it stopped on the ground floor and we walked out and he walked to his car while I walked to mine but he stopped me***

Smiso: where do you think you're going?

his voice startled me and I quickly turned looking at him

Me: to...to my car

Smiso: give me your car keys

I did

Smiso: let's go someone will bring your car to your place

I nodded and we went to his car and got in then we drove out of the complex.....i saw that my phone was off even though I don't remember switching it off anyway I switched it on and send Ray a message telling him that im sorry but my brother saw right through me but I didn't gave up his name and that he's taking me back home I waited for his reply until we got to my place but dololo....i swear that hurt

.
. .
. .

**** NARRATED****

*** they went up to her apartment and as soon as they got in Mbali rushed to her bedroom and she just threw herself on top of the bed and she just cried the disappointment on his brother's face is what got to her more than his anger..... then the door opened and smiso walked in and he sat on the edge of the bed***

Smiso: sit up I wanna talk to you

*** she did.....her face was pink and her eyes were swollen and red ***

Smiso: look I know you are growing up and that you feel like we are suffocating you most of the time and being unfair to you but it comes from a good place..... princess by now im sure you can tell that we live dangerous lives and we have enemies out there the purpose of knowing your whereabouts is to make sure you are safe all the time and with that attempted hijacking that happened we know we slacked cause we didn't know about it until the next day so that's why we are being hands on now cause uncle Ty trusts that we will make sure you are safe at all times

he sighed

Smiso: you are a khumalo princess and you have crazy brothers so lying to us makes us lose trust in you and believe me if the others learn about your recent stunt they will make sure you go back to KZN and travel from home to varsity every day and believe me that's worse than us keeping tabs on you while you're here cause you'll have MA and baba on your neck everyday

she swallowed hard

Smiso: so do yourself a favour and stop lying to us and focus on giving us that degree ok

she nodded and he sighed

Smiso: I won't tell your other crazy brothers about your recent shenanigans especially nhlaka and Jay and I hope I won't regret my decision

Mbali: you won't thank you bhuti

***she said that with a low voice.....she hated disappointing her brothers especially her dad grandparents and nhlaka ***

Smiso: now do me a favour

Mbali: ok

Smiso: never attempt to lie to me ever again cause I won't be this nice next time

she nodded quickly

Smiso: and stay away from fuckboys your best friend and boyfriend betrayed you now you should be healing from that and not jumping to another fuckboy cause that makes you seem loose and unlady like cause my princess is a lady and she knows her worth

*** she swallowed hard and nodded.... Well that hit home cause it was the truth she just jumped from one dick to another just like that***

Smiso: now pull yourself together and stop crying you'll have a headache

she wiped her tears off

Smiso: now come and lock up I need to go home before your aunt skins me alive for taking long with her hot wings

she smiled a bit and got out of bed and walked after him making sure she doesn't limp and he opened the door and turned to look at her

Smiso: I can't believe you fainted like that

he said that with a smirk and one eyebrow raised and Mbali sighed relieved that at least he's smirking

Smiso: no more lies ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Smiso: you'll get your car later today ok

Mbali: ok bhuti

Smiso: and I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

he kissed her forehead again and he walked away and she closed the door and slid down on it and she hugged her knees as tears ran down her cheeks

.
. .

*** At Kitso's house he was sitting in his lounge lost in thoughts he was angry because of the talk he had with heath it still wouldn't register to him that naledi was married and his daughter uses another man's last name. He felt like shit in fact he felt like a failure if only he didn't abandon naledi when she was pregnant and she and his daughter would be in his life now. The fact that he can't get close to naledi now broke his heart because he wanted her and Lesedi back into his life that he even filed for divorce and even kicked the wife out. Well his phone rang and it was his father***

Kitso: thaima (father)

Tsietsi: my boy I got your message I was in a meeting that's why I couldn't answer your calls

Kitso: its ok

then he sighed

Tsietsi: so he said you should only communicate with him and not with naledi with regards to Lesedi

Kitso: yes but im never doing that never!

Tsietsi: but kitso you should be grateful that they even let you be part of lesedi's life

Kitso: thaima Lesedi is my daughter and naledi is her mother so that moeskond can't tell me shit

Tsietsi: kitso look you....

he interrupted him

Kitso: no thaima naledi and Lesedi belong with me and we gonna be a family one day I don't care if she's married to him but divorces happen you know look I know I messed up big time and she probably hates me but I won't rest until I right my wrongs with her I'll have my family back together just wait and see

his father sighed

Tsietsi: kitso they just let you have a relationship with Lesedi just focus on building a strong relationship with your daughter man and let that nonsense go

Kitso: well dad naledi and Lesedi are a package I can't have one without the other

Tsietsi: KITSO STOP WITH THIS MADNESS NOW FOCUS ON YOUR DAUGHTER AND LEAVE NALEDI ALONE

Kitso: I know she still loves me thaima I just need to remind her of how we were before I messed up and maybe she might give me a chance cause I still love her thaima..... I was a fool but now im grown and wise I need her in my life

Tsietsi: you know you sound crazy right

Kitso: crazily in love with her yeah..... thaima you know I always go after what I want and now naledi and my daughter are what I want and need to have in my life for now and forever ever since I abandoned her nothing works out for me even my business has gone down and if it wasn't for you I don't know what I would have done

his father sighed cause he could tell what kind of path kitso was taking now

Tsietsi: kitso think carefully about what you are about to do

Kitso: thaima I was once blind but now I see clearly naledi and Lesedi belong with me and I'll make her forgive me and we will be a family like we were supposed to be before I messed up

***his father just sighed heavily defeated cause he knows how stubborn and hard headed he is ***

.
. .

*** Back at mbali's apartment she was now asleep when she heard a knock on the door and she got up and limped to the door ***

Mbali: who is it

Voice: open up my flower

she swallowed hard and opened the door and he was standing there with frown on his face but when she saw her pink face and swollen eyes his facial expression softened

Ray: my flower

she walked inside and went to sit down and ray got in and he closed the door and went to her and sat next to her

Ray: my flower what's wrong.... What happened?

she didn't say anything

Ray: mbali

Mbali: he saw right through me im a bad liar Ray and he's good at reading people and finding out things

Ray sighed

Ray: it's ok come here

she shook her head no

Mbali: I can't.... I can't do this Ray I know I promised to hold on but I can't keep disappointing my brother's like this and I have a feeling that im gonna keep disappointing them if we continue with this

Ray clenched his jaw looking at her he knew she was gonna crack and want to give up but not this quick

Ray: mbali

she didn't say anything

Ray: I said come here

she got closer to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap and he looked at her

Ray: you break promises now

she just looked away

Ray: mbali

Mbali: mmmmh

Ray: kiss me

she looked at him surprised

Ray: I said kiss me

she looked down and bit her lower lip

Ray: mbali I said kiss me!

he said with firm voice and she swallowed and brought her face closer to his and perked his lips

Ray: I said kiss me not perk my lips

she got closer and kissed him and Ray kiss her back the kiss went on and on until Mbali felt Ray's dick growing under her and she pulled out of the kiss

Ray: never try that shit again you hear me

***she looked at him ***

Mbali: but ray?

he interrupted her

Ray: or what? you want me to take you to the bedroom and fuck you until you pass out for trying to break up with me

***she swallowed and shook her head no when she thought of how sore her pussy is ***

Ray: now never do that shit again you hear me

she sighed and nodded

Mbali: im sorry I just....i feel bad that im caught and my brother said something to me which hit home cause it was the truth

Ray: what did he say?

Mbali: that I shouldn't have had a new boyfriend before healing from my heart break with Kyle

she half told him the truth about what he said

Ray: well I don't do that 90 day shit rule or take a girl out to 50 dates first before I hit it because I believe if a guy only wants sex from you and not interested I having a relationship with you then he will go to those 50 dates with you and pretend to like you then ditch you after getting the cookie

Mbali: ooh

Ray: yeah and im older than you so you should listen to me cause im wiser

he said with a smirk and Mbali lazy smiled

Ray: so my flower even if we waited to make love or you told me you not ready and you prefer us to be friends first until you heal from your heart break well I was still gonna hit it raw and claim you as mine and also get hooked on your nana and still want to wife you after your graduation

*** her eyes popped out***

Mbali: you want to..... wife me

he kissed her cheek

Ray: yeah and have 5 kids together

Mbali: ummm wow

Ray: mmmmh in other words what im really trying to say to you my flower is that I love you

*** she smiled then bit her lower lip***

Mbali: you...you do

Ray: yeah my flower and I can't help it

she smiled wide cause when someone says you are his it's one thing but for that person to say he loves you it's something else altogether

Ray: and also thank you for not telling your brother my name it clearly proves that you are loyal to me and my flower your loyalty to me is greatly appreciated cause loyalty means everything to me

Mbali: but im scared Eze m what happened just proves that they'll never accept our relationship

she said with a worried tone and he turned her face and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry yourself my flower they will

Mbali: you don't know them Eze m they are....

he interrupted her by perking her lips

Ray: do you trust me

she sighed and nodded

Ray: you know I want you to say it

Mbali: I do

Ray: good then trust what im saying..... your brothers will accept our relationship when the time is right ok

***she sighed again and nodded and he kissed her lips ***

Ray: you know when I came here I was mad that you left with your brother even though I specifically told you not to but when I saw your face I don't know what happened to me if he wasn't your brother he would be counting his teeth on the ground by now

she smiled and just rested her head on his shoulder and he held her tight

Ray: im sorry I put you in that position my flower I just didn't want you to be banned from seeing me on the day we made our relationship formal

Mbali: I was scared Ray I even fainted when I saw that it was bhut smiso and not bhut nhlaka

he pushed her off him gently

Ray: you fainted?

he asked with a frown on his face and she nodded

Ray: you really are scared of him abi

she nodded and he sighed and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry you'll ever find yourself in that position alone ever again ok

Mbali: ok

he kissed her lips again

Ray: let's go to the bedroom so you can lay down im sure you have a headache with the way your eyes are swollen

Mbali: ok

***he stood up with her in his arms and they went to the bedroom..... well he knew mbali's brothers were tracking her every move and he knew about the tracker on her car and the one that is on her

phone and he switched off her phone cause he knew they won't be able to track it but the fact that her brother still knew which apartment she was in it meant she has a tracker chip in her body like he suspected she has but one thing for sure is he knew that no one will separate them ever including her brothers and father even her mighty grandfather..... he just won't let it happen not when he has already marked her***

28

INSERT.....28

.
. .
. .

MBALI

I walked to the door and I took deep breath and opened the door and when my eyes landed on which of my brothers was here I just froze with fear

Me: "ooh God not him please God not him maybe im dreaming and he's not here"

I thought to myself with my heart beating out of my chest I swear im gonna pass out any minute now

Me: bh....bhut smiso

Smiso: my princess can I come in

Gosh he wasn't even smiling..... I just bit my lower lip to prevent it from trembling with fear ooh Lord im scared I think im gonna pee on myself....yho now I regret being here....God I shouldn't have come why did I come konje...anyway I made a way from him and he walked in with his dark aura all over him and I swallowed hard and he walked around in the lounge

Smiso: mmmmh it doesn't look like a slumber party is held here maybe nhlaka was wrong he didn't hear you correctly.... And this apartment doesn't look like a young lady lives in it but rather a man

he said that checking out the apartment in the lounge and he turned to look at me and his look....Jesus..... I don't know what happened but I found myself feeling dizzy and I held my head and soon I saw myself going down and it was lights out

.
. .
. .

*** I woke up when I felt what felt like some drops of liquid falling on my face and I slowly opened my eyes and blinked a few times and when I looked on my left side I found him sitting on top of the table

looking at me with a serious look and I swallowed hard.... "Gosh Mbali get a grip on yourself he's your brother for God's sake" I thought to myself***

Smiso: sit up

he said with a firm tone and I swallowed again and slowly sat up and I fiddled with my fingers looking down

Smiso: guess what I went to buy my wife her hot wings at KFC and I saw that girl that is your best friend.... What's her name..... Phumzile or Phindile

*** nx that backstabbing bitch I wonder what she said to him....ooh God ***

Smiso: and well she came to me and asked about you and she said she hasn't seen you in a while since you started dating

I clenched my jaws that fucken bitch nx

Smiso: and guess what again she didn't know about any slumber party and any of your friends also didn't say anything about it so Mbali what the hell is going on I want the truth now before I get mad

God why my bottom lip was trembling so was my hands the thing is I started getting really scared of bhut smiso one time when all my brother's wives and their kids with me included we were kidnapped four years back by some guy who called himself psych or psycho when they finally found us and budged in the warehouse we were held in just as one of psych's guards was trying to force himself on aunt nomhle while other two guards where there cheering him on I remember hearing shots being fired and we covered the kids so they don't see all that but I forgot to also close my eyes and I regretted not doing so I remember seeing bhut smiso rushing to the guard that wanted to rape aunt nomhle and he grabbed him by his throat and he ripped his throat off (yeah he did) and blood oozed from the guy's neck and he snapped his neck and tossed him on the floor and I just passed out right then and there. He looked scary and even though they found a therapist for me to speak to about the trauma I experience and even took a trip for two days with just me and him so we can talk about what I saw well the thing is im still scared of him but that only happens when he's angry or pissed off. When he's happy and jolly im not scared of him in fact he's funny and fun to be around but when he starts getting angry yeses all that fear comes rushing down to me like a tornado.....look I know he can never hurt me but that day he looked scary people and that image I saw that day will forever be imprinted in my mind. Anyway here goes nothing.....*

Me: bh...bhutiPhindile and I are no longer friends she..... ummm that guy I was dating and you said I should stay away from well the thing is even though I went to him after that hijacking attempt well we had broken up cause I found out that he was sleeping with Phindile and that she's pregnant with his child

he didn't say anything he just looked at me.... I guess he wants me to continue.... Lord help me

Me: she wasn't invited to the party cause our friends know about what she did

Smiso: then where are your friends

Me: to...to buy drinks and snacks

Smiso: Mbali

Me: bhuti

Smiso: when you look at me do you see a fool

I swallowed hard

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then why are you lying to me

tears streamed down my cheeks maybe my tears will make him stop interrogating me

Me: im not bhuti

Smiso: mmmmh ok now tell me why does a bag with man's clothes doing in the main bedroom's closet and that love bite on your neck what is it doing there and don't tell me you were bit by a mosquito not forgetting those beer bottles in the fridge and the empty beer bottle in the trash bin that smells like it was opened and drank a few minutes ago ooh and not to mention that man's shirt in the closet that has your scent all over it and a man's perfume too

can I just die already.... I just cried... Gosh im dead

Smiso: so you have the guts to lie to nhlaka through your teeth now Mbali

Me: im sorry bhuti

Smiso: who is he?

I just continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you who he is damn it!

he raised his voice and I jumped from my sit and continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you a question mbali

Me: it's..... It's some guy from varsity bhuti

I lied

Smiso: so you move from one guy to another now Mbali within a short period of time mmmmh? is that who you have become now is that how you were raised!

he said shouting a bit and I just cried out loud

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then what is it

Me: im sorry bhuti

I was crying hysterically now

Smiso: didn't we agree that if you give us a degree we will back down a bit and let you live your life the way you see fit

Me: you did bhuti

Smiso: now what's all this why are you jumping from one guy to another like it's a new fashion trend and you even have the guts to lie to us

***I just cried I was standing at the far corner by now ***

Smiso: are you even still pure Mbali

*** he asked with his eyes squinted and I didn't answer him I just cried and he just shook his head disappointed and he stood up***

Smiso: now go and take your bag we are leaving

Me: bhuti please i.... the.... The pyjama party

yho Ray said I shouldn't leave for God's sake

Smiso: so you still have a mouth to talk about your fake pyjama party heh?

I shook my head no quickly..... Gosh I can't believe he saw right through me

Smiso: now go in there and take your bag and let go

*** he said with an angry voice and I tried by all mean to walk properly going to the bedroom and I took my bag and packed my things I even put Ray's shirt inside my bag and I also took my car keys and I went to the lounge and took my phone and we walked out.....I locked the door and put the key under a flower pot that is next to the door and I walked behind him trying so much to walk properly my nana was sore people..... We got in the lift and it stopped on the ground floor and we walked out and he walked to his car while I walked to mine but he stopped me***

Smiso: where do you think you're going?

his voice startled me and I quickly turned looking at him

Me: to...to my car

Smiso: give me your car keys

I did

Smiso: let's go someone will bring your car to your place

I nodded and we went to his car and got in then we drove out of the complex.....i saw that my phone was off even though I don't remember switching it off anyway I switched it on and send Ray a message telling him that im sorry but my brother saw right through me but I didn't gave up his name and that he's taking me back home I waited for his reply until we got to my place but dololo....i swear that hurt

.

.
.
**** NARRATED****

*** they went up to her apartment and as soon as they got in Mbali rushed to her bedroom and she just threw herself on top of the bed and she just cried the disappointment on his brother's face is what got to her more than his anger..... then the door opened and smiso walked in and he sat on the edge of the bed***

Smiso: sit up I wanna talk to you

*** she did.....her face was pink and her eyes were swollen and red ***

Smiso: look I know you are growing up and that you feel like we are suffocating you most of the time and being unfair to you but it comes from a good place..... princess by now im sure you can tell that we live dangerous lives and we have enemies out there the purpose of knowing your whereabouts is to make sure you are safe all the time and with that attempted hijacking that happened we know we slacked cause we didn't know about it until the next day so that's why we are being hands on now cause uncle Ty trusts that we will make sure you are safe at all times

he sighed

Smiso: you are a khumalo princess and you have crazy brothers so lying to us makes us lose trust in you and believe me if the others learn about your recent stunt they will make sure you go back to KZN and travel from home to varsity every day and believe me that's worse than us keeping tabs on you while you're here cause you'll have MA and baba on your neck everyday

she swallowed hard

Smiso: so do yourself a favour and stop lying to us and focus on giving us that degree ok

she nodded and he sighed

Smiso: I won't tell your other crazy brothers about your recent shenanigans especially nhlaka and Jay and I hope I won't regret my decision

Mbali: you won't thank you bhuti

***she said that with a low voice....she hated disappointing her brothers especially her dad grandparents and nhlaka ***

Smiso: now do me a favour

Mbali: ok

Smiso: never attempt to lie to me ever again cause I won't be this nice next time

she nodded quickly

Smiso: and stay away from fuckboys your best friend and boyfriend betrayed you now you should be healing from that and not jumping to another fuckboy cause that makes you seem loose and unlady like cause my princess is a lady and she knows her worth

*** she swallowed hard and nodded.... Well that hit home cause it was the truth she just jumped from one dick to another just like that***

Smiso: now pull yourself together and stop crying you'll have a headache

she wiped her tears off

Smiso: now come and lock up I need to go home before your aunt skins me alive for taking long with her hot wings

she smiled a bit and got out of bed and walked after him making sure she doesn't limp and he opened the door and turned to look at her

Smiso: I can't believe you fainted like that

he said that with a smirk and one eyebrow raised and Mbali sighed relieved that at least he's smirking

Smiso: no more lies ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Smiso: you'll get your car later today ok

Mbali: ok bhuti

Smiso: and I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

he kissed her forehead again and he walked away and she closed the door and slid down on it and she hugged her knees as tears ran down her cheeks

.

.

.

*** At Kitso's house he was sitting in his lounge lost in thoughts he was angry because of the talk he had with heath it still wouldn't register to him that naledi was married and his daughter uses another man's last name. He felt like shit in fact he felt like a failure if only he didn't abandon naledi when she was pregnant and she and his daughter would be in his life now. The fact that he can't get close to naledi now broke his heart because he wanted her and Lesedi back into his life that he even filed for divorce and even kicked the wife out. Well his phone rang and it was his father***

Kitso: thaima (father)

Tsietsi: my boy I got your message I was in a meeting that's why I couldn't answer your calls

Kitso: its ok

then he sighed

Tsietsi: so he said you should only communicate with him and not with naledi with regards to Lesedi

Kitso: yes but im never doing that never!

Tsietsi: but kitso you should be grateful that they even let you be part of lesedi's life

Kitso: thaima Lesedi is my daughter and naledi is her mother so that moeskond can't tell me shit

Tsietsi: kitso look you...

he interrupted him

Kitso: no thaima naledi and Lesedi belong with me and we gonna be a family one day I don't care if she's married to him but divorces happen you know look I know I messed up big time and she probably hates me but I won't rest until I right my wrongs with her I'll have my family back together just wait and see

his father sighed

Tsietsi: kitso they just let you have a relationship with Lesedi just focus on building a strong relationship with your daughter man and let that nonsense go

Kitso: well dad naledi and Lesedi are a package I can't have one without the other

Tsietsi: KITSO STOP WITH THIS MADNESS NOW FOCUS ON YOUR DAUGHTER AND LEAVE NALEDI ALONE

Kitso: I know she still loves me thaima I just need to remind her of how we were before I messed up and maybe she might give me a chance cause I still love her thaima..... I was a fool but now im grown and wise I need her in my life

Tsietsi: you know you sound crazy right

Kitso: crazily in love with her yeah..... thaima you know I always go after what I want and now naledi and my daughter are what I want and need to have in my life for now and forever ever since I abandoned her nothing works out for me even my business has gone down and if it wasn't for you I don't know what I would have done

his father sighed cause he could tell what kind of path kitso was taking now

Tsietsi: kitso think carefully about what you are about to do

Kitso: thaima I was once blind but now I see clearly naledi and Lesedi belong with me and I'll make her forgive me and we will be a family like we were supposed to be before I messed up

***his father just sighed heavily defeated cause he knows how stubborn and hard headed he is ***

.
. .
. .

*** Back at mbali's apartment she was now asleep when she heard a knock on the door and she got up and limped to the door ***

Mbali: who is it

Voice: open up my flower

she swallowed hard and opened the door and he was standing there with frown on his face but when she saw her pink face and swollen eyes his facial expression softened

Ray: my flower

she walked inside and went to sit down and ray got in and he closed the door and went to her and sat next to her

Ray: my flower what's wrong.... What happened?

she didn't say anything

Ray: mbali

Mbali: he saw right through me im a bad liar Ray and he's good at reading people and finding out things

Ray sighed

Ray: it's ok come here

she shook her head no

Mbali: I can't.... I can't do this Ray I know I promised to hold on but I can't keep disappointing my brother's like this and I have a feeling that im gonna keep disappointing them if we continue with this

Ray clenched his jaw looking at her he knew she was gonna crack and want to give up but not this quick

Ray: mbali

she didn't say anything

Ray: I said come here

she got closer to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap and he looked at her

Ray: you break promises now

she just looked away

Ray: mbali

Mbali: mmmmh

Ray: kiss me

she looked at him surprised

Ray: I said kiss me

she looked down and bit her lower lip

Ray: mbali I said kiss me!

he said with firm voice and she swallowed and brought her face closer to his and perked his lips

Ray: I said kiss me not perk my lips

she got closer and kissed him and Ray kiss her back the kiss went on and on until Mbali felt Ray's dick growing under her and she pulled out of the kiss

Ray: never try that shit again you hear me

***she looked at him ***

Mbali: but ray?

he interrupted her

Ray: or what? you want me to take you to the bedroom and fuck you until you pass out for trying to break up with me

***she swallowed and shook her head no when she thought of how sore her pussy is ***

Ray: now never do that shit again you hear me

she sighed and nodded

Mbali: im sorry I just....i feel bad that im caught and my brother said something to me which hit home cause it was the truth

Ray: what did he say?

Mbali: that I shouldn't have had a new boyfriend before healing from my heart break with Kyle

she half told him the truth about what he said

Ray: well I don't do that 90 day shit rule or take a girl out to 50 dates first before I hit it because I believe if a guy only wants sex from you and not interested I having a relationship with you then he will go to those 50 dates with you and pretend to like you then ditch you after getting the cookie

Mbali: ooh

Ray: yeah and im older than you so you should listen to me cause im wiser

he said with a smirk and Mbali lazy smiled

Ray: so my flower even if we waited to make love or you told me you not ready and you prefer us to be friends first until you heal from your heart break well I was still gonna hit it raw and claim you as mine and also get hooked on your nana and still want to wife you after your graduation

*** her eyes popped out***

Mbali: you want to..... wife me

he kissed her cheek

Ray: yeah and have 5 kids together

Mbali: ummm wow

Ray: mmmmh in other words what im really trying to say to you my flower is that I love you

*** she smiled then bit her lower lip***

Mbali: you...you do

Ray: yeah my flower and I can't help it

she smiled wide cause when someone says you are his it's one thing but for that person to say he loves you it's something else altogether

Ray: and also thank you for not telling your brother my name it clearly proves that you are loyal to me and my flower your loyalty to me is greatly appreciated cause loyalty means everything to me

Mbali: but im scared Eze m what happened just proves that they'll never accept our relationship

she said with a worried tone and he turned her face and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry yourself my flower they will

Mbali: you don't know them Eze m they are....

he interrupted her by perking her lips

Ray: do you trust me

she sighed and nodded

Ray: you know I want you to say it

Mbali: I do

Ray: good then trust what im saying..... your brothers will accept our relationship when the time is right ok

***she sighed again and nodded and he kissed her lips ***

Ray: you know when I came here I was mad that you left with your brother even though I specifically told you not to but when I saw your face I don't know what happened to me if he wasn't your brother he would be counting his teeth on the ground by now

she smiled and just rested her head on his shoulder and he held her tight

Ray: im sorry I put you in that position my flower I just didn't want you to be banned from seeing me on the day we made our relationship formal

Mbali: I was scared Ray I even fainted when I saw that it was bhut smiso and not bhut nhlaka

he pushed her off him gently

Ray: you fainted?

he asked with a frown on his face and she nodded

Ray: you really are scared of him abi

she nodded and he sighed and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry you'll ever find yourself in that position alone ever again ok

Mbali: ok

he kissed her lips again

Ray: let's go to the bedroom so you can lay down im sure you have a headache with the way your eyes are swollen

Mbali: ok

he stood up with her in his arms and they went to the bedroom..... well he knew mbali's brothers were tracking her every move and he knew about the tracker on her car and the one that is on her phone and he switched off her phone cause he knew they won't be able to track it but the fact that her brother still knew which apartment she was in it meant she has a tracker chip in her body like he suspected she has but one thing for sure is he knew that no one will separate them ever including her brothers and father even her mighty grandfather..... he just won't let it happen not when he has already marked her

29

INSERT.....28

.
. .
. .

MBALI

I walked to the door and I took deep breath and opened the door and when my eyes landed on which of my brothers was here I just froze with fear

Me: "ooh God not him please God not him maybe im dreaming and he's not here"

I thought to myself with my heart beating out of my chest I swear im gonna pass out any minute now

Me: bh...bhut smiso

Smiso: my princess can I come in

Gosh he wasn't even smiling..... I just bit my lower lip to prevent it from trembling with fear ooh Lord im scared I think im gonna pee on myself....yho now I regret being here....God I shouldn't have come why did I come konje...anyway I made a way from him and he walked in with his dark aura all over him and I swallowed hard and he walked around in the lounge

Smiso: mmmmh it doesn't look like a slumber party is held here maybe nhlaka was wrong he didn't hear you correctly.... And this apartment doesn't look like a young lady lives in it but rather a man

he said that checking out the apartment in the lounge and he turned to look at me and his look....Jesus..... I don't know what happened but I found myself feeling dizzy and I held my head and soon I saw myself going down and it was lights out

.
. .

*** I woke up when I felt what felt like some drops of liquid falling on my face and I slowly opened my eyes and blinked a few times and when I looked on my left side I found him sitting on top of the table looking at me with a serious look and I swallowed hard.... "Gosh Mbali get a grip on yourself he's your brother for God's sake" I thought to myself***

Smiso: sit up

he said with a firm tone and I swallowed again and slowly sat up and I fiddled with my fingers looking down

Smiso: guess what I went to buy my wife her hot wings at KFC and I saw that girl that is your best friend.... What's her name..... Phumzile or Phindile

*** nx that backstabbing bitch I wonder what she said to him....ooh God ***

Smiso: and well she came to me and asked about you and she said she hasn't seen you in a while since you started dating

I clenched my jaws that fucken bitch nx

Smiso: and guess what again she didn't know about any slumber party and any of your friends also didn't say anything about it so Mbali what the hell is going on I want the truth now before I get mad

God why my bottom lip was trembling so was my hands the thing is I started getting really scared of bhut smiso one time when all my brother's wives and their kids with me included we were kidnapped four years back by some guy who called himself psych or psycho when they finally found us and budged in the warehouse we were held in just as one of psych's guards was trying to force himself on aunt nomhle while other two guards where there cheering him on I remember hearing shots being fired and we covered the kids so they don't see all that but I forgot to also close my eyes and I regretted not doing so I remember seeing bhut smiso rushing to the guard that wanted to rape aunt nomhle and he grabbed him by his throat and he ripped his throat off (yeah he did) and blood oozed from the guy's neck and he snapped his neck and tossed him on the floor and I just passed out right then and there. He looked scary and even though they found a therapist for me to speak to about the trauma I experience and even took a trip for two days with just me and him so we can talk about what I saw well the thing is im still scared of him but that only happens when he's angry or pissed off. When he's happy and jolly im not scared of him in fact he's funny and fun to be around but when he starts getting angry yeses all that fear comes rushing down to me like a tornado.....look I know he can never hurt me but that day he looked scary people and that image I saw that day will forever be imprinted in my mind. Anyway here goes nothing.....*

Me: bh...bhutiPhindile and I are no longer friends she..... ummm that guy I was dating and you said I should stay away from well the thing is even though I went to him after that hijacking attempt well we had broken up cause I found out that he was sleeping with Phindile and that she's pregnant with his child

he didn't say anything he just looked at me.... I guess he wants me to continue.... Lord help me

Me: she wasn't invited to the party cause our friends know about what she did

Smiso: then where are your friends

Me: to...to buy drinks and snacks

Smiso: Mbali

Me: bhuti

Smiso: when you look at me do you see a fool

I swallowed hard

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then why are you lying to me

tears streamed down my cheeks maybe my tears will make him stop interrogating me

Me: im not bhuti

Smiso: mmmmh ok now tell me why does a bag with man's clothes doing in the main bedroom's closet and that love bite on your neck what is it doing there and don't tell me you were bit by a mosquito not forgetting those beer bottles in the fridge and the empty beer bottle in the trash bin that smells like it was opened and drank a few minutes ago ooh and not to mention that man's shirt in the closet that has your scent all over it and a man's perfume too

can I just die already.... I just cried... Gosh im dead

Smiso: so you have the guts to lie to nhlaka through your teeth now Mbali

Me: im sorry bhuti

Smiso: who is he?

I just continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you who he is damn it!

he raised his voice and I jumped from my sit and continued to cry

Smiso: I asked you a question mbali

Me: it's..... It's some guy from varsity bhuti

I lied

Smiso: so you move from one guy to another now Mbali within a short period of time mmmmh? is that who you have become now is that how you were raised!

he said shouting a bit and I just cried out loud

Me: no bhuti

Smiso: then what is it

Me: im sorry bhuti

I was crying hysterically now

Smiso: didn't we agree that if you give us a degree we will back down a bit and let you live your life the way you see fit

Me: you did bhuti

Smiso: now what's all this why are you jumping from one guy to another like it's a new fashion trend and you even have the guts to lie to us

***I just cried I was standing at the far corner by now ***

Smiso: are you even still pure Mbali

*** he asked with his eyes squinted and I didn't answer him I just cried and he just shook his head disappointed and he stood up***

Smiso: now go and take your bag we are leaving

Me: bhuti please i.... the.... The pyjama party

yho Ray said I shouldn't leave for God's sake

Smiso: so you still have a mouth to talk about your fake pyjama party heh?

I shook my head no quickly..... Gosh I can't believe he saw right through me

Smiso: now go in there and take your bag and let go

*** he said with an angry voice and I tried by all mean to walk properly going to the bedroom and I took my bag and packed my things I even put Ray's shirt inside my bag and I also took my car keys and I went to the lounge and took my phone and we walked out.....I locked the door and put the key under a flower pot that is next to the door and I walked behind him trying so much to walk properly my nana was sore people..... We got in the lift and it stopped on the ground floor and we walked out and he walked to his car while I walked to mine but he stopped me***

Smiso: where do you think you're going?

his voice startled me and I quickly turned looking at him

Me: to...to my car

Smiso: give me your car keys

I did

Smiso: let's go someone will bring your car to your place

***I nodded and we went to his car and got in then we drove out of the complex.....i saw that my phone was off even though I don't remember switching it off anyway I switched it on and send Ray a

message telling him that im sorry but my brother saw right through me but I didn't gave up his name and that he's taking me back home I waited for his reply until we got to my place but dololo....i swear that hurt***

.
. .

**** NARRATED****

*** they went up to her apartment and as soon as they got in Mbali rushed to her bedroom and she just threw herself on top of the bed and she just cried the disappointment on his brother's face is what got to her more than his anger..... then the door opened and smiso walked in and he sat on the edge of the bed***

Smiso: sit up I wanna talk to you

*** she did.....her face was pink and her eyes were swollen and red ***

Smiso: look I know you are growing up and that you feel like we are suffocating you most of the time and being unfair to you but it comes from a good place..... princess by now im sure you can tell that we live dangerous lives and we have enemies out there the purpose of knowing your whereabouts is to make sure you are safe all the time and with that attempted hijacking that happened we know we slacked cause we didn't know about it until the next day so that's why we are being hands on now cause uncle Ty trusts that we will make sure you are safe at all times

he sighed

Smiso: you are a khumalo princess and you have crazy brothers so lying to us makes us lose trust in you and believe me if the others learn about your recent stunt they will make sure you go back to KZN and travel from home to varsity every day and believe me that's worse than us keeping tabs on you while you're here cause you'll have MA and baba on your neck everyday

she swallowed hard

Smiso: so do yourself a favour and stop lying to us and focus on giving us that degree ok

she nodded and he sighed

Smiso: I won't tell your other crazy brothers about your recent shenanigans especially nhlaka and Jay and I hope I won't regret my decision

Mbali: you won't thank you bhuti

***she said that with a low voice....she hated disappointing her brothers especially her dad grandparents and nhlaka ***

Smiso: now do me a favour

Mbali: ok

Smiso: never attempt to lie to me ever again cause I won't be this nice next time

she nodded quickly

Smiso: and stay away from fuckboys your best friend and boyfriend betrayed you now you should be healing from that and not jumping to another fuckboy cause that makes you seem loose and unlady like cause my princess is a lady and she knows her worth

*** she swallowed hard and nodded.... Well that hit home cause it was the truth she just jumped from one dick to another just like that***

Smiso: now pull yourself together and stop crying you'll have a headache

she wiped her tears off

Smiso: now come and lock up I need to go home before your aunt skins me alive for taking long with her hot wings

she smiled a bit and got out of bed and walked after him making sure she doesn't limp and he opened the door and turned to look at her

Smiso: I can't believe you fainted like that

he said that with a smirk and one eyebrow raised and Mbali sighed relieved that at least he's smirking

Smiso: no more lies ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Smiso: you'll get your car later today ok

Mbali: ok bhuti

Smiso: and I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too bhuti

he kissed her forehead again and he walked away and she closed the door and slid down on it and she hugged her knees as tears ran down her cheeks

.

.

.

*** At Kitso's house he was sitting in his lounge lost in thoughts he was angry because of the talk he had with heath it still wouldn't register to him that naledi was married and his daughter uses another man's last name. He felt like shit in fact he felt like a failure if only he didn't abandon naledi when she was pregnant and she and his daughter would be in his life now. The fact that he can't get close to naledi now broke his heart because he wanted her and Lesedi back into his life that he even filed for divorce and even kicked the wife out. Well his phone rang and it was his father***

Kitso: thaima (father)

Tsietsi: my boy I got your message I was in a meeting that's why I couldn't answer your calls

Kitso: its ok

then he sighed

Tsietsi: so he said you should only communicate with him and not with naledi with regards to Lesedi

Kitso: yes but im never doing that never!

Tsietsi: but kitso you should be grateful that they even let you be part of lesedi's life

Kitso: thaima Lesedi is my daughter and naledi is her mother so that moeskond can't tell me shit

Tsietsi: kitso look you....

he interrupted him

Kitso: no thaima naledi and Lesedi belong with me and we gonna be a family one day I don't care if she's married to him but divorces happen you know look I know I messed up big time and she probably hates me but I won't rest until I right my wrongs with her I'll have my family back together just wait and see

his father sighed

Tsietsi: kitso they just let you have a relationship with Lesedi just focus on building a strong relationship with your daughter man and let that nonsense go

Kitso: well dad naledi and Lesedi are a package I can't have one without the other

Tsietsi: KITSO STOP WITH THIS MADNESS NOW FOCUS ON YOUR DAUGHTER AND LEAVE NALEDI ALONE

Kitso: I know she still loves me thaima I just need to remind her of how we were before I messed up and maybe she might give me a chance cause I still love her thaima..... I was a fool but now im grown and wise I need her in my life

Tsietsi: you know you sound crazy right

Kitso: crazily in love with her yeah..... thaima you know I always go after what I want and now naledi and my daughter are what I want and need to have in my life for now and forever ever since I abandoned her nothing works out for me even my business has gone down and if it wasn't for you I don't know what I would have done

his father sighed cause he could tell what kind of path kitso was taking now

Tsietsi: kitso think carefully about what you are about to do

Kitso: thaima I was once blind but now I see clearly naledi and Lesedi belong with me and I'll make her forgive me and we will be a family like we were supposed to be before I messed up

***his father just sighed heavily defeated cause he knows how stubborn and hard headed he is ***

.

.
.
*** Back at mbali's apartment she was now asleep when she heard a knock on the door and she got up and limped to the door ***

Mbali: who is it

Voice: open up my flower

she swallowed hard and opened the door and he was standing there with frown on his face but when she saw her pink face and swollen eyes his facial expression softened

Ray: my flower

she walked inside and went to sit down and ray got in and he closed the door and went to her and sat next to her

Ray: my flower what's wrong.... What happened?

she didn't say anything

Ray: mbali

Mbali: he saw right through me im a bad liar Ray and he's good at reading people and finding out things

Ray sighed

Ray: it's ok come here

she shook her head no

Mbali: I can't.... I can't do this Ray I know I promised to hold on but I can't keep disappointing my brother's like this and I have a feeling that im gonna keep disappointing them if we continue with this

Ray clenched his jaw looking at her he knew she was gonna crack and want to give up but not this quick

Ray: mbali

she didn't say anything

Ray: I said come here

she got closer to him and he pulled her to sit on his lap and he looked at her

Ray: you break promises now

she just looked away

Ray: mbali

Mbali: mmmmh

Ray: kiss me

she looked at him surprised

Ray: I said kiss me

she looked down and bit her lower lip

Ray: mbali I said kiss me!

he said with firm voice and she swallowed and brought her face closer to his and perked his lips

Ray: I said kiss me not perk my lips

she got closer and kissed him and Ray kiss her back the kiss went on and on until Mbali felt Ray's dick growing under her and she pulled out of the kiss

Ray: never try that shit again you hear me

***she looked at him ***

Mbali: but ray?

he interrupted her

Ray: or what? you want me to take you to the bedroom and fuck you until you pass out for trying to break up with me

***she swallowed and shook her head no when she thought of how sore her pussy is ***

Ray: now never do that shit again you hear me

she sighed and nodded

Mbali: im sorry I just....i feel bad that im caught and my brother said something to me which hit home cause it was the truth

Ray: what did he say?

Mbali: that I shouldn't have had a new boyfriend before healing from my heart break with Kyle

she half told him the truth about what he said

Ray: well I don't do that 90 day shit rule or take a girl out to 50 dates first before I hit it because I believe if a guy only wants sex from you and not interested I having a relationship with you then he will go to those 50 dates with you and pretend to like you then ditch you after getting the cookie

Mbali: ooh

Ray: yeah and im older than you so you should listen to me cause im wiser

he said with a smirk and Mbali lazy smiled

Ray: so my flower even if we waited to make love or you told me you not ready and you prefer us to be friends first until you heal from your heart break well I was still gonna hit it raw and claim you as mine and also get hooked on your nana and still want to wife you after your graduation

*** her eyes popped out***

Mbali: you want to..... wife me

he kissed her cheek

Ray: yeah and have 5 kids together

Mbali: ummm wow

Ray: mmmmh in other words what im really trying to say to you my flower is that I love you

*** she smiled then bit her lower lip***

Mbali: you...you do

Ray: yeah my flower and I can't help it

she smiled wide cause when someone says you are his it's one thing but for that person to say he loves you it's something else altogether

Ray: and also thank you for not telling your brother my name it clearly proves that you are loyal to me and my flower your loyalty to me is greatly appreciated cause loyalty means everything to me

Mbali: but im scared Eze m what happened just proves that they'll never accept our relationship

she said with a worried tone and he turned her face and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry yourself my flower they will

Mbali: you don't know them Eze m they are....

he interrupted her by perking her lips

Ray: do you trust me

she sighed and nodded

Ray: you know I want you to say it

Mbali: I do

Ray: good then trust what im saying..... your brothers will accept our relationship when the time is right ok

***she sighed again and nodded and he kissed her lips ***

Ray: you know when I came here I was mad that you left with your brother even though I specifically told you not to but when I saw your face I don't know what happened to me if he wasn't your brother he would be counting his teeth on the ground by now

she smiled and just rested her head on his shoulder and he held her tight

Ray: im sorry I put you in that position my flower I just didn't want you to be banned from seeing me on the day we made our relationship formal

Mbali: I was scared Ray I even fainted when I saw that it was bhut smiso and not bhut nhlaka

he pushed her off him gently

Ray: you fainted?

he asked with a frown on his face and she nodded

Ray: you really are scared of him abi

she nodded and he sighed and kissed her lips

Ray: don't worry you'll ever find yourself in that position alone ever again ok

Mbali: ok

he kissed her lips again

Ray: let's go to the bedroom so you can lay down im sure you have a headache with the way your eyes are swollen

Mbali: ok

he stood up with her in his arms and they went to the bedroom..... well he knew mbali's brothers were tracking her every move and he knew about the tracker on her car and the one that is on her phone and he switched off her phone cause he knew they won't be able to track it but the fact that her brother still knew which apartment she was in it meant she has a tracker chip in her body like he suspected she has but one thing for sure is he knew that no one will separate them ever including her brothers and father even her mighty grandfather..... he just won't let it happen not when he has already marked her

30

INSERT.....30

.
. .
. .

****MBALI****

*** we just came from the doctor's office and im lying in bed trying to rest while Ray is sitting next to me doing some work on his laptop im a bit grumpy cause I was poked with a needle and I hate them ***

Ray: still sulking because of a needle my flower

I pouted looking at him and he chuckled

Ray: ok then what can I do to make you feel better

Me: go and slap that doctor for hurting your flower

he laughed

Ray: ok and if I do that you'll stop sulking

*** I nodded and he chuckled***

Ray: ok then lets go

*** I looked at him with my eyes popped out this guy is crazy so he would slap a doctor for doing his job just because I asked him to wow***

Me: you would do that for me

Ray: I'd do anything for you my flower

Me: wow im one lucky girl mmmmh

he bends a bit and perked my lips

Ray: you have no idea

I just smiled looking at him

Me: I love you Eze m

gosh it felt so good to say that*

Ray: I love you too my flower

*** then he went back to his laptop....mmmh I can see he could see that I was joking with that ”
slapping the doctor” thing I just say***

Me: Ray

Ray: mmmmh

Me: am I....am I cold in bed

he stopped typing and he put his laptop aside and looked at me with a frown on his face

Ray: why are you asking me that Mbali

oh oh he just called me Mbali and not my flower

Me: ummm nothing I just want to know

Ray: why?

***I kept quiet..... the thing is what Phindile said to me about me being cold in bed really got to
me I mean what if Kyle told her I am while they were busy having a pillow talk after fucking***

Ray: Mbali why did you ask me that?

Me: no reason I just wanted to know nje

Ray: the truth now!

he said with a firm voice and I sighed

Me: earlier today I had a run in with my ex friend Phindile

he gave me a look that said “continue”

Me: we exchanged words and I slapped her when she said some hurtful things to me then she
almost attacked me but her friend stopped her....anyway she said something like “ it's not her
fault that im cold in bed that's why Kyle slept with her”

Ray: tell me hereare you sleeping with her

Me: what?.... no

Ray: ok and are you also sleeping with that boy Kyle now

Me: no ofcourse not

Ray: then why do you care about what they say

Me: cause maybe they were busy talking about me during their pillow talk

Ray: so?

Me: so I want to know if I am or not

***he just shook his head ***

Ray: come here

*** I sat up and he pulled me to sit on top of him we were facing each other and his big hands were grabbing my ass***

Ray: my flower listen to me and listen good ok

I nodded

Ray: that girl betrayed you and now it looks like she'll do anything to make you feel small and also its clear that she doesn't regret what she did to you

Me: yeah and she said she's surprised that I haven't committed suicide yet

he just shook his head while looking down

Ray: did she touch you

I shook my head no

Me: I was ready for her

Ray: listen here I don't want you fighting useless people my flower.... You are a lady and not some ratchet street fighter ok so just ignore her for her own good cause if she even lays a finger on you I'll chop it off and im not bluffing

he said that with a serious tone and I nodded

Ray: now give me some sugar and let's forget about loose girls and fuckboys

he said smirking and I got closer and we kissed..... soon we were naked and he was on top of me and he entered me slowly....a moan escaped my mouth while he groaned

Ray: fuck you are so tight my flower

Me: and you... you are huge Eze m

he smirked and started moving slowly while we kissed..... he was gentle and slow and that was making me lose my mind cause he was also going deeper and deeper we kept on kissing passionately while he was moving in and out of me slowly.... He then left my lips and he went to my neck and started sucking and biting on it gently while he was still moving in and out of me gosh i was losing my mind jeez I never knew sex could be this sweet nkosi yam (my God)

Ray: don't ever doubt yourself you hear me Onye m huru n'anya (my love)

he whispered in my ear while moving in and out of me slowly..... And his voice gosh it was doing things to me

Me: ye...yes

Ray: and I don't want you to ever fight with useless people you hear me Anyawu ututu m (my sunshine)

he whispered again then he bit my earlobe and I felt an electric current rushing all over my body... all this time he was still moving in and out of me slowly but deeper

Me: ye...yes Eze m

*** I whispered back ***

Ray: good

then he pulled out and he grabbed both my thighs and he spread them wide and he pinned them on the sides of my stomach and he slid into me slowly and he groaned loud while I gasped for air gosh I could feel his anaconda poking my womb.... And when he started to move I lost all sense of reality he started moving slowly but then increased his pace with each stroke. I was holding on to the bed covers for dear life as he fucked me hard I was busy screaming and calling out his name as he fucked my nana like his life depended on it.... He went on and on and right then an orgasm hit me hard and my body trembled from head to toes and guess what the nikka didn't stop people he fucked me through it all and soon I felt his grip getting tighter on my thighs and he was also growing and twitching inside of me and soon he slammed into me hard pushing in deeper and deeper then he let out a loud groan from deep down his throat and he cursed then he collapsed on top of me

.

.

.

**** I guess I passed out cause I woke up when I felt his lips on my lips then he whispered to me***

Ray: wakey wakey my flower

Me: mmmh hey

Ray: you good

I shook my head no

Me: my legs feel funny and my nana is a little sore

he perked my lips

Ray: you'll be fine now sit up and eat

Me: what time is it?

Ray: 17H45

Me: what? Ooh my God why didn't you wake me up

Ray: cause you needed the rest now eat up

I took the plate and it was pasta and mince gosh it smells so good

Me: you cooked

he nodded and perked my lips

Me: nice

I said smiling at him and I ate

Me: why are you dressed

Ray: Im not sleeping over my flower I have some things I need to take care of tonight

I stopped eating and looked at him...what things now?

Me: things you say

*** I said raising my eyebrow at him and he chuckled***

Ray: yes now eat up go shower and study before you sleep remember they need that degree to give you some space to breath and that's what we both want right

I sighed and nodded

Ray: good

he kissed my forehead

Ray: look at me

and I did

Ray: I love you ok

Me: I love you too..... are you sure you can't sleep over

he nodded

Ray: not tonight my flower look I'll see you tomorrow in the afternoon around past 3 and we will go view some houses..... I want to buy a house

Me: ooh nice.....ok

Ray: now stop sulking you know I'll call you every three hours to check up on you until we meet ok

Me: ok

he perked my lips

Ray: and you better behave

I smiled

Me: you behave too Mr

he smiled gosh this guy is handsome people

Ray: always my flower now come and lock up I have to go

***I sighed and I got out of bed and I went to the bathroom butt naked and he whistled ***

Ray: that ass and those portable curves my flower..... mmh mmh mmh

I just ignored him and went to do my business and I washed my hands and went back to the bedroom and I wore my gown and we walked to the main door.... We hugged and kissed then he left..... gosh I think im falling for Ray deeper every day and I can't even help it..... ooh Lord my brothers father and grandfather will surely skin me alive. Then my phone rang in the bedroom and i rushed to it and answered the number wasn't saved

.
. .

**** NARRATED****

Mbali: hello

Voice: hey my love

she frowned as she noticed who the caller was

Mbali: Kyle what is it?

Kyle: mmmmh this days you are feisty neh

Mbali: mxm you know what im hanging up now

Kyle: wait....

Mbali: WHAT?

Kyle: I have one question for you my love..... well does your family know that you are now fucking blessers mmmmh

her throat went dry instantly

Kyle: mh I mean I may not know his exact age but I can tell he's not in his twenties

Mbali: what do you want Kyle

Kyle: you!

Mbali: we are over Kyle why cant you accept that mmmmh and move on with your baby mama and leave me the hell alone

Kyle: cause we will never be over princess..... you are me and im you and no fucken blesser or cheap whore like Phindile will break us up.... I love you im.....

she interrupted him

Mbali: just leave me alone Kyle cause believe me you don't wanna mess with me!

she warned him and he chuckled

Kyle: here is what is gonna happen my love you gonna stop seeing that big bully blesser of yours and give me a chance to win your trust back or your family will know the kind of

mischiefs their precious princess gets up to I love you Mbali more than I love myself and if I can't have you neither will he

Mbali: are you threatening me Kyle

Kyle: ooh no baby I can never threaten you ever im just promising you.... Ooh and I heard about your confrontation with Phindile you should have punched her instead of slapping her you know ***she didn't say anything she just kept quiet trying to calm herself down***

Kyle: i love you Mbali and im only doing what a man who's trying to win his love back will do

Mbali: I just hope you can handle this fire your just started Kyle cause you clearly don't know who you are dealing with he's gonna skin you alive for threatening his flower now don't say I didn't warn you nx

she dropped the call with her hands shaking*

Mbali: ooooh shit! If he tells them im dead

she said to herself and she sat down on the bed thinking..... she thought of telling ray but then again if she tells him he'll surely hurt him for real this time and Kyle will end up telling her family anyways

Mbali: ooooh shit bhut smiso..... gosh im dead

she said falling back on the bed with her heart beating fast

.
. .
.

Ray was in his car driving to his apartment when Mateo called him

Ray: Mat

Mateo: jefe the containers were just released a few minutes ago

Ray: now that's more like it

he said with a happy voice

Mateo: so we are still going to Cape Town

Ray: yeah im actually on my way to the apartment now and you better be ready when I get there..... ooh and is Diego back yet

Mateo: no but he said he's on his way back

Ray: and did the purchase of the warehouse go through smoothly

Mateo: yes jefe we are good to go

Ray: good now don't forget to buy a return ticket to Cuba for him he need to go check if everything is going smoothly there and to check on Liana since she's not well

Mateo: already brought it for him he's leaving tomorrow in the afternoon

Ray: good.... Now things are falling into place

Mateo: yeah they are jefe and now real work is about to start

Ray: mmmmh y me sorprende que no hayas hablado en espanol desde hace un tiempo (mmmmh and im surprised you haven't spoken in Spanish for some time now)

mateo chuckled

Mateo: like they say... when you are in Rome you do what the Romans do so im in South Africa so English is the way

ray chuckled

Ray: ok Senor English nos vemos hace un momento (ok Mr. English see you just now)

*** they laughed and ended the call and Ray send Mbali a “ i love you “ message and she replied with “ I love you too”***

.

.

.

*** The following day in the morning naledi was sitting in the lounge reading a book when her phone rang nos vemos hace un momento (ok Mr. English see you just now)

*** they laughed and ended the call and Ray send Mbali a “ i love you “ message and she replied with “ I love you too”***

.

.

.

*** The following day in the morning naledi was sitting in the lounge reading a book when her phone rang the number wasn't saved on her phone anyway she answered***

Naledi: hello

Voice: ledi please don't hang up its me kitso

Naledi: kitso?... mxm what do you want

Kitso: can we meet please.... Look I know you hate me but please can we meet up its important

Naledi: no

Kitso: naledi please

Naledi: why would I meet up with you kitso mmmmh just tell me why would I waste my time meeting up with you

Kitso: I just.... Look I just need 15 minutes of your time please tog

Naledi: well you don't deserve even one second of my time kitso now stop calling me please!

she dropped the call and took a deep breath then her phone rang again and this time it was different numbers

Naledi: WHAT KITSO WHAT HEH?

she shouted

Voice: woooah I guess this is bad timing

it was a woman's voice and naledi took a deep breath

Naledi: im sorry I thought you were someone ummm who's this?

Voice: mmmmh so I take it this is naledi right

Naledi: who wants to know?

Voice: its Jolene heath's PA....ooh I meant ex PA

naledi frowned

Naledi: what can I do for you Jolene?

she chuckled

Jolene: you fucken bitch so you actually felt threatened by me so you told heath to let me go that's just low sies

Naledi: so let me guess you called just to insult me mmmmh

Jolene: ooh no honey you deserve to be slapped instead..... just because you couldn't stand to share heath with me so you opted to having me fired.... What so lil Mrs albino can't handle a lil competition from a real woman mmmh?

Naledi: wow

she said that and laughed a bit

Jolene: just so you know there are other ways to have him and ooh just so you know.... you telling him to fire me was the best thing you could have done for me cause now I don't have to worry about my job I can pursue him freely and don't think that stupid ring on his finger is gonna stop him from tapping my ass again cause men will always be men honey they can never say no to some new pussy

Naledi: well not my man Jolene

Jolene: ooh watch and learn honey

Naledi: you know I feel sorry for you Jolene cause you clearly don't know heath

then she chuckled a bit

Naledi: that man once pointed a gun at his own parents for insulting me so imagine what he'll do to you when he finds out you called and insulted me

Jolene: what?

Naledi: NX

naledi clicked her tongue and she dropped the call and he did breath ins and out as she felt anger brewing inside of her.....she then dialed heath's numbers and he answered on the second ring

Heath: obi m

Naledi: your stupid fuck buddy Jolene just called me and she insulted me heath is this what im gonna deal with from now on mmmmh?

Heath: what?

Naledi: YOU BETTER TAKE CARE OF YOUR BITCH HEATH YOU HEAR WHEN YOU DECIDED TO FUCK YOUR PA I WASN'T THERE HOLDING A CANDLE FOR YOU TWO...

*** heath interrupted her***

Heath: wooh naledi calm down and breath before you upset my kids

Naledi: DON'T TELL ME TO BREATH HEATH EZEUDO OWOH-MASDEN YOU HEAR ME YOUR KIDS WONT MAKE IT IF YOUR WHORES KEEPS ON CALLING ME AND INSULTING ME FIRST IT WAS LERATO "MY SUPPOSED STEP SISTER" AND I ENDED UP IN HOSPITAL AND NOW ITS YOUR FUCK BUDDY AKA PA..... FIX IT OR YOU'LL FIND YOURSELF SLEEPING IN THE GUEST ROOM FOR THE NEXT COMING 10 YEARS IM TELLING YOU

then she dropped the call and she threw her phone on top of the couch and she did breath ins and out trying to calm herself down while holding her belly*

.
. .

*** heath stood up after the he received from his wife and he grabbed his things and went out locking his office door his new Pa was sitting in his desk busy with work.... He decided to select from the already selected top 5 list of potential candidates HR send him***

Heath: josh cancel all my meeting for today and reschedule them to another day

Josh: ohk sir

Heath: if something important comes up call me

Josh: alright sir

***then heath rushed to the elevator..... Soon he arrived home and he rushed inside calling out to naledi but she didn't answer he put his things down and rushed upstairs to the main bedroom and he heard the shower running and he went inside and even though the shower was running the

wasn't steam in the bathroom.... He opened the shower door and found naledi sitting down on the floor with cold water pouring on her***

Heath: obim

he said that with a panicking voice and closing the shower taps and he grabbed a towel and got in and helped her up and he dried her then he picked her up and he took her to the bedroom and he covered her with her gown since she was shivering

Heath: why were you taking a cold shower look at how you are shivering naledi

Naledi: my.... My BP was high and I had some cramps so i... wanted it to drop a bit

he tightened his jaws

Heath: do you still feel the cramps

she shook her head no*

Naledi: not anymore

Heath: ok let me put lotion on you and get you dressed im taking you to see a doctor

Naledi: I'll be fine heath.... Im calm now and the cramps are gone all I need is to rest

Heath: naledi im not taking any chances ok

Naledi: you can call your brother he's a doctor right I want my kids to find me home when they come back from school and day care

heath sighed and he took out his phone from his pocket and he called Ray

Ray: bros

Heath: big Ray are you still in cape town

Ray: yeah what's wrong?

Heath: I just wanted you to check on naledi's BP she said she had cramps earlier on and she doesn't want to go see a doctor

Ray: look if it's something serious then take her to the hospital or to another doctor immediately whether she wants to or not but if it's not that serious then I'll pass by your house from the airport to check on her

Heath: ok she said she's ok now and she doesn't wanna leave the house so we will wait for you

Ray: ok but if the cramps start again then you better rush her to the hospital

Heath: ok I will

they ended the call and heath put lotion on her body and helped her wear her comfortable clothes and she laid in bed and he covered her with a throw and held her from behind

Heath: do you still feel cramps

Naledi: no they weren't bad and they didn't even last for a minute

Heath: now can you tell me what happened without you shouting and swearing

she sighed

Naledi: your ex PA called and she started insulting me calling me a bitch and what not busy saying she will get you no matter what and that your wedding ring won't stop her

heath closed his eyes with his jaws clenched and he tightened the grip around her and he kissed the back of her head

Heath: im sorry obi m I promise you I'll handle it she will never trouble you ever again

he said that with a cold tone and naledi swallowed

Heath: are you sure you don't feel pains

she nodded

Naledi: kitso also called using a different number

he loosened the grip around her and he turned her to look at him

Heath: what?

Naledi: he called before Jolene called

Heath: and?

Naledi: he was busy begging me to meet up with him but I just dropped the call on him

heath closed his eyes trying to calm himself down and when he opened them they were blood shot red with anger he was even breathing hard.... He kissed her forehead

Heath: I'll take care of it all don't worry ok

she nodded and he perked her lips

Heath: you sure you're not in any pain

she nodded

Heath: I love you ok

she nodded again

Naledi: im sorry for swearing and raising my voice at you

he sighed and pulled her closer

Heath: don't ever do that again ok

she nodded and snuggled closer to him and he held her tight and kept on kissing the top of her head over and over

Heath: where is MJ?

Naledi: playing his video games

he nodded and kissed the top of her head again thinking of ways to deal with kitso and Jolene

.

.

.
**** FLU IS SHOWING ME FLAMES AND THE FLU MEDICATION A DOCTOR
PRESCRIBED FOR ME ESPECIALLY THIS “ALCOPHYLLEX COUGH SYRUP” IS ALSO
NOT DOING ANY JUSTICE FOR ME IM FOREVER SLEEPY AND DROWZY SO GUYS
ASKIES NEH FOR NOT POSTING THREE INSERTS LAST WEEK LIKE I PROMISED I
WOULD****

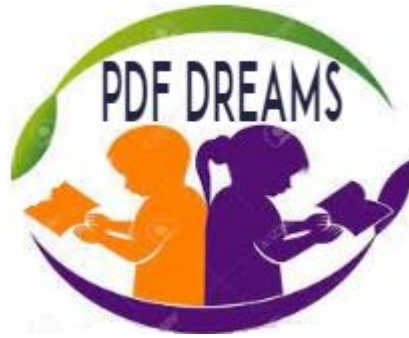
31

INSERT.....31

.
.
.
****RAYMOND***

*** I just called my brother Heath and I told him I won't be able to come back today cause I have a meeting with Devonia she's one of the drug lords I supply cocaine meth and guns in cape town I also called Mbali to tell her that I won't be coming back and she didn't sound thrilled at all especially to the fact that I left for cape town and I didn't tell her. Well I would love to go back but a nigga gotta hustle and make money anyway I know I'll make it up to her so I got no worries and about that question she asked me yesterday "about her being cold and shit"...well the truth is im used to women taking charge every now and then in the bedroom but then I understand that besides me she has only been with one guy so she's not that experienced in the bedroom and don't get me wrong im not saying she's cold nooo but it would be nice if she could give me a blowjob every now and then or to come on top or to even initiate the sex but I understand that she still young and a bit shy in the bedroom and im a patient man I don't mind teaching her a thing or two in the bedroom but for now I want her to get used to me and my dick and to be comfortable around me in the bedroom. Well the truth is I really do love her and I don't know how that happened cause I don't do love and shit but I just found myself falling for her and the truth is it scares the shit out of me cause she's still young and I know she's gonna do stupid things that will make me angry and I might end up hurting her cause I have I know I have a short fuse sometimes and I don't tolerate nonsense so me falling for her like this scares me cause I would hate to hurt that pretty face when she pushes me too far. Anyway my phone rang on top of the table and I put my laptop away and it was my flower***
Me: my flower

Mbali: hey ummm where you serious that you not coming back today and that you in cape town



*** I sighed***

Me: yeah

Mbali: ray you didn't even tell me you going to Cape Town and now you telling me you not coming today what's going on?

Me: I told you I have a meeting later today

Mbali: I know but Ray can't you postpone or something

Me: are you even listening to yourself now.... I told you its an important meeting mbali

she sighed

Mbali: I miss you Ray can't you catch a later flight back then after your meeting

Me: no

Mbali: jeez you didn't even think about it

Me: Mbali what's going on with you didn't I say I have a meeting later and I'll come back tomorrow

Mbali: don't forget you didn't even bother telling me that you leaving for Cape Town

im getting annoyed now

Me: girly you not my wife for me to be reporting to you every second you hear me I said im coming back tomorrow now stop acting like an annoying teenager it's not attractive

I said with an annoyed voice and I immediately regretted it....fuck im just annoyed by one of my clients that bitch nigga is the one that had the meeting to be postponed to later today and I couldn't tell him to go fuck himself cause I need to convince him to pay for his damn order even though im late by a few days

Mbali: wow...you know what sorry for annoying you and for acting like your wife Raymond..... enjoy your stay there nx

***shit**

Me: my flower i



*** tuh tuh tuh tuh she dropped the call.... Just great Ray bravo for being an ass..... I tried to call her again but it went straight to voicemail.... An the begging's and sorries begins the main fucken reason I didn't want to be in a relationship before***

.
. .
.

****its now late at night and we are driving to the warehouse were Mateo and I are going to meet Devonias and two other buyers at and I have been trying to call Mbali but now it just ring unanswered and im mad as hell look I know I was wrong to speak to her like that but the least she could do like a fucken civilized person is to answer her damn phone so I can apologize. My mind is all over the place and I need to be at my A-game for this meeting but now I can't keep a clear mind cause she's not picking my fucken calls then my phone beeped and a message came through from her and it read:

“ the reason I was “annoying” you and pushing for you to come back is because Kyle called last night and he threatened me he said he'll tell my family about me dating an older man if I don't break things off with you but you know what its cool don't worry I can take care of myself or maybe just give in to his threats since im not that important in your life.....anyway enjoy your stay there” ***

Me: fuck

Mateo: what's wrong jefe

Me: I fucked up that's what is wrong

I sighed

Me: let's just say I have some begging to do and you know I hate begging

Mateo: well good luck then cause even though she's young and sweet but she's nighthawk's daughter and im sure being stubborn and also a hard head runs in her blood

*** I chuckled***

Me: I just hope she's one of those girls who see an expensive diamond necklace and they forget that they were even mad at you

Mateo: lets hope so

I breathed out loud..... that boy Kyle or whatever the fuck his name is better go into hiding before I go back cause im gonna fuck him up pretty bad for threatening my flower..... Anyway we arrived and got out and we took out our merchandise in the boot and head inside we got in and found them waiting for us and Devonia walked to me with a smile on her face and she hugged me and gave me a smooch on my lips ok I know I shouldn't allow this but this is Dee and she always greets me like this.... well the thing is we used to fuck a lot when we met back then but then she fell in love with some dickhead and got married and we stopped but she never stopped greeting me like this and I don't think any man out there would mind I mean she's one fine ass coloured woman with a cute face and sexy body she may be in her late 30's but damn she looks like she's in her late 20's but my flower still takes the cake just thought I should put it out there

Dee: LA PARCA himself is in the building people

I chuckled... ohh I forgot to mention that she's also crazy

Me: hey sexy baby

Dee: my first crush

we laughed

Me: you good

Dee: you know im always good baby

Me: I hope that boy is still treating you good or else i'll make him meet his ancestors

she laughed

Dee: but before you make him meet his ancestors I would have to cut off his balls first

Me: and that's why I always vouch for you cause you don't take shit from anyone

Dee: you know me

she winked at me and I chuckled while shaking my head

Dee: ooh hey Mateo... I see you still fine as always mmmmh

mateo chuckled and got closer and kissed her cheek

Mateo: and you still a Goddess

Dee: mmmmh papi your Spanish accent still makes my nuna tingle a bit

Mateo just shook his head smiling.... Like I said she's one crazy sexy bitch

Dee: so everything is good?

*** I nodded***

Dee: good cause I need those guns

Me: I got you baby now shall we

Dee: ofcourse baby and ooh beware Drew is on his period tonight

we laughed and went to where the two gentlemen were and I shook their hands

Me: well shall we get down to business

I said with my serious tone and they nodded..... I showed them the guns and drugs we brought one of each of the merchandise that was in our container for them to test and we will have to deliver what they buy to them tomorrow.... They tasted the drugs and the guns out

Me: so?

Drew: 10 percent off for late delivery

Me: you must be high do I look like I fucken run a non-profit organization here

Drew: well they are late and my fucken customers went to get their fix somewhere else

Me: and do I look like I fucken care Andrew

Dee: come on Ray at least 5 percent off then

Me: do you want to buy or not cause I heard the big man in the north is looking for a new supplier and im sure he knows other people who want one too

Drew: wow you're full of yourself you know first of all your merchandise is fucken late and you still have a fucken mouth to threaten to take business elsewhere.... Who the fuck do you think you are

mmmmh this fucker is testing me and he won't like the outcome

Me: Andrew let's not step on each other's toes ok cause if so then only one of us will leave this warehouse alive and that will be me so its either you fucken buy or fuck off

Drew: don't fucken talk to me like that you hear me.... We pay for all this shit so if I want to vent for late deliveries I will

Me: and your fucken cents won't make me rich so whether you buy or not makes no fucken difference to me

I said taking a step closer to him with a frown on my face

Spencer: ok ok easy boys..... Ray some of us have a sexy mamasita waiting for us in bed naked so can we wrap this up quickly

Ray: at least you not on your period spencer unlike someone else

Drew: fuck you

Me: trust me you wouldn't be able to handle all this ass honey

***Devonia laughed out loud while spencer just chuckled while shaking his head and Mateo just smiled while shaking his head too as for Drew he looked like he wanted to choke me to death....

Anyway I looked at Mateo and he nodded***

Me: ok then 5 percent off and ya'll don't change the quantity of your orders

Dee: ok then im game

Spencer: you'll deliver the agreed orders to me and I'll have your money wired to you



I nodded

Spencer: ladies

he bowed a bit and left.... He's a little dramatic I know but what I like about him is he doesn't give a fuck all he cares about is making money and fucking different women

Me: what about you Drew

Drew: im taking only half of what I ordered I don't have time for incompetence

I chuckled

Me: mmmmh ok Drew...well its not on my forte to kiss peoples asses and I wont start now especially with you

*** then I turned to Devonia***

Me: same order sexy?

she nodded and I kissed her cheek

Me: we will keep in touch

Dee: ok baby

I winked at her and we took our shit and walked out with Devonia behind us we got inside the car and drove out

Me: I want you to send those videos and pictures of Andrew with his whore to his wife daughter and son

Mateo: you gonna hurt him where it hurts most

Me: hes lucky they only gonna hate him instead of him burying them..... I guess I have a heart after all

Mateo: mmmmh since senorita princess came into your life

I sighed

Me: and she's mad at me

*** I said that dialing her numbers and she didn't pick up***

Me: damn it

Mateo: she's still not picking up

I nodded and decided to send her a message

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

***ever since Mbali send Ray that sms she has been curled up in a ball on her bed crying ignoring his calls what he said to her hurt her and she felt like maybe he's not that much in love with her like he said he does and she's here prepared to disappoint her family for him while he doesn't even see her as an important factor in his life he even didn't see it fit to tell her that he was leaving the province. She kept asking herself if he was worth her losing her family's trust..... she fell asleep and woke up when her phone vibrated and he was calling again and she let it ring until it stopped and she sighed and closed her eyes again then her phone vibrated again and it was a message from Ray she opened the message and it read:

“ im sorry my flower I swear it I didn't mean what I said I don't even know why I said what I said I know you are mad at me and hurt but please my flower answer your phone so we can talk especially about that sms you send me. I love you ok”***

she reread the sms over and over and another one came through from a different number and it read: “ guess who I saw earlier today your brother the doctor at the hospital and I came this close to telling him about what his princess has been up to but then I thought maybe let me give you a chance to end things with that blesser or sugar daddy of yours I love you Mbali this is me not threatening you but saving you from disappointing your family especially your grandmother im sure she didn't raise you to date old men imagine how heartbroken she will be”

she just threw her phone next to her and buried her face on the pillow screaming and cursing at Kyle

.
. .
. .

**** The following day in the middle of the day heath was sitting in his study waiting for a call from jabu about a favor he asked from him last night then the door opened and naledi walked in holding a tray with a plate of food and she put it on the table***

Naledi: your food

Heath: thank you now come here

she went around the table and he pulled her and made her sit on top of the table and he stood up and he stood between her legs

Heath: you good

he said that cupping her face and he planted a soft kiss on her soft lips and she nodded

Heath: and my babies?

Naledi: kicking me as if I swore at their mother

*** heath laughed***

Heath: I didn't know you can crack a joke obi m

Naledi: im full of surprises my husband

he perked her lips

Heath: I love the sound of that " my husband"

naledi smiled

Heath: I love you naledi you know that right

she nodded

Heath: do you really?

Naledi: I do heath

Heath: for real?

Naledi: yeah

Heath: and never doubt It ok

Naledi: ok.....ummm can I ask you a question

he nodded

Naledi: I know you love me but why me

Heath: why not you obi m

Naledi: bathong heath

he chuckled

Heath: ok ok.... Lets say besides the fact that you are beautiful and that you have a hot body especially your ass and curves which drives me crazy I also love the fact that you have a good heart and a kind aura around you and even though you not aware of this you are one strong woman obi m.... and you just bring out the best in me which is something no other woman I've been with has achieved to do

she smiled*

Naledi: you know what I told Jolene when she insulted me

Heath: what

Naledi: that you once pointed a gun at your own parents for insulting me so I wondered what you would do to her

heath smiled at realizing that she actual knows he would hurt anyone who hurts her

Heath: so now you know I'll skin alive anyone who hurts you

*** she nodded***

Naledi: even though I think you shouldn't have done what you did to your parents but the fact that you did made me feel safe with you.... Even though sometimes im scared that you might break my heart cause im sure different women throw themselves at you but from the bottom of my heart I trust you with my life and my kids' life

he kissed her forehead

Heath: as much as you scared of me breaking your heart im also scared of losing you naledi you are the air i breathe and I cant stomach my life without you in it

she sighed

Naledi: thank you for loving me heath

she said wrapping her arms around him and he also held her and kissed the top of her head

Heath: and thank you for loving me back obi m..... come on lets eat

Naledi: ok let me go take my own plate

Heath: ok

he perked her lips and he helped her get off the table and she walked out then his phone rang... it was jabu

Heath: javas

Jabu: should they take her now or later

Heath: later and tell them to take her to that spot I had that traitor Medupe meet his ancestors at

Jabu: ok you'll be good alone right cause I need to go check out our merchandise its arriving today

Heath: yeah don't worry I'll be good

then naledi walked in

Heath: we will talk later and don't forget to send a distraught call if you need help

Jabu: ok shap...enjoy

heath chuckled

Heath: shap

they ended the call

Naledi: is everything ok

Heath: yeah it was jabu he's going to meet a potential investor for his business and you know hes not into wearing suits and meeting stuck up business men taking English all the way

*** he lied and she laughed***

Naledi: yeah but its funny that when you don't know him like we do you'd think he's one of those stuck up business men because of his stature and his physique and just his overall look but in actual fact he's just a simple kasi man who likes speaking tsotsi taal (thug language)

they laughed

Heath: and that's what makes me respect him even more cause he's true to himself and even though he has money yes he's "crazy" but he's also humble and a true kasi man

Naledi: mmmmh he's a breath of fresh air and funny

Heath: but not as funny as me right obi m

*** naledi laughed and she cleared her throat***

Naledi: ye...yeah..... ummm right onye m

then she laughed

Heath: wow naledi just wow

Naledi: what but I just agreed with you mos

Heath: mmmmh you said one thing and your facial expression said another thing

*** she held her laugh***

Naledi: ok but I love you baby even though you're not that funny

she laughed and he grabbed her and tickled her a bit making naledi to laugh out loud and that was music to heath's ears cause seeing her happy makes him happy

Naledi: ok..... ok ok askies ge heath... you are funny ok....stop stickling me please

*** He smiled and stopped tickling her and he kissed her lips then they pulled out of the kiss after some time and he stared into her eyes***

Naledi: what?

Heath: it makes me happy seeing you happy and laughing like this

Naledi: and it's all because of you

she smiled at him

Heath: and I'll do everything possible to make sure I always make you happy

she perked his lips

Naledi: and I'll try not to be impossible by crying all the time and getting mad instead of talking to you and also to meet you half way

he smiled at her

Naledi: ok Mr. Owoh-Masden lets eat your babies are hungry

.

.

.
later in the afternoon Ray landed at OR Tambo airport from Cape Town and he immediately dialed Mbali's numbers using Mateo's phone and she this time she answered

Mbali: Mat

she said softly and Ray exhaled

Ray: my flower

she kept quiet

Ray: I need to see you so we can talk

Mbali: i... I cant.... Im busy

Ray: Mbali

Mbali: ray I think we should take a break I mean I don't think we are ready for each other now and im not prepared to disappoint or even lose my family for someone who im not even sure makes me his priority

ray sighed

Ray: Mbali didn't I warn you to never try to break up with me whenever we face problems

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: im too young for you Ray I mean you have lived your life and been with many woman and now im sure you know what you want while as for me you are my second boyfriend and already

he interrupted her

Ray: Mbalentle!

he warned her

Mbali: Ray hes gonna tell my family ok and I cant have that not now anyway..... im sorry but I choose them like you said im childish and maybe you should just focus on your age mates and I'll do the same anyway it was crazy of us to think we can make this.....

***he dropped the call on her and clicked his tongue..... Mateo wanted to ask but he decided otherwise cause he could see he was mad angry ***

Mateo: to the apartment?

Ray: her apartment

*** he told him and mateo nodded and he drove there***

.

.

.

*** after some time they arrived ***

Ray: im coming

***mateo nodded and Ray got out and went inside the building..... he knocked on her door ***

Mbali: who is it?

Ray: open up

she swallowed hard and held her chest while breathing hard

Mbali: please leave Ray

Ray: MBALI I SAID OPEN THIS DAMN DOOR NOW

Mbali: no please leave Ray.... Please

she said that with a breaking voice

Ray: open this door now and say what you said to me over the phone to my face!

Mbali: please leave Ray if you don't I'll call my brothers

Ray: you think im scared of your damn brothers you clearly don't fucken know who I am..... now open this door before I fucken break it down

Mbali: Ray please just.....go please

***she then moved away from the door and she went to her bedroom and she lay in bed and cried..... Ray called out to her but there was no answer then he decided to leave before he did something stupid..... he got outside and went to his car and got in ***

Ray: Mat do you have an address of that boy she used to date

Mateo: yes jefe

Ray: good we are going hunting tonight

Mateo: roger that

then he drove out of the complex

.
. .
.

**** heath changed from his shorts and vest to a jean and gold shirt with sneakers and he took his gun in the safe and a jacket and he went downstairs and he told naleli that Ray is back and he needs to see him and that he'll be back he kissed her Omphile and lesedi's foreheads and he left..... he drove to jabu's house and he parked his car in the yard and he went inside and he unlocked using the spare key and he put his car keys on top of the counter and he took car keys of jabu's GTI cause it doesn't have a tracking device on it and he switched off his phone and left it next to his car keys and he went out and locked he went to the garage and he unlocked the GTI and got in and drove out closing the garage and he drove away after locking the gate..... he drove for like an hour or less to some bush outside Pretoria he found the guys standing next to their car smoking and as soon as he parked the car they approached***

Heath: majita

*** he greeted them***

Them: sure bozza

Heath: do you have the package

they nodded

Guy1: it's in the back

Heath: bring it out

***they did and she was busy crying and as soon as she saw heath her eyes popped out ***

Jolene: hea...heath

Heath: where are your phones?

he asked the guys

Guy2: we have them

Heath: I hope they are off

they nodded

Heath: ok leave them in the car now

*** they did and went to join him***

Jolene: heath wha...what's going on?

Heath: you had to call my wife and insult her Jolene

*** he pulled out his gun which had a silencer on and she cried***

Jolene: im sorry please I was just hurt I didn't mean to call her I was....

he interrupted her

Heath: SHUT UP....SHUT THE FUCK UP..... YOU SHOULD BE GRATEFUL THAT I FOUND YOU ANOTHER JOB INSTEAD OF LEAVING YOU HANGING BUT NO YOU HAD TO CALL MY WIFE RIGHT

Jolene: im sorry heath please don't hurt me

she continued to cry

Heath: im sure she told you I once pointed a gun at my own parents for hurting her right..... now listen to me and listen good no one not even my parents hurts my wife and gets away with it.....in your next life stop running after other women's husbands and find your own you hear me

Jolene: please heath im sorry never again I promise

Heath: pray for a safe passage to heaven

Jolene: heath please

Heath: I SAID PRAY DAMN IT!

he shouted at her and she quickly closed her eyes and silently prayed then he aimed the gun at her and he pulled the trigger and shot her execution style (on the forehead) and she fell back

Heath: may God accept your useless soul for the fact that you were once a fucken good PA

Guy3: AMEN!

and the guys chuckled but heath kept a straight face

Heath: take off her jacket and cover her face and clean the tire tracks and pick up your stompies of cigarettes and lets leave this fucken place

one guy covered her face with her own jacket and they went to break two branches and as heath and one of the guys drove away from the scene the other two guys were busy sweeping off the tires tracks of their cars and they picked their cigarette buds

32

INSERT.....32

.

.

.

NARRATED

*** They parked not far from Kyle's apartment the complex***

Mateo: how do you want to deal with this prey jefe?

Ray: I want to end him so bad but if I hurt him Mbali will surely suspect me and I can't have that already she's mad at me so I want him hooked on drugs and his creditability questioned

Mateo: ok how do we go about it?

Ray: sedate him then inject him with meth and plant cocaine in his room and send a distraught sms to his brother the one that stays closer to his apartment and let everything fall into place

Mateo: ok that's easy

Ray: yeah so lets switch our phones off

***they did and Mateo got out of the car and put fake number plates on the front and at the back of the car on top of the original ones and he got back in the car and he drove to the entrance gate and they signed in using fake names and he drove in..... they got out of the car wearing caps and they made sure they avoided cctv cameras and they went inside the building they went up to his apartment and Mateo wore a balaclava to cover his face and they both wore rubber gloves and Mateo took out a cloth and poured chloroform on it and he knocked on the door and after some time Kyle opened the door wearing only his boxers and Mateo quickly grabbed him and he put the cloth

of his mouth and nose while pushing him inside and Kyle passed out while Ray went to each and every room searching if he's alone and yep he was he went to help Mateo and they carried him to the main bedroom and put him on top of the bed and Mateo went to lock the door and he went back to bedroom and found Ray busy planting drugs in his bedroom he poured some cocaine on top of the drawer and put the packet inside his drawer and he used Kyle's card to divide them into three lines and he took out R50 rand inside Kyle's wallet and he rolled it and left it next to the cocaine..... Mateo took off his balaclava and he got busy on Kyle's phone and he was busy memorizing the type of style and way Kyle wrote his messages and then he typed a suicidal message and it read; " im sorry bro but I cnt take it anymore I tried but princess jst wnt give me a second chance and on top of it all I got another gal pregnant and I dnt love her even one bit and now princess has even moved on and I cnt allow that bro I love her so its better I jst kill her and kill myself cause if I cnt have her no one will tell mom and dad im sorry and that I love them"***

Mateo: im done

Ray: come and help me hold him so I can use his hand to touch and inject him while im holding him from behind

Mateo helped him tie a belt on Kyle's upper arm first and Ray injected him with the syringe that has meth inside and they lay him down and they left the syringe next to him.....Mateo took Kyle's phone and send that sms and they checked around to see if they left anything incriminating and there was none so they walked out closing the door but not locking it they took off their gloves and put them in their pockets and they walked to the elevator

Mateo: so jefe how are you gonna deal with your flower

Ray sighed

Ray: I don't know I just hate the fact that whenever the going gets tough between us she breaks things off

Mateo: she's still young jefe and I think she just freaks out and in this case she's both mad at you and freaked out

Ray: young or not Mat but breaking up with me whenever we fight or when things get tough is a fucken no no and fucken childish

Mateo: just don't call her childish jefe cause even though she's young well she's also a woman and they don't like being called that

*** Ray kept quiet cause he knows he did even worse by calling her an annoying teenager.... They got out of the elevator and walked out ***

Ray: you know im not cut out for this committed relationship shit Mat it's just not me

Mateo: then why are you still with her

Ray: I have no idea but the thing is I can't help it my heart yearns for her even though my mind tells me im gonna end up hurting her and believe me I love her and I would hate to hurt her in any way
Mateo: then don't hurt her cause besides the fact that you love her remember she's nighthawk's daughter and killer's only granddaughter

Ray sighed and they got inside their car and Mateo drove out

.
. .
. . .

*** Kyle's elder brother Ayanda reached his phone that was on the table when it beeped and he saw that it was Kyle and he opened it after reading it he quickly called Kyle back but he didn't answer***

Ayanda: damn it

his wife walked in

Bella: honey what's wrong

she asked as she could see the worried look on his face

Ayanda: its Kyle I think something is wrong with him

he said standing up and grabbing his car keys

Bella: what do you mean did something happen to him

Ayanda: I don't know but I think he's not in his right state of mind

he kissed her cheek

Ayanda: let me go check up on him

Bella: ok keep me updated

Ayanda: I will.... I love you

Bella: I love you too

*** he walked out and went to his car and he drove out..... he arrived at his complex and got out and rushed inside the building into the elevator and as soon as it opened he walked out going straight to his apartment and he knocked but the was no answer he knocked for some time then he turned the knot and the door wasn't locked then he let himself in***

Ayanda: YOH KYLE!

he called out to him but the was no answer

Ayanda: KYLE! I GOT YOUR MESSAGE WHERE ARE YOU

he said walking further in.....He went to his bedroom and when he walked in he cursed

Ayanda: WHAT THE FUCK

***he looked around and saw the cocaine on top of the drawer and he got closer to the bed and he saw the syringe next to Kyle and the belt tied around his upper arm and he quickly searched for

Kyle's pulse and it was there then undid the belt and he sat down on the bed and he put his hands on top of his head not believing the path his brother took for a girl***

.
. .

MBALI

*** The following day I woke up and got ready for my lectures I was wearing a short loose summer dress six inch black ankle boots and a black leather jacket and I left my hair loose and I took my things and left I didn't even have an appetite for food I was just drained nje. Anyway I walked out of my apartment building and I went to my car and guess who I found there none other than Raymond himself he was leaning on my car smoking ok since when does he smoke.... Anyway I walked closer to my car and he threw the cigarette on the ground and stepped on it***

Me: hi

he didn't say anything he just looked at me with an unsettling frown and I swallowed.... He was probably looking at the way my dress was short cause his eyes would go to my bare thighs every now and then

Me: ummm ok...can you please move I need to get in my car

still nothing he was now looking at me in the eyes as if he's searching for something in me

Me: Raymond please move I don't wanna get late for my lectures

Ray: ooh so im Raymond now?

Me: it's your name right?

*** I said it with a bit of attitude in my tone and he chuckled an unsettling chuckle and I swallowed hard cause it was clear he was pissed but I just didn't care this instance***

Ray: ok then miss attitude I'll be waiting for you after your lectures and make no mistake of dodging me cause you'll regret it

Me: I have things i have do after attending

Ray: do I look like I care.... I'll see you in a few hours

he got closer and kissed my forehead and he walked away..... mxm fucken jerk nx..... anyway I got inside my car and drove out I got to the campus and I got out of my car and I locked it and as I walked away I bumped into someone and I almost fell but luckily he caught me before I could

Guy: Im so sorry

I got off his grip and I got a chance to look at him and damn he was handsome no lies....he was white with blue eyes.... God damn it he's handsome people.... I cleared my throat

Me: ummmm I also wasn't looking where I was going so im sorry too

he smiled gosh I felt my knees getting weak

Guy: Derrick is the name

ummm ok

Me: princess

*** we shook hands and he held my hand a bit longer until I pulled it back***

Derrick: nice name princess

Me: ummm thanks look I gotta go I don't wanna be late

he cleared his throat

Derrick: ummm yeah sure

Me: bye

I walked away not waiting for his response

.
. .
. . .

****NARRATED****

*** After her lectures she walked to her car she was tired and hungry all she wanted was food and a sleep but then all that came crashing down when she saw Ray leaning against her car smoking again and she huffed slowing down a bit that's until someone called her name and she stopped walking ***

Voice: princess

she turned and it was Derrick the guy she bumped into earlier on and she swallowed cause Ray was looking at her direction

Mbali: ummm hey Derrick

Derrick: going home

she nodded and she looked over at Ray and he wasn't smoking now both his hands was inside his pockets looking at her direction.....he looked sexy as hell but his face looked deadly

Derrick: I was thinking maybe we could go grab some lunch if you don't mind

Mbali: ummm I can't today maybe some other time

she said trying to walk away but he blocked her

Derrick: ok can I get your digits then

Mbali: I really have to go

*** she said that seeing that Ray was now walking towards her but the dude didn't want her to leave without getting her numbers***

Mbali: please move I need to leave Derrick

Derrick: not until you give me your digits beautiful

*** he smiled and she swallowed***

Mbali: I don't wanna give you my number now move out of my way please!

she snapped at him and he smirked

Derrick: wow and she's fierce mmmh my kind of lady

Voice: Mbali lets go

*** Derrick turned and was met by an angry Ray and Mbali moved and she went closer to him and Ray cupped her face but the grip was tight and painful and Ray faked a smile looking in her in the eyes***

Ray: you ok baby

she wanted to nod but the grip was tight

Mbali: ye....yes

she said with a whisper and Ray perked her lips

Ray: good

he then let her go and turned to Derrick who had a frown on his face

Ray: you still here white boy

Derrick clenched his jaws

Ray: move before you lose your fucken teeth!

he ordered him and Derrick looked at Mbali who looked down and he shook his head

Derrick: I guess I'll see you tomorrow princess

then he looked at Ray and started walking

Ray: she's not just anyone's girl white boy but she's mine and now you better think carefully before you do something that might cost you your useless life or your family members' life capish

*** Derrick quickly turned and looked at him as for Mbali she gasped at that statement ***

Derrick: are you threatening me man

Ray: I don't threaten or argue with small children boy now keep stepping!

*** he warned him then he looked at Mbali***

Ray: let's go

***they walked away leaving Derrick standing there mad as hell.....Ray took keys from Mbali and they got in the car and he adjusted the seat and buckled up then they drove away they drove in total

silence until they parked outside a really beautiful modern day double story glass house and Ray took out his phone and made a call***

Ray: are you already here

Caller: im four minutes away

Ray: ok

then he ended the call and turned to look at Mbali who was looking outside the window

Ray: is that why you wearing this short dress so you can fish for a new boyfriend

he said with an angry voice and Mbali didn't say anything

Ray: im talking to you Mbali

Mbali: and I don't wanna talk to you Raymond

she said that not even looking at him and ray chuckled

Ray: mmmmh just so you know once we done here im gonna take you to my place and im gonna fuck you until you see it fit to talk to me

Mbali: mmmmh

ray just shook his head with a smirk on his face

Ray: my Mrs. LA PARCA feisty and stubborn as ever but im still gonna punish you

Mbali just ignored him..... soon the property agent arrived and ray got out and he went to open the door for Mbali and he stretched out his hand to her

Mbali: I'll wait in the car

Ray: no now come

Mbali: I don't wanna embarrass you in front of her with my childish behavior so I'll wait for you in the car

he sighed

Ray: im sorry I said that ok and we will talk about it later for now can we just go inside and view this house

Mbali: nope I rather wait here

ray clenched his jaws

Ray: Mbali I know you angry at me but now you pissing me off

Sponsored

now come

Mbali: I don't wanna embarrass you in front of her with my childish behavior so I'll wait for you in the car

he sighed

Ray: im sorry I said that ok and we will talk about it later for now can we just go inside and view this house

Mbali: nope I rather wait here

ray clenched his jaws

Ray: Mbali I know you angry at me but now you pissing me off now get the fuck out of this car and let's go in

*** she swallowed and looked at him with teary eyes and Ray sighed and rubbed his eyes frustrated at himself for not keeping his cool..... she got out of the car fighting the tears back and she fixed her dress and Ray closed the door and tried to hold her hand but she moved her hand away and Ray clenched his jaws.... They walked to the Agent and Ray greed her and Mbali just smiled at her when she greeted them back***

Ray: ummm my flower this is Anna-Marie Ann this is Mbali

Anna: well its nice meeting you Mbali

Mbali: same here

Mbali said faking a smile

Anna: ok now we can go in I know you'll love it cause it has everything you want Ray

Ray: ok

they walked after her and Ray held Mbali's hand and she yanked it off his grip and walked away from him and he felt like someone just punched him on his gut.... He swallowed and clenched his jaws as the painful feeling he felt in his heart was foreign to him..... well Anna-Marie was busy telling them about the property but Ray was busy concentrating on Mbali who was not even minding him

Anna: well this is the lounge and that is a dining area and there's also a Tv room and a cinema room.... Lets go this way

they followed her and she kept on talking and Ray was busy looking at Mbali who seemed not interested to be here

Ray: what do you think about this lounge my flower

Anna-Marie stopped talking and looked at them

Mbali: its beautiful and welcoming

***she faked a smile and Ray saw that and he sighed.... Anna-Marie continued.... Well the décor was exquisite the house itself looked pretty much expensive it had a pool Jacuzzi and a pool house..... it had 5 bedrooms upstairs and the 6th one was downstairs and all of them had en-suites and a separate toilet in the hallway upstairs and another one downstairs..... as for the kitchen and master bedroom yho they were just breath taking and even though Mbali was angry at Ray but she

couldn't ignore the fact that the house was just beautiful and as for the master bedroom it was huge and the glass walls were deemed from outside when you are outside you can't see inside the room but when you are inside you can see everything outside and it also had a remote control that can deem the lights in the bedroom and it can also close and open the glass wall with curtains just by a click of a button....the house also had a big double door garage..... well the house was just something out of this world it was just something you'd see on top billing..... they were now downstairs in the lounge***

Anna: so?

Ray: my flower?

Anna-Marie kept asking if Ray was Mbali's uncle or even her brother cause she could see that she was a little young and innocent to be in a relationship with him especially a committed one at that but she kept quiet cause its none of her business

Mbali: I love the house especially the master bedroom and kitchen

Anna: well I also love them especially the master bedroom

she said smiling at Mbali who returned the smile back

Anna: so Ray?

he told her to call him by his name instead of his surname

Ray: if she loves it then we will take it

ok that means she's the girlfriendshe thought to herself

Anna: great so can we discuss the capital and payment plan

Ray: im paying cash

she looked at him surprised

Anna: wow ok

Ray: and you better tell the current owner we are moving in by next week

Anna: ok ummm let me call him and let him know

ray nodded

Mbali: how much did it cost

she asked not even looking at him

Ray: you can't even look at me now Mbali

Mbali: never mind

***she kept quiet and Ray sighed.... Now he could see that she's really mad at him and he didn't know how to handle it he missed touching her and kissing and seeing her smile but the way things are between him and Mbali he could see that he needs advice on how to handle himself in a

committed relationship especially what to say and what not to say what to do and what not to do cause he was failing dismally..... well Anna-Marie walked back in***

Anna: so I talked to him and he said its ok plus he will get a chance to move to the UK early and settle in well before he starts with his new Job

Ray: great so we can meet tomorrow for payment and stuff

Anna: ok we can meet during lunch time I'll call you with the location since I don't know which side of the town I'll be at

Ray: good thank you

***they shook hands with Mbali too ***

Ray: before we go..... Can you help me look for a plot of land that is big enough to be turned into a medi-clinic

Anna: ok ummm budget wise

Ray: not more than 3 million and it should be around Pretoria

Anna: ok I'll get back to you

Ray: good... lets go my flower

they walked out and Anna-Marie did a happy dance to the amount of money she was gonna get

Anna: thank you God for making him choose to call me instead of other Agents cause now I'll be able to pay for mom's medical bills without any hustle

she prayed

.
. .

*** As soon as they got outside Ray unlocked the car and Mbali got in and he took out his phone from his pocket and dialed his brother's numbers and he answered on the third ring***

Heath: big Ray haw far? (hey)

Ray: bros you home

Heath: yeah wetin dey? (what's up?)

Ray: call jabs to come to your house later I need to talk to the two of you

Heath: wetin dey happen? (what's going on?)

Ray: nothing serious I just want your advice on something

Heath: wetin be that

Ray: women

Heath: heh... i no sabi bros (I don't understand bro)

Ray: my own mamiwota is mad at me for being myself and now I see its gonna be a problem cause this is me bros but I love her and I can't lose her so I need to know how ya'll do it

Heath: NAWA OH! (wow!)..... your what? And wait you love someone?

Ray: mxm shut up my friend I know you heard me

heath laughed out loud

Heath: wait a minute did you just say you in love with a woman?....heh jabu needs to hear this.....

God is good hey

Ray: I go land you slap Ezeh now call jabs and stop acting like an idiot

heath just laughed

Heath: heh big Ray is in love..... God I can't believe this

Ray: mxm

he dropped the call and smirked then he got in the car and drove out

Ray: you still mad at me

he asked Mbali and she kept quiet looking out of the window and he sighed cause he felt like she is being childish now

Ray: im trying here Mbali can you atleast meet me half way

Mbali: what exactly are you trying Raymond

Ray: can you stop calling me by my full name....please

Mbali: why isn't it your name?

he huffed and clenched his jaws

Ray: what the hell do you want from me Mbali I apologized but still you giving me attitude

Mbali: attitude? Really Raymond

Ray: I SAID STOP CALLING ME BY MY FULL NAME ARE YOU DEAF!

he warned her and she jumped a bit startled and she swallowed looking at him

Mbali: and his is the reason I want this thing between us to end

***he parked next to the road and unbuckled he seat belt and he turned to look at her with a scary frown on his face ***

Ray: you don't listen abi?

***she didn't say anything ***

Ray: IM TALKING TO YOU DAMN IT!

Mbali: IM NOT YOUR CHILD SO STOP SHOUTING AT ME

Ray: you raise your voice when you talk to me now Mbali?

Mbali: you know what im tired of all this Ray your problem is when you look at me you see a child instead of a woman.... If you cant handle dealing with a "woman" like me then let me go please

cause im not desperate for love if im too much for you just let me go cause I will not be emotionally abused by you

he gave her a death stare

Ray: im abusing you now Mbali

Mbali: then what do you call telling me to stop acting like your wife calling me annoying and childish how do you think those things do to me emotionally Ray? I thought I meant something to you then you leave for cape town without telling me and when I voice out my concerns im being childish and annoying..... in other words you want me to be your "YES HONEY" and " NO HONEY" kinda girlfriend isn't it ? well if so then you are in a relationship with a wrong girl cause I know my worth and I definitely will not settle for all that no matter how much I love you

ray chuckled then he clenched his jaw resting the back of his head on the head rest of the car seat feeling disrespected in the most possible way

Mbali: and now im telling you how I feeling and you get angry

Ray: DID I SAY IM ANGRY

Mbali: ooh please Ray when you angry pissed off or mad you clench your jaws and chuckle

well they both kept quiet for some time until Ray spoke

Ray: I told you im not used to this relationship thing

Mbali: and who is mmmmh look I gave my all to Kyle and did things committed girlfriends do to their boyfriends and he still cheated on me do you think all this is easy for me mmmmh im scared ok im scared you gonna cheat too or we gonna fight and you'll walk out on me and never look back I mean you've been with different women and you've seen it all while I've only been with one guy my entire life even in high school I never gave in to peer pressure and dated and now im with you and you seem to know it all and perfect while im clueless

Ray: baby

Mbali: im not done Ray

she interrupted him and he kept quiet

Mbali: you were wrong to leave without telling me you were out of line for speaking to me like you did over the phone and earlier when you forced me out of the car..... I will not be controlled by you Ray ok I already deal with that every fricken day with my family and I damn well will not go through that with my man too I know there will be times when you'll stop me or "order me" not to go out with friends cause you'll feel like I won't be safe or my life might be in danger but I will not live everyday being controlled by you..... and stop calling me childish or annoying

she breathed out trying to calm herself down all this time Ray is quiet looking at her

Mbali: and stop seeing me as a child but as your woman you missing rib and the love of your life and your better half and start respecting me as one too or let me go

ray just kept quiet preventing himself from saying anything cause he knew if he did she will surely break up with him and he cant have that but yeses inside he was pissed as hell by being told off by a woman more over his woman..... he was also pissed by the fact that he can't even choke her to death like the La Parca in him wants him to

Ray: now are you done lecturing me

Mbali: that's all you can say to me Ray

Ray: I listened so what more do you want from me

Mbali: you know whatever RAYMONDim done nx

Ray: done what

Mbali: just drive me home please

he just shook his head and started the car and drove away..... soon they arrived and they got out of the car and Mbali got out with her bag and he gave her her car keys and she locked it and attempted to walk away but he held her arm and pulled her closer and he perked her lips

Ray: today should be the last time you speak to me like you did earlier on do I make myself clear!

she just looked at him defeated

Ray: I said do I make myself clear!

Mbali: yes

Ray: good.... I love you and I'll do better I promise ok

she just nodded

Ray: I'll see you later

he kissed her forehead and walked away taking out car keys from his pocket and he unlocked a black land rover parked on the visitors parking lot and he got in and drove out

Mbali: wow like really?..... so this guy drove here and parked his car and came to campus with an uber..... Gosh what have I gotten myself into this guy is unstable and mad crazy but Gosh I love him.... does that make me stupid and gullible? God give me strength to deal with him cause I don't think I have it in me to

she said that to herself and she sighed and walked inside the building drained as hell*

33

INSERT.....33

.
.

.
NARRATED

*** Heath Ray and Jabu were sitting in his study drinking***

Ray: when is Mj going back?

Jabu: good question big Ray

Heath chuckled

Heath: you already tired of him?

Jabu: eish Mshikaro you have no idea..... Every day he comes to my workplace and flirts with my female staffs at his age then he insists we go passed ko kasi so he can go see some chick there

he said shaking his head and they laughed

Jabu: le sa laga gents ke gatvol ka dai ntwana (don't laugh guys im up to here with that kid) im serious

Heath: well you know he's fond of you cause you live thee good life according to him while i live a boring life

Ray: well as for me he knows I don't take his shit so he won't even try acting smart with me

Jabu: well he's annoying and tiring but he's also crazy and entertaining..... im surely gonna miss him when he goes back home

Ray: that's until he's back again during December holidays

*** they laughed***

Jabu: eish don't remind me

they laughed again

Ray: so Ezeh how are things with star's NGO

Heath: everything is coming together since I was able to buy that building that was john's now that he's imprisoned and next month on her birthday everything will be ready

Ray: good good and im glad that bastard john or whatever the fuck his name is fell for my trap and divorced that bitch Tsholo before going to prison

Jabu: yeses that bastard loves moola yeer

Ray: ooh well I guess it's true when they say that a stubborn fly follows a corpse into the grave

they nodded

Heath: so big Ray what's up with you..... you said you in love and shit

jabu chuckled

Jabu: eeeh Ray-Ray tell me what Mshikaro told me isn't true that you in love

Ray sighed cause he knew he won't hear the end of it

Ray: yeah its true

Jabu and heath whistled looking amused while Ray just chuckled while shaking his head

Jabu: o serious?

he nodded

Jabu: oww madoda God is great ooo

Heath: all the time man

they laughed and Ray chuckled

Ray: can you too get serious abeg

Heath: ok ok we are listening... So what advise do you need from us?

then the door opened and Mj peeped in then he walked in

Ray: and now?

Mj: why are you three sitting in here while im sitting with the ladies bored to death while they watched their boring tv shows

Ray: cause we are having an adult conversation

Mj: well im also an adult

*** he said walking further in***

Heath: since when?

Mj: since the day I started having sex

they looked at him like he's crazy

Mj: what?

Heath: im not even gonna say anything

Mj: bros im old enough to be a father so im an adult meaning I can sit in on this "adult conversation"

Ray: well im not saying anything with him around

Mj: why not cause the only things im sure I've never done that you three have done is wake up in the morning to go to work and to kill someone or have them killed

Heath: the fuck MJ?

jabu laughed

Ray: are you for real now Mj

Mj: im dead serious as a heart attack

he sat down

Mj: so what are we discussing?

heath and Jabu laughed

Jabu: I give up with you Mj

Mj: thank you bros so what are we discussing

heath laughed while shaking his head

Heath: anyway big Ray you were saying?

Ray: im not discussing my personal shit with him here

Mj: why not bros am I not your brother

Ray: an annoying one at that

Mj: but still im your brother

Ray just shook his head

Ray: anyway the thing is im having problems with my woman

Mj: wait a minute..... did you say your woman.... You have a woman bros?

Ray: will you just shut it or leave this room

Mj raised his hands in surrender and Heath and Jabu chuckled

Heath: go on bros

Ray sighed

Ray: well you know I've never been in a relationship before and well let's just say I have been fucking things up lately with her

Jabu: how?

Ray: losing my cool saying things I shouldn't say to my woman and treating her like a child instead of my woman

Heath: child?..... how old is she big Ray?

Ray: almost 21

Mj chocked on his spit and he started coughing while Jabu and Heath looked at Ray with their eyes popped out

Jabu: what the fuck Ray.... That means she's 20 years younger than you

Ray: yeah so?

Mj: wow I didn't see this one coming

Heath: me neither

Ray: well that's not all

Jabu: let me guess.....she's a virgin?

Ray: no..... she's nighthawk's daughter

Heath: which nighthawk?

he asked with a frown on his face

Ray: killer the dragon's slayer's son

Jabu&heath: WHAT?

*** they shouted standing up and Ray nodded***

Heath: ARE YOU OUT OF YOUR FRICKEN MIND RAY

Ray: no

he said with a calm voice

Jabu: big Ray you do know you're playing with fire right you can't date nighthawk's daughter
man come on

Mj: ummm bros who's nighthawk?

Jabu: someone you don't wanna mess with especially with his only daughter

Mj: oooh is he like a gangster or something

Heath: a mafia boss

Mj: oooh shit!

Heath: yeah.... oooh shit!

Ray: well I don't give a shit who her father is I love her so im here to get pointers on how to treat
her good and right not for ya'll to tell me I can't be with her cause nothing will make me leave
her

*** they just looked at him***

Ray: so how do ya'll do it?

the guys kept quiet while looking at him shocked

Ray: will you snap out of it already

they just shook their heads defeated

Heath: you do know the outcome of your relationship with her right will be right?

he nodded

Ray: well she'll graduate and I'll marry her and she'll become MRS. La Parca and she'll also
bear children for me and I'll make her the happiest woman on earth

jabu and Heath just shook their heads defeated again

Mj: damn you seem serious about her bros

Ray: dead serious as a heart attack

Mj chuckled

Mj: ok bros so what did you do to the poor girl

Ray: I go slap you Mj

Mj laughed

Mj: ok sorry ooo you may continue

Ray just shook his head

Ray: let's say I said some hurtful shit to her cause she got mad that I went to Cape Town without informing her

Heath: mmmmh you lucky she didn't kick your balls I mean she's nighthawk's seed

Ray: what?

they laughed

Heath: naledi would have parked my shit and kicked me out of the house or better yet gave me the silent treatment which is the worst bros

Jabu: Look Ray Ray for as long as you are not dating one of those slay queens aka gold diggers then communication is the key mfowethu

Heath: and it shows she loves you too cause a woman who is only after your money won't be mad that you left the province without informing her cause she only cares about your moola so she won't waste her precious time being mad about you going to Cape town as if you went to the moon cause she knows you'll make it up to her with expensive gifts and shit so it shows that she cares

Jabu: so did she kick your nuts

Mj chuckled

Ray: well she exploded and lashed out on me and the fact that she's still breathing it shows that she means a lot to me that's why I need advice on how to deal with this shit cause I fail dismally bros

Mj: mmmmh that's why im still shocked that you actually love someone who has a vagina between her legs..... pussy must be good abi?

Ray stood up quickly ready to grab Mj and Mj also stood up quickly and ran out of the study leaving Jabu and Heath laughing

Ray: are you sure he's our brother

he said sitting down and they laughed

Heath: on a serious note Ray if you need to make your relationship work you need to put yourself in her shoes whenever you do something or say something that might hurt her or make her angry..... women are complicated creatures and believe me they don't understand themselves too so who are we to understand them but if you want to enjoy your relationship then you need to at least try to understand her

Jabu: mmmmh and believe me when you do even your fights and arguments will be short and the makeup sessions will be the bomb

they laughed

Heath: be humble sometimes and think before you say something and always know that she's always right

Jabu: yeah she is even if she's wrong

they laughed

Ray: that's just wrong in so many ways

Heath: in the department of love big bro its right in so many ways

Jabu: hear hear

he said raising his glass and heath also raised his glass

Ray: guys you know me and you know I hate being told what to do and begging someone

Jabu: Ray Ray my man listen if you love that khumalo girl then you need to make her happy and her being happy is if you put her feelings into consideration always and also make her the center of your universe listen when she talks and know when she's mad happy angry and sad and when she's lying and also telling the truth

Heath: mmmmh and always tell her you love her and that she's beautiful all the time even when she wakes up in the morning looking like something a cow vomited out with her hair all messed up her lips all dry and her eyes puffy and ugly

they laughed

Jabu: ooh and spoil her rotten and if she's not like all those girls who like material things just like my Amo

Heath: and my Naledi

Jabu: then make the spoiling special like dinner or a picnic or a road trip or something along those lines

*** Ray just chuckled***

Ray: but all that is just sucking up to a woman

Heath: no that's called showing appreciation to your woman man

Ray: this is all too much

Jabu: well if you love your girl it won't even be enough

Ray sighed

Ray: I guess.... Shit I fucked up man can you believe I snapped at her and told her to stop acting like a childish teenager and to also stop acting like my wife

Jabu: ah ah ah ah ah..... yeeer Ray Ray o flopale my bra (you messed up my brother)

Heath: yeah he did..... if it was Naledi she would have dumped me

Jabu: well if it was Amo she would have made my life a living hell by giving me a cold shoulder or better yet told me to fuck off

Ray: I thought she's a church girl

Jabu: her father is a pastor and she goes to church but she can tell you to fuck off or go suck a dick if she wants

they laughed

Heath: I see she's one of a kind abi

Jabu: yep.... She always keeps me on my toes cause I don't know if she'll bring out the church girl side or the diva side

they laughed

Ray: well I think she's like Mbali..... damn the way she lashed out on me impressed the shit out of me more than it bruised my ego

Heath: mmmh do you have her picture

he took out his phone and showed them his screensaver and they whistled

Jabu: aow Ray Ray.... Mrayriri.... Big Ray bra yaka..... yeses die dang ke lepyatla yong leshandapha my bra..... heeh mamiwota.... ke ra yona watermeisie man.... Yeeerrrr

heath laughed out loud while Ray chuckled.... Even though Ray only understood some of the words jabu said and not the whole thing he said but he knew he was just being dramatic nje

Jabu: (whistled) yeerrrr die cherry o mooi (this girl is beautiful) man no wonder you want to change I would also change for her no matter what her age is

they laughed

Ray: but it won't be easy cause her brothers are assholes and they won't accept our relationship but you know what fuck them they will accept us even if I have to force them to

Jabu: and how are you gonna do that

he smirked

Ray: Ray junior

Heath: fuck nooo

Ray: fuck yeah

Jabu: well then we must prepare ourselves for world war 16

Ray: it won't get to that trust me

he took his phone and send Mbali a message telling her they need to talk so she should come to his place tomorrow after her lectures and she replied with " OK"

.

.

.

Ray: hey

Mbali: hi

Ray: come in

she did and walked to the lounge and she sat down on the couch

Ray: anything to drink?

she shook her head no and he sat on top of the table facing her and he sighed

Mbali: are you ok..... you look offish

she asked him and he looked at her

Ray: look I thought about what happened earlier and....

he sighed

Ray: I don't think we are ready for each other Mbali

she looked at him with her eyes popped out

Mbali: askies?

Ray: this is me and im gonna remain like this cause it's who I am I hate being told what to do and what not to do and I hate begging it's just not in my genes..... and I can't be nursing your feelings all the time just because you can't handle being with me..... this is me Mbali and I remember telling you that im new in this love department

she swallowed hard with tears on the brink of coming out she couldn't believe Ray was saying all this to her

Ray: look I love you and I always will but we both can see that this thing between us won't work so let's just stop it before any one of us gets hurts cause I hate being disrespected Mbali and you did that earlier and you never even apologized for doing so but you want me to grovel on the floor for leaving without informing you it doesn't work like that

tears ran down her cheeks she couldn't believe Ray was breaking up with her

Mbali: ray please don't do this im begging you you promised you wont hurt me

she said that crying and Ray stood up

Ray: let's be realistic here Mbali no one will approve of us being together and you still young I cant always be chasing and threatening small boys to stay away from you just because you cant tell them to fuck off

Mbali: is this about that guy Derrick? I don't know him I swear Ray he was just asking for my numbers and I refused to give them to him I swear nothing is going on between him and I

he chuckled

Ray: wow and you even remember his name how cute.... look let's just call it quits plus your brothers will never accept us together so just focus on your age mates and I'll do the same

Mbali: Ray please don't do this im begging you I'll stop being an nuisance and accept you the way you are please don't break up with me im begging you

*** she said crying trying to touch him but he moved away***

Ray: look you should leave I have some work I need to do... it was good while it lasted

he said looking at her with a straight face and Mbali felt her chest tightening..... then a loud knock was heard on the door

Voice: RAY OPEN THIS FUCKEN DOOR GOD IM GONNA FUCKEN KILL YOU FOR MESSING WITH MY SISTER... OPEN THIS FUCKEN DOOR YOU SON OF A BITCH.... MBALI I FUCKEN KNOW YOU IN HERE OPEN THIS FUCKEN DOOR BEFORE I BREAK IT DOWN

*** it was one of her brother's and she froze then she felt like her soul was being sucked out of her body and she held her chest tight struggling to breath she heard Ray calling out her name but he sounded far then..... BOOOM she woke up panting and she quickly got out of bed and she stood next to it while holding her chest as she could still feel the pain she felt in her dream....

She was trying to catch her breath and she was sweating with her hands shaking***

Mbali: God it it was a dream I was.....i was just dreaming..... jeez

she said that to herself while siting down at the edge of the bed trying to calm herself down with tears running down her cheeks..... she then took her phone and read his massage again the one he send her before she fell asleep and she breathed in and out

Mbali: ooh my God what if.....

***she stopped and she sighed..... the pain she felt in her dream and also when she woke up was similar to the pain she felt when she found out Kyle slept with Phindile and also got her pregnant and at the same time she knows that 80 percent of her dreams usually comes true so meaning this dream might come true just like two days before she was kidnapped with her brothers' wives along with their kids the time she saw her brother Smiso killed that man in front of her she dreamed she was in a dark place and she couldn't see anything all she could hear was her brothers' wives screaming for help and her nieces and nephews screaming for their mothers and she was also screaming out for help then two days later they were kidnapped and one of her brother's wife almost got raped so she's scared the same thing might happen now meaning Ray might actually want to end things with her she knows Ray hates being disrespected and she did that earlier even though it was more of her expressing herself than anything else but since Ray is a different breed all together maybe he saw her as childish or something and maybe he realized he's wasting his time with her (she thought to herself)..... Anyway it was now around 10 at night so she stood up and wore her gown and as she was about to walk out of her bedroom her

phone rang it was Ray and her heart started beating fast.... She let it ring until he dropped it then she sighed and went to the kitchen to make something to eat for herself***

.
. .

*** the following morning she woke up and did her hygiene process and got dressed in ripped jeans a simple t-shirt a sweater (since it was chilly outside) and a pair of her expensive wedge sneakers and she tied her hair into a messy bun and wore her reading glasses (to hide her puffy eyes) and she took her things and as soon as she opened the door she found Ray standing there he was ready to knock.... Her heart pounded hard against her chest as she looked at his frowned face***

Mbali: h...hi

she said that and looked down Ray wanted to shout at her but then besides the fact that he remembered what Jabu and Heath advised him he could also see her eyes through the glasses and he knew she has been crying so he took a deep breath

Ray: hi

she turned and closed the door and locked it and turned to Ray

Mbali: I should go.... I don't wanna be late for my lectures

Ray: you've been crying

she swallowed and looked away

Mbali: I should go bye

she tried to walk but he grabbed her arm

Ray: my flower what's wrong

Mbali: it's nothing I should go Ray

he looked at her intensely

Ray: ok I'll drop you off we using my car

she swallowed and nodded... they left and soon they arrived at campus and he parked and turned to look at her

Ray: talk to me my flower I can see something is wrong

she kept quiet for some time

Mbali: do you wanna break up with me is that why you wanted us to talk because I disrespected you?

she asked not even looking at him and he frowned then he sighed

Ray: look at me

she did slowly

Ray: I thought I told you I'll never let you go or leave you.... I just wanted us to talk things through

***she looked away feeling a bit relieved ***

Mbali: I dreamed of you telling me its over cause I disrespected you.... It felt so real that I woke up with a sharp pain in my chest

Ray sighed

Ray: it was just a dream Mbali I'd never break up with you even though that's what's you do most of the time

she sighed

Mbali: you don't get it Ray 80 percent of my dreams come true every time

she said and swallowed with tears threatening to come out..... the heart break pain she felt in her dream and when she found out Kyle cheated was still there it's like that dream she dreamed of lifted off the closing lid that covered the wound that Kyle left in her heart..... it was as if she found out yesterday or something and the fight and dream she had of Ray didn't help.... Now she knew that she didn't mourn the death of her relationship with Kyle and her friendship with Phindile like she should have

Ray: Mbali I love you and would never let you go no matter how intense our fights or arguments are

she looked at him and tears ran down her cheeks

Mbali: you promise?

Ray: with everything in me.....look I know I can be a jerk sometimes but I love you my flower and never doubt that ok

*** he said wiping her tears off and she nodded***

Ray: its was just a dream ok

she shook her head getting off his grip

Mbali: something bad will happen Ray if its not you breaking up with me then someone else will break us apart..... like years back I dreamed being locked up somewhere in a dark place with my brothers wives and my nieces and nephews and two days later we were really kidnapped and I witnessed horrific things so since then I never ignore or dismiss my nightmares

he sighed and rubbed his eyes

Ray: what?.....

he said frowning then he sighed

Ray: look my flower it was just a dream believe me

she shook her head no

Mbali: you don't believe me..... ok..... I have to go

she unlocked the car and attempted to go out but Ray held her arm

Ray: my flower look it's not that I don't believe you I just think it was just a dream and that you shouldn't stress about it like you are doing now

Mbali: whatever Raymond

he frowned at her and she got out of his grip and got out.... He chuckled and clenched his jaws at her calling him by his full name while looking at her walking away

.

.

.

she was walking away when she heard someone calling her name and she turned to see that it was Derrick and she huffed irritated

Derrick: hey can we.....

she interrupted him by raising her hand up at him

Mbali: Derrick not today please

she said dismissing him and she continued to walk way.....Ray saw the whole scene and he smirked

Ray: and that's how Mrs. La Parca handles small boys

he said to himself then he drove away

.

.

.

*** well naledi just finished doing her groceries and she was in the ground basement parking lot finishing with packing the groceries in the boot of her car when she heard a voice behind her and she quickly turned***

Naledi: ki...kitso

Kitso: hey

he said smiling but she didn't return it

Naledi: can I help you

Kitso: can we please go sit down in a restaurant so we can talk

she sighed

Naledi: no

Kitso: naledi come on....look I know you despise me but please im asking nicely here

Naledi: and I said no now please go

Kitso: don't force my hand naledi ok im trying to be understanding cause I know and accept that I hurt you but you are pushing me too far..... it's not enough that you let my daughter's wellbeing and life be run by another man and now im asking nicely for us to speak and you giving me attitude

he said with an angry voice and naledi quickly closed the boot scared and tried to walk away but he grabbed her arm

Kitso: I just wanna us to talk about our daughter without your bastard of a boyfriend or whatever the fuck his name is disturbing us

Naledi: kitso if you know what's good for you you'll let me go and never pull such stunt again
she snapped at him and he chuckled

Kitso: I just wanna talk ok nothing more

Naledi: and I don't wanna talk to you now get that through your thick skull please
she tried to get off his grip but he tightened it

Naledi: kitso let me go

Kitso: I didn't wanna do this but now you forcing my hand
he said taking out a syringe out of the pocket of his jacket and naledi's eyes popped out and she tried to fight him off her

Naledi: LET ME GO KITSO PLEASE DON'T DO THIS

he quickly injected her while she tried to stop him but she fail cause he was stronger than her

Kitso: I just want us to talk that's all I won't hurt you I promise..... I love you too much to hurt you

***he told her ***

Naledi: HEATH.....

She cried as she felt herself getting dizzy and it was lights out

34

INSERT.....34

.
. .
. .

**** NALEDI****

I opened my eyes and moved a bit since I was laying down in an uncomfortable position then I heard him speak

Kitso: good you are awake

I sat up straight holding my head cause it was pounding

Me: where...where am i?

I said scanning the room and we were in a nice bedroom then it clicked that im kidnapped by my baby daddy and I quickly checked myself and I didn't feel funny down there and I held my belly and I felt a little movement thank God

Kitso: relax I didn't touch you like that

*** I looked at him and this bastard smiled at me nx***

Me: why are you doing this kitso?

Kitso: I just want us to talk without any disturbances that's all

Me: I don't wanna talk to you now please let me go...im pregnant I shouldn't be stressed please let me go

I pleaded with him and he sighed

Kitso: ok then let's hurry and talk so you can leave

did he just say talk

Me: what do you want from me kitso... isn't it enough that you broke me apart and now you doing this

Kitso: the truth is I didn't mean to hurt you naledi I loved you and I still do so much

I rolled my eyes at him

Me: ooh please tell that to someone who will believe your bullshit nx now let me go!

i snapped and he just chuckled mxm

Kitso: mmmh I like this tough girl attitude you have going on is a total turn on my Ledi

he said smiling and I just looked at him plainly and he cleared his throat

Kitso: look naledi the truth is I listened to bad friends who gave me bad advices about us in fact about you

Me: what bad advice

Kitso: about albinos and the myth surrounding them

*** wow***

Me: look kitso what happened has happened and there's no changing it now tell me what you want so I can leave my husband Is probably worried about me

he clenched his jaws.... Well fuck him nx

Kitso: so you really married that bastard

Me: don't call him that ok he's more of a man that you'll ever dream of becoming nx!

*** I snapped at him ***

Kitso: SHUT UP!

he shouted and I swallowed... ok he looks angry

Kitso: yes I fucked up and I acknowledge that ok and im trying by all means to fix things for our daughter but no you don't see that and you even using my own fucken daughter to hurt me

heeh

Me: which daughter are you talking about Kitso.... Is it the same daughter you asked me to kill

he looked down

Me: im asking you a question.... which daughter are you talking about

Kitso: im sorry naledi I don't know why I did what I did but please I need to be in her life

I kept quiet

Kitso: im willing to do anything for that to happen

Me: including drugging and kidnaping me

***he sighed ***

Kitso: it was the only way we could talk without being disturbed

Me: im a married woman kitso and I love and respect my husband if you wanted to talk about Lesedi you could have called Heath and set up a meeting with us and we could have met and talked not all this shit you just did

he chuckled

Kitso: call another man so I can be able to talk to my baby mama about my child? Are you fucken listening to yourself naledi

Me: yes

Kitso: o bolela masepa wankutlwa ... ompotsa nnyoso nx (you talking shit you hear me.... You are telling me nonsense)

he said pointing at me

Kitso: Lesedi is my fucken daughter naledi she has my fucken blood running through her veins and not his....he can have rights only to that baby in your womb not my daughter and you better tell him that

I swallowed and kept quiet.... God he looks angry he was busy pacing around in the room

.
. .
.

****HEATH****

you know something doesn't feel right I have this feeling in my chest and I can't even explain it. Maybe it's because of this thing with Ray and the khumalo girl....maybe her brothers are about to know about them and shit is about to hit the fan.... Chai my brother is stubborn and I know once he's made up his mind there's no going back well im not gonna lie and say otherwise cause the thing is im happy he's giving this love thing a chance cause the truth is I always thought he was gonna grow old alone cause he didn't believe in this love thing I mean he even had the woman Mother force him to marry killed well her family and our dearest mother thinks she was involved in a highjacking gone bad but dad me and Jabu know the real truth and that's why when he suggest that he be the one to marry that Adanma chick dad quickly said no cause he knew what would happen to her..... and now it looks like he's deeply in love with that girl which is a good thing cause that mean there is a chance for him after all the only problem is who the girl's father and brothers are that's the only problem but hey I know he got this so we just have to wait for the war to start..... Anyway It's been 30 minutes now and that feeling is still there and it just won't go away mxm I just hope its nothing serious..... Anyway let me call Obi m and check up on her since she told me she's going to the mall to do some groceries and her hair I dialed her numbers and it rang unanswered okI tried again and still the same thing and I tried for the third time and now it went straight to voicemail

Me: and now?

*** I asked myself..... ok Obim knows she should never switch her phone off what's going on... anyway I dialed MJ's numbers and he answered on the third ring***

Mj: bros

Me: Mj are you home?

Mj: yeah but im about to go out

Me: go out where?

Mj: to brother Jabu's office.... What's up?

Me: is naledi back yet

Mj: nah she's not bros

Me: ok

Mj: did you call her

Me: she's not picking and now her phone is off

Mj: maybe her battery died

Me: yeah maybe.... Ok let me get back to work

Mj: alright bye

I dropped the call and called her phone again and it sends me straight to voicemail again.... something is not right here so I checked the tracker on her car and it said the car was still at the mall.....no no something is not right so I decided to dialed Ray's numbers and he answered on the fourth ring

Ray: Ezeh

Me: bros are you with Mateo

Ray: ummm yeah what's up?

Me: I need him to try and trace Naledi's numbers

Ray: why... what's going on

Me: I don't know cause I tried calling her but it rang unanswered twice and the third time it was switched off so can he trace her last location before it was switched off

I said that panicking cause now it was clicking to me that the feeling I was having was for her

Me: shit Ray what if something happened to her..... shit what if she....

***he interrupted me ***

Ray: wooh don't jump into conclusions now let Mat track her last location before her phone was switched off

Me: her car is still at the mall bros... please ask Mat to find her

Ray: ok which mall

Me: mall of Africa and im going there now

Ray: ok let me know when you find her and send me the number plate of the car she's using so Mat can check the security cameras near where its parked

Me: ok

*** we ended the call and I smsed him the number plates and packed my shit and left ***

.
. .
. .

***** NARRATED*****

Ray: Mat can you please hack into mall of Africa's cctv footage exactly where heath's car is packed

he took his laptop and switched it on

Mat: exactly what am I looking for?

Ray: heath thinks star is in danger or something cause her phone is off and it rang unanswered at first

Mat: ok

he got busy on his laptop for a minute or so

Mat: im in

Ray: ok here is the number plate

he went closer to him and called out the number plate and Mat searched for it and found it on the ground basement parking lot

Mat: found it

Ray: go back and lets see if she came back to the parking lot since she got there

Mat played back the cctv footage and stopped when they saw a man carrying what looked like a woman in his arms

Ray: go back a bit

Mat did and stopped when she approached the car with her trolley and he let it play and they watched the whole scene until when the car that she was put in drove away

Ray: shit this is bad

he said getting up and rubbing his head frustrated

Mat: I got the number plate and im tracking it now

Ray: heath is gonna go berserk

Mat: I would too....who could have kidnapped her

Ray: I don't know bro..... shit.... let me go meet heath at the mall you'll let me know when you find something

Mat: ok jefe

right then Ray's phone rang and it was heath.... He took his car keys and he answered while walking out

Heath: did you find anything?

Ray: are you still driving?

Heath: yeah why?

Ray: ok.... park on the side of the road now

Heath: why what happened.... Did you find her?

Ray: just park on the side of the road man

Heath: ok wait

he looked around and found a spot to park and he did

Heath: ok im parked on the side of the road.... What did Mat find?

***he said that with his heart beating fast ***

Ray: Mat hacked into the mall's cctv footage and she was abducted bros

heath's heart almost stopped and he sat there frozen

Ray: heath did you hear me?

Heath: by who?

Ray: Mat is busy finding out more info about who the fucker is I dialed her numbers and it rang unanswered okI tried again and still the same thing and I tried for the third time and now it went straight to voicemail***

Me: and now?

*** I asked myself..... ok Obim knows she should never switch her phone off what's going on... anyway I dialed MJ's numbers and he answered on the third ring***

Mj: bros

Me: Mj are you home?

Mj: yeah but im about to go out

Me: go out where?

Mj: to brother Jabu's office.... What's up?

Me: is naledi back yet

Mj: nah she's not bros

Me: ok

Mj: did you call her

Me: she's not picking and now her phone is off

Mj: maybe her battery died

Me: yeah maybe.... Ok let me get back to work

Mj: alright bye

I dropped the call and called her phone again and it sends me straight to voicemail again..... something is not right here so I checked the tracker on her car and it said the car was still at the mall.....no no something is not right so I decided to dialed Ray's numbers and he answered on the fourth ring

Ray: Ezeh

Me: bros are you with Mateo

Ray: ummm yeah what's up?

Me: I need him to try and trace Naledi's numbers

Ray: why... what's going on

Me: I don't know cause I tried calling her but it rang unanswered twice and the third time it was switched off so can he trace her last location before it was switched off

I said that panicking cause now it was clicking to me that the feeling I was having was for her

Me: shit Ray what if something happened to her..... shit what if she....

***he interrupted me ***

Ray: wooh don't jump into conclusions now let Mat track her last location before her phone was switched off

Me: her car is still at the mall bros... please ask Mat to find her

Ray: ok which mall

Me: mall of Africa and im going there now

Ray: ok let me know when you find her and send me the number plate of the car she's using so Mat can check the security cameras near where its parked

Me: ok

*** we ended the call and I smsed him the number plates and packed my shit and left ***

.
. .
.

**** NARRATED****

Ray: Mat can you please hack into mall of Africa's cctv footage exactly where heath's car is packed

he took his laptop and switched it on

Mat: exactly what am I looking for?

Ray: heath thinks star is in danger or something cause her phone is off and it rang unanswered at first

Mat: ok

he got busy on his laptop for a minute or so

Mat: im in

Ray: ok here is the number plate

he went closer to him and called out the number plate and Mat searched for it and found it on the ground basement parking lot

Mat: found it

Ray: go back and lets see if she came back to the parking lot since she got there

Mat played back the cctv footage and stopped when they saw a man carrying what looked like a woman in his arms

Ray: go back a bit

Mat did and stopped when she approached the car with her trolley and he let it play and they watched the whole scene until when the car that she was put in drove away

Ray: shit this is bad

he said getting up and rubbing his head frustrated

Mat: I got the number plate and im tracking it now

Ray: heath is gonna go berserk

Mat: I would too....who could have kidnapped her

Ray: I don't know bro..... shit.... let me go meet heath at the mall you'll let me know when you find something

Mat: ok jefe

right then Ray's phone rang and it was heath.... He took his car keys and he answered while walking out

Heath: did you find anything?

Ray: are you still driving?

Heath: yeah why?

Ray: ok.... park on the side of the road now

Heath: why what happened.... Did you find her?

Ray: just park on the side of the road man

Heath: ok wait

he looked around and found a spot to park and he did

Heath: ok im parked on the side of the road.... What did Mat find?

***he said that with his heart beating fast ***

Ray: Mat hacked into the mall's cctv footage and she was abducted bros

heath's heart almost stopped and he sat there frozen

Ray: heath did you hear me?

Heath: by who?

Ray: Mat is busy finding out more info about who the fucker is now im on my way to you

Heath: this is not happening.... God this is not happening

he said to himself with his hands shaking

Ray: bros keep it together we will find her

Heath: did.... Did they hurt her?

Ray: it was one person bro and it looks like he injected her with something and she passed out... And it looks like she knew the person cause they spoke at first
heath swallowed as tears ran down his cheeks.... Then it came back to him and he swallowed and wiped his tears

Heath: it's him

Ray: who?

Heath: fuck im gonna kill him....im gonna fucken kill him

Ray: who?

Heath: her baby daddy?

Ray: you think it's him?

Heath: I can feel it Ray it's him

Ray: ok what's his name?

Heath: kitso but I don't know his last name....k-i-t-s-o

he spelled it to him

Ray: got it ok let me send the name to Mat and he'll see what he can do with it

Heath: ok

Ray: go to Caesar mode heath cause now is not the time to break down and be weak... we need to find her asap

heath swallowed

Heath: yeah

Ray: good lets meet at the mall im already on the road

Heath: ok

they dropped the call and heath called Jabu

Jabu: mshikaro

Heath: naledi has been kidnapped jabu

Jabu: WHAT?... HOW?... WHEN?

Heath: earlier on javas and I have a feeling its Kitso

Jabu: dai moeskond nx.... O sure though that it's him

Heath: yeah bro but I don't even know his surname so we can get his address

Jabu: let me see what I can do....ummm wait let me call Thandie maybe she knows his surname or something

Heath: yeah why didn't I think of her eish

he said rubbing his head roughly

Jabu: where are you now mshikaro

Heath: on my way to the mall where the whole thing happened so is Ray

Jabu: which mall

Heath: mall of Africa

Jabu: ok we will meet there

Heath: sho

they ended the call and heath breathed out loud and he rubbed his hands together with his jaws clenched

Heath: you better not harm her boy or else you'll curse the day you were born

he said to himself and he started the car and drove away

.

.

.

Back at Kitso's house..... he brought food for himself and Naledi he prepared in his kitchen.... Well he locked her inside the bedroom and well Naledi decided not to fight him so she can escape for her babies safety

Kitso: aren't you eating?

Naledi: im not hungry

Kitso: you are pregnant naledi ofcourse you are hungry

Naledi: I said im not hungry nx!

she snapped at him and he sighed

Kitso: ok suit yourself

Naledi: mxm..... so when are you letting me go

Kitso: after we done talking

he said taking a bite on his sandwich

Naledi: ok then talk so I can leave school and daycare will be out soon and my babies cant come home and not find me there

Kitso: wow so you are raising his child too

Naledi: yes cause he's raising mine too

kitso clenched his jaws looking at naledi

Kitso: well not for long

Naledi: what's that supposed to mean

Kitso: I still love you naledi and im gonna do anything in my powers to win you back and me you and our princess will be a family

naledi laughed

Naledi: are you high or something

Kitso: don't insult me naledi...just because I love you doesn't mean I cant slap you back to you fucken manners nx

she kept quiet looking scared and Kitso sighed

Kitso: you know I don't like this stubborn and miss know it all attitude you have going on trust me it doesn't look good on you

she swallowed looking away

Kitso: any way tell me about Thabo

she looked at him with a frown

Kitso: why did you leave your home? Mamiki said something happened between you and Thabo that made you pack and leave so what happened

Naledi: how is that any of your business?

*** kitso shook his head smiling***

Kitso: did he force himself on you or tried to?

she didn't say anything she just swallowed fighting back her tears while looking away

Kitso: he tried to right?

she kept her silence

Kitso: ok then I see you don't wanna talk about it so its cool.... He's just lucky he's dead or I would deal with him nx

he clicked his tongue

Kitso: does Mamiki and koko know you are married?

*** she continued to keep quiet and kitso huffed***

Kitso: do you wanna leave here or not naledi

she looked at him

Kitso: do you?

Naledi: ofcourse

Kitso: then answer my questions or your "babies" won't find you at home when they come back from school and daycare

she blinked fast fighting back her tears and she swallowed the lump that was stuck on her throat

Naledi: he tried to rape me and when I told koko she called me a liar so did Mamiki so I packed my things and left..... and no they don't know im married cause koko disowned me when I chose to leave

she without even looking at him

Kitso: what?..... how...how could they do that to you

Naledi: ooh please Kitso what about what you did to me mmmmh.....so don't act like a saint cause you did worse you told me to kill an innocent child just because you didn't want to be a father to an albino child and now that she's not one you have the rotten nerve to claim her as your own you took my innocent and promised me the whole world and when I fell pregnant you cast a big stone on me and turned your back on me and married someone I thought was my friend..... I will never forgive you for what you did to me the same way I will never forgive koko for what she did to me and with Mamiki at least I grew up knowing she doesn't like me and she never hid it from me

*** she said with tears running down her cheeks and he sighed regretting every bad thing he did to her***

Kitso: im really sorry naledi.... I regret everything bad I did to you I wish I can turn the hands of time and do things differently but it's not possible all I can do is try and fix things

Naledi: I want to leave kitso please let me go

she said crying

Kitso: just promise me that you will let me be part of lesedi's life even though I don't deserve to and also find it in your heart to forgive me for hurting you

Naledi: look with Lesedi I'll talk to my husband first and get.....

he interrupted her

Kitso: SHUT UP!..... DON'T FUCKEN TELL ME ABOUT THAT BASTARD NALEDI OK LESEDI IS MY DAUGHTER AND I DIDN'T IMPREGNATE HIM BUT YOU SO DON'T TELL ME ABOUT TALKING TO HIM FIRST

she kept quiet as she could see he was angry again

Kitso: look naledi im a victim of circumstance ok my now ex friends mislead me and I was naïve that listened to them and ended up hurting you and losing you in the process.... I'll forever regret it naledi now I can see clearly and I want you back and I won't stop until I have you and Lesedi back in my life

Naledi: im happily married Kitso and I love Heath with everything in me...just let me go before he notices that im kidnapped and I'll forget about it and not tell him

Kitso: im not scared of him naledi ok im a man just as he is and we both love you

Naledi: I LOVE HIM KITSO AND I DON'T LOVE YOU ANYMORE WHY CANT YOU GET THAT THROUGH YOUR SKULL

right then his phone rang and the number wasn't saved so he got out of the bedroom and locked naledi inside and he answered it

Kitso: yah

Voice: jah jou gat (yes you ass)

Kitso: who's this

Voice: your worst nightmare..... look dai cherry (that chick) you kidnapped is very precious to many people poy so my free advice to you is to let her go without even a strand of her hair harmed

Kitso: wait let me guess that bastard that calls himself her husband send you right.....meaning you just his lap dog

Voice: voetsek jou hond lap dog ke jou Ma wa moloi le lethaima la gao la go tshaba marago jou moeskond (fuck you a lap dog is that witch you call your mother and your father who's afraid of a pussy)

that angered Kitso

Kitso: FUCK YOU YOU BASTARD

Voice: look let her go and nkase kgaole dai small pipi van jou (I won't cut off your small dick)

kitso chuckled

Kitso: well tell your boss that naleidi was mine first and we share a baby and if he's scared of competition he should just go hang himself

the person laughed

Voice: yeeerrrr I like your courage poy but here is the thing... firstly you are going to let naleidi go and secondly you are going to take a rope and you'll go to the mountain and hang yourself cause that would be better than dealing with Caesar trust me

Kitso: FUCK YOU AND FUCK HIM TOO NX

then he ended the call and he dialed his father's numbers

Tsietsi: kitso

Kitso: thaima (dad) I think I just messed up

Tsietsi: with what?

Kitso: I received a call from some number and I think they were tracking my location cause the guy made sure I spoke without hanging up

Tsietsi: then get that girl out of there now and let her go

Kitso: ok

Tsietsi: I hope you two spoke about everything and that you didn't hurt her

Kitso: I would never harm her thaima and yes we spoke even though it wasn't about everything but we spoke

Tsietsi: good now use your other car to go drop her off somewhere

Kitso: thanks thaima

Tsietsi: and kitso I hope now that you have talked to her you won't change your mind with joining our gang cause you have already being initiated and you know that if you want out then its through death

kitso swallowed

Kitso: ofcourse not thaima..... now I can see im dealing with someone who has connections so im gonna need the gang to take him down and then work on taking back what belongs to me being Naledi and Lesedi

Tsietsi: good.... Im glad you joined son and im happy you listened to me to winning Naledi the right way and not like taking her by force or by killing her so that boy won't have her

Kitso: yeah but she needs to forgive me first and I'll take it from there

Tsietsi: and I'll help you take that fucker down cause no man will raise your daughter and have her bare his surname while you still alive even though you messed up..... no one is perfect and fucking up here and there only makes you human

Kitso: sho thaima let me take her back

Tsietsi: keep me updated

Kitso: sho

they ended the call and he unlocked the door and found naledi curled up into a ball on top of the bed

Naledi: please let me go Kitso please

she said crying and Kitso sighed

Kitso: ok let's go now stop crying I told you I won't hurt you

she got out of bed not waiting for him to say im kidding..... she wore her sneakers and stood up

Kitso: let's go

***she walked out and they got in the lounge and kitso took another car keys and naledi's hand bag and he held naledi's upper arm and he pulled her out of the house and he locked up and they went to the garage and he opened it and unlocked a bmw 1 series ***

Kitso: get in

she did and he also got in and reversed out of the garage and he got out and closed the garage and opened the gate and he drove away after closing the gate..... as soon as they got on the highway he took out naledi's phone out of his pocket and he switched it on and notifications flooded in from missed calls and voicemail messages from Heath

Kitso: mmmh I bet he's worried where he is

he said briefly looking at naledi with a smile but she was looking outside the window trying to keep it together for her unborn babies.... She couldn't wait to see heath and have him hold her cause being in his arms made her feel safe..... she also didn't wanna make Kitso angry cause for someone to do what he did means there's something wrong with them so she was scared to tick him the wrong way and have him hurt her or more especially her unborn babies so keeping quiet was the best option for her even though she wanted to tell him off about how much she hates him

.
. .

Mat: her phone is on now and it's on the move

they were driving to Kitso's house

Heath: on the move to where

Mateo: the direction we coming from

Ray: what about his car

Mateo: still on the premises

Jabu: maybe he switched cars maybe he suspected that we were tracing him when I called him

Heath: but then why switch on her phone

right then heath's phone rang and it was naledi's numbers and he quickly answered putting it on loud speaker

Heath: naledi

Kitso: catch us if you can you bastard

he chuckled then he dropped the call and heath clenched his jaws

Ray: he's playing us

Heath: mmmmh and his sudden confidence means he has backup

Jabu: I'll get one of my guys to go to his kasi and sniff out more info about him

Mateo: but he came out clean except for when he almost lost his company a year ago and his divorce

Jabu: im talking about some ground work Mat and trust me my guy will find something.....so we going after him mshikaro?

Heath: yeah I have a feeling we should

Jabu: ok I'll take the off ramp that goes to sosha and I'll join the highway again going back and I'll send his house's location to our boys to go raid it to see if Naledi is there or not

Heath: ok I hope he didn't hurt her cause if he did I don't care if he's even sold his soul to the devil but I'll fucken kill him

he said that with an angry voice

Ray: mmmmh well he better not have hurt my nieces or nephews cause then nc nc nc

he shook his head and everyone went silent..... they drove for some time and soon Jabu made that off-ramp and he took a right turn and soon he joined the highway again and he put the Bmw X6 on sport mode and it roared and he just hit the accelerator almost flat and he just flew off the highway with cars making way for him on the fast lane

Mat: I've been checking the traffic lights and busy running facial recognition and guess whatthey just passed some traffic lights not that far from where we are and guess who's with him in the car

Ray: star

Mateo nodded

Mat: look

*** Ray did***

Ray: yeah it's her now where the fuck is he taking her

heath just clenched his jaws

35

INSERT.....35

.
. .
.

****NARRATED****

Heath: we have been driving for some time chasing this fucker now where the hell is he taking her?

Jabu: what if he's taking her to where he took her from

Mat: what kind of kidnapping is this?

Jabu: the baby daddy kinda kidnapping Mat

Mat smiled while shaking his head..... they drove for some time

Mat: the car stopped

Heath: where?

Mat: the mall where she was taken

Jabu: I told ya'll

right then Heath's phone rang

Heath: naledi

Naledi: he...heath please come im scared

*** his heart nearly stopped beating***

Heath: im on my way Obi m.....im coming ok

she sniffed

Heath: go sit down somewhere don't worry I'll find you and don't switch off your phone ok

Naledi: o...ok

Heath: I love you ok

Naledi: I love you too

***then he ended the call and he rubbed his face feeling relieved ***

Heath: what is that bastard playing at?

Jabu: my theory is he wants naledi back along with Lesedi cause he's been harassing her with calls remember and also remember he going through a divorce and maybe now he regrets letting naledi go but what I don't get is why abduct her and then let her go

Ray: fuck I hope he didn't hurt the babies

heath was now breathing heavily at the thought of his babies harmed

.
. .
. .

Naledi was now sitting down on a bench lost in thoughts when she felt a hand on her shoulder and she got startled but when she heard his voice tears filled her eyes and they just rolled down her cheeks

Heath: im here now obi m you safe

***he said sitting next to her holding her tight..... she cried until she calmed down and he helped her stand ***

Heath: did he hurt you

she shook her head no

Ray: did he give you something to drink or eat

she nodded

Naledi: but I didn't eat or drink the juice he gave to me

they all sighed with relieve

Heath: you did good Obi m im proud of you

Naledi: he...he

they looked at her and she looked down with tears running down her cheeks

Heath: naledi what did he do?

***he cupped her and made her look at him ***

Heath: what did he do?

he's voice trailed off as he saw pain in her eyes

Naledi: he... he forcefully kissed me on my lips but i..... I swear I didn't kiss him back.... I tried to push him back but he was strong

she said with a breaking voice and heath clenched his jaws with his eyes turning red.... He let go of naledi and he walked away and jabu went after him..... well naledi sobbed with her hands on her face and Ray held her

Ray: look at me star

she did with her wet face

Naledi: I swear I didn't kiss him back I tried to push him back but he was strong and i...

he interrupted her

Ray: I know... we all know and believe me he's not angry at you but at that baby daddy of yours and he walked away to calm himself down ok nothing more

she nodded and tried to wipe her tears off but they kept on falling

Ray: we need to take you to the hospital to have you and the babies checked out because we know he drugged you ok

she nodded and they walked away with Ray holding her then Mateo nudged him and he looked at him

Mat: princess

he said pointing with his head and when Ray looked at his right hand side their eyes met.... She was standing there with her hands on a trolley looking at Ray and naledi with hurt all over her face.... Ray stopped moving and naledi did too then she looked up at Ray and she saw him swallow then Mbali continued to walk to another direction then Ray quickly took out his phone and called her.....he saw her checking it then putting it back to the pocket of her jean and she continued to walk

Ray: shit!

Naledi: girlfriend?

he sighed and nodded

Naledi: its ok you can go to her and....

he interrupted her

Ray: not happening and don't worry I'll talk to her

he then typed a message to her and send it and it read;" she's my brother's wife and she was abducted earlier today but luckily she managed to escape (he lied) and she was able to contact us I love you my flower and I'll never do you like that "..... and as soon as Mbali read his text she became ashamed of thinking he was cheating or he was having a pregnant wife or something..... She then send him a message saying "im sorry I jumped into conclusions I hope she's ok and unharmed" and Ray sighed with relieved and he send her back another message " she's shaken we are now taking her to the hospital since they drugged her just to make sure her and the babies are ok".... Mbali read the message and she sighed she felt like shit for thinking he was cheating.... She then replied to his message and it read: "ooh good Lord I hope they are ok... please keep me updated"..... " I will I love you ok" Ray send her and she replied with " I love you too"

Ray: shitthank God we are good

Mateo: estoy contenta jefe porque no puedo lidiar con un mal humor cuando te da la espalda (im glad boss cause I cant deal with a sulking you when she gives you the cold shoulder)

Ray: vete a la mierda (fuck you)

they chuckled

Ray: lets go mrs Owoh-Masden

they continued to walk until they reached their cars and they found Heath smoking while pacing up and down

Naledi: Heath

she called his name and he quickly turned and he threw the cigarette on the ground and stepped on it and he went closer to her and he stared at eyes but she looked down as she couldn't hold the staring contest

Heath: did he French kiss you

***she shook her head no ***

Heath: do you have wipes in your hand bag

she nodded and he took her bag and took them out and he took one from the packet and wiped her lips and he smashed his lips on hers..... after a while he pulled out and he looked into her eyes

Heath: I love you ok

tears fell from her eyes and he wiped them and she nodded then he pulled her into a tight hug

Ray: she needs to get checked out Ezeh

Ray interrupted them and they pulled out of the hug

Naledi: he....

she kept quiet for a bit as they all looked at her

Heath: he what?

Naledi: he... I heard him talking on the phone with someone but what caught my attention is when he said "ofcourse not im gonna need the gang to take him down" and I thought maybe he was talking about taking you down

he kissed her forehead

Heath: it ok I got this and thanks for telling us ok

she nodded and heath opened the door for her and she got in and he closed it and turned to look at the guys

Jabu: im on it

Ray: we will meet at the hospital...oooh and what about her car

heath opened the car door and asked naledi for her car keys and she searched inside her bag and luckily she found them since she wasn't sure where they were and she gave them to Heath and he gave them to Ray and Ray gave them to Mateo

Ray: we will meet you at heath's house

*** and Heath gave him his house keys***

Ray: and continue searching for that car that dropped her off at the entrance of the Mall

he said to Mat and he nodded

Heath: she has groceries in the boot bros

Mat nodded and they got in their cars and drove out..... soon they arrived at the hospital and heath picked her up bridal style and went inside with her they put her on top of the stretcher and she was quickly wheeled away when he told them she's pregnant and she was drugged..... they were now sitting at the waiting room when Jabu made a call

Caller: ekse javas my authi (javas my brother)

Jabu: tsetse fly (nickname) fede? (howzit)

Fly: lekker bade.... Dintshang? (im good my friend.....how are things?)

Jabu: aaah nex nja yami (nothing my dog)

Fly: yeerrr o skaars go tshwana le Max dae gorilla ya mma Mathebula (you are scarce just like Mrs Mathebula's gorilla called Max)

jabu laughed and tsetse fly joined him

Jabu: entlek e felletse kae dae gorilla? (where did it disappear to that gorilla)

Fly: I think e comitile suicide... hai man dai magogo ne a e berekisa too much (I think it committed suicide... that old granny was overworking it)

they laughed again

Fly: so dintshang bra yaka (so whats up my brother)

***he said with a serious tone ***

Jabu: ke batla some info ya bari engwe bareng ke Kitso Modiba (I want some information of some fool called Kitso Modiba)

Fly: Kitso Modiba...Kitso Modiba?

*** he said that thinking***

Jabu: yah he once dated some mooi (beautiful) albino chick two to three or four years back bareng ke Naledi (called Naledi) and now he lives ko block vv le sefebe se seng a se trowileng but gae ke mo di L (he lives with some bitch he married but home is block L)

Fly: ooh yah ka mo jaja o bolela ka ntwana ya Bra T (yeah I know him you are talking about Bra T's son)

Jabu: which Bra T

Fly: Bra T man..... Bra T wa go owner di taxi.... well pele ne a owner di venture fela but nou o owner le di quantum tse di yang tropong and gape ke ownara ya dai pub called Gentle Breeze mo di DD (Bra T who owns taxis.... Well he owned ventures first but now he owns Quantum taxis that go to town and again he's the owner of that pub called Gentle Breeze at block DD)

Jabu: ooh ok I see.... So is there anything you can tell me about him and his father

Fly: well there's a rumor that dae thaima la gae ke leader ya dae gang called Majimbos mo sosha (there's a rumor that his father is a gang leader of Majimbos here in sosha)

Jabu: wait I thought skara is the leader

Fly: apparently he not

Sponsored

you are talking about Bra T's son)

Jabu: which Bra T

Fly: Bra T man..... Bra T wa go owner di taxi.... well pele ne a owner di venture fela but nou o owner le di quantum tse di yang tropong and gape ke ownara ya dai pub called Gentle Breeze mo di DD (Bra T who owns taxis.... Well he owned ventures first but now he owns Quantum taxis that go to town and again he's the owner of that pub called Gentle Breeze at block DD)

Jabu: ooh ok I see.... So is there anything you can tell me about him and his father

Fly: well there's a rumor that dae thaima la gae ke leader ya dae gang called Majimbos mo sosha (there's a rumor that his father is a gang leader of Majimbos here in sosha)

Jabu: wait I thought skara is the leader

Fly: apparently he not Bra T was making him his front man while he was in the shadows

Jabu: mmmmh interesting

Fly: so what did he do dae moeg (that fool)

Jabu: hes been harassing vrou ya my bra

Fly: which bra

Jabu: mshikaro

Fly: mshikaro as in Caesar?

Jabu: yeah

tsetse fly laughed over the phone

Fly: ehhe dae bari o tsubileng mfowethu? (what did that fool smoke my brother)

Jabu: a ke jaje fly.....so nchaele mo(I don't know fly... so tell me here) is Kitso also part of the gang

Fly: he wasn't at first but then se neng neng ke utlwile ba re(I heard people saying) he did

Jabu: mmmmh interesting so dae moeskond joins that stupid gang and already o gola marete ebile o kuka le mafatlha o ka re ke Al Capone or something nx.... Anything else I should know bade

fly laughed

Fly: well I heard the is some big shot they are about to take down

jabu laughed

Fly: wait a minute..... are they talking about Caesar?

Jabu: looks like it

fly chuckled

Fly: well do me a favor then o tseye video bade I want to see Majimbos being brought down to their knees

Jabu: but you know it won't be easy bade because of skara

Fly: eish yah neh plus I heard gore he has ties with some gang ko Eldorado park named the Crips and those fucken coloureds are ruthless bade

Jabu: I know but they don't shake me as such.... He might know some gang members but I know the leader's younger brother ne ke le ko sun city le yena (I was in jail with him)

Fly: speak of the devil

Jabu: skara?

Fly : yeah he just drove in

Jabu: at your car wash

Fly: yeah let me attend him ke tla go belela later (I'll call you later) le more info

Jabu: sho

they ended the call

Heath: and?

Jabu: he's part of the Majimbos gang in sosha

Heath: the one that skara is part of?

he nodded

Ray: is it some big shot gang?

Heath: nah they normally do hijackings ATM booming and cash in transit here and there and house robberies

Ray: then they are small fish in an ocean full of sharks and killer whales

Jabu: yeah but skara is dangerous big Ray he's not someone to ignore or underestimate

Heath: plus he's the gang leader

Jabu: nah he's not apparently Kitso's father is the leader

Heath: what?

Jabu: mmmmh tsetse fly said he is and that Kitso joined the gang and he also heard that they were planning on taking down some big shot down which I think is you

Heath: well let them come

Jabu: he has ties with the Crips gang in Eldorado park

Heath: and I have ties with La Parca from Cuba

they laughed

Jabu: ok you win

they laughed some more

Ray: I think it's time I brought some of my boys from Cuba to here in south Africa cause people think they can just take us on whenever they feel like it

Jabu: mmmmh and they could train our guys to stop being small time gangsters

Ray: yeah..... have you heard of the Marielitos

Heath: yeah I once read about them

Ray: mmmmh well I run the one that is in Cuba while Deshaun who is Cuban-American runs the one that is the US California and New York to be specific

Jabu: what?

Ray: yeah we have allies from the American mafia Colombian cartels and the Mexican cartels

Heath: wow im impressed bros

Jabu: so are you gonna open the Marielitos in South Africa

he nodded

Ray: yeah I want us to link our gangs and make it one but look.....

he said looking around

Ray: These walls have ears so we will discuss this at home

they nodded..... after some time they saw a middle aged doctor walking to them and they stood up

Doctor: are you Mrs Owoh-Masden's family?

Heath: yeah how is she?

*** the doctor looked at them one by one***

Jabu: eeh ova man o tlogele gore gotolela matlho (hey talk and stop looking at us)

the doctor cleared his throat feeling uneasy with the tone Jabu used

Doctor: ummm she and the babies are ok the only problem is that her BP is a bit high but we are monitoring it closely

Heath: what about the drug she was injected with

Doctor: we found a drug called Amytal in her system which is a general anesthetic drug

heath clenched his jaws looking angry

Ray: is the drug posing threats to the babies?

Doctor: we are still running more test on her but what I can tell you is she was injected with the right dosage that might have knocked her out for 45 minutes or so meaning the person that injected her knew the right dose to use for someone in her condition

Ray: mmmh I see

Heath: can I see her

Doctor: ofcourse right this way

Ray: you'll meet us at your house later and don't worry about the princesses I'll go pick them up

Jabu: and I'll organize two guys to guard outside her room

heath nodded and he fist bumped with them and he followed the doctor..... and Ray texted Mbali telling her that she's sleeping at his place tonight and she replied with " ok I love you" and Ray replied with " I love you too my flower" he walked into her private room after thanking the doctor.... She was staring into space until she felt someone holding her hand and she quickly came back to her senses

Heath: Obi m

she smiled weakly

Heath: I hope those stupid doctors didn't poke you too much with their needles

Naledi: no they didn't

she said smiling

Heath: good

he kissed her forehead

Heath: now tell me the truth did he hurt you?

she shook her head no

Naledi: he kept on saying he wanted to talk

Heath: about what?

he said sitting down next to her..... she swallowed

Naledi: about Lesedi

Heath: what about Lesedi

she told him what Kitso said to her by the time she was finished he looked angry ready to skin someone alive

Heath: does he know how much a pack of pampers is? No he doesn't cause when he was busy with that ugly bitch he married you were busy hustling for Lesedi..... I hope you told him that Lesedi is mine

*** He said with an angry voice and she nodded and he breathed in and out trying to calm himself down***

Naledi: its like he has bipolar or something cause whenever I would call you my husband he would shout at me looking extremely angry I thought he was going to beat me up or something

heath quickly got closer and held her tight

Heath: its ok you are safe now you hear me

she nodded

Heath: what happened will never happen ever again ok I'll make sure of it

she nodded again and he kissed the top of her head

.
. .
. .

Jay: what's wrong mamba

he rubbed his face not believing what he found out

Snakes: its about princess

Smiso: what about her?

Snakes: she has been going to some apartment in Kyalami Midrand..... at first I thought it belonged to a friend or some new rich cheese boy she was seeing who is her age so I just thought I should just let her be or else she might push us away and not tell us things just because we are always in her face and business but I was wrong

Jase: I don't understand bafo...what do you mean by "her age"

Snakes: you know her security guys are supposed to follow her at a good distance and they are not supposed to be seen by her

Jay: yeah so?

Snakes: I decided to ask them if they've seen her with someone suspicious or seen her do something suspicious since they haven't reported to me for a while of her being followed and shit and they said she has been seen with some man....sometimes she goes to the guy's apartment and sleeps there and sometimes the guy comes to hers and he also sleeps there and they said she looks happy and comfortable with the man

Smiso: wait.... Didn't we tell her no boys until she gives us a degree

Snakes: he's no boy smiso

Smiso: what do you mean by that?

Snakes: they showed me a picture of the guy and its none other than Ray

Jase: which ray?

Snakes: La Parca

Them: WHAT?

Snakes: yeah fozas.... I even checked the security cameras of the building and I even saw them kissing

the brothers stood up

Muzi: this is not happening

Jay: what the hell is Mbali doing with a man old enough to be her father

Jase: hehe so Mbali o jola na mablessor manje?(so Mbali dates blesser) a dangerous blesser for that matter

Muzi: there must be a mistake bafo.... Are you sure about this

Snakes: come and see for yourselves

*** they went closer to him and watched the cctv footage and they saw them kissing ***

Jay: this is not happening

Smiso: what if he's in the country for us and he's using Mbali to get to us

they all kept quiet looking at him

Smiso: I mean why her..... Mbali is probably 20 years or so younger than him and we've known him to fuck women her age

Jase: we are fucked Pops is gonna kill us if something happens to Mbali

Smiso: jase you said he came to cash in on a favor you owed him right?

Jase: yeah

Smiso: what if he planned the whole shit so that we don't question why he's in the country..... what if he knew about Princess all along and he wanted her to trust him first then he strikes

Snakes: fuck.....i mean for Princess pops can even give up the seat as the mafia boss

Jay: and im sure Ray knows that.....we need to go to princess now.... Where is she bafo

Snakes: lectures

Jay: let's go

they got up and rushed out

36

INSERT.....36

.

.

.

NARRATED

***ray quickly went home when he realized that Mbali was on her way to his place he left Mateo at heath's place and asked Jabu to go pick up Lesedi and Omphile.....he got home and prepared some lunch for the two of them and he went to take a quick shower. As for Mbali as soon as she finished with her last lecturer she got in her car and drove out going to Ray's place her security detail were informed that they shouldn't let her out of their sight and as soon as they saw her car taking a route that wasn't going to her apartment they alerted the brothers and her brothers told them that they'll take it from here and they left her apartment (they were waiting for her there) going to Ray's apartment since they knew that's where she was headed ***

.

.

.

***Anyway Ray was sitting in the lounge when he heard a knock on the door and he smiled getting up and going to open and as soon as their eyes locked they smiled at each other she then walked in and stood on her toes and she kissed him and he held her tight and deepened the kiss moving back with her in his arms and without breaking the kiss he closed the door and he picked her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist and he went to the bedroom with her and he put her gently on the bed and got on top of her and they continued to kiss.....as soon as the kiss got heated Ray broke it and got off the bed and he took off his shirt and his sweatpants and Mbali also got off the bed and she stood next to Ray looking up at him she lowered his briefs and his member stood up firm and hard and she swallowed as the thought of what she was about to do

made her nervous.... Ray pulled her closer and kissed her then she pulled out of the kiss after some time and went down on her knees while holding Ray's hard dick ***

Ray: fuck....

that's all he said as he could see what she was about to do.....as for Mbali she swallowed hard as she was staring face to face with his huge dick she looked up at him and he saw that she was nervous

Ray: you know you don't have to do this right?

he said with his deep voice which became huskier all of a sudden..... then boom she put half of him in her mouth

Ray: SHIT....

he said that and he held her hair while biting his lower lip with his eyes closed as he felt the warmth inside her mouth on his shaftMbali smiled as she felt good that she was the one making him feel like that..... she then remembered the YOUTUBE tutorials video she watched on how to give a mind blowing BJ and she pulled the shaft out of her mouth and she stood up and Ray sighed with disappointment all over his face thinking she changed her mind but nope she didn't.... she remembered that the tutorial said " make sure he's lying down on his back so he doesn't worry about locking his knees"

Mbali: lay down on the bed please

he smirked and took off his briefs completely and he lay down on the bed..... Mbali took off her clothes and she got on top of him and she kissed him with her thumb busy rubbing the tip of his dick gently and as soon as the kiss got heated she pulled out and planted kisses going down on him and when she got to his hard member she licked his tip and she felt disgusted when she tasted his salty and slimy pre-cum but then she fought back the feeling.... She then started giving him a hand job with both her hands gently twisting around his shaft she then flattened her tongue around the tip and she licked it down to its base and she licked it going up to its tip again then she started sucking....she sucked his shaft for dear life while moaning as she read that the vibrations of her moans will add to the pleasure..... All this while Ray was holding her hair tight busy groaning while biting his lower lip and moving his waist up and down meeting with her rhythm she went on and on sucking him hard without stopping....as for Ray he was just in his own world he was busy groaning and calling out her name by now.... after sometime of sucking him she stopped and she went to his jewels and cupped them up and moved them towards him and then she released them making him curse

Ray: Fuck....

*** she then went back to sucking him....she was swirling licking sucking and moaning in her mouth while also stroking his shaft with her dominant hand and cupping her balls with her other hand..... she remembered everything she watched on that video and she was pleased cause the sounds Ray was making made her feel like a boss.....she kept listening and paying attention to him like the tutorial said she should and the hitching in his breathing the moans and groans and how tightly he held her hair were clear indications that she was doing a good job....she then felt his balls tightening and she went for the kill... she went faster sucking him while moaning in her mouth and busy playing with his balls too....Ray was losing his mind and he could feel that he was close and he wanted to tell her to move but his voice failed him then he reached his end and exploded in her mouth hard pushing his dick up her throat while pushing her head down and his whole body shook uncontrollably then she swallowed even though it was hard but she fought the disgusted feeling back and she swallowed his cum then she pulled him out of her mouth and she sat up straight and she watched Ray panting with his eyes closed and she smiled widely cause he looked vulnerable and under her mercy.... She then got off the bed and she went to the bathroom rinsed her mouth and came back with a wet and warm towel and she cleaned him up and she went up to his face and she kissed his lips and he opened his eyes and looked at her with a beautiful wide smile on his face***

Mbali: what?

Ray: where did you learn that my flower

his voice was still husky

Mbali: it's my little secret

she said and rested her head on his chest and he held her tight

Ray: I should be forcing you to tell me but the way im happy I don't even care as long as you didn't practice with some boy

she giggled

Mbali: I would never do that my love cause then I'll be calling death upon myself

Ray: im glad you know that

he kissed the top of her head

Mbali: mmmh

Ray: I love you Anyawu ututu m (my sunshine)

she smiled

Mbali: I love you too sthandwa sam (my love)

***they laid there not saying anything then she heard him snoring softly and she smiled then soon sleep caught up with her too ten soon she woke up to Ray entering her nana filling her

up completely and she moaned out loud...he then started moving with a fast pace going in and out of her hitting the right spot which made her lose her mind.... he fucked her good and hard “missionary style” with the bedroom filled with their moans and groans until a loud bang on the main door startled them***

Mbali: gosh who's that?

she said annoyed as hell

Ray: I don't know but they gonna be sorry for disturbing us nx

*** he said pulling out and getting out of bed he wore his briefs and sweatpants while the banging on the door went on and on and hard***

Voice: MBALENTLE OPEN THIS FUCKEN DOOR NOW WE KNOW YOU IN THERE

Voice2: RAY YOU SON OF A BITCH YOU BETTER HAVE NOT HURT MY SISTER YOU HEAR ME

They shouted and when Mbali heard Jay's voice and Nhlaka's voice too her whole body froze

Mbali: R...Ray

***he stood by the door looking at her and her body was visibly shaking with fear ***

Ray: shit... Get dressed now

she didn't move and he picked her clothes up on the floor and gave them to her

Ray: Mbali get dressed now!

he said with a firm voice and she took her clothes and got dressed while Ray went to the lounge and then boom the door got kicked in and it opened and the brothers got in pointing their guns at Ray who seemed unfazed

Snakes: WHERE IS OUR LITTLE SISTER YOU SON OF A BITCH

he asked Ray and Ray smirked

Ray: sleeping

Smiso: what the fuck did you do to her?

Ray: I did to her my duties as her man

smiso then threw a punch at Ray and it landed on his jaw and Ray fell on the floor and he chuckled wiping the blood that was coming out of his mouth then he stood up

Jay: MBALI...MBALI... MBALENTLE!

he called out to her going to the bedroom and when Mbali heard his voice getting closer she opened the window and took a chair and got on top of it and attempted to jump out of the window the apartment was on the second floor and when Jase got in and he saw her he quickly went to her and grabbed her pulling her away from the window

Jay: ARE YOU FUCKEN OUT OF YOUR MIND

he said to her pointing at her and she just cried trying to hide her face cause she thought he was gonna hit her cause he looked angry then snakes walked in

Snakes: are you ok....did he hurt you?

she didn't say anything she just cried silently and when jase's eyes landed on the unmade bed and the stains on the sheets he frowned and turned to look at Mbali who moved back a bit

Jase: did...did he force himself on you?

she shook her head no slowly

Snakes: what?

Mbali: i... I love him bhuti

Snakes: what did you just say Mbali!

she cried

Mbali: I... I love him

Jase charged to her and she hid her face while he hit her on her arms as she used them to hide her face with an open hand and she screamed.... then Ray rushed to the bedroom when he heard Mbali screaming with the brothers on his tale and found Jase holding her with her hair he didn't care that the khumalo brothers were pointing guns at him he just bolted to the bedroom when he heard his flower's screams

Ray: GET YOUR FUCKEN HANDS OFF HER!

he shouted rushing to where Jase and Mbali where standing but snakes blocked his way

Snakes: YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NERVE TO EVEN OPEN THIS HOSEPIPE OF YOURS

right then smiso gripped him from the back around his neck with his arm chocking him and Jay punched him on the stomach a couple of times with Mbali screaming for Jay to stop and trying to go to Ray but snakes was holding her tight

Mbali: PLEASE STOP YOU HURTING HIM PLEASE

*** She pleaded but it fell on deaf ears***

Jay: YOU SON OF A BITCH.... SO WHAT WAS YOUR PLAN HUH YOU WHERE GONNA USE HER TO GET TO US OR TO MAKE OUR FATHER STEP DOWN AS THE BOSS?

he said holding Ray with his jaws and Ray just smirked

Ray: I don't act like a little bitch like ya'll do I actually do love her

he said then he coughed out blood and jay punched him on the face

Muzi: she's old enough to be your child you fucken pervert!

Ray: well she's old enough to be my wife and the mother of my kids

he said that and coughed again..... then smiso tightened his grip around his neck and Mbali shouted

Mbali: LET HIM GO YOU GONNA KILL HIM BHUTI

he then loosened it a little and he punched him on his lower back and Ray groaned

Jase: SHUT UP....SHUT THE FUCKEN UP

Mbali: NO I WONT SHUT UP I LOVE HIM OK AND IF YOU CONTINUE TO HURT HIM I WILL NEVER FORGIVE YA'LL UNTIL I DIE

A slap landed on her cheek and she held her cheek looking at snakes with tears running down her cheek as she couldn't believe what he just did

Snakes: YOU HAVE THE FUCKEN NERVE TO SAY THAT TO US BECAUSE OF THIS THING MBALI

he said pointing at Mbali and right then Ray tried to get off smiso's grip feeling extreme anger taking over his body when snakes slapped Mbali

Ray: YOU GONNA PAY FOR THAT YOU BASTARD.....IM GONNA FUCKEN RIP YOU TO PIECES FOR LAYING YOUR FUCKEN HAND ON HER

He said with an extremely angry voice at snakes *

Snakes: WHAT YOU GONNA DO YOU PIECE OF SHIT.....WHAT HUH

Muzi got closer to Ray

Muzi: you listen here and listen good you bastard...you gonna stay away from her or else we will send your useless body in pieces to your fucken family!

Ray: I would like to see ya'll try

he said to Muzi with an angry voice and a scary look on his face

Muzi: you think you tough neh? I see you think this is Cuba where you call the shots but guess what you pathetic shit this is Mzansi and we call the shots here

Ray: you know ya'll are so clueless and it's so amusing

he said with a smirk

Jay: SHUT UP... NOW LISTEN HERE YOU GONNA STAY AWAY FROM MBALI OR BE READY TO BURY YOUR FUCKEN FAMILY MEMBERS ONE BY ONE

Ray: FUCK YOU..... NO ONE AND ESPECIALLY YA'LL WILL MAKE ME STAY AWAY FROM HER YOU HEAR ME NO ONE

smiso let him go and he turned him around and threw a punch at him and Ray fell on the floor and Mbali tried to run to him but Jase stopped her...then ray stood up wiping the blood on his lips with a smile on his face

Ray: I won't fight you because of her.... You soon gonna be my brother in laws so.....

Jay interrupted him

Jay: VOETSEK MSUNU!

he said pointing a gun at Ray

Mbali: bhuti please stop please don't

she pleaded with her brother crying but he was looking at Ray with an angry look on his face

Jay: you gonna stay away from Mbali and take your shit and go back to which ever hole you crawled out of you hear me!

Ray: fuck you....Mbali is mine and im not going anywhere!

***jay pulled the trigger and shot Ray on his right shoulder and he fell on the floor groaning and Mbali screamed crying hysterically with Jase stopping her from going to Ray ***

Mbali: RAY....BABY....

then she looked at jay

Mbali: YOU SHOT HIM.....I HATE YOU...I HATE YOU.....YOU FUCKEN SHOT HIM.....RAY LOOK AT ME BABY LOOK AT ME PLEASE

she shouted and pleaded with Ray but he was still on the floor groaning from pain then Jay took off his belt feeling angry that she was busy taking Ray's side even though she knows loyalty is important in their family

Jay: YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NEVER TO SAY YOU HATE ME BECAUSE OF THIS BASTARD.... YOU DON'T EVEN KNOW THE KIND OF PERSON HE IS AND THE KIND OF LIFE HE LIVES AND ALREADY YOU TAKING HIS SIDE BECAUSE OF HIS DICK RIGHT

***he shouted at her but she ignored him and kept on calling out to Ray but then she came back to reality when the belt landed on her bare skin on her arms and she screamed ***

Jay: ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

She just cried and jay swung the belt and it landed on her bare skin again and she screamed and right then Ray stood up from the floor and charged towards Jay ignoring the pain on his shoulder and he grabbed his neck with both hands

Ray: VETE A LA MIERDA (fuck you) FUCK YOU...HOW DARE YOU TOUCH HER YOU RUBBISH.... I DARE YOU TO TOUCH HER AGAIN PUTA (bitch)

***Jay fought Ray off him but he wouldn't budge then Jay squeezed Ray's bloodied wound on his shoulder hard and more blood gushed out and Ray screamed with pain and he let go of Jay and jay punched him then Ray stumbled back a bit and he fought through the pain and charged at Jay and punched him too and Jay stumbled back too then they charged towards each other and

started fighting throwing punches at each other with Mbali screaming that they should stop and as for nhlaka muzi Jase and smiso they were just watching the fight.....Mbali felt the room spinning and she held her head and it was light out and luckily snakes caught her before she could hit the ground***

Jase: MBALI!

Then Ray and Jay stopped fighting and they both looked at her

Ray: my flower!

he tried to move to her and smiso shot him on the leg and he fell on the floor and snakes picked Mbali up and walked out of the bedroom with Smiso Jase and Muzi behind him and Jay went closer to Ray and he crouched next to him and he held him by his jaws with one hand while the other one was holding a gun and he pressed the tip of the gun on the wound on his shoulder and Ray groaned in pain

Jay: stay the fuck away from our little sister you motherfucker or next time a bullet will end up on her forehead

Ray smirked

Ray: im gonna marry her and she's gonna bare me children

Jay pointed the gun on his forehead and Ray continued to smirk

Ray: shoot me you piece of shit cause that's the only way you'll make me stay away from her

Jay: SHUT UP!

and Ray chuckled

Ray: you can't do it right because you know deep down that Mbali will hate you if you did.... She's the future Mrs. La Parca and the sooner you accept that the better and ya'll better pray that she's ok or else.....

Jay interrupted him

Jay: or else what?

Ray: you'll see

jay grabbed him by his jaws making Ray to look at him

Jay: stay away from my sister Ray or im coming after you with everything I have you piece of shit

Ray smirked

Ray: you should have killed me when you had the chance khumalo

*** he smirked again and jay hit him with the back of the gun and it was lights out and Jay stood up and spat on the floor next to him and walked out***

.

.
.
Mbali woke up and she scanned the room she was in and as soon as she recognized it she sighed and laid back thinking about the events that happened earlier and tears gushed out when she thought of Ray and the fact that her brother shot him right in front of her

Mbali: so the dream came true.... Ray is gonna leave me

she said that to herself and she just cried herself back to sleep.... Later she woke up when someone shook her and it was her brother's wife Nomhle

Nomhle: hey sit up and eat

Mbali sat up and she shook her head no

Nomhle: you need to eat something Mbali..... you have been sleeping for hours now

Mbali: can I use your phone sisi

Nomhle: you want to call him right?

she nodded looking down while playing with her fingers and Nomhle sighed

Nomhle: look I can tell by looking at you that he means a lot to you but Mbali you know your brothers will never accept your relationship and plus they know him more than you do and they think he's using you to get to them especially your father

Mbali: he loves me sisNomhle..... I know he loves me

Nomhle sighed

Nomhle: look im not gonna poke my nose in your business so all im gonna say is you gonna have to make a decision and you better be prepared to live by it cause one way or another its either him or your family and remember loyalty is very important in our family

***tears fell from Mbali's eyes cause she knew Nomhle was telling her the true..... well Nomhle gave her the phone ***

Nomhle: make it quick before your brother gets in

she nodded and dialed Ray's numbers but the call rang answered.... She tried again and it went through

Voice: hello

Mbali: Mat

she said with her tiny voice

Mateo: princess are you ok?

Mbali: yeah how...how's Ray

Mateo: he was admitted in hospital but don't worry he's gonna be ok

Mbali cried as she heard he was admitted in hospital

Mbali: ooh my God

Mateo: look he's gonna be ok don't worry yourself

Mbali: can I talk to him please

Mateo: he's sedated now just call tomorrow im sure he'll be awake by then since I can't call you back cause you left your phone at the apartment

she sniffed

Mbali: ok

then Mateo ended the call and she gave Nomhle her phone back

Mbali: thank you

Nomhle nodded and she stood up

Nomhle: try to eat so you can gain strength I'll come back for the dishes

she nodded and Nomhle walked out and Mbali laid back on the bed and she cried herself to sleep

.

.

.

*** Ray woke up to find himself in hospital he then looked around and saw heath jabu and Mateo sitting down on the chairs looking down***

Ray: stop looking like someone died.... What's wrong with ya'll

they quickly looked up and got up from their chairs and went closer to him

Heath: how are you feeling bros.....ok stupid question you surely in pain.... Should we call a doctor

Ray chuckled lightly

Ray: no now help me sit up

***heath adjusted the bed ***

Mateo: you ask for some privacy with your flower and the next thing you are shot twice

Ray: mmmmh those bastards found out about Mbali and i

Jabu: and it shows that they are losing their touch for them to find out now about you two

Ray: mmmmh but damn that fucker Jay can throw a mean punch... shit

he said touching his jaws

Heath: now why are you still alive?

Ray: cause death is scared of me and Lucifer is not ready to have me in hell

*** they laughed***

Ray: how is my flower Mat

Mateo: she called last night.... She didn't sound good she's worried about you

Ray: im glad she's awake

Jabu: now why did you let those fuckers do this to you?

Ray: cause it was my plan

Heath: what plan bros

Ray: those fools did all they did in front of Mbali they were supposed to have her leave the apartment first before "dealing" with me but no they acted before thinking and now they look like villains in her eyes while I look like a wounded and defenseless victim

the guys chuckled while shaking their heads

Jabu: what if they decided to kill you instead Big Ray remember you are not dealing with amateurs like Mshikaro here is with dai laaiti (that boy) Kitso

Ray: I knew they wouldn't in front of Mbali but then again they might think they taught me a lesson but they don't know these bullets wounds are more like flesh wounds to me

Mateo: mmmmh remember when you were shot on the chest

Ray: and I cheated death and survived

Jabu&heath: WHAT?

Mateo: and that other time you got shot on your cheek

Ray: and the bullet went out through the other cheek and it knocked out two of my teeth at the back from both side

jabu and heath looked at him with their eyes popped out

Heath: you serious?

Ray: dead serious man why do you think I have dimples now.... They are man-made bros I just went to remove the scars with a lazer what what

jabu and heath just shook their heads with smiles on their faces

Mateo: jefe here has been shot more than I change my underwear's and he has made it out through all of them

they laughed

Jabu: I guess you right Lucifer is not ready to have you in hell

they laughed then a doctor and a nurse walked in

Doctor: I see you are awake Dr Owoh-Masden

Ray: yeah the sleep did me some good now I need to leave this place

Doctor: I need to make sure you are fully recovered first Doc

Ray: these are just flesh wounds for me so im good

the guys just chuckled looking at him

INSERT.....37

.
. .
.

****MBALI****

*** it's been a week and I haven't seen or heard from Ray to say im hurt is an understatement. I miss him like crazy but im angry that he gave up on us so easily I guess the dream I had was real I mean I haven't seen him in over a week and another week has already started. Look I know my brother Jay took my phone away cause he only gave me my handbag that I left in Ray's apartment and he forbid sisNomhle to land me her phone and they even disconnected the landline and im also walking around with a personal bodyguard now but if Ray wanted to see me I know he would have made it possible so since it's been a week without hearing from him then I guess this is it. I have been crying myself to sleep since that day and im not on speaking terms with my brothers so all I do is go for my lectures and come back here and study then eat and sleep it's my routine now ooh and they even went to pack all my clothes from my apartment and now I have been forcefully moved here anyway I don't wanna get too much into this thing with my "so called" elder brothers so let just leave it as it is. Ooh well im done getting ready for my lectures so I take my handbag and laptop bag and I leave my room I bump into Jay my elder brother and I attempt to walk past him but he holds my arm and I stop moving***

Jay: how long will all this keep going on for Mbali?

I just keep quiet cause I don't have the strength to deal with him this morning

Jay: im talking to you Mbali

Me: I have no answer for you now can I go

I said without even looking at him and he sighed

Jay: you are acting childish you know that right I mean that man is old enough to be your dad and here you are crying and sulking for him while he's busy carrying on with his life out there not giving a damn about you

I swallowed hard and I yanked my arm away from his grip and I walked away from him with him calling my name mxm I can't believe they are acting like this while their wives are either 13 years or more younger than them nx. I didn't even eat breakfast I just went to my car and I found My bodyguard/ driver there waiting for me I greeted him and i got in and he drove out of the yard..... soon we arrived at campus and I got out and said goodbye to him and I walked to my first lecture of the day until I bumped into Derrick ya'll remember him right yep that one

Derrick: hey

I just sighed cause I don't have the energy for him too im going through shit as it is so I cant be entertaining him yes he's handsome and all but his not Ray full stop but that doesn't mean I have to act bitchy when he tries to talk to me

Me: hey

Derrick: you've been scarce lately I missed you

*** I raised my eyebrow looking at him and he chuckled***

Derrick: what im only stating the truth

*** I sighed***

Me: well I've been around

his face got serious...ok

Derrick: are you ok though cause you seem a bit offish

***wow am I that obvious ***

Me: yeah im just going through some things

Derrick: wanna talk about them? im a good listener you know

I faked a smile

Me: nah im good.... look I have to go I'll see you around

Derrick: we can walk together since im going to attend my lecture too

Me: oh ok

*** I wanted to ask him what he's studying but aarg I decided against it cause that would seem like im interested in knowing him where else im not cause having him in my life will complicate things and if Ray finds out im hanging out with him I'll be in deep shit (well that's if he's still interested to be with me Ray that is) cause even a blind person can see that Derrick is not looking to be my friend but more than that and I can't give him that..... anyway we walked with him busy asking me questions about myself and stuff and I found myself answering him he smells good and his voice is sexy and ooh he also dresses good but he's not Ray aarg anyway we stood outside my lecture hall and he smiled looking down at me ***

Me: what?

Derrick: you are really beautiful princess

I blushed a bit

Me: thanks ummm let me go

he held my hand...ok

Derrick: can we do a late lunch today please you can even choose the restaurant

Me: Derrick look I can't...

he interrupted me

Derrick: please Princess.... please...please

he said giving me puppy dog eyes gosh he looked so cute and I just smiled

Me: only as friends

Derrick: ofcourse I just wanna cheer you up since you seem offish today

Me: ok then I'll see you later

he smiled wide

Derrick: ok later

he quickly stole a kiss on my cheeks and he ran off before I could reprimand him mxm...i sighed when I thought about Ray and where he could be I missed him so bad but it looks like he doesn't cause my Ray would have done anything possible to see me but its been a week and nothing from him maybe he saw that im not worth it and moved on I mean who would want to deal with my crazy brothers. anyway I moved to get into the hall when I heard someone calling my name I turned to see Phindile mxm



**Today
eBooks**

Phindi: hey

Me: what is it?

I seriously don't have time for her

Phindi: geez what's with the attitude?

*** I gave her a bored look and I moved closer to the door***

Phindi: wait geez

I stopped and looked at her with an annoyed look

phindi: ummm have you seen Kyle by any chance

I looked at her with a smile on my face wow karma is really a bitch yho I mean it hasn't been long but already Kyle has started showing her flames

Me: even if I did what makes you think I'll tell you

she frowned

Phindi: you don't have to be a bitch Mbali it doesn't suit you

wow this jezebel just called me a bitch

Me: yes I've seen him he left my place in the morning after a night of him fucking me pretty good and he said he'll call me later to check up on me I'll tell him you were looking for him ok lala

I said that and left her there with an angry look on her face I know I lied but she deserves It nx..... anyway I attended all my lectures and I send Derrick a text that we should meet at mug & bean and he said cool..... I went to my car and I told my driver/ bodyguard to take me there and he did im missing Ray so much I feel like crying right now why hasn't he tried to reach out or maybe Mat lied and he was badly hurt and he's been in hospital since gosh I hope he's not. anyway I went inside the restaurant and a waiter walked me to my table and as we were busy moving to my table for two at the back guess who I saw...Ray he looked fine and he even had a new haircut he was sitting with some coloured woman probably his age and they looked cozy as hell he was holding both her hands while he was looking in her eyes. I stood still and stared at him while he was looking at the woman but I guess he could feel someone staring at him and he looked up while smiling but when our eyes met the smile faded and his eyes popped out then he quickly looked down and back at the woman sitting across him totally disregarding my presence I felt a sharp pain in my heart and a cold shiver run through my whole body with my bottom lip trembling how could he how could he do this to me.... I have been crying and starving myself cause I couldn't handle spending another day without seeing him I have been worried about him and asking myself if he's ok or not and he's absolutely fine busy entertaining another woman how can I be this foolish I resented my brothers even more when they warned me about him saying he's a player and that he's gonna hurt me they were right and I can't believe it..... I felt hands on my waist then the figure came to stand in front of me it's Derrick

Derrick: hey what's wrong?

he said wiping my now falling tears and I quickly composed myself cause im embarrassing myself in front of Derrick and people who are now looking at me

Me: it's... its nothing

I said wiping my tears off completely

Me: ummm can...can we do this some other time please

he sighed and nodded im sure he could see im not ok

Derrick: ok let's go

*** I turned not even looking at Ray and Derrick put his hand on my lower back and we walked out***



**** RAYMOND****

***When our eyes locked I swear my whole body froze I didn't expect to see her here I mean I thought she was locked up by her brothers and shit but there she was looking beautiful as always she lost a bit of weight and her skin was a little pale which got me worried but she still looked beautiful but the look on her face when she saw me holding Devonias hands damn I swear my heart nearly stopped when she did but I had to compose myself and pretend that I didn't just see her. The thing is Devonias called me when I was in Nigeria cause My father asked to see me concerning the second wife issue of his while two days before I was in Cuba with Diego dealing with some things there... she called me crying over the phone busy saying that she suspects that her husband paid someone to kill her and stuff she said she needed to see me cause she wanted my help and since we are good like that I told her I'll see her when I get back in the country.

I didn't try and find ways to see Mbali cause I got a call from Diego saying im needed in Cuba cause there's some fool trying to evade our territory and shit and I had to go there and help Diego deal with him cause he's going through shit himself he found out that his younger sister has cancer that time he flew to Cuba so I had to take care of things before I could find a way to see my flower and now it might be harder than it would have been before now cause that look on her face was clear to me that she thinks im cheating or something which is not true. Yes me and Devonias used to fuck and me holding her hands like that seemed inappropriate and shit but I swear im not cheating on her with Dee I was just consoling her since she got emotional when she

was busy telling me about how betrayed she feels by her husband I was just consoling her since she got emotional when she was busy telling me about how betrayed she feels by her husband and I know i could have gone to Mbali and assured her that it's not what she thinks it is but I just didn't want Devonia or anyone in the underworld know about her and how important she is to me cause already she's my weakness and I know her life is always in danger because of her brothers father and grandfather so I don't wanna add more enemies on the list from my side. But then that dickhead came from nowhere and when he wiped her tears and left with her while his filthy hand was on her lower back I swear I felt anger brewing from the pit of my stomach it took everything in me not to stand up and put a bullet on his fucken skull that instant.....now I can't even call her or send her a message cause her phone has been off since that day her fucken brother came to the apartment to take it along with her handbag***

Devonia: are you ok?

I cleared my throat fuck my heart is beating so fast I think im gonna suffer a heart attack or even a panic attack any moment now

Me: yeah.... so how do you want me to handle him

Devonia: I want him abducted and I'll kill him myself

Me: ok.... are you sure you want to do this and that he's the one that send that hitman?

she nodded and I also nodded

Me: ok it will be done in two days to come

she held my hand

Devonia: thank you so much I'll owe you

I removed my hand from her hold and sat back

Me: and you better not forget it

Devonia: ofcourse baby I won't..... So I was thinking how about we go to my hotel room and have a quick one for old time's sake

she smiled her naughty smile and I chuckled.... trust her to say this mxm stupid gorgeous bitch

Me: I'll have to decline I have another meeting I have to go to

I then stood up taking my phone and car keys on top of the table and she also stoop up

Devonia: so you are saying no to a free pussy Ray?

Me: yeah.... look I'll contact you once it's done

***I got closer to her and kissed her cheek and walked away leaving her speechless..... I went to my car and I got in and drove away fuck the truth is I miss Mbali so much but like I told ya'll things have been hectic lately with all the traveling I've been doing and I never got the

chance to find a way to see her and now i think it's gonna be more harder than it was gonna be before now I know she's hurt and concluding things which are not true in her head and I don't blame her..... that's why I never wanted to be in a committed relationship in the first place because of shit like this***

.
. .

**** NARRATED****

Mbali got home and she went straight to her bedroom and she cried herself to sleep later she woke up when Tiara came to wake her up for supper and she went to wash her face and to rinse her mouth and she went downstairs only to find all her brother's except Smiso were there she greeted and sat down. Nhlaka looked at her pink face and red and swollen eyes and he clenched his jaws he regretted laying his hand on her cause now she can't even say more than 10 words to him and it hurts cause they were really close before this whole Ray thing... the kids where having their food in the TV room

Muzi: when will all this crying stop Mbali it's been a week and you'll end up getting sick

she looked at her sister in law Nomhle

Mbali: can I go eat my food somewhere else sisi

Nomhle looked at the brothers especially her husband and he shook his head

Jay: just eat your food Mbali before you get on my nerves please

she swallowed hard and she looked at her plate and ate slowly as for Nhlaka he couldn't even eat anymore he hated seeing her like this he always wanted to see her happy and now she lost a bit of weight and she also looked a bit pale..... Jay Jase and Muzi and Nomhle where eating while holding a conversation while Nhlaka (snakes) was staring at Mbali who was looking down at her plate eating slowly

Snakes: Mbali follow me so we can talk

Mbali: I have nothing to say or to listen to you or your brothers

she said that still concentrating on her food

Snakes: is that how you talk to me now Mbali

she kept quiet then she looked at Nomhle

Mbali: sisi can I be excuse please

Jase: MBALI ALL THIS NEEDS TO STOP RIGHT NOW WHY ARE YOU ACTING LIKE A SPOILT LITTLE BRAT BECAUSE OF A DICK MMMH?

she stood up with her plate and went to the kitchen and she put her plate inside the fridge and she turned to find Snakes standing at the entrance door

Snakes: when will all this go on for mmmmh?

she didn't say anything she just tried to walk past him but he grabbed her arm

Snakes: im talking to you Mbali!

he said with a stern voice

Mbali: let go of me bhuti

Snakes: look im sorry for slapping you ok believe I feel like shit about it but this attitude and behavior you have going on is starting to piss me off

Mbali: let go of me please

she said with tears in her eyes

Snakes: you know maybe we should tell pops about all the shit you have been doing and let him come and handle you since you think you are grown cause you are dating a blesser!

Mbali: let go of me

*** she said that again and Snakes clenched his jaws looking at her and he sighed and let go of her and she walked out of the kitchen and past the dinner table***

Mbali: sisNomhle thanks for the food and goodnight

he said that ignoring his brothers' stares

Nomhle: goodnight baby

she walked upstairs and she went to take a shower with her mind all over how Ray pretended not knowing her just because of another woman

Mbali: maybe he moved on I mean why would he stay with me even Kyle found comfort in Phindile leaving me with a broken heart so why would a matured man like Ray stay with a messed up girl like me

*** she said to herself and wiped a tear that escaped her eye..... she went to bed with a heavy heart she didn't even have the strength to study***

.
. .

downstairs Nomhle was in the kitchen busy putting the dirty dishes in the dishwasher while the brothers where sitting in the lounge

Jay: I can't believe Mbali is behaving like this

Muzi: she's hurt bafo with time she will come around

Snakes: I think we went overboard with the whole thing

he said regretting how they handled things

Jay: don't Mamba ok just don't.... so you want our little sister to date that bastard

Snakes: no ofcourse not but look at how she is fozas do we really want her to hate us cause I saw it in her eyes she despises us now

Jase: she'll come around she's just having withdrawals symptoms from the effect of his dick

***others laughed but Snakes didn't ***

Jay: chill Mamba she'll come around just wait and see

Nomhle: im really disappointed with all of you

they turned and looked at her

Jay: themba lam?

Nomhle: first of all your wives are 10 to 13 years younger than ya'll and no one told ya'll you can't be with us because of that.... and secondly you are gangsters in suits which im sure this Ray guy is too.... and thirdly your gangster lives have put us into danger so many times that even Brandon got killed because of it but no one is pointing fingers and you don't see anyone forcing us to leave ya'll.... and fourthly you are selfish and inconsiderate you had us on silver platters but it's soo wrong for this Ray guy so date Mbali cause she's your sister

Jay: nomhle please stay out of this we are talking about our little sister here

Nomhle: which little sister Mbali is old enough to make her own decisions and she sure is old enough to make babies and get married she's no longer a baby

Jase: NOMHLE ENOUGH!

he shouted and Nomhle gave him a death stare

Nomhle: don't shout at me Jase ok im not your wife Kedi uyangizwa (you hear me).....so ya'll deserve us with all your beasts and gangster shit you have going on but Ray doesn't deserve Mbali even though he's like all of you.... mxm talk about double standards and wena Jay you better make yourself comfortable on the couch cause I don't want you anywhere near me and im gonna make sure your wives do the same shit to your three too nx

then she walked away leaving them shocked Jay stood up and followed her

Muzi: I need to go home before she calls Noma

Snakes: me too

Jase sighed

Jase: these woman are gonna be the death of us

they all stood up and walked out

.
. .

At Ray's house yes he moved to his new house a week ago before he left for Cuba he was busy pacing up and down thinking about Mbali he was asking himself what she was thinking and the fact that she lost a bit of weight and that she even looked a bit pale worried him he stayed up almost all night thinking about her

.
. .

*** The following day Mbali was in the kitchen having breakfast when her brother Jay walked in looking like shit he didn't even greet her he just opened the fridge and took out bottle water and he walked out and Nomhle walked in***

Nomhle: hey baby

they side hugged

Mbali: hey sisNomhle

Nomhle: how are you feeling today?

***she shrugged her shoulders ***

Mbali: i feel worse than yesterday but I'll live

she didn't wanna tell her what she witnessed with Ray yesterday

Nomhle: that's the spirit

Mbali: your husband looks like he had a rough night

Nomhle: the couch does that to people you know

Mbali: what?

she said looking at her and Nomhle giggled

Nomhle: never mind baby now eat up.... let me go make sure those rascals are ready for school

she then walked out of the kitchen and Mbali finished eating her dry toasted bread and a cup of coffee since it's all she could stomach this morning then she left going to campus.... well she attended all her lectures and she felt like she wasted her time coming cause she couldn't even concentrate she stood up when the lecturer was done and gathered her things and her lecturer Mr van wyk called her and told her to follow him cause he needed to talk to her about her marks so she followed him even though she didn't have the energy to..... they got outside his office and Mr van wyk opened the door

Van.wyk: get in Miss Khumalo

she sighed and got in and she got the shock of her life when she saw Ray standing in the middle of the room wearing a navy blue slim body-fitted suit which looked really good on him with his hands in his pockets the door closed and she turned and Mr van wyk wasn't in the room she swallowed and went to sit down on the couch as she felt a bit dizzy

Ray: hey

Mbali: why am i here Raymond

he clenched his jaws cause her calling him by his full name was clear that he's in deep shit... he went to sit next to her and he rubbed his hands together

Ray: im not cheating on you and I had a reason why I pretended as if I didn't see you

Mbali: ok lets hear your lies

Ray: they are not lies my flower

she chuckled and attempted to get up but she felt dizzy and she sat down again

Ray: are you ok?

he asked concerned

Mbali: I wanna leave Ray

Ray: look at me

he said turning her to face him and she looked at him and she swallowed cause he looked handsome with the new haircut and perfectly trimmed beard he checked her eyeballs and they looked drained and weak

Ray: let me see your tongue

Mbali: for what?

Ray: let me see it Mbali please don't fight me

she stuck it out and he frowned

Ray: how long have you been feeling dizzy?

she sighed

Mbali: a week now

he clenched his jaws

Ray: look im sorry I didn't reach out I was out of the country and I got back two days ago

Mbali: and what about your new girlfriend

he sighed

Ray: she's not my girlfriend Mbali she's just an acquaintance

she chuckled

Mbali: acquaintance Ray really do you think im that naïve?

Ray: im telling you the truth Mbali she's not my girlfriend

Mbali: mxm

she attempted to get up but he pulled her down

Mbali: let go of me Raymond

Ray: can you stop acting childish and listen to me

Mbali: im acting childish now Ray mmmmh I see you looking all lovey-dovey with another woman and you blatantly ignored my existence and when I don't believe what is coming out of your mouth now im being childish

he sighed

Ray: look im sorry ok im sorry for calling you childish

Mbali: mxm get your hand off me Raymond

he sighed and let go of her arm

Ray: im not cheating on you Mbali I love you ok I mean I even took two bullets for you that's how much I love you

she looked at him surprised cause she thought he was shot once on the leg

Mbali: what do you mean two bullets?

Ray: I was also shot on my right leg after you fainted

she swallowed hard

Ray: look I just didn't want her to know about you cause she's....

he kept quiet a bit

Mbali: cause she what? cause she's your wife or fiancé?

Ray: what? nooo look she's from the underworld and I didn't want her to know or see you cause you are my weakness

and that became clear that instance to her that he's also like her brothers a gangster in a suit

Mbali: so its better they know you as a single man right

Ray: Mbali you don't understand

Mbali: I understand perfectly Raymond you are ashamed to be seen with me I mean ever since we met you have never gone out in public with me and you have never introduced me to your family but you can roam around with your coloured woman who is your age mate right

Ray: Mbali come on you know it's not true

Mbali: it is Ray... yes I know you love me I mean I can see it in your eyes but you are ashamed to be seen with me I have people watching over me all the time and my brothers are there to

protect me even though they go overboard sometimes so that lame excuse you just gave me is low even for you

Ray: Mbali you don't get it my life is complicated and i.....

she interrupted him

Mbali: save it Raymond.... just go to your girlfriend and leave me alone..... I cant believe I cried for you and even starved myself while you are busy enjoying yourself...maybe my brothers were right about you maybe you were using me to get to them and now that you were caught you are now tossing me away like a used tissue

*** she said that and wiped her tears while Ray looked at her with an angry face he couldn't believe she just said that to his face***

Ray: you just said that to my face Mbali

she didn't say anything she just closed her eyes as she felt the room spin a bit

Ray: so you think im using you mmmmh.... you are busy casting a stone at me right now but you don't see me doing that about that boy you left with even though I told you to stay away from him

she got up and took her bag

Ray: where are you going we are still talking Mbali!

he said to her while standing up too

Mbali: im tired Ray.....im tired and I don't have the strength to fight with you I found you holding hands with her and you telling me she's just an acquaintance I see you think im a fool but im not Ray and as for Derrick im glad he was persistent that we go have a late lunch just so he can cheer me up cause he could see I was down or else I wouldn't have seen you and your new girlfriend

Ray: SHE'S NOT MY GIRLFRIEND MBALI DAMN IT YOU ARE!

Mbali: not anymore

Ray: what did you just say?

he asked with his heart beating fast

Mbali: bye Ray

he grabbed her arm tight as she tried to walk away

Ray: so we going through this break up shit again Mbali

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: no cause this time im serious its over you can live your gangster life freely and my brothers will leave you alone in peace

he tightened the grip around her arm and she flinched

Ray: are you pushing me to see what I'll do Mbali is that it

Mbali: let go of me

Ray: so you wanna see what I'll do abi?

Mbali: let go of me Raymond

she said with tears in her eyes

Ray: fine you'll see!

he said with his jaws clenched and rage all over his face and he let her go and as she turned to walk away but then she felt dizzy and she held her head and it was lights out for her luckily Ray caught her before she can hit the floor and immediately all that anger he felt vanished and worry and panic took over..... he picked her up and went to put her on the couch and he went a pour water in a glass and he came back to her with it and he sprinkled some water on her face while calling out her name a couple of times then she moved a bit and he put the glass down and held her face

Ray: baby?...my love open your eyes and look at me

she did and when her vision became clear she breathed out and held her head

Ray: are you ok....hey look at me

he said with concern all over his face

Mbali: im fine Ray

she said with a low tone trying to sit up but she felt the room spin again and she fell back on the couch and it was lights out again

Ray: MBALI.... MY FLOWER WAKE UP!

he said shaking her then he checked her pulse and it was faint then he quickly got up and he took her bag and picked her up bridal style and he rushed out with her

38

INSERT.....38

.

.

.

RAYMOND

***I have been pacing up and down here worried sick I even called Mat telling him about Mbali and I also told him to come here cause im sure those Khumalo fuckups knows by now that Mbali is no longer at campus so they might walk in any moment now. I already suspect that she might

be pregnant because of the symptoms I saw on her but I could be wrong cause many illnesses can be the cause of those symptoms so I pray she's pregnant instead I see Mat walking towards me and I sigh***

Mat: jefe how is she?

Me: I don't know bros the doctor is still busy with her

Mat: what could be the cause for her to fainting like that?

I just looked at him and his eyes popped out

Mat: shit!

Me: you can say that again bros

Mat: you know or you suspect jefe

Me: I suspect and also hope she is I don't think I can handle her having a tumor or something it will kill me bros

Mat: I get you jefe so what about her brothers

Me: if she's pregnant I know world war 16 is starting between us

right then we heard commotion coming our way and they stopped moving and froze when their eyes landed on me and I saw Muzi the doctor rushing away to the ward she was wheeled in after giving his gun to one of his brothers

Jay: what are you doing here?

*** I just ignored him and I went to sit down I don't have the energy to deal with him today my flower is in there and she needs me focused and not locking horns with these fuckers***

Snakes: he asked you a question

Me: abeg commot jaré! (please get lost)

I said that with an annoyed voice

Mat: look your sister is admitted for fainting now wait for the doctor like we are doing and keep your bickerings to yourselves!

he said that annoyed too and I saw Snakes rushing to him and Mat pulled out his gun he was still standing up and the Khumalo also pulled their guns out (sigh) this shit is getting tiring

Mat: don't try me man im not in the mood

Me: will you just stop Mbali is in there and ya'll are busy locking horns with us!

Jay: don't tell us shit you fucken asshole why is it you the one who brought her here didn't I fucken tell you to stay away from her!

Me: don't fucken tell me that shit Khumalo I don't have time for your shit why I was with her is none of your damn business

he walked to me looking angry and I stood up I just didn't care this time around if he tries his shit on me I won't be lenient on him

Me: don't try me Jay im not in the mood

Jay: didn't I warn you to stay away from our sister

Me: and I thought I told you to go fuck yourself cause I'll never do that

he charged to me and he grabbed me by my collar and I grabbed him by his too

Me: I don't have time for your shit Jay now get your fucken hands off me before you fucken regret it!

I said it through my teeth I was pissed off by now

Jay: fuck you Ray nx now you gonna take your fucken lapdog and fuck off from here and stay the fuck away from my sister uyangizwa(you hear me)

Mat: perro faldero es esa cosa entre tus piernas puta (lapdog is that thing between your legs bitch)

I chuckled and he let go of me and I did too then he stood in front of me breathing hard and I just kept a straight face cause I was pissed as hell

Jase: leave Ray

Me: im not going anywhere until I know she's fine

I said that not even looking at him I was still facing this he-goat in front of me

Voice: sirs can you please keep it down or take it outside this is a hospital not a boxing ring please

a nurse said clearly annoyed by our noise

Jase: is this your father's hospital?

wow.... she swallowed and took a deep breath

Nurse: no but I work here

Jay: then go help doctors save lives and stop telling us shit

*** I saw her swallow hard***

Snakes: yekela ukus'buka ingathi s'phethe amasweets (stop looking at us as if we have sweets) go do your fucken job before you find yourself jobless!

*** she walked away with tears in her eyes and this he-goat turned to look at me***

Me: what?

Jay: leave Ray you are not needed here

Me: Mbali needs me

Jase: no she doesn't now fuck off man

Me: make me Puta (bitch)

then Thorsten (beast) walked to us it looks like he was running

Thor: how is she?

he asked his brother Snakes

Snakes: Muzi hasn't come to inform us

he nodded and when his eyes landed on me he frowned

Thor: what the fuck are you doing here?

Me: not you too abeg

I said moving away from Jay and sitting down

Thor: what the fuck is he here Jay

Jay: it looks like he's the one that brought her here

Thor: what? Wasn't she attending her lectures..... Unless nx you son of a bitch you went to see her there right?

Me: I don't owe any of you shit

Thor: you getting too big for your boots boy

I chuckled....did this fucker just called me a boy..... Then I showed him the middle finger and Mat chuckled

Thor: be careful boy I might just chop it off

I chuckled and just shook my head he called me boy again nx

.

.

.

****NARRATED****

****after some time they saw Muzi and another doctor walking to them Muzi looked angry even his eyes were burning with rage....he got there and jumped on Ray wanting to punch him busy shouting at him****

Muzi: IM GONNA FUCKEN KILL YOU YOU SON OF A BITCH YOU WORTHLESS
PIECE OF SHIT!

*** he roared grabbing Ray with his shirt trying to pull him closer so he can punch him hard on his face and Mat pushed him away from Ray..... Muzi was now pointing at Ray ready to kill him***

Thor: what happened bafo what wrong with my princess

well Ray knew now by Muzi's reaction he's gonna be a father.... as for Muzi he couldn't even talk he was way too angry to even alter another word then the other doctor cleared his throat

Doctor: Miss Khumalo was dehydrated and she also has signs of iron deficiency also called anemia which in this case its caused by stress and her blood pressure is high and....

muzi interrupted him

Muzi: she also suffers from malnutrition meaning she was starving herself and...and she's pregnant

***he said looking at Ray with a deadly look and Ray breathed out cause it's confirmed now that he's gonna be a father he wished things could be different but they aren't so from now on he has to make most of the situation he's faced with but he was also angry that she was starving herself ***

Jay: WH.....WHAT?

*** Jase and Snakes sat down with their hands on top of their heads and Smiso took out his gun and put the silencer on and pointed it at Ray and the Doctor quickly ran away from the scene.... Mat also took out his gun again and pointed it at Smiso***

Ray: so now you gonna kill the father of your sister's unborn baby in front of people and cameras

he said with a chilled out voice

Snakes: it was your plan all along right.... cashing in on the favor Jase owed you to fucking our little sister and getting her pregnant right?

Jase: I remember you told me about Mrs La Parca all along you were talking about Mbali you bastard

Ray shook his head looking down then he looked at them with a hard look on his face

Ray: like I said I don't owe any of you shit Mbali is pregnant and there's nothing you can do about it now suck it up and stop acting as if I got Lucifer's daughter pregnant and now I have to deal with his demons I love Mbali and

***the gun went off and the bullet passed next to his ear only touching him a little and it hit the wall behind him and Ray just touched where is scratched him on his cheek and he looked at his hand to see if he's bleeding but it was just a little blood nje ***

Thor: SAY THAT BULLSHIT OF YOU LOVING HER AGAIN AND THE NEXT BULLET WILL GO THROUGH YOUR FUCKEN SKULL!

he roared and Mat croaked his gun ready to shoot Thorsten but Ray stopped him

Ray: no lo hagas Mateo (don't Mateo)

Mat: dejame disparar a este bastardo jefe (let me shoot this bastard boss)

Thor: tu padre es el que es un bastardo puta (your father is the one that is a bastard bitch)

Ray chuckled impressed that he can understand and speak Spanish

Snakes: heeh you are acting all tough Mr La Parca but wait until Nighthawk and Killer gets here your entire generation will be wiped out

Ray: I don't give a shit about them the only person I give a shit about is Mbali and my unborn baby

then he walked away going to find Mbali's ward and Mat followed him after giving Smiso a deadly look

Mat: Puta (bitch)

Thor: VOETSEK MSUNU!

Jase: where the fuck is he going I hope he's not going to see Mbali

he went after them and Jay also followed them leaving Snakes Muzi and Thorsten behind

Snakes: I believe he got her pregnant on purpose I mean Mbali know what's at stake so she wouldn't be this careless

Muzi; I don't know what to believe anymore mamba Mbali just disappointed me to the core I mean how could she get pregnant at this stage more especially by this asshole Ray that fool doesn't love anyone but himself now how can he claim that he loves Mbali nx

Snakes: we in deep shit pops is gonna skin us alive for slaking in making sure Mbali is safe

Muzi: or we can just terminate the Pregnancy and make it seem like it was a natural miscarriage and we don't have to tell pops and baba

Thor: what about Bab'dlamini?

Snakes: eish I forgot about him..... yah neh we are fucked fozas

Thor: I should have shot him on the head nx..... His cockiness and arrogance just rubs me in the wrong way

Muzi: you're not the only one bafo

Thor: nx

he stood up and walked away dialing his phone he was mad angry

.
. .
. .

***Ray got in her ward and he found her laying there while staring into space and he sighed and walked further in while Mat stood by the door Ray bend a bit and kissed her forehead and

that's when she came back to her senses and when her eyes landed on him and tears gushed out with her bottom lip trembling***

Mbali: I swear I didn't get pregnant on purpose Ray I swear on my late mother's grave I didn't ***she said with a breaking voice***

Ray: shhhh... I know ok I know my flower

he said kissing her forehead again... right then the door opened and the twins walked in looking angry

Jay: get your fucken hands off her you piece of shit!

he said walking further in and Ray sighed cause this brothers were busy poking and poking him hard and soon he's gonna snap and they won't like it

Ray: don't bring your shit here Jay ok not in front of her!

he warned him

Jay: don't fucken tell me what to do or say you piece of shit now get the fuck out and stay away from her

Mbali: Bhuti plea....

he interrupted her

Jay: YOU KEEP QUIET I DON'T EVEN WANNA HEAR EVEN A SLIGHT WHISPER FROM YOU!

he shouted at Mbali and she kept quiet with tears running down her cheeks and that made Ray angry

Ray: GET OUT!

Jay: ithini le bari (what is this fool saying)

he asked looking at Jase

Ray: GET OUT YOU TWO!

Jase: listen here this is our...

Mbali: please leave

they looked at her

Jase: you are asking us to leave Mbali

Mbali: yes please

***she said not even looking at them... she was just drained and having them here was gonna stress her some more ***

Jay: wow so you are choosing a dick over your own brothers Mbali

Ray: no she's not you are the ones that are making her choose

Jase: wena thula slima as'khulumu nawe msunu (shut up you fool we are not talking to you)

Voice: ukhuluma amasimba manje (now you talking shit)

jabu said walking in with a frown on his face they looked at him and Ray smirked

Ray: how?

Jabu: Mat send heath and i a message but heath will see you later cause him and Naledi went to her doctor for her routine checkup

Ray nodded and Jabu looked at the Khumalo brothers

Ray: so these are the cock blockers bros?

Jay: uthini? (what did you say)

Jabu: eeh bros I don't remember talking to you but to my brother here so chill the fuck down

Jay: I see you don't fucken know who we are right for you to be busy vomiting rubbish out of your mouth like this

he said taking a step closer to him

Jabu: eeh my bra a ke hier go tlo lwana le lona ok ke hier cause banchaetse gore ke tlo ba rangwane so brika net daar ka your threats tuu (my brother im not here to fight with Ya'll ok im only here cause I was told im gonna be uncle so stop with your threats please)

*** the brothers looked at him like he just spoke some foreign language and Jay looked at Mbali***

Jay: so this is the kind of shit you risked your future and your fucken safety for... not forgetting the shit you want to lose your family for mmmmh?

he asked Mbali

Jase: im sure Mom is busy turning in her grave right now nx.... asambe bafo and wena

*** pointing at Mbali***

Jase: I hope you are ready for pops and baba not forgetting Ma I hope you're ready to tell them exactly when did they teach you to open your legs wide for sugar daddies to fuck you and also getting pregnant by them

****they walked out leaving Mbali crying and Ray pissed off...he took off his shoes and laid on the bed and rested her head on top of his hard chest holding her tight***

Ray: its ok my flower I got you ok you are not alone in this and you being pregnant doesn't mean you can't finish varsity and achieve your dreams ok

she nodded and he kissed the top of her head and Jabu cleared his throat

Jabu: ai dimoeskond tse mara nx anyway Big Ray di intro nyana? (ai these assholes nx anyway big Ray aren't you gonna introduce me)

Ray chuckled

Ray: my love this is Jabu my cousin from my mother's side our mothers are siblings so he's my crazy brother

Jabu stretched out his hand for her and she shook his hand

Jabu: yeer your palm is soft Man yeses what's your secret suster so I can tell vrou yaka(my woman) to use it cause yeer her palms are so rough ekare o spana ko construction site (as if she works on a construction site)

Mbali laughed lightly and Ray chuckled

Ray: she's gonna kick your balls if she learns that you said that about her palms bros

Jabu: im playing man eeh Big Ray don't tell her I said that about her man eish I'll get into big trouble with her man

Ray laughed

Mat: I need to lean this language you are speaking Jabs it sounds interesting

Mat said getting closer

Jabu: stick with me and I'll teach you man... Anyway let's give this two love birds some privacy and lets go so I can teach you some swear words

they laughed

Mat: we will be outside Jefe

Ray nodded and they walked out

Ray: you gonna be fine ok

she nodded

Mbali: im scared Ray dad is gonna kill me and Ma is gonna be so disappointed and as for baba I don't even wanna go there

Ray: and through all that know that I got your back and im not going anywhere and after this whole shit I'll formally introduce you to my family and take you to many dates and vacations ok

she sighed thinking about their fight earlier

Mbali: im sorry I over reacted

Ray: its ok and im also sorry for not finding ways to see you sooner and also for that whole episode with Devonia she's a none factor My flower in fact she's married and a stupid whore at that

Mbali: but she looks like your type of a woman

Ray: ooh really?

she didn't say anything

Ray: ooh well im sorry to bust your bubbles but I have one type of a woman im interested in and that type is you and only you capish?

Mbali: you being cheesy now

he chuckled

Ray: and it's all your fault my flower..... I just don't want anything to happen to you cause I'll lose it my flower so I wanted to keep you as far as I can away from the underworld life cause you are my weakness and your safety is my priority

*** he pulled her chin up and she faced him and he planted a soft kiss on her lips she couldn't believe that they were fighting not so long ago before she fainted***

Ray: and it should be the first and last time you'll ever starve yourself or my child you hear me

she nodded a bit scared by the look on his face then he sighed

Ray: and thank you for carrying my seed you just made me the happiest man on earth.... I can't believe im gonna be a father

Mbali: you sure you ok with me being pregnant

Ray: more than ok im happy my flower..... I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too

*** she rested her head back on his chest and she smiled feeling some joy in her heart she couldn't believe she was pregnant yes she was scared but knowing that Ray is gonna walk this path with her made her feel some sense of relief..... she loves kids and she knows that being pregnant doesn't stop anyone from reach their dreams or goals and the fact that Ray is acknowledging this pregnancy and he promised to walk this path with her made her have some sort of strength to fight or deal with the upcoming storm from her father and grandfather cause they are both tough nuts to crack but at the same time she was scared cause she's 20 years and pregnant by a man twice her age***

.

.

.

**** The following day naledi dropped off Omphile at her school and she now just dropped Lesedi off at Day Care and she walked out of the gate and as she was heading to her car she saw a man with tattoos leaning against it and she took out her phone and quickly dialed Heath's numbers but then she saw the guy indicating that she should drop the call by showing her a gun on his waist and she held it on her hand without dropping it..... she then decided to run back inside the Day care cause it was clear now her life is in danger***

Meanwhile Heath was in a meeting with Mr Moeketsi in the boardroom when his phone rang it was Naledi so he knew he had to answer it

Heath: Im sorry i need to take this

Mr Moeketsi nodded and Heath stood up and answered walking away from the table

Heath: Obi m..... hello Naledi?

he heard some shuffling and he heard a male voice

Voice: you move and I shoot now come here

***his whole body froze instantly and his breathing escalated ***

Heath: NALEDI!

he called out to her

Naledi: please don't hurt me.... please

she pleaded with the guy

Heath: SHIT!

he rushed back to Mr Moeketsi who wondered what was going on and he put his phone on loud speaker

Voice: work with me here and I won't have to hurt you mamasita..... damn I see why he's head over heels with you look at this ass.... damn

Heath: can I have your phone please

he said to Mr Moeketsi with his voice shaking and his eyes blood shot red with anger and Mr Moeketsi unlocked his phone and gave it to him without asking questions as he could hear what was happening.... Anyway Heath dialed Jabu's numbers and he answered on the third ring

Jabu: heita (hello)

Heath: jabu where are the guys that are supposed to look after Naledi

Meanwhile on the other end of Heath's call the guy that was with Naledi was busy on the phone with Scara looking at the frightened Naledi who was trying by all means to keep calm for her unborn babies' sake

Jabu: im sure they are following her Mshikaro

Heath: I DON'T THINK SO CAUSE SOMEONE IS WITH HER NOW BUSY
THREATENING HER

Jabu: WHAT?...wait let me call them don't hang up

Heath heard some shuffling from Jabu's side

Heath: can I leave with your phone my other phone is at my office..... shit my car keys too

he said to Mr Moeketsi and Mr Moeketsi stood up

Mr.M: let's go we will use my car

Jabu: shit Mshikaro they are not answering.....im going there now

then he dropped the call and Mr. Moeketsi and Heath were busy running to the exit with his employees looking at them

Guy: alright ma se kind I heard you I won't harm even the tiniest hair on her head

he laughed then he dropped the call and looked at Naledi who was now in front of him

Guy: just so you know your bodyguards are useless

he said pointing at a car that had blood splattered on it windscreen from the inside..... she swallowed hard as she didn't even know that she had bodyguards

Naledi: what do you want from me?

the guy chuckled and he bit his lower lip

Guy: my dick in your mouth is what I want but that's not why im here

tears ran down her cheeks with her bottom lip trembling and the guy got closer and he wiped her tears with his thumb and Naledi closed her eyes shut while looking away with more tears coming out

Guy: I have a message for you beautiful... the message is: you have three days to leave that useless husband of yours or you'll become a widow..... you see beautiful that husband of yours is a gangster in a suit and he thinks he's above everyone but the truth is he's been out of the game for far too long and now he's fucking with my homie's little bro and he doesn't even know that he's digging his own grave and my homie's lil bro loves you and he doesn't want you caught up in the cross fire jy verstaan mamasita

he brushed her cheek gently

Guy: damn you are beautiful... I didn't know albinos can be this fucken beautiful I guess you are one of the luckiest ones mmmmmh pragtag man (beautiful)

Naledi: please let me go please

she said with a shaky voice

Guy: ok as you wish but remember the message.... three days beautiful.... three days and you better be out of that house and out of his life or you'll bury him his daughter cat dog rats and so forth and even that bastard called Jabu since he has a big mouth.... if you leave we will let his daughter live since you seem to be fond of her

he then walked backward still looking at her

Guy: remember three days

***then he winked at her and turned and walked to his car with two other guys that were standing next to the bodyguards car following him and as soon as they started driving off gunshot were fired and from a car that just drove in the street and Naledi hid next to her car and

she heard car tires screeching and more gun shots being fired and glass shattering..... soon the gunshots stopped and she heard someone shouting her name***

Voice: NALEDI!....NALEDI!

it was Jabu and he got to her and kneeled down and hugged her and she just held on to him crying

Jabu: are you hurt?

*** she shook her head no and he helped her up she was even shaking***

Jabu: calm down Ledi think about the babies ok

***she nodded and she did breath ins and outs then they heard police sirens not far and she just rested her head on Jabu's chest and he held her tight as she sobs ***

Jabu: you are safe now and Mshikaro is on his way ok....

she nodded*

.
. .

**** The police were now here with the forensic people and an ambulance but unfortunately none of the bodyguards survived.....right then Heath and Mr. Moeketsi parked their car and Heath got out of the car and he started calling out Naledi's name like a mad man***

Heath: Naledi!....Naledi!

he said going over the police tape and when one of the Police officers tried to stop him he pushed him away and he continued to call out to Naledi with his heart pounding hard against his chest

Jabu: Mshikaro calm down

he said rushing to him

Heath: WHERE'S MY WIFE JABU

Jabu: she's fine now calm down.... let's go

they went to her car and they found her with her eyes closed while rubbing her belly she was sitting in the backseat

Heath: obi m

she opened her eyes

Naledi: He....Heath

he got in and sat next to her and he held her tight and she just cried until she calmed down he then pushed her of him gently and he cupped her face and planted a kiss on her lips and her forehead

Heath: did he hurt you?

she shook her head no and he sighed with relief

Heath: I love you ok

Naledi: I love you too.... please go take Lesedi and also go fetch Omphile I want to go home and be with them

Heath: let's leave Omphile I'll go pick her up after school

she shook her head no

Naledi: I want my kids with me Heath please

Heath: ok...ok Jabu will go pick her up alright

she nodded and he got out of the car and he told Jabu to bring Lesedi cause Naledi want her and he should also go pick Omphile up at her school and he nodded and he went inside the yard to go take Lesedi..... Then Heath helped Naledi out of the car and Mr. Moeketsi walked to them

Mr.M: Heath is she ok?

Heath: yeah

then when Mr. Moeketsi's eyes landed on Naledi he froze the resemblance was clear.... it was as if he was looking at his late mother's picture when she was in her early 30s the only difference is his mother was a yellow bone while Naledi is an albino it was like his mother was reincarnated.....he then looked at Heath with his eyes popped out and Heath just looked at him with a straight face

Mr.M: she....what....

Heath interrupted him

Heath: meet the Daughter you wanted aborted years ago and Obi m meet your sperm donor James Moeketsi

*** Naledi looked at Mr. Moeketsi with her eyes popped out then suddenly all the anger and resentment she has been harboring all those years came rushing down to her and she looked at Heath while breathing heavily***

Naledi: I wanna go home Heath please

she said with a low tone and Heath nodded and he helped her in the car and Jabu came back with Lesedi and he gave her to Naledi and she just held on to her tight

Jabu: I'll go pick Omphile up and Ray is driving to your place as we speak

Heath: ok thanks bros

he nodded and two police officers came to the car and before they can speak Heath spoke

Heath: Jabu will give you our address to come and take her statement for now she's in no state to answer your questions and I need to make sure she rests as you can see that she's heavily pregnant

Officer: ok we will come tomorrow

heath nodded and he closed the driver's door and he started the car and drove away leaving Mr. Moeketsi still standing there like a statue

39

INSERT.....39

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Mr. Moeketsi finally moved and he went to his car then he stood next to it and he took out his phone from his pocket(Heath gave it to him before they got out of his car) and he dialed his traditional healer

Voice: James

he sighed

James: I found her

Voice: I did say you will but she won't forgive easily cause even though her mother treated her bad but she never lied her to cover for you she always told her the truth when it came to you and what you did and said to her when she told you that she's pregnant

James sighed loudly regretting everything

James: she looks like my late mother which means she looks like me a bit

Voice: you know what they said about rejected pregnancies

James: yeah.... how do I even begin asking for her forgiveness

Voice: come to my house so we can see what the ancestors say about you finally finding her and how to go about it

James: ok makhosi im on my way

*** then he ended the call and got inside his car and drove away from the scene.... his mind kept going back to Naledi and the fact that she's the only child of his that looks like him or any of his family members..... Yes she had his nose forehead and mouth and he got them from his late mother while Lerato and Katlego look nothing like him but he always brushed it off cause they

look like their mother..... then his phone rang it was his soon to be Ex-wife...yes they are separated and he's been thinking of filing for divorce cause the love is no longer there from his side and he suspects that she's cheating and what surprises him is he doesn't even care anymore***

James: Mmapula

Mmapula: where are you James?

James: how is that any of your business?

Mmapula: bathong James I thought you would have cooled down by now

James: this marriage is over Mmapula you think I don't know that you have been sleeping with that bastard

Mmapula: wha...what?

James: ooh just drop the act nx and the divorce papers will be dropped to you by the end of the weekand ooh I want to do paternity tests on Lerato and Katlego cause I suspect that they are not mine

Mmapula: HOW DARE YOU JAMES....

***tuh tuh tuh... he dropped the call and switched his phone off ***

James: nx

he said pissed off

.
. .

*** Heath drove in the yard and parked the car and he got out and he went to Naledi's side and he opened her door and he took Lesedi out and helped Naledi out and he closed the door and they slowly walked in the house and as soon as Ray saw them walking in he walked to them and he hugged Naledi and kissed the Top of her head***

Ray: did he hurt you

she shook her head no and he looked at Heath who seemed angry he was trying by all means to contain his anger for Naledi's sake

Ray: you gonna be fine?

he asked him and he nodded

Heath: let me take them upstairs and we will talk

***Ray nodded and they went upstairs and Naledi took off her shoes and lay on the bed and she rubbed her belly with her eyes closed and heath sat the edge of the bed with Lesedi on his lap

and he sighed..... he was scared to even find out how she felt about him being a gangster in a suit but he knew they have to talk about it one way or the other and its either now or never ***

Naledi: please send Omphile to me when they arrive

she said bringing Heath back from his thoughts and he nodded

Heath: ok....ummm I know you have questions for me Obi m

she breathed out

Naledi: are you a gangster in a suit?

Heath: yeah

she kept quiet a bit

Naledi: do you hurt innocent civilians

Heath: no

he sighed

Heath: we don't hijack cars or do human trafficking.....we do while-collar crimes like diamond smuggling we switch original well known paintings with fake ones and sell them in the black market and we also do gun smugglings as well and we also do money laundering
then he kept quiet a bit..... he was scared that she might say she can't stay married to a gangster

Heath: I know it's too much to take in Obi m but please don't make.....

she interrupted him

Naledi: it doesn't change anything between us Heath im sure you became one before we even met and you've been one all along and now our lives are in danger because of me and not because you are a gangster

he put Lesedi on top of the bed and he held Naledi's hand and she opened her eyes and she found him looking at her intensely

Heath: none of this is your fault Obi m... you didn't put a loaded gun on that fools head and told him to do what he did

Naledi: but he's my sperm donor and now your life is in danger and so is the lives of those close to you so it's my fault

Heath: Naledi!

she wiped her tears

Heath: Naledi none of this is your fault and believe me when I say nothing will happen to me or anyone that is close to me

Naledi: you promise?

Heath: I promise Obi m..... that toothpick has bitten more he can chew and he'll pay for sending that bastard to come and threaten you especially in your state

she sighed

Naledi: he said I should leave you and he won't....

he interrupted her

Heath: whatever they are smoking is surely messing with their already messed up brains.....you are not going anywhere and nothing will happen to me ok

Naledi: you promise Heath?

Heath: with my life Obi m

Naledi: if anything happen to you Heath I swear I'll kill myself along with your kids cause I can't face this world without you

Heath: nothing will happen to me trust me ok

she breathed out

Naledi: ok

he bends and kissed her lips

Heath: thank you for not judging me with the fact that im a gangster in a suit Obi m

Naledi: you love me unconditionally and you show it to me and you also love Lesedi as your own but please Heath keep your gangster life away from us

he sighed with relief

Heath: I promise Obi m....i promise my love

he bend down again and kissed her lips

Heath: I love you so much

Naledi: I love you too..... Heath?

Heath: Obi m

Naledi: its kitso isn't it?

he nodded and she sighed

Naledi: you can do whatever to protect yourself and to make sure we are safe but please do me one favor

Heath: im listening My love

Naledi: please don't kill him

***he looked at her surprised by the fact that she just said the word "kill" ***

Naledi: no matter what the circumstances are the fact is he's Lesedi's father biologically and I don't want his blood on your hand or any of your brothers' hands.....that man threatened to kill you jabu and....

she swallowed hard

Naledi:and Omphile and any father would skin alive the person that threatens their daughter's life so please don't have his blood on your hands for the sake of Lesedi

***Heath looks at her intensely again ***

Naledi: you can do whatever you want to do to him just don't kill him please let him live to witness you raise Lesedi to be a good woman and for him to see that one man's trash is another man's treasure

he clenched his jaws while looking down as what she said was gonna disrupt with his plans..... the truth is he was gonna kill him in a more painful way but what she just said made sense cause the truth always comes out one way or the other and what if Lesedi finds out when she's grown up that he's the one that killed his biological father..... she wouldn't care what Kitso did but only care about the fact that he killed him and he can't have his princess hate him especially because of Kitso

Naledi: please Heath

Heath: ok I promise I won't make him meet his ancestor

Naledi: thank you

he kissed the back of her hand

Heath: im sorry you had to go through what you went through earlier on Obi m

she breathed out

Naledi: im just glad he didn't hurt me or our babies

*** he clenched his jaws getting angry again “ and she doesn't want me to kill him” he thought to himself ***

Heath: mmmmh now I want you to rest and I'll go prepare you something to eat and as soon as Jabu and Omphile arrive I'll send her to you with little missy here ok

she nodded and he perked her lips and he picked Lesedi up and he stood up

Heath: rest ok

Naledi: ok

and he walked out with Lesedi in his arms.... he went downstairs and he found Ray on his phone while sitting in the lounge he talked some more then he ended the call

Ray: how is she?

Heath: she'll be fine

Ray: we need to teach that boy a lesson Ezeh

heath sighed

Heath: yeah but we can't make him meet his maker

Ray: and why not

Heath: cause I promised Naledi I won't for Lesedi's sake

Ray huffed and Heath put Lesedi down and he gave her his phone to play with

Heath: but that bastard that threatened her I want him dead

he spoke with a low voice then he looked at Lesedi who was busy with his phone

Ray: and what about the baby daddy?

Heath: I want him crippled and that stupid gang brought to the ground with each and every member slaughtered

he spoke with a low tone again and Ray nodded

Ray: I also called Diego and told him to bring me a couple of our boys from Cuba since we are dealing with amateurs from your side and the big dogs from my side I don't rust those Khumalo boys one bit and im afraid they might try to take me out even though they know Mbali is expecting my baby

Heath nodded

Heath: how is your flower and your unborn baby

Ray: they'll be fine.... she's one strong chick and I've learned that she finds her strength to keep fighting from me being there for her and my own strength so I just have to be strong for her and I know we will make it through

Heath: good.... damn I can't believe you about to be a father

Ray chuckled

Ray: me too bros I mean it hasn't even sunk in yet..... it's just unbelievable bros but im happy at the same time especially to the fact that she's the one that is carrying my seed

Heath: but bros why do we have to fight to be with our women while others just have them on a silver platter I mean even with Jabu it's just a matter of time before Amo's father learns of his dark past and he'll also go through shit like us

Ray: nothing good in life comes easy bros and you know what they say : it's better to suffer now than later in life

Heath: mmmmh

then Ray felt like someone just stabbed him with a sharp object in his chest and he held his chest groaning while looking down

Ray: FUCK

Heath rushed to him

Heath: what's wrong bros

he didn't say anything he just clenched his jaws tight as the pain was intense until it subsided with Heath busy asking him what's wrong

Ray: fuckkkk

he said breathing in and out as the pain faded away

Heath: Ray what's wrong should I call an ambulance?

he said panicking a bit

Ray: no im... im fine the pain stopped

Heath: fuck I thought you were having a heart attack bro

Ray: im ok.... I just felt some sharp pain in my chest but it's gone now.... fuck that shit was painful

Heath: let me get you some water

he said getting up and rushing to the kitchen and came back with a bottle of water and gave it to him and he drank up.... right then the door opened and Jabu and Omphile walked in

.
. .
.

**** the following day around 11am the Khumalo brothers were sitting in Jase's study drinking their worries away.... they were busy debating on who should call Baba and no one is willing to call him***

Jase: but Jay you are always the one who calls him

Jay: well not this time.... im not gonna be the one to tell him that our little princess is pregnant and dating La Parca.. never!

Snakes: damn I can't believe all this is happening

Muzi: pops is gonna kill us before he kills that motherfucker Ray

Snakes: mxm you know what.... I'll call him

*** they all looked at him and he ignored them and he took his phone and dialed baba's numbers and it rang***

Thor: im sure it's the alcohol in his system that's giving him the courage

Snakes: fsek Smiso

and Smiso showed him the middle finger and Baba answered

Baba: Nhlaka

Snakes swallowed hard regretting ever calling him

Snakes: baba how are you

Baba: im good my boy and you

he sighed

Snakes: im not good Baba

Baba: what's wrong?

Snakes: is bab'dlamini back yet?

Baba: no he's still at the mountain..... now tell me what's wrong

Snakes: it's....its Mbali Baba

Baba: what about her did something happen to her

his voice was now stern and bold

Snakes: she.... she fainted and now she's hospitalized

Baba kept quiet a bit

Baba: what's really going on Nhlaka and don't tell me some bullshit why did she faint

Snakes: she....eish Baba we found out that she's pregnant

the line went silent with Snakes palms sweating like nobody's business

Baba: now listen to me and listen good your father is on his way to you now

Snakes: WHAT POPS IS ON HIS WAY HERE!

he said looking at his brothers and they all stood up

Baba: ngithe lalela man Nhlaka! (I said listen)

Snakes: ngi...ngiyaxolisa Baba(im sorry baba)

Baba: now none of you shouldn't tell him about mbali being pregnant until I get there with

Mkami uyangizwa(with my wife you hear me)

Snakes: ye....yebo baba

Baba: good the five of you should find a way to keep him occupied until we get there

Snakes: ok baba

then they ended the call

Snakes: we are dead

he said rubbing his beard roughly

Jay: shit....this is not happening

Jase: so he's on his way here

Snakes nodded

Snakes: and baba said we shouldn't tell him about Mbali being pregnant until he gets here

Thor: damn

Snakes: you know I once promised Ntombi a vacation in Hawaii or was it Jamaica maybe we should leave tonight since Ma will be here she can babysit for us for a couple of days

Jay: uyanya vacation yamasimba!

Muzi: lalela la ndoda sofa sonke la (listen here man we will die together here)

Snakes: mxm

then they heard a door bell ring and they froze

Snakes: I think im gonna shit myself

and soon the door of the study room opened and pops walked in and the room became quiet and tense

Pops: and now who died?

he asked them with a smile on his face and they all chuckled nervously

Thor: no one pops

he said standing up and hugged him and the rest of the brothers also stood up and they hugged him and sat down

Jay: when did you arrive in the country pops

Pops: yesterday and how's everyone

they looked at each other and Thorsten cleared his throat

Thor: everyone is good just the boys are being more naughty

Snakes: mmmmh especially their leader Mnqobi yeses that monkey is troublesome pops

Pops: why are you all surprised you forget so easily how the four of you were

they laughed

Pops: and you Smiso im sure you were also troublesome when you were growing up

Thor: nah... I was a saint pops

Pops: mxm oho look who's talking

they laughed

Pops: so how's my princess

they kept quiet a bit and Jay cleared his throat

Jay: she's been good but I think she's growing up now pops and boys are starting to notice her

his face went hard

Pops: and I hope you have been making sure they stay away from her

Jase: well we try Pops but she has suddenly became cheeky which shows that she's nighthawk's daughter

Pops: cheeky or not Mbali is still young to be dating I told her that

Muzi: we know Pops but eish

Pops: eish what?

Muzi: nothing its just we are scared that she might resent us if we push too hard you know

Pops: even at that you should make sure she remains pure until she gives us that degree
*** they all swallowed hard and he looked at them one by one and he could see that they were
hiding something from him***

Pops: what is it that you are not telling me?

Thor: nothing Pops

Pops: Nhlaka?

Snakes: Pops its nothing

Pops: you know I can read ya'll like the back of my hand right and I can see you are hiding
something from me

Jay: eish its one of our containers Pops they were held up for a few days in customs and it costs
us some cash

Pops frowned

Pops: since when is our containers held up in customs

Jay: ummm there's a new officer there so he didn't know how things are done there but we
handled him and he's on board

Pops: mmmmh

***then his phone rang and he looked at the screen and he answered it standing up and he
walked out of the room speaking in Portuguese***

Snakes: yeses amanga akho Nkosenye (your lies) I swear you can even convince Jesus that
Christians are the ones that killed him and not the Jews and he will end up believing you the way
you are so good with them

they all busted out with laughter

Jay: hai leave me alone wena or what? you wanted me to tell him the truth

Pops: what truth

they swallowed hard while looking at Jay

Jay: that Ntombi kicked Snake's balls when she saw him flirting with some girl

*** he lied and they laughed except for snakes who wanted to kick Jay's ass for lying to Pops
about him like that***

Pops: mmmmh I trust Ntombi she's feisty that one and wena Nhlaka stop looking outside unless
you wanna lose her

snakes nodded looking at Jay

Snakes: mmmmh since we are telling Pops the "truth" here is an interesting one Pops.... Jay here
has been sleeping on the couch for days now

Pops looked at Jay who was looking at Snakes and Snakes laughed

Pops: what did you do Jay?

Snakes: ooh he called mother of beasts fat indirectly and yeses she told him shit and a couch is his bed now she forbid him from even using the guest bedrooms

he lied and Jase Muzi and Smiso laughed out loud while Pops just chuckled as for Jay he showed Snakes the middle finger and Snakes wiggled his eyebrows at him

Pops: mmmmh I trust my daughter in laws.... what about the three of you

Jase: ooh no me and Kedi are good

Muzi: so is me and Noma

Thor: so is me and Imani

Pops just chuckled

Pops: so when is princesses' classes end?

they looked at each other briefly

Snakes: ummm around past three

he lied cause she was still in the hospital and she's gonna be discharged the following day.... and he said that cause he knows baba would have arrived by then

Pops: mmmmh ok let me go see my daughter in law and granddaughter since the big rascals are at school

they laughed....and he stood up and walked out

Snakes: im going to wear a bullet proof for when baba gets here

*** they laughed***

Jay: and you couldn't have found another lie to tell Pops Nhlaka

Snakes: mxm what about you mmmmh imagine Ntombi kicking my balls

Smiso Muzi and Jase laughed their ass off

Muzi: you two are just crazy struu

.

.

.

*** At the hospital Mbali fell asleep after Ray rushed out of the hospital when Jabu called him and told him about Naledi....she then heard voices of people chanting and she also heard what sounds like a hiss of a snakes and she quickly opened her eyes and she saw about eight men kneeling with their heads bowed in front of a huge anaconda chanting.... she looked around the place and it was filled with human skeletons and there were lit candles all over her heart started beating fast with fear taking over.... she looked around for any escape exits but there were none she couldn't even see a door or even a window***

Mbali: ooh God... where am i

*** she asked herself and she closed her eyes and she opened them again hoping when she opens them she will be back in the hospital but nope she was still at that smelling scary place***

Voice: welcome young one

she could hear a voice but she couldn't see the person...as for those chanting men they were still chanting kneeling on the floor with their heads bowed

Mbali: who...who are you and... and what am I doing here...where am i?

Voice: there's a saying that goes like this young one; children will die for the sins of their parents

then she saw the black huge anaconda coming towards her and she screamed out loud trying to run but she couldn't it was as if she was glued to the floor

Mbali: NOOO... RAY HELP.....MA..... BABA.....DAD HELP ME!

it wrapped itself around her legs then she heard a voice calling out to her it was her grandmother's

Ma: Mbali vuka uyaphupha... vuka Mbali (Mbali wake up you are dreaming...wake up Mbali)

Mbali: MA HELP ME PLEASE....MA....

she was shouting in her dream but she didn't know that she also shouting for real for her grandmother to hear her*

Ma: MBALI VUKA (Mbali wake up)

she said shaking her

Mbali: MA HELP IT'S GONNA KILL ME...HELP ME MAMA PLEASE HELP

Ma: in the mighty name of Jesus whatever evil spirit is binding my granddaughter I burn it with the blood of Jesus...in Jesus name I command you to release her and go back to hell where you belong....RELEASE HER IN THE MIGHTY NAME OF JESUS CHRIST OF NASARETH
YOU EVIL SPIRIT

she prayed

Voice: FUCK NOT AGAIN.... FUCK THEM AND THAT NAME THEY LOVE TO CALL OUT..... FUCK THEM

***the snake quickly unwrapped itself from her ***

Ma: RELEASE HER YOU EVIL SPIRIT...HER BODY AND SOUL BELONGS TO JESUS CHRIST OF NAZARETH AND NOT YOU SO I COMMAND YOU TO RELEASE HER NOW!

then Mbali felt her body feel lighter and she saw a bit of light and it was shining next to a door and she ran there and that's when she woke up for real gasping for air with sweat all over her body she was even shaking and her grandmother held her tight begging her to breathe

Ma: breathe my baby.... breatheits ok its ok

she said holding her tight and as soon as she caught her breath she let out a loud piecing cry....after some time she calmed down a bit but she was still shaking with fear

Mbali: mama I want Ray....where is Ray.....I want Ray mama please call Ray

*** she said sobbing and Ma asked herself who this Ray is***

Ma: shhhh its ok im here now....its ok you are safe sthandwa sam

Mbali: mama call Ray.... please call Ray mama

she begged her and Ma just brushed her back trying to calm her down

.
. .

**** baba just dropped off his wife at the hospital and he was on his way to Jase's house so he can talk to pops about Mbali cause he knows he will fuck up the boys pretty bad if they were the ones to tell him about her unfortunate situation....he was sitting at the back while his driver was in the driver side then all of a sudden an intense sleep took over him.... While he was deep in his sleep he heard a voice calling out to him***

Voice: LANGA...LANGA!

Baba: mmmmh

Voice: LANGA MAN VUKA (wake up)

***he recognized the voice being Bab'dlamini's voice ***

Baba: Dlamini?

Bab'dlamini: uMbali usenkingeni Langa (Mbali is in trouble)

Baba: heh

bab'dlamini: GO BACK TO THE HOSPITAL AND DISCHARGE HER AND TAKE HER TO MY HOUSE IN ATTERIDGEVILLE YOU'LL FIND MY BOY WAITING FOR YOU UMQINISE NGE ZAKHO ISANDLA NGEKATHI UCELA OKHOKHO BAKHO UKUTHI BAMVIKELE(strengthen her with your own hand while you are pleading with your ancestors that they should protect her) AND MY BOY WILL GIVE YOU HERBS TO RUB WHERE YOU'LL CUT HER.....UYANGIZWA LANGA?(are you hearing me Langa?)

Baba: whats going on Dlamini?

Bab'dlamini: ZAMBO IS STILL ALIVE

Baba: WHAT? but...but the boys killed him along with his cult members

Bab'dlamini: the ancestors just revealed to me that they should have burned him after killing him so his evil spirit found another body to possess and now he's back for revenge and Mbali is his target....now turn that car around and go help her....WAKE UP.... WAKE UP NOW!

***he opened his eyes quickly and he rubbed them a bit then he looking around ***

Driver: boss your phone is ringing I have been calling for you to wake up

*** he sighed and took out his phone and answered it...it was his wife***

Baba: sthandwa sam (my love)

Ma: Khumalo its Mbali you need to come back here something spiritually is troubling her....i prayed for her but she's still scared and she's busy asking for a "Ray"

Baba: shit...ok im coming back prepare for her to be discharged now

Ma: ok baba

he ended the call

Baba: turn this car around and take me back to the hospital

Driver: sure boss

then Baba took a deep breath and dialed Snakes' numbers and he answered on the third ring

Snakes: Baba

Baba: is your father there will all of you

Snakes: ummm yes he is

Baba: ok put me on loudspeaker

he did

Snakes: you're on loudspeaker baba

Pops: Baba what's going on?

Baba: I want all of you to meet me at Dlamini's house in Atteridgeville now

then he dropped the call and the brothers and Pops looked at each other and Pops stood up

Pops: why are ya'll still sitting down... let's go

then they stood up

40

INSERT..... 40

.

.

.

NARRATED

Ray drove to the hospital after spending some time with Jabu and Heath and when he got there he found the room empty he quickly went to look for a nurse and he found one as he got out of the room

Ray: excuse me nurse

Nurse: yes how may I help you sir?

Ray: the lady that was in here where is she?

he asked with his heart beating fast

Nurse: ummm she was discharged earlier

he frowned

Ray: what?....discharged by who?

Nurse: by her grandparents' sir

he breathed out while brushing his head

Ray: ok thanks you

the nurse nodded and she walked away swaying her round ass and Ray took out his phone and dialed Mateo and he answered on the third ring

Mat: jefe

Ray: Mat I need you to do me a favor

Mat: im listening jefe

Ray: track the Khumalo brothers' phones and tell me their location

Mat: ok...jefe is everything alright

Ray: Mbali was discharged earlier today

he then sighed

Mat: what?....is it the brothers?

Ray: nah apparently it's her grandparents

Mat: wait a minute so Killer is around

Ray sighed again

Ray: it looks like it Mat.... now find those fuckers for me

Mat: ok jefe let me get right on it

they ended the call and he walked out of the hospital with a heavy heart.... he dialed Mbali's numbers with the hope that she now had her phone with her but nope it send him straight to voicemail and he huffed

Ray: where are you my flower?

***he said to himself as he walked to his car...he unlocked it and he got in and right then his phone indicated that a message just came through and he opened it and it was GPS coordinates then his phone rang ***

Ray: Mat

Mat: jefe they are at Atteridgeville not far from your grandparents' house and even though they haven't stopped moving but the right and left cuts they are taking looks like they are not driving past it

Ray breathed out loud with his heart beating fast

Ray: why are they taking her there Mat.....what if... what if they are going to kill my baby

Mat: do you think they might do that?

Ray: I wouldn't put it passed them I mean Mbali is in no state to be discharged as yet when I left her her BP was still unstable now why would they discharge her unless they have something sinister up their sleeves....i swear im going to kill all of them if anything happens to my child or Mbali

Mat: this is bad jefe....what should I do

Ray: send me the exact location of the place or house they will stop at and call Jabu and come after me

Mat: ok jefe

Ray: and you better be armed and you can tell Heath but also tell him I said he should stay behind with Star and the kids and keep them safe

Mat: got it

then they ended the call and Ray continued to drive away in total speed

Ray: they better not hurt Mbali or my child or they better be ready to face La Parca nx

***he said to himself ***

.
. .

*** Baba Ma and Mbali finally arrived at Bab'Dlamini's house and Ma helped Mbali out of the car and the guard carried her inside the yard with Baba's orders and they found Bab'Dlamini's son Melusi waiting for them and he told the guard to take her to the rondavel behind the main house and he did..... they all took off their shoes and got in and the guard went out after putting Mbali down and Melusi lit the ancestral herb (mpepho) and walked around the small room

chanting and talking to his ancestors while also blowing on the herb and smoke from it filled the room***

Melusi: Bab'Khumalo im sure baba told you what to do

Baba nodded and he looked at the shaking Mbali as if she's cold with Ma holding her while calling out the Khumalo clan names in whisper tone

Melusi: this is what you'll apply after cutting her Baba

he said giving him a container filled with some black muti and Baba clapped his hands twice before accepting the container.... then Mbali screamed

Mbali: NO STOP DON'T COME CLOSE....STAY AWAY.....

*** she said shielding her face with her arms***

Melusi: baba manje! (now)

Ma laid her down on the animal skin mat with Mbali screaming at whatever was coming to her to stop and Melusi gave Baba a brand new razor and Baba cut Mbali a little on her forehead and he applied the muthi on the cut with Ma and Melusi holding her still with her screaming calling out to Ray to help her.....her cries where heart wrenching but Ma and Baba knew what they needed to do and they were concentrating on that with Ma's tears just running down her cheeks as she said the Khumalo clan names and also calling out to the Khumalo ancestors to protect Mbali.....then he also cut her on every join on her arms and legs also applying the muthi on the cuts he also cut her on her upper chest and the back on her neck also applying the muthi.....Melusi blew the burning ancestral herb on her face chanting and calling out to the khumalo ancestors to protect Mbali then she slowly stopped fighting but she was still crying calling out to Ray busy telling her grandmother and grandfather to call Ray..... after Baba was done Melusi blew some white powder on her face and she passed out

Melusi: let her rest a bit and when she wakes up we will consult with the bones and ask for a way forward

they nodded while clapping their hands looking down

Them: makhosi....

Melusi: baba you need to find this Ray she has been calling out for he's gonna help her fight this evil spirit

*** baba sighed***

Ma: what about her pregnancy makhosi?

Melusi sighed

Melusi: the baby is ok for now

then he looked at Baba

Melusi: can I speak to you alone Baba

Ma: I'll be in the main house fixing something to eat

Melusi: dankie Ma (thank you Ma)

she kissed Mbali's forehead and she stood up and walked out

Baba: im listening son

Melusi sighed

Melusi: im sure Baba has already told you about the man that is dating Mbali

Baba: yes but he didn't tell me he got her pregnant

he said that clenching his jaws

Melusi: the ancestors didn't tell him she was.....remember they choose what to tell him Baba..... anyway did he also tell you that he's Mbali's soul mate and if you separate them Mbali might take her own life?

Baba nodded still with his jaws clenched

Melusi: ok then..... ummm before Baba left did he ask you a weird question?

Baba sighed

Baba: yes..... he asked if a woman in our family who is from my lineage going back to when the beast started has ever given birth to a child who has a beast while the father doesn't

Melusi nodded

Melusi: and has that happened before Baba?

Baba: no...never

Melusi: I guess this is the first time

Baba: you mean to tell me Mbali is carrying a beast in there

he asked with his eyes popped out and Melusi nodded

Melusi: baba and I tried to consult and find out why this is happening and we couldn't find an answer then he was called to the mountain by okhokho (the ancestors)

Baba: this can't be happening.... it has never happened before unless....

Melusi shook his head

Melusi: the baby's father doesn't have a beast Baba.....yes he has dark forces lingering around and inside him and they also protect him which is odd but he doesn't have a beast

Baba: then how does Mbali carry a beast if the father doesn't have one

Melusi: that is what Baba is going to find out and we also found out that Mbali has a gift

Baba: what....what gift?

Melusi: her soul can move from one place to another

Baba: I don't understand Melusi

Melusi: her gift is almost like Lwazi's but Lwazi's is more advanced if I can say that... Lwazi sees the future for a minute but only if danger is closer and he can literally talk to his beast when his beast warns him before he sees what might happen... while with Mbali besides her connection with her ancestors she can also dream of things that might happen but that doesn't necessarily mean they will happen exactly like on her dreams that's why her dreams are all important and should be taken seriously...the thing is her soul can also move to the place where danger looms and she can see things that only my ancestral bones can only tell me or Baba while with her she can see them with her own naked eyes

Baba: explain in simple terms Melusi

Melusi: she has a strong connection with your ancestors and they can move her soul to the place where evil is plotting against your family to show her the danger that is brewing

baba swallowed hard

Melusi: Baba and I can only throw the bones down to ask the ancestors to tell us what's happening while with her they can just take her soul there to see things herself

Baba: ooooh oKhumalo....

he said while shaking his head

Melusi: but its dangerous Baba cause those people can see her and they can even trap her soul in that place and use it for their evil deeds...like now Ma brought her back from that place before they trapped her by praying for her so I don't understand why the ancestors are doing this with her since its dangerous

Baba: so what should we do?

Melusi: we don't know yet Bab'Khumalo that's why Baba was summoned to the mountain for his meditation and maybe they will give him an explanation as to what we should do and why they are doing this to Mbali.... and she wasn't send to that place purposely its just her connection with OKhumalo is so strong that they ended up showing her the danger that is brewing without our knowledge remember they visit Baba but he's not a Khumalo so the connection is not that great but with Mbali is strong..... Mbali can be shown things before they happen in months or a year or even years to come

baba sighed

Baba: so Zambo is still busy cooking up a plan

Melusi nodded

Melusi: now we can prepare ourselves or even stop him but it comes with a price they know Mbali's gift now and he's now changing his plans and he's gonna hurt you all through Mbali by making sure she runs mad before he comes for you all

Baba breathed hard with rage visible on his face then they heard a knock on the door

Pops: can I come in

Melusi: yebo Nkosana

Pops smirked cause Melusi always calls him that and his smile vanished when his eyes landed on Mbali

Pops: what...what's going on with my daughter...why is she here.... baba?

Baba: sit down ndodana (son)

he sat down looking at Mbali who was laying there

Baba: where are your sons?

Pops: Nhlaka Jase and Smiso are outside while Jay and Muzi rushed back to Jay's home cause Lwazi had an episode he was talking to his beast which means something bad will happen....wait was his beast warning him about Mbali?

Baba nodded and Pops started breathing heavily

Pops: what happened to my daughter Baba?

he looked from baba to Melusi and Melusi sighed looking down....he then groaned

Melusi: mmmmh yebo ngimamele (yes im listening)

he then continued to groan while nodding then he looked up at Pops

Melusi: okhokho bathi uyehlise umoya (the ancestors say you should calm down) and remember everything happens for a reason

Pops took a deep breath and he breathed out loud then he nodded

Pops: whats going on with Mbali

baba sighed and him and Melusi told him everything including the pregnancy part and he looked at Mbali with his eyes popped out then a frown followed with his bottom lip trembling

Pops: Mbali is what?

Melusi: nkosana calm down please

and Pops stood up

Pops: who...who dared me?... who dared the nighthawk!

he said with his hands trembling with visible veins popping on his forehead and also on the sides of his head and he paced up and down in the room trying to calm down but it wasn't working....Baba also stood up

Baba: son you need to calm down please Mbali needs you now more than ever please calm down

***he ignored him and his mind went to his boys and the way they were nervous and tense around him and he quickly walked out with baba calling out to him....he went to them looking

like an angry lion ready to attack and as soon as they saw him they all stood there frozen cause they knew that Baba told him***

Baba: BONGANI CALM DOWN FIRST!

it fell on deaf ears and Snakes tried to run outside the yard to the car but Smiso grabbed him and pulled him back

Pops: WHO'S RESPONSIBLE!

they kept quiet then Smiso decided to talk

Smiso: Ray

Pops: which Ray... who are his parents and where does he stay?

he asked with his bold voice with his eyes red with extreme anger and they swallowed

Smiso: La Parca

he stood quiet with his eyes closed and his head tilted to the side a bit

Pops: what did you say?

they swallowed

Baba: Bongani calm down

he ignored him again

Pops: I ASKED A FUCKEN QUESTION NOW ANSWER ME DAMN IT!

he roared and they jumped a bit

Snakes: ooh shit we are dead

he said looking scared

Jase: La Parca from Cuba Pops

Pops chuckled while shaking his head with disbelief then he took out his gun and pointed it at them

Snakes: POPS WOOOH...CALM DOWN PLEASE

he begged him but the look on his face told him that all the begging falls on deaf ears

Pops: WHERE WERE YOU WHEN THAT FUCKER TOOK ADVANTAGE OF MY DAUGHTER!

Jase: Dad please calm down and let us explain

he said with a shaky voice cause he knew he might shoot them...yes he will not kill them but he might shoot them to injure them just to teach them a lesson

Pops: VOETSEK ANSWER MY QUESTION WHERE WERE YOU?

Snakes: we... we didn't know she was dating him Pops she told us it was some boy from varsity who she was dating we also found out a week or so later about La Parca and two or is it three days ago we found out about her pregnancy when she fainted

he said looking like he's gonna shit himself then the gun went off as Pops shot next to Snakes' feet and he jumped

Pops: LA PARCA COMES IN THE COUNTRY AND YOU DON'T KEEP TABS ON HIM NHLAKA....WHY THE FUCK ARE YOU AN IT SPECIALIST IF YOU GOING TO FUCK UP LIKE THIS

Snakes: im sorry Pops

then Ma got out of the house but Baba told her to go inside the house he'll handle this and she reluctantly went back inside *

Pops: VOETSEK I DON'T WANT YOUR FUCKEN SORRIES

Jase: Pops he came in the country to cash in on the favor I owed him that's why he was in the country in the first place

he shot at Jase's feet and he also jumped

Pops: AND WHAT DID YOU DO AFTERWARDS

Jase: we... we relaxed Pops....we are sorry....

he shot at all they feet and they jumped up except for Smiso

Pops: VOETSEK MSUNU YENU NINGITSHELA AMASIMBA

Sponsored

VOETSEK....VOETSEK....VOETSEK NIYANGIZWA VOETSEK MASENDE YENU

he said that still shooting next to their feet but this time some bullets missed them by inches which made Snakes and Jase to run inside the house but as for Smiso he just moved to stand next to Baba....by now people were peeping inside the yard trying to see what's going on

Pops: VOETSEK WHAT ARE YOU LOOKING AT!

he then shot up in the sky and everyone ran for their lives

Baba: are you done now acting like a mad man?

he asked him with a straight face

Pops: DON'T BABA PLEASE DON'T

he said pacing up and down then he attempted to walk to the rondovel when he heard someone calling out Mbali's name in the front yard and he stopped and listened with his chest moving up and down fast

Jase: WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING HERE

Ray: WHERE'S MBALI....WHAT THE FUCK DID YOU DO TO HER

Snakes: LEAVE RAY IF YOU VALUE YOUR LIFE

Ray: DON'T TELL ME TO LEAVE YOU SON OF A BITCH WHERE'S MBALI AND MY UNBORN CHILD

he said that rushing to the backyard where everyone was and as soon as he saw Baba and Pops he froze but he was breathing heavily with his eyes all red from anger

Smiso: I suggest you turn around and leave boy

he said to Ray and Ray gave him a death stare and his eyes went back to Pops and Baba

Ray: where is Mbali.....what did you do with my child

*** no one saw it coming cause within a blink of an eye Pops was next to Ray with his hand on his neck.... his eyes where bloodshot red the skin on his face was hard and disfigured his K9 teeth were longer and his finger nails were also long....his beast was in control as it was baying for Ray's blood it was squeezing tighter and tighter around Ray's neck with Ray struggling breath he had his eyes popped out as he stared at Pops beast right in the eye and he saw nothing but darkness and pure rage in them..... then Baba rushed to them ***

Baba: S'LWANE LET HIM GO

he commanded it while trying to pull the beast's hand off Ray's neck but the grip was tight

Baba: BONGANI TELL YOUR BEAST TO LET HIM GO CAUSE IF YOU KILL HIM YOU'LL LOSE MBALI

he pleaded with him but the beast wouldn't let him go instead it tightened its hand around his neck hard and Ray's eyes rolled back and he looked like he was giving up and right then Melusi blew a white powder on the beast's face and it let Ray go and fell on its back but luckily baba caught him along with Melusi and it was lights out for him as for Ray he fell on the ground gasping for air as it was hard for him to breath after some time he caught his breath and he started coughing out loud while holding his bruised and painful neck and Smiso smirked....all this while he was standing there watching as the beast was strangling Ray then he went closer to Ray and bend a bit

Smiso: no longer Mr. Tough guy mmmmh?

then he stood up straight and he walked passed him taking out his phone..... Baba and Melusi took Pops to the rondovel and they got out and went to Ray who looked shit scared

Baba: get up

and he did still holding his bruised and painful neck*

Ray: what....what was that?.....how..... what

Baba: shut up!

he kept quiet

Baba: so you have the rotten nerve to come here even after you got my granddaughter and his daughter.....

he said pointing at the rondovel

Baba: pregnant.....you come here and start shouting like this is your father's house..... the fact that you are feared in the underworld doesn't mean you should come to people's homes and act like a fucken hooligan!

he said with an angry voice while pointing at Ray

Ray: she's my woman sir and she's carrying my child

a slap ended on Ray's cheek and he looked at Baba with anger on his face and his jaws clenched

Baba: IS MBALI YOUR FUCKEN WIFE?..... DID YOU PAY HER BRIDE PRICE?.....

Ray didn't say anything

Baba: I ASKED YOU A FUCKEN QUESTION BOY NOW ANSWER ME BEFORE I DO WORSE THAN WHAT HE JUST DID TO YOU

Ray: no she's not my wife

Baba: THEN WHO GAVE YOU A FUCKEN RIGHT TO COME HERE AND ACT AS IF WE FUCKEN OWE YOU

he kept quiet

Baba: YOU SHOULD BE REMORSEFUL TO WHAT YOU DID AND NOT DO ALL THIS RUBBISH YOU JUST DID NX

Ray still kept quiet then Melusi came with chairs and he gave them to Baba and Ray and he went inside the rondavel giving them some privacy

Baba: sit!

Ray sat down and Baba also sat down

Baba: I understand that you are way older than her

Ray nodded while rubbing his painful neck

Baba: what are your intensions with her?

he cleared his painful throat

Ray: I would like to make her my wife

Baba: you do know it will take a miracle for her father to even acknowledge you as his son in law

Ray: I know sir but one way or another Mbali is gonna be my wife

Baba looked at him and he could see he was a confident man and he's a man that goes after what he wants

Baba: do you believe in witches and wizards and dark forces boy?

Ray: im Nigerian sir

Baba: yes or no boy don't get smart with me!

he warned him

Ray: yes

Baba: mmmh ok now listen here.....Mbali is troubled by some dark forces that have some beef with our family we thought the man died but it happened that we were supposed to burn him after killing him and we didn't and now he's back for revenge so that's why we are here to get her some help

Ray listened attentively with his heart beating fast

Baba: the man is Zambo he's from Congo and he's one dangerous motherfucker

Ray: so you are telling me that she's paying for your sins

Baba: I said don't get smart with me boy

Ray just shook his head while looking down

Baba: her life is in danger and now it's either you gonna be there for her even though her brothers and father will be against it or you fuck off and never look back so which one is it

Ray: she might not be my wife but she's my woman and I love her and no one will stand in my way of being there for her and protecting her and that includes that monster or beast in a human form

Baba stood up

Baba: good.....but then mmmh I don't know if you are plain stupid brave or just stupid and in love but Boy you better watch yourself cause now you are dealing with 5 monsters or beasts as you call them and another one inside "YOUR WOMAN'S" womb and trust me the one in "YOUR WOMAN'S" womb is the most dangerous one cause it can turn "YOUR WOMAN" into a mean machine

then he smirked at Ray

Baba: ooh and "YOUR WOMAN" is resting inside so wait until she wakes up cause she's been calling out for you and also be careful or monsters and beasts cause this yard is full of them..... and ooh make sure the one that is resting inside doesn't see you when it wakes up or it will kill you this time

then he went inside the main house to his wife leaving Ray confused as hell about the monsters and beasts Baba was talking about especially the one that is inside "HIS WOMAN'S" womb

Ray: wait a minute.....did he mean..... fuck nooo

****then his phone Rang****

Ray: Jabu

Jabu: we are outside the house and there are three baboons standing by the gate where are you and are you ok?

Ray: Im coming now

then he ended the call and stood up and he slowly walked to the front while rubbing his sore neck

41

INSERT.....41

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

*** Ray Jabu and Mat were now sitting at the back waiting for Mbali to wake up so Ray can see her***

Mat: you mean to tell me your father in law did this to you

he said pointing at Ray's bruised neck and Ray nodded.....he couldn't tell them what exactly happened as they might think he's crazy or something he knew for people to believe that a man can turn into a monster or a beast in our day and age they have to see it with their own naked eyes like he did.....he couldn't believe Mbali's father turned into that and when he tries and put two and two together with what Baba said it means the brothers also have those beasts or monsters in them and now he was worried about his unborn baby turning into that thing.....he sighed

Ray: it was bound to happen I mean I got his only daughter pregnant but what I don't understand is why killer is all calm about this whole thing

he said with his voice scratchy from the strangulation he suffered in the hands of Pops

Jabu: maybe he likes you in secret you know

they both looked at him like "wtf" with their eyes popped out and he chuckled

Jabu: whoooh hold your horses..... yeer not like that man....i mean maybe he likes your character and the fact that you know your way around in the underworld maybe he knows your flower will be safe with you unlike when she ends up with some guy who can't even hold a gun to protect his granddaughter

Mat: much better Jabs look don't ever say shit like what you said before this explanation or you might get your teeth knocked out

they chuckled

Jabu: You two have rotten minds yeeer.... why didn't you think that " he may like Ray like a son" instead of that rubbish you two thought

Ray: as if you are any better

Jabu laughed

Jabu: mxm

Mat: I can't believe you called the Khumalo boys baboons Jabs

they laughed

Jabu: they are baboons didn't you see them standing on the gate as if they are ready to pounce on us cause we stole their bananas

they laughed

Mat: well they were looking like angry baboons like Jabs said

they laughed again

Ray: you two are crazy

Jabu: we dey try bros

they chuckled and Ray cleared his painful throat

Ray: fuck that old man did a number on me...my throat is painful as fuck

Mat: small price to pay for fucking his daughter and getting her pregnant jefe

Ray punched him on his shoulder and Mat flinched

Mat: jefe you should go punch him not me abeg

Jabu laughed and Ray showed Mat the middle finger and they laughed

.
. .
.

**** Inside the rondovel Mbali woke up and everything that happened came back to her like a tsunami and she sighed and she sat up while holding her head and her eyes landed on her father who was laying not far from her and her heart started beating fast****

Mbali: dad...daddy...ooh my God what happened to you....ooh gosh am I even allowed to say God in here

Melusi laughed

Melusi: relax he's fine he's just resting

she quickly turned and saw Melusi sitting down busy with his herbs on the far end of the room.....she didn't see him sitting there

Mbali: what....what happened to him bhut' Melusi

Melusi: he got really angry when he found out about your pregnancy so I had to drug him so he can calm down

Mbali closed her eyes as she felt fear takes over her body when the thought of her father knowing about her pregnancy made her tremble with fear

Melusi: he loves you Mbali he's just angry that a man got his little girl pregnant he doesn't hate you he's just angry and disappointed

*** Mbali wiped the tears that fell from her eyes***

Melusi: your man is one brave man to face your father and grandfather like that

Mbali: huh?

Melusi: he's here and he had a run in with your father

Mbali's eyes popped out

Mbali: ooh nooo.....

Melusi: relax he's still alive sisi wam..... now drink this

he said getting up and he gave her a steel cup and she took it

Melusi: it doesn't taste like your cappuccinos but don't worry it's not bitter and it won't harm the little one in there

Mbali: ooh ok

she drank from the cup and she did a face and Melusi chuckled

Melusi: stop acting man it's not bitter

Mbali: I know it's not bitter bhuti but you were right it doesn't taste like my cappuccinos

***Melusi laughed while shaking his head ***

Mbali: bhuti will he forgive me...my father that is

Melusi: you are his little girl who's not so little anymore and he loves you more than anything in this world so its normal for him to act like a raving mad lion so he will forgive you

Pops: who are you calling a raving mad lion?

Melusi laughed

Melusi: some old man who sometimes acts like a mad man

Pops: now you are calling me a mad man Melusi

he said sitting up and Mbali just sat there looking down while playing with her fingers

Melusi: haw Nkosana I didn't say I was talking about you....me and my sister here are just talking about some man and wena udecider ukugibela ibasi ligijima and awazi nokuthi liyaphi bafo (you decide to climb a speeding bus and you don't even know where it's headed bro)

Pops laughed while holding his head

Pops: mxm

then he turned to Mbali with a serious look on his face

Pops: why Mbali?

Mbali: Im sorry dad

she said with tears running down her cheeks

Pops: I asked you why I didn't ask for your sorries

Then Melusi walked out giving them some privacy

Mbali: I didn't plan it dad

Pops: so an older man told you he liked you and you smiled at him and even opened your legs for him right

Mbali: I love him dad

Pops: VOETSEK DON'T TELL ME ABOUT LOVE MBALI....WHAT DO YOU KNOW ABOUT LOVE WENA

he shouted and she just cried

Pops: OF ALL THE MEN IN THE FUCKEN WORLD IT HAD TO BE LA PARCA MBALI..... FUCKEN LA PARCA

Mbali: I love him dad

Pops: DIDN'T I SAY DON'T TELL ME ABOUT LOVE...DIDN'T I

she kept quiet

Pops: do you even know the kind of man he is the kind of enemies he possess? its enough we have to protect you from our own enemies and now you brought him in our lives

Mbali: im sorry

Pops: I've never been this disappointed in you before Mbali.....i never thought you would become a statistic of girls who brings a pregnancy home instead of a degree....what about your dreams of traveling the world.....what about the promises you made to me as your father

that really hit home and she just cried painfully cause the last thing she wanted was to disappoint her dad

Pops: I agreed for you to come to Gauteng cause you promised you'd behave and make me proud....for the first time in my life ever since you were born I let my guard down and let you learn to be by yourself and learn to be a bit independent and you do this you thank me or show "appreciation

“ to me with a bucket full of shit..... you didn't only sleep with an older man but you even got pregnant by him..... im sure your mother is even turning in her grave this instance

Mbali: im...im sorry daddy please forgive me....im sorry

she said crying

Pops: you want to have sleepless nights and change nappies and let life pass you by while that fucker finds pleasure with other woman and come back to you and tell you shit about loving you that's it right? well then go ahead you are a woman now angisho? (right?) then all the best girly

*** she cried and he just got up and walked to the door***

Mbali: daddy im sorry please forgive me....please don't turn your back on me please daddy

he didn't even turn to look at her.....he just walked out ignoring her and she just cried out loud while holding her chest.....she cried so painfully at the thought of her father walking out on her..... as he walked out he saw Ray and two other men sitting with him and he walked to them and Ray stood up with his heart beating fast....he was ready for anything

Pops: if you hurt her I'll rip your heart out of your chest and also rip your fucken head from your neck and go bury it in a cave somewhere in the mountain then I'll kill all your fucken family members while you watch in hell where you'll be turned into Lucifer's bitch.....capish?

Ray swallowed hard and he nodded as he could see that he meant every word he just said and Pops walked away going inside the house..... he got inside the house and he took car keys from Snakes and walked out going to the car and he got in and drove away..... well Ray then rushed to the rondovel as he heard Mbali's cries

Jabu: TAKE OFF YOUR SHOES BEFORE YOU GO IN RAY AND NO FUNNY BUSINESS IN THERE OR YOU'LL MEET THE WRATH OF THE ANCESTORS

he told him and Ray took off his shoes and he went inside and found Mbali crying and he got down and held and she cried on his chest

Ray: its ok my flower please calm down it's gonna be ok baby I promise

she just cried until she calmed down

Ray: let's get out of here this room gives me the creeps

he stood up and helped her up and they walked out with him holding her she stood by the door as Ray was wearing his shoes and he scooped her up and went to where Jabu and Mat where sitting and he sat down with her on his lap and she rested her head on his shoulder

Jabu: all will be well his flower you'll see

***he said to her and she just closed he eyes as her father's words where playing in her head..... she zoned out and she only came back to her senses when Ray shook her ***

Mbali: mmmmh?

Ray: your grandmother is talking to you

she opened her eyes and she sat up straight and she was met by Ma's eyes and she looked down avoiding eye contact

Ma: come and eat so you can gain strength

she said with a straight face.....she wasn't pleased with finding her sitting on Ray's lap..... she nodded and Ma went inside the house and Mbali stood up

Ray: you'll find us waiting for you here

she shook her head no

Mbali: you can leave I'll find a phone and we will talk later for now I want to eat and sleep

Ray frowned

Ray: Mbali

Jabu indicated to Mat that they should give them some space and they did and Ray got closer to Mbali looking at her intensely *

Ray: what's going on?

Mbali: nothing

Ray: talk to me my flower

Mbali: he hates me Ray...you should have seen his face and his words cut deep

Ray sighed and he pulled her into a tight hug

Ray: he doesn't hate you my flower in fact he loves you dearly

she shook her head no

Ray: do you know what he said to me when he got out of that room

she looked up at him

Ray: he said he will kill me if I even attempt to hurt you and my flower only a father who loves his daughter more than he loves himself will say that to the guy that has her daughter's heart

she sighed and looked down

Ray: yes he's hurt and disappointed and its understandable my flower..... look we are about to become parents and one day you gonna understand why he's like this with our own munchkin ok

she nodded

Ray: now give him time to process everything and you'll see he'll come around

Mbali: ok

Ray: I love you ok

she nodded

Mbali: I love you too

Ray: ok then I guess I'll see you tomorrow and do find a phone and call me so we can arrange for our meeting tomorrow ok

Mbali: ok

he kissed her forehead

Ray: I would like to kiss your soft lips but hey your grandfather might walk in on us

*** she smiled faintly and he kissed her forehead again while brushing her belly***

Ray: take care of him and yourself ok

Mbali: ok

Ray: you can go in now im sure your granny is wondering where you are

she nodded and slowly walked inside the house and Jabu and Mat walked to Ray

Jabu: is everything ok

Ray: yeah lets go I feel like taking someone's life tonight

Jabu: Heath's baby daddy and crew?

Mat: Heath's baby daddy?

Jabu: mmmmh.... whatever belong to Naledi also belongs to Heath bros

***they laughed and they walked to the front yard and found the Khumalo brothers sitting on the porch....Jay and Muzi refused to come back after Jase told them what Pops did ***

Smiso: leaving already Mr. Tough guy?

Ray: yeah baboon number one

Jabu laughed

Jase: what are you laughing at Msunu

he said to Jabu

Jabu: im laughing at baboon number one golo lakho (you cunt)

Snakes: If we are baboons' wena what are you.....ummm let me thinkooh yes pinky-pinky (a mythical childhood monster) and you are pinky-pinky number one since you have a loud mouth

The Khumalo brothers laughed out loud

Jabu: fsek san.... le marete a go shoshobana (fuck you with wrinkled balls)

Ray: let's go Jabs these fools are not worth it

Snakes: I see you want to kiss Jesus' feet again Mr. Tough guy...who are you calling fools nx

Ray: whether im gonna kiss Jesus's feet again or not the fact is "YOUR" little sister is my woman and she's carrying my baby

he said with a smirk... he knew it will sting on them

Jabu: now beat that baboons

Ray and Mat laughed

Jase: voetsek pinky-pinky

Jabu showed him the middle finger and they walked away

Snakes: I fucken hate that motherfucker

Jase: you're not the only one bafo

.
. .
.

in the car as soon as they drove off Mat laughed

Ray: mind sharing the joke Mat

Mat: South Africa is the place to be.....everything and everyone is funny even fights that are supposed to turn ugly turn into a funny scene.....if it was back in Cuba I swear people would have died today

Jabu: we are unique like that....but hey Mat just so you know when things gets serious shit hits the fan pretty fast and blood is spilled in a scary manner

Mat nodded then Jabu's phone indicated that a message just came in and he opened it and read it

Jabu: the guys are on their way to my house with your guys from Cuba Big Ray

Ray smirked

Ray: now let the games begin

Mat: is Heath gonna stay down on this jefe

Ray: no he needs to be there to remind me to not kill that bastard cause if not no one will survive the massacre

Mat nodded

.
. .
.

****They were now sitting in the lounge in jabu's house with Heath present and Heath's house was filled with guards in and outside the yard guarding Naledi and the kids.... they just went through the plan for the umpteenth time and they were ready.... they were just waiting for Jabu's guy to confirm that the Gang members where all present for their weekly meeting they held at Tsietsi's pub..... even the four Cuban's are gonna go with them..... then Ray's phone rang and he stood up and answered it walking away***

Ray: hello

Mbali: hey

he smiled wide

Ray: my flower.....how are you feeling now?

Mbali: I rested a bit so....yah

she sighed

Ray: what's wrong my love

Mbali: im.... im scared to fall asleep

Ray: did something happen when you were sleeping earlier?

Mbali: yes.....i dreamed of the snake again but this time its like it couldn't get to me but I was still scared....i wasn't in that place it was like it was outside the Yard of Bab'dlamini's house and I was sitting outside in the porch when it appeared

Ray sighed

Ray: what can I do my flower tell me and I'll do it

Mbali: make it stop Ray...the snake is huge like an anaconda im scared of it

Ray sighed

Ray: if only I could cuddle you the whole night My flower but I don't think your crazy brothers will allow that

she sighed and he heard a sniff

Ray: my flower don't cry all will be well you'll see

Mbali: everything is just too much Ray and I know I should be strong but im failing sometimes....sometimes I feel like taking my life cause I think that is the only way I'll find peace

Ray: Mbali!

she didn't say anything

Ray: am I not there for you mmmmh?..... and do you think all this is a walk in the park for me too mmmmh?

she sniffed and he sighed

Ray: look I love you Mbali so much that it scares me sometimes....its not easy and it will never be easy my love apparently love is never easy especially if there are people who are against two parties being together but the fight is worth it my flower trust me.....

then he sighed

Ray: can you believe my brother's wife is being harassed and threatened by her baby daddy just because now he has realized her worth.....yesterday she was threatened by some thug send by him and remember she's heavily pregnant and days before now she was kidnapped by the same baby daddy

Mbali: ooh my God

Ray: guess what... two years back when she told him she's pregnant he told her he can never father an albino child just because she's has albinism and he told her point blank that she should abort then he proceeded to marry someone else and now that he "supposedly" came back to his senses and the baby is not an albino he wants her back and he's even threatening her by saying he will kill my niece if she doesn't leave my brother

Mbali: that guy is crazy Ray

Ray: mmmmh and you know what...Star is holding on to my brother and trusting him cause she knows he will move mountains for her just like I would for you so please trust me when I say all will be well Mbali and that im not going anywhere and Im never letting you go ever

she sighed

Ray: can you do that

Mbali: yeah

Ray: good now stop thinking about hurting yourself and ooh in your dream when you see that snake or the person that is sending it to you.....tell him and it that when I get my hands on them I'll kill them in the most painful way and then burn them to ashes....you also tell them that I said they better stay in the shadows and make sure they never come out cause no one hurts or troubles my flower and gets away with it ok

she smiled and breathed out

Ray: you'll pass the message right?

she giggled

Mbali: yeah

Ray: good

Mbali: Ma just walked in im sure she came for her phone that im using so goodnight

he sighed

Ray: are you at your brother's place now

Mbali: yeah

Ray: ok so around 11 am tomorrow come out of the yard I'll be waiting for you

Mbali: ok I will

Ray: good night my love and I love you

she cleared her throat and he chuckled

Ray: its ok you don't have to say it back I know you love me too

Mbali: yeah

Ray: ok get some rest

Mbali: bye

they ended the call and he sighed

Heath: is she ok

he quickly turned and sighed

Ray: yeah

Heath: good..... its time lets go teach those motherfuckers some lessons

Ray smirked

Ray: let's go

.
. .
.

****They arrived outside the pub...it was now around 10 pm..... they knew that tonight the Pub wasn't opened for the public cause it's the gang members' weekly meeting so they won't get to worry about hurting innocent civilians..... they all wore their ski masks and took out their riffles they were all wearing all black***

Ray: try to have fun ok but not too much fun..... and ooh remember the guy in the photo shouldn't be killed under any circumstances

he said looking at the four Cubans and they nodded and they took their positions..... Jabu slowly opened the gate and they snuck in one after the other and they tip toes to the building.....they heard voices and laughter and Ray pointed with his fingers indicating that Jabu and Mat should check at the back and they nodded they went to check and came back and indicated that it's all clear then Heath whispered to Ray that he's gonna peep in to confirm where Kitso is sitting and what he's wearing and Ray nodded... the did just that without being noticed and he went back to Ray and they went to the rest of the squad and he whispered to them and told them where Kitso was sitting and what he's wearing and they nodded

Ray: let go have some fun

***he whispered and they fist bumped and slowly went to all the entrances and hid there waiting to attack..... and Mat threw in teargases that had stun-granites in the room and it got filled with smoke as the grates went off and others quickly got down while others tried to run out but they were now choking and being blinded by the teargas at the same time while their ears were ringing and painful by the noise the stun-granites made.....then the squad got in the pub with green lasers switched on on their riffles busy shouting that they should get down and those that didn't comply they were shot down dead... even those that tried to run out where shot and killed by the Cubans as they were at the entrances.....after 4 or so minutes of shooting them down one by one they were now keeping a

close look at those that surrendered including Kitso his father and Scara as they waited for the smoke to die down***

Ray: Mat I see cctv cameras in here so go wipe them off

then Mat nodded and went to one of the guys and he pointed the riffle on the back of his head with his foot on his back as he was lying face down on the floor with his hands up

Mat: where is the camera room?

***the guy didn't say anything ***

Mat: ok

and he shot him at the back of his head and he went to another guy

Mat: what about you man do you know where the camera room is?

he nodded a couple of times

Mat: good now get up and show me

and the guy got up with his hands up and he walked out with the guy pointing the riffle at him

Heath: well well well if it isn't the fucken cunt called Kitso

he said getting closer to the visibly shaking Kitso and he kicked him and he cried out loud

Heath: get up

he quickly did and Heath hit him on his face with the back of the riffle and he fell on the floor with his father shouting " nooooo" and it was lights out

Ray: TRIGGER!

he called out to one of the Cubans and he walked in

Ray: take this piece of shit to the car we will deal with him later

and Trigger nodded

Tsietsi: LEAVE MY SON ALONE YOU BASTARD.....DO YOU FUCKEN KNOW WHO THE FUCK I AM

*** he said getting up from the floor and Ray shot him right on the forehead and he fell back and the remaining of his boys gasped with shock and they started shaking with extreme fear as their boss was now dead then Trigger and another Cuban guy carried Kitso out and then a gun shot went off***

Mat: SORRY THE GUN WENT OFF BY MISTAKE AND THE GOOD SAMARITAN THAT SHOWED ME THE CAMERA ROOM FELL VICTIM

he shouted from the back and the squad laughed then Jabu went closer to Scara

Jabu: jah sfebe (yes bitch)....damn I've been waiting for this day..... sit up!

Scara did and he looked at Jabu with his jaws clenched

Jabu: damn im gonna paint this huge room with your blood and yeses im gonna have fun.....I told you I'll get you didn't I msunu?

then he slapped him hard on his face

Jabu: ok let me make this quick before magata a fitlha (before the police get here)

Scara swallowed hard

42

INSERT.....42

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

*** Well after Jabu blew Scar's brains out and the rest of the squad shot dead all the remaining gang members they left the pub painted red with blood before the cops arrived. They drove to Ray's warehouse and Ray sedated Kitso and they locked him up in a room that had a sponge only while tied up and they all retired to their homes to rest. The following morning they all met up at the warehouse and Kitso was still out of it so they took him to a room where all the action will happen his hands were tied above his head and the chain was hanging and tied to a steel roof truss while he stood on his toes he was also naked***

Ray: now let's wake this fucker up

and Jabu poured Kitso with cold water but he didn't wake up and Heath slapped him a couple of times on his face until he opened his eyes slowly he was still a bit drowsy

Ray: ok now here's a thing bros you have 2 hours tops to have fun with him but make sure you don't kill him I have some experiments I need to do on him

Heath: what experiments big Ray

Ray: the ones that will make him end up paralyzed permanently and I need to wipe off some of his memory to see if my experiment worked

Jabu: shit!

he said looking at Ray with a smile on his face

Heath: so you gonna go La Parca on him

Ray chuckled

Ray: well The Grim Reaper aka La Parca kills bros so I'll go semi La Parca on him

They laughed

Ray: ok then have fun but not too much fun abi?

Heath: just go man

he laughed and walked out with Mateo while Jabu and Heath were left alone with Kitso who was now aware of his surrounding and he looked shit scared.... then Heath wore his steel knuckles on his right hand and he walked closer to Kitso who looked ready to shit himself

Kitso: please man im sorry ok I wasn't thinking straight

*** Heath just punched him on his stomach and he groaned and started coughing out hysterically and Jabu laughed***

Jabu: damn just one punch on your stomach and already you act like someone kicked your balls

Heath: give him a break bros you can see he's one of those weak cheese boys

Jabu: cheese boy or not Mshikaro die laaitie is n moeg (this boy is a fool) and a drama queen I mean he doesn't even qualify as a drama king man

Heath chuckled while shaking his head

Jabu: die ding ke a disgrace to die ntwana tsa di gang leader ka ochaela Mshikaro I mean bona le pipinyana ya gae nx (this thing is a disgrace to gang leaders' children im telling you Mshikaro I mean even look at his small dick nx)

Heath laughed out loud

Heath: eeh Javas wag man toe (wait man please)

he said laughing

Jabu: hey wena keng die ding? (what is this?)

he asked pointing at Kitso's flaccid dick

Jabu: gape I can already see gore ge e tsogile ke e kanang kanang heh o ja byang dicheri ka selo se (I can already see how long it will be when its erect how do you fuck ladies with this thing)

Heath just laughed while Kitso was crying as those steel knuckles did a number on him

Jabu: no offence Mshikaro but no man.... imagine die laaitie ka ntwitswi ee mo leshanda pha la go tshwana le Naledi no man bona I know it gets a woman pregnant I mean Lesedi ke proof mara no man ntwana selo se a se pipi o tlabisa di kgala man heh I mean go nale bo Mma Max ko kasing la gao why o saya ko yena a go tshwara ka seroba mpeto le serathafatsa kuku wa nwa and wa ba monate e seng gore o nne ka die dang man (imagine this boy with this little dick on a beautiful woman like Naledi no man look I know its gets a woman pregnant I mean Lesedi is the proof but no man boy this thing is not a dick you should be ashamed of yourself heh I mean there is Mma Max at your hood why didn't you go to her so she can give you erectile dysfunction and penis enlargement herbs to drink and not for you to stay with this thing)

Heath was now bend over with his hands on his knees laughing his lungs out

Heath: whoooh Jabu whoooh enough man yeses

he said trying to catch his breath but he couldn't stop laughing

Jabu: antlek ya nkwatisa die laaitie....waitisi keng Mshikaro antlek mo mure goet for the fact that o busy o tibisana le jou vrou ka pipinyana ee gape ke an insult to you imagine Lesedi was conceived ka ntswitswi ee nx mo mure Mshikaro (this boy is making me angry you know what Mshikaro just panel beat him for the fact that he's busy after your wife with his small dick it's an insult to you imagine Lesedi was conceived with this small dick nx panel beat him Mshikaro)

Heath was busy laughing....he laughed until he calmed down and he wiped his tears off his face and he looked at Jabu

Heath: you need gogo's prayers wena

Jabu chuckled and Heath shook his head with a smile on his face then he turned to Kitso

Heath: now back to you Mr.....

he said turning to face Kitso

Jabu: Mr ntswitswi

Heath laughed

Heath: yeah Mr. ntswitswi.... now tell me what compelled you to kidnap my pregnant wife whom you once reject cause she has albinism I mean she still has it even now so why

Kitso sniffed and Heath punched him on the face and he heard his jaw crack and blood came out of his mouth

Heath: WHEN I ASK QUESTIONS YOU ANSWER DO I MAKE MYSELF CLEAR!

he roared

Heath: I SAID DO I MAKE MY SELF CLEAR!

he said hold Kitso's jaws tight and he nodded whilst in pain

Heath: I can't hear you bitch

Kitso: ye...yes

he said crying with blood coming out of his mouth

Heath: good now answer my fucken question

Kitso: I... I still love her

and Heath punched him on his stomach multiple times then he stopped and he took a step back and looked at him while adjusting his knuckles

Heath: now refrain from that answer and give me a befitting one

Kitso was just crying with blood dripping from his mouth

Kitso: im sorry man ple...please let me go and...and I'll stay away from Naledi I promise

Heath went to his back and he punched him a couple of time and he stopped and went to his front and he held Kitso jaws tight making Kitso to look at him

Heath: now answer my question

*** and Kitso just cried***

Heath: im waiting man

Kitso: I don't know I just wanted to talk to her alone and apologize to her for all the bad things I have done to her

Heath: and you thought she would be happy that you kidnapped her so you could apologize and she would take you back with open arms mmmmh?

he didn't say anything he just continued to cry and Heath chuckled

Heath: well listen to me boy....Naledi is mine and mine alone she's my wife and she's carrying my babies....ooh and Lesedi is my daughter I mean she even calls me daddy and we will tell her who her sperm donor is when she's old enough and she will decide if she wants you in her life or not and in the mean time you are her uncle I hope im making myself clear

he nodded even though that's not what he wanted

Heath: and you gonna introduce her to your ancestors ok

He nodded while sobbing and Heath slapped his cheek

Heath: good boy

then he turned to Jabu who was sitting on a chair busy playing bubble witch game on his phone

Heath: Javas you want to exercise a bit with your feasts on this boy

Jabu: ema nyana (wait a bit)

he finished his game stood up and he put his phone inside his pocket and he went closer to Kitso

Heath: you want this?

he said pointing at his knuckles

Jabu: nah I want to feel my knuckles on his body

Heath: ok then

*** then Jabu folded the sleeves of his shirt and looked at Kitso***

Jabu: yah Mr. ntswitswi (small dick)

Heath laughed

Jabu: well you are just a small boy and I don't have time for pathetic weak and stupid boys so im gonna make this quick and smooth ok....good now this is for getting Naledi pregnant

he threw in two punches on Kitso face

Jabu: and this is for abandoning and rejecting your own child before she was even born

he punched him a couple of times on his ribcages

Jabu: and this is for having a small dick

then he spat on his face... all this time Kitso was crying and in excruciating pain

Jabu: and the kidnapping and sending that bastard after naledi well Heath moered you (beat you up) for it

then he turned to Heath

Jabu: im done Mshikaro die laaitie (this boy) is a small fish in an ocean full of sharks and killer whales and I don't have time for small boys

Heath: yeah he's useless I mean he doesn't even attempt to act touch I mean look at him

Jabu: mara yeer o mo murile yeses (but jeez you fucked him up) im sure you broke a couple of bones on him even his face is all swollen

Heath: he should be lucky that's all Im prepared to do to him

then he went closer to Kitso and he grabbed his jaws...both his eyes were swollen and closed in fact his face looked fucked up with blood all over it

Heath: you should thank my wife and daughter Lesedi that you are still alive or else I would beat up until you take your last breath you piece of shit nx

he let him go and he went out and came back with a bucket full of water and he poured it on him and him and Jabu walked out...they got in the Ray's office and found him and Mateo eating and they sat down

Ray: had fun?

Heath: aaah we tried but he was busy crying like a bitch I felt like I was beating the shit out of a woman

they laughed

Mat: im sure you were disappointed

Heath: you have no idea man

he said taking a piece meat from Mat's food

Ray: here's your own food

*** they took the takeaways opened them and started eating***

Jabu: did I tell ya'll how small his dick is

they looked at him and laughed

Heath: Jabu stop it man

they laughed again

Jabu: mxmanyway big Ray you ready for him

he nodded

Ray: yeah I want to leave him paralyzed and impotent opened them and started eating***

Jabu: did I tell ya'll how small his dick is

they looked at him and laughed

Heath: Jabu stop it man

they laughed again

Jabu: mxmanyway big Ray you ready for him

he nodded

Ray: yeah I want to leave him paralyzed and impotent there's some experiments I wanna try on him so let's hope they don't kill him oooo

Heath raised his eyebrow at him

Ray: what? look im not doing this to kill him but if it happens that he doesn't make it then it will be his time to die and none of us would have killed him but a failed experiment would have

Heath shook his head defeated while Jabu and Mat chuckled

Ray: and don't worry about Star your conscience will be clear I mean you only beat the shit out of him and the rest will be done by me so relax and plus he's a waste of breath bros I mean im not even that excited about experimenting on him cause he's weak

Jabu: and he has a small ntswitswi big Ray

heath laughed

Mat: what's that Jabs

Jabu laughed

Jabu: ntswitswi is a small dick Mat

They laughed

Heath: why are you worried about his small dick javas

Ray: good question Ezeh

Jabu: eehh my bras you Can't and I repeat you Can't chase a goddess like Naledi whilst you know that you have ntswitswi what the fuck are you gonna service her with

they laughed out loud

Mat: im stealing that name jabs.....nswiswi

he said it with his accent and Jabu chuckled

Jabu: ntswitswi Mat man and not nswiswi

they laughed

Mat: don't worry I'll practice until I get it right

they laughed again until Ray's phone rang and it was an international number

Ray: yah

Mr.masden: Akunna I want you and your brothers and Ezeudo's wife in Nigeria this weekend

Ray cleared his throat looking at Heath

Ray: ummm dad what do you mean Ezech's wife

Heath's eyes popped out so did Jabu's and Ray put the phone on loud speaker

Mr.masden: don't piss me off Akunna im not in the mood now all of you better be here by Friday evening or you'll regret it nx.....and tell your brother that he better have a perfectly good explanation on why in God's name made him get married without informing me or his elders

then he dropped the call and Heath buried his face in his hands

Jabu: yaqala inkathazo madoda (trouble has began)

they stayed quiet for some time until Ray checked his time and he stood up taking his phone and car keys

Ray: im going to see Mbali I'll see ya'll later and keep my subject alive until I come back....ohh and untie him and tie him to a chair

Jabu: shap o groete your flower (say hi to your flower)

Ray: sho

then he looked at Mat

Ray: get the boys up to date with everything

Mateo: sí jefe (yes boss)

then he walked out

Heath: fuck that old man is gonna eat me alive

Jabu: eish

Mat: I don't wish to be you right now bros

.
. .
. .

NALEDI

***Well Heath has been gone for some time now and im busy ironing his clothes in the laundry room yes we have a house help but I prefer to wash and iron his clothes cook and clean our bedroom myself and the maid can do the rest of the house chores I just don't trust house helpers even though she's older than me and Heath but still I just don't trust them that's why she doesn't even stay with us the driver picks her up in her house every morning and also drops her off later. Anyway about all

the guards in the yard well even though I hate it but I trust Heath with my life and im not gonna be all up in his face concerning them I'll just wait until our lives gets back to normal cause all these things are happening because of my baby daddy so I have to suck it up and be an understanding wife to him.....anyway I heard the intercom ring and I switched the iron off and went out rushing to it and I answered it***

Me: hello

Voice: mam there's a man here by the name of James Moeketsi he said he's your father and he would like to see you

I swear my throat dried up instantly and I cleared my throat

Me: ummm give me a sec and let me call my husband first

Voice: ok Mam

I put it on my chest covering it so they don't hear my conversation with Heath and took out my phone from my pocket and called Heath and he answered on the third ring

Heath: Obi m are you ok

Me: yeah ummm Heath Lerato's father is here and he wants to see me

he kept quiet a bit then he cleared his throat

Heath: you mean your father Obi m

Me: please don't Heath ok

Heath: look my love whether you like it or not or you forgive him or not the fact remains that he is your father Obi m..... anyway look if you want to hear what he wants to say then let him in and make sure you are with a guard when you are with him and again if you don't want to see or talk to him tell him to fuck off

I sighed

Heath: it's all up to you just don't get all worked up and upset yourself and my babies please

I sighed again

Me: ok then bye

Heath: you sound upset

Me: im not

Heath: yes you are now talk im listening

he said with a firm tone and I huffed it's his way of telling me to tell him how im feeling

Me: I don't think im really for him Heath

Heath: why? I mean im sure you have been dreaming about this day for years

I sighed

Me: I don't know ok I just..... maybe im scared to hear him tell me to my face how much he didn't want me and still doesn't

I said with a low tone and he sighed

Heath: but something in you wants to hear what he has to say right

gosh this man knows me

Me: and how did you know?

he chuckled

Heath: you are my better half Obi m and remember im you and you are me

God I love this man with my all

Me: ok ummm I'll tell you how it went

Heath: ok and remember no stressing and if you feel like you getting overwhelmed tell him to leave

Me: ok I will

Heath: good I love you ok

Me: i love you too onye m

I could tell he was smiling then he ended the call and I breathed out loud and I put the intercom on my ear

Me: ok let him in and a guard should come in with him

Voice: yes mam

then I put it back to its place and I sighed and waited for them after some time the doorbell rang and I breathed out and opened the door and gosh there he was I made way for him and the guard that came with him and I closed the door after the walked in

Me: ummm let's go to the lounge

He followed me and all this time my heart was pounding fast.... I sat down and so did he and the guard was standing not far from us

Me: can.... can I get you anything to drink

Mr.moeketsi: ummm a glass of water will do

I nodded and as I was standing up the guard spoke

Guard: relax mam I'll get it for him

Me: ok thank you

I sat back and the guard went to the kitchen and we sat in total silence...then the guard came back and gave him a bottle of still water and a glass then Mr. Moeketsi opened it and poured it in a glass and drank from the glass and he put the glass down and he rubbed his hands together and cleared his throat

Mr.Moeketsi: i... I know you have a lot of questions for me and im ready to answer them now

he didn't even look at me nx

Me: did I say I have a lot of questions for you sir

he looked at me and sighed

Mr.Moeketsi: look I was just trying to save my marriage which I regret now the thing is I had an affair with Mamiki your mother cause I was having troubles in my marriage she was a breath of fresh air and I enjoyed her company a lot then one day she told me she was pregnant and that it was mine..... to tell you the truth I got scared cause by the time Mamiki told me she was pregnant me and my wife were working on fixing our marriage so I panicked and told her to abort but that didn't mean I didn't want you I was just scared of losing everything

I laughed heh this old man is telling me bullshit nx

Me: when you look at me to do see fool written on my forehead

he frowned and he looked down

Me: I asked you a question Mr

Mr.Moeketsi: ofcourse not

Me: then don't treat me like one ok.....i know you didn't want me and that's enough for me so your stupid lies don't mean shit to me so keep them to yourself.....you had fun with Mamiki and when you planted your seed inside her "when you too were having fun" you ran like a coward and abandoned me your seed so don't tell me bullshit

I was now getting angry so I took a deep breath

Me: do you know what I went through when you were busy enjoying your life with your wife and kids Mamiki treated me like shit and always reminded me of what kind of a useless father you are she hated me and still does because of you.....i don't know how it's like to have a father because you rejected me....I was almost raped cause you weren't there to protect me like a father should to his kids you were busy enjoying your life with your precious family ankere.....i was treated like a curse by society because of my albinism and you weren't there to comfort and protect me and tell me im beautiful no matter what people said about me.....i went through hell and back and you weren't there cause you rejected me so don't give me your fucken excuses!

I said with an angry voice with tears running down my cheeks and he was looking down all along

Me: you failed me and the only decent thing you can do for me now is to introduce me to your ancestors so they can be with me and protect me at least since it's not their fault that you rejected me cause other than that there's nothing you can do to make it up to me and that's if you even care to

Mr.Moeketsi: im sorry Naledi...im really sorry I know I failed you but please forgive me....forgive me my daughter

he said with a breaking voice he was crying

Me: you should ask forgiveness from God and if he forgives you then I will too

then I stood up and I looked at the guard

Me: please see him out

he nodded and I went upstairs and I got in our bedroom and I got in bed and hugged a pillow and I just let it all out....i cried hard letting out all the hurt I have been carrying in me for all those years I cried until I had hiccups then after some time I calmed down and sobbed silently then my phone rang and it was Heath so I answered

Me: Heath

I said trying to sound ok

Heath: Obi m how did it go?

I sniffed when I heard his voice and a lump was slowly growing in my throat and more tears came out

Heath: shit ok im on my way ok calm down please I love you

I just nodded forgetting that he can't see me and before I could say anything he dropped the call and I continued to hug the pillow while I sobbed silently

43

INSERT.....43

.

.

.

RAYMOND

*** I finally arrived outside Jay's house and I must say it's huge and beautiful I took my phone and attempted to call Mbali then I remembered that she doesn't have her phone with her and also that she used her grandmother's phone last night.... shit.... I checked the time and it was 10h55 and I remember I told her to come out at 11h00 so let me wait for the remaining 5 minutes and if she doesn't come out im going in yeah you heard me right I said im going in..... ok now its 11h03 and she's nowhere to be seen and I huffed im too old for this shit like seriously but what the hell am I expecting im dating a 20 year old who's still treated like a baby by her family nx.... anyway I got out

of the car and leaned against it then my phone beeped and it was message from her numbers and it read;

“ im coming morning sickness is showing me flames”***

I just smiled after reading it and I went inside the car and I waited for her after 5 minutes or so the gate opened and it closed after she walked out and she walked to my car fuck my flower lost a bit of weight. I got out of the car and opened my arms for her and we hugged for some time with me sniffing her hair today it smells like fresh clean mint..... we broke the hug and I planted a soft kiss on her lips***

Me: hey

I said smiling at her and she smiled back look I know im an asshole some times and an arrogant heartless jerk most of the time but damn I love Mbali with my all I tried I really tried to not give her my all but the heart want what it wants. I know we fight a lot and sometimes im inconsiderate but one thing I know is I would lay down my life for her and my baby in her womb

Mbali: hey

Me: you good?

she nodded and I brushed her belly with a smile on my face.... I still can't believe im gonna be a father in a few months' time..... Anyway I opened the passenger door for her and she got in after saying thank you then I went to the driver side and got in and drove away

Mbali: where are we going?

I looked at her briefly and back at the road

Me: to our house

I looked at her briefly again and she had a cute frown on her face and I just melted fuck my flower is beautiful people

Mbali: our house?

Me: yeah the one we chose together... remember?

Mbali: ooh yeah ummm you already moved in?

I nodded..... I forgot she doesn't know shit we have been fighting a lot this days that it slipped my mind to tell her

Mbali: ok

Me: what did you tell your grandmother you were going?

Mbali: she left early in the morning with Baba there's some crisis at her orphanage

Me: her orphanage?

Mbali: yeah she runs an orphanage for abandoned babies and runaway teenagers and she also feeds the poor and street kids

Me: wow she's a phenomenal woman

Mbali: she's one of a kind I mean even Baba worships the ground she walked on

Me: I can already imagine it

I sarcastically said and she laughed....fuck it feels good to hear her laughter

Mbali: yeah right

she said rolling her eyes and I chuckled

Me: ok I can't imagine him worshiping anyone's ground for that matter that's how scary he is

she giggled

Mbali: well he worships her and never wants to see her hurt in any way even my brothers and dad know never to mess with her or they'll have to deal with his wrath

then she sighed and looked outside the window

Me: he'll come around my flower you'll see

she didn't say anything I just heard her sniff and I sighed and held her hand

Me: believe me my flower he'll come around ok

she nodded and I kissed the back of her hand.... the drive was silent with her looking out of the window the whole time and I just let her be.....we finally arrived and we got out of the car and went inside when we got to the lounge we found Devonia sitting comfortably on my couch drinking wine in a glass with the Tv playing and she smiled when she saw me....what kind of fuckery is this

Me: what the fuck are you doing here and how the fuck did you know I live here

I asked with an angry voice and she frowned

Devonia: oohk not the reaction I expected

Me: I asked you a damn question!

I said fuming with anger

Devonia: relax will ya I just wanted to see ya and I thought why not invite myself to your house so we can talk properly without being interrupted if you know what I mean.....

then she winked at me nx im sure the house help let her in after she told her she's my business partner..... nx i need to talk to that stupid woman never to let strangers in my house ever again

Devonia: since you refused to meet me in my hotel room

Mbali: wow

she said..... shit I even forgot she's next to me I turned and looked at her and she looked hurt

Me: go upstairs I'll be with you just now

Mbali: its fine I'll leave....i'll wait for my uber outside

she attempted to walk away but I grabbed her arm

Me: I said go wait for me upstairs

***I said it through my teeth with a frown on my face and she swallowed ***

Mbali: mxm whatever

I let her go and she slowly walked towards the stairs and up she went and I turned to this bitch

Devonia: calm down Ray ok I didn't mean any harm I just wanted...

I didn't let her finish her sentence cause I rushed to her and grabbed her with her hair but the stupid weave came off her head and I threw it in the air and I grabbed her by the long coat she's wearing and I pulled her off my couch and threw her on the floor taking out my gun from my back and I crocked it and pointed it at her

.
. .
.

****NARRATED****

Ray: who gave you the fucken right to come to my house uninvited and sit on my fucken couch and drink my fucken wine Devonia!

she swallowed

Devonia: look im sorry ok I just wanted to see you I mean you haven't even gotten back to me about my husband's case

Ray: so does that mean you should come to my fucken house? you know the fucken rules and you still broke them.... now take your shit get the fuck out of my house and just know the stupid deal is off find someone else to help you

he said with an angry voice and Devonia shook her head with her heart beating fast

Devonia: please Ray im sorry ok I overstepped my boundaries I acknowledge that and im sorry

Ray: GET OUT DEVONIANOW!

he roared and Devonia closed her eyes and she got up and went closer to Ray trying to touch his chest but he slapped her hands away and pointed to the door

Ray: take your hair and bag and get the fuck out of my house and lose my fucken numbers too

Devonia: Ray plea....

he cut her off

Ray: OUT NOW!

she took a deep breath and she went to pick her weave and bag up and she chuckled

Devonia: so you into small girls now

*** she said smirking and Ray clenched his jaws looking at her and then he also smirked***

Ray: and remember you have a son and daughter

her smirk faded

Ray: get out Devonia while im still this calm or else you'll leave in a body bag

he said with a deadliest frown on his face and Devonia knew he means every word so she swallowed and walked out then Ray clicked his tongue and opened the gate for her to drive out and he dialed Mateo's numbers and he answered on the third ring

Mat: jefe

Ray: can you believe I found Devonia in my house waiting for me

Mat: WHAT?

Ray clicked his tongue pissed off

Mat: shit she followed you or had you followed

Ray: it looks like it do me a favor bros and have her tailed I wanna know who she meets and what she does all the time

Mat: right on it

then they ended the call..... outside Devonia was now driving out and she dialed a number on her phone and the person answered on the third ring

Voice: so how is it going?

Dee: he kicked me out Sue

Sue: wait what? did he see that little number you have on underneath that long coat

Devonia huffed

Dee: it didn't even get to that he was with some girl.... Sue if only you could've seen the way he kicked me out like some trash you would feel sorry for me im telling you

Sue: but Dee you said he's a sex maniac and he loves pussy so bad

Dee: I don't know what happened Sue I mean the Ray I know is smitten by me I mean we always flirt with each other that we would even fuck occasionally so I don't know what happened or maybe it's because of that girl he was with

Sue: but you said he doesn't do love and committed relationships

Dee: yeah that's what I know but maybe she's some knew pussy so he didn't want anything that will make her leave

she said trying to convince herself

Sue: yeah maybe so what are you gonna do now

She sighed

Dee: Im not sure but what I know is I need Ray by my side I need his protection for the business venture im about to take since im getting rid of that useless man I call a husband and the best way to be sure I got Ray where I want him is if Im his woman

Sue sighed

Sue: just be careful Dee remember you said this Ray guy is dangerous himself so don't be too obvious

Dee: ok umm look we will talk later ok love you

Sue: love you too and be careful

then they ended the call and she sighed.....she was hurt by Ray's treatment cause she thought she got him figured out

.
. .
.

In the bedroom the door opened and Ray walked in and he found Mbali lying in bed facing away from the door and he sighed and he took off his shoes and climbed on the bed and he laid next to her and he held her from behind

Ray: im sorry about that my flower

Mbali: are you sleeping with her Ray

Ray: ofcourse not my flower

Mbali: please don't lie to me ok im not stupid I saw her naked thigh and im pretty sure she wasn't wearing anything underneath that long coat

Ray: and how is it my business if she was naked underneath Mbali I just told you im not sleeping with her!

***he said with an annoyed voice letting her go and she sat up and looked at him for some time then she got off the bed and she wore her shoes ***

Ray: what are you doing?

Mbali: please take me home

he clenched his jaws looking at her

Ray: we are not fighting because of her Mbali ok I fucken refuse it now get back here

Mbali: fine you know what I'll grab an uber then

she said taking her bag and Ray quickly got off the bed and he rushed to the door and he locked it and took out the key and put it inside his pocket

Mbali: what are you doing.....please open the door I want to leave

Ray: you know what...deal with your moods and when you are done then come back to bed

he said climbing back on the bed and he took out his phone and he got busy on it ignoring her deadly stares.....Mbali went to sit on the couch that is in the room with her bag on her lap and she looked away after some time of silence from both of them with Ray now staring at her the whole time she got up and went to the bathroom and after she was done with her business she washed her hands and dried them with a towel and she opened the door only to find Ray standing next to the door

Ray: have you dealt with your moods now my love

she ignored him and attempted to walk passed him but he grabbed her arm and he pulled her closed and he held her tight as she fought him off her

Ray: stop fighting me woman im stronger than you so you're wasting your energy

Mbali: I can just kick your balls and get it over and done with

Ray chuckled

Ray: then you will starve my flower while I heal

she didn't say anything she just looked away and he kissed her cheek

Ray: I love you baby and only you so please can you just stop being mad so I can have some I miss you

he whispered to her ear and she tried to fight the edge off and tell him to buzz off but she was already wet down there

Mbali: have you ever slept with her?

Ray: have you ever slept with that dickhead Kyle?

she looked up at him and he was raising his one eyebrow

Mbali: so she's your ex?

Ray: I have never had a girlfriend before you even though you are my woman and not girlfriend cause girlfriends are for high school kids so no but you can say her pussy was once my meal

she looked at him like she wanted to skin him alive

Mbali: how can you say that Ray...to me no gal

she said with an angry voice

Ray: what? im just answering your question

Mbali: mxm let me go...i can't believe you just said that to my face....uyang'jwaela wena Ray

Ray: im not letting you go.....I have been starving my flower so it's either you give it to me now or I'll make you give it to me

Mbali: I see you want me to crush your balls with my knee neh

Ray: and like I said....you'll starve

Mbali: ok ooh didn't I tell you I have a dildo at home? and that its huge and pitch black

Ray's smile faded instantly and he looked at Mbali with an angry frown

Ray: what did you just say?

Mbali: you heard me now let go of me

he looked at her waiting for her to say im joking but nope it never came

Ray: tell me you are joking Mbali

Mbali: nope im not

she said with a straight face she wanted him to feel what she felt when he said Devonia's pussy was once his meal but then Ray's eyes turned red instantly with anger and he let her go

Ray: let's go

he said with an angry voice

Mbali: where?

Ray: I said let's go woman!

he snapped at her and she jumped a bit scared by his tone he was now wearing his shoes and he went to the door and he took out the key and he unlocked the door

Ray: I said let's go Mbali

she swallowed and she took her hand bag and she followed him

.

.

.

they were now parked outside her brother Jay's yard

Ray: go and take it

Mbali: take what?

Ray: that huge dildo you talked about....im waiting!

she looked at him with her eyes popped out

Mbali: nkosi yam Ray are you serious?

Ray: I don't have all day now go bring it here

she wanted to laugh but he looked deadly now

Mbali: jeez I was kidding I don't have a huge dildo

he looked at her

Ray; but you do have a dildo isn't it?

she cleared her throat cause she did even though its not that huge.....she got it when she was still dating Kyle it was for rainy days like when they see each other less because of their studies and no she hasn't used it yet

Ray: go and take it now!

he snapped

Mbali: it's not here

he looked at her with his jaws clenched

Ray: what are you waiting for go and take the keys for your apartment now

she sighed

Mbali: Ray come on you are making a big deal out of nothing

Ray: ooh is it? ok then I guess you won't have a problem if I buy those sex doll for myself cause believe me I can afford them

Mbali: mxm fine I'll go take the keys jeez

she opened the door and got out

Ray: nx a fucken dildo while I have the fucken real thing here she must be out of her fucken mind

he said to himself pissed off

.
. .

*** he parked the car and they got out and went to the elevator and soon it opened on her floor and they got out and went to her apartment..... she opened the door and they went inside and she went to her bedroom and she went to her closet and she opened one of her bags that has her old clothes inside and she took it out and she went back to the bedroom with it and Ray looked at her with a pissed off look***

Ray: ooh so you prefer them white?

Mbali: please stop ok.... I brought it before I met you so stop acting like I cheated on you and I haven't even used it....yet

Ray: mmmh I see you still have mouth to talk abi? ok let's go

*** he walked out and she put it inside her hand bag and she went after him they got out and locked and they went to the elevator****

.
. .

All the way Ray was giving her nasty looks and she wanted to laugh so bad but she knew he was serious so she kept it together.....she was astonished by the fact that he drove to her brother's house and also to her apartment just so he can get her dildo and she was sure he's gonna burn it and she didn't care cause his dick is all she needs but she couldn't believe he was acting like this because of a dildo she wondered what he'll do if she were to cheat on him. She didn't even want to think about it cause it gave her chills down her spine..... They finally arrived and he got out and she also got out and followed behind him while shaking her head He went towards the long passage inside the house for some time while Mbali waited for him and he came back holding a gasoline bottle and a lighter and her suspicions were correct...then he went to the sliding door that led to the backyard and he stopped walking and he turned

Ray: stop dragging your feet make it fast woman!

he snapped again and she followed him and they went to the braai area

Ray: put it here

she sighed and she took it out and put it on the braai stand and Ray opened the bottle and he poured it on it and lit it and she watched as it melted and burned to ashes and Ray looked at her

Ray: if I ever find out you bought this shitty thing again you'll regret it.... you sabi?

he said that with a threatening tone and she pouted looking up at him

Mbali: ok but what is sabi?

he looked at her with a frown on his face and he shook his head while chuckling

Ray: you know what? im gonna fuck you until you know what sabi means

he then picked her up and went inside the house with her in his arms all the way upstairs

44

INSERT.....44

.
. .

NARRATED

*** He put her on top of the bed and he took off her clothes while staring into her eyes with a serious look on his face then he opened her legs wide and her freshly shaved nana was staring at him looking appetizing and he cursed***

Ray: fuck!

he felt his shaft getting harder by the second and he clenched his jaws and went down and licked it then he got out the bed and took off his clothes and he grabbed her leg and pulled her to the edge of the bed and by now Mbali's nana was dripping wet

Mbali: Ra...Ray

Ray: shhh don't say anything the only thing I want out of your mouth is you telling me what sabi means

Mbali: but Ra....

Ray: I said shhhh!

she kept quiet and swallowed and Ray went down on her and he kissed her nana and he licked it and opened her pussy lips and he sucked gently on her clit and she moaned out loud

Mbali: ooh yessss Ray

he stopped and looked up at her

Ray: what did I just say to you?

she swallowed hard and he went back to her nana and he let his tongue do the talking until she came on his face and he licked her clean and he went up to her face and kissed her hungrily making her taste herself.... after some time he pulled out of the kiss and she felt his shaft on his entrance but he didn't push it in instead he rubbed it up and down on her nana also pushing it hard on her clit then circling it round and round on it....all this time Mbali was moaning out loud she was ready for him but he was just taking his time

Mbali: Ray please

Ray: shhhh..... what did I say

Mbali: but i.... I don't know what it means

she said wanting to cry cause she wanted him in her as in now

Ray: then shush

he continued to rub his hard shaft on her nana until tears started coming out of eyes

Mbali: Ray....

she whispered

Ray: yes my love

Mbali: Pleaseeeee

she whispered again with a breaking voice cause she felt like her clit was gonna erupt any second now

Ray: please what my flower

***she sobbed ***

Mbali: im sorry ok I will never buy it again I swear on my late mother's grave I swear Ray please push it in

he chuckled

Ray: never again?

she nodded

Ray: I can't hear you?

Mbali: never again Ray please I promise

he then slid it in and he groaned from deep down his throat while she moaned out loud grabbing the bed covers tight

Mbali: oohh gosh yessssss

then he started to move with a fast pace as he wanted to punish her which made Mbali to moan out loud but then he slowed down when he thought about his unborn child and he went in and out of her slowly

Ray: fuck you are tight my flower

he said that going in and out of her slowly...as for Mbali she was busy moaning loud while grabbing the bed covers then she would let them go and she would grab her breasts and squeeze them tight while biting her lower lip.... she just didn't know what to do with herself..... as for Ray he just fucked her nice and slow until she came and like usually he didn't stop instead he fucked her right through her orgasm..... he opened her legs wide and he pressed them on the bed from both side and he moved in and out of her with a normal space

Ray: ooh yes baby...fuck

***he said moving in and out of her while staring down at her pussy and his dick that is covered with her cum and wetness busy sliding in and out of her.....he increased his pace a bit with his grip getting tighter and tighter on her thighs and he increased the pace faster as he was now chasing his own happy ending..... he was going so fast that Mbali was hit by another orgasm and he didn't and after a few strokes he slammed into her and shot his cum inside of her cursing and groaning deep..... after some time of catching his breath he pulled out and her went to the bathroom and came back with a wet towel and he cleaned himself and Mbali then he opened Mbali's legs even though they were shaking and he stared down on her pussy and he started jerking his shaft waking it he jerked it with his right hand while his left hand was rubbing Mbali's clit and when he was fully hard

he flipped Mbali and he entered her from behind and she moaned out loud by now she was numb and she wanted to rest a bit but Ray was having none of that***

Mbali: Ray im tired

Ray: mmmmh this round is for buying that shitty thing so brace yourself my flower cause it's gonna be one long ass round

and he started to move before she could say anything.....

.
. .
. .

**** they were now sitting in the couch that is in the bedroom and they were eating takeaways Mbali was wearing only his shirt while Ray was wearing only his briefs her nana was on fire and her body was tired Ray just woke her up from her nap so she can eat***

Mbali: my poor nana

he chuckled

Ray: never make me jealous or make me mad cause this will be some of the consequences you'll face

she pouted and he chuckled

Ray: but I love you though and a lot My flower

she just rolled her eyes

Mbali: yeah I know

he kissed her lips

Ray: im going home for the weekend with my brothers and Heath's wife

Mbali: ooh ok....when are you leaving?

Ray: Thursday late

Mbali: ooh? that's like two days from now Ray

she said pouting and he bend over and perked her lips

Ray: my father wants us home by Friday so we leaving Thursday to avoid being told the flight has been postponed due to bad weather and shit and we end up arriving Saturday cause that old man will skin us alive my flower....when he says Friday it should be Friday before he retires to bed and plus I need to tell him about you and our unborn baby

she sighed

Mbali: ok..... so when will you come back

Ray: Monday

she sighed again

Mbali: ok I guess I will go to KZN for the weekend then

Ray: home?

she nodded

Ray: ok but you better make sure those small boys stays the hell away from you cause I don't mind putting a bullet through some fuckboy's head and also make sure your phone is always on and with you all the time ok

Mbali: yes baby

he smirked

Ray: you should call me that more often

she nodded

Ray: and please take care of my little man in here

he said rubbing her flat stomach and she smiled

Mbali: I will don't worry and ooh always remember that you are taken cause believe me I'll know if you let deranged bitches touch you or you touch them and don't ask me how

he chuckled

Ray: yes mam.....i love you ok.... both of you

Mbali: and we love you too daddy

***he smiled wide.....he still couldn't believe that in a few months' time he's gonna be a father....

then her phone rang and Ray went to take it for her and when he saw who was calling he got bored instantly he gave the phone to Mbali and she answered***

Mbali: bhuti

Jay: Mbali ukuphi? (Mbali where are you?)

Mbali: im....im with Ray bhuti

he clicked his tongue and he dropped the call and she sighed

Ray: please don't stress my son abeg your brother has a wife and kids so biko this is my first child so take it easy ooo

she gave him a bored look and he chuckled then he kissed her lips

Ray: they will all come around don't worry ok

she nodded

Ray: now smile for daddy

she blushed and he chuckled

.

.

.
*** The following day in the morning he went to the warehouse and he found Jabu already there with Mat while Heath was back home with Naledi***

Ray: bros bros bros

he fist bumped them

Jabu: nja yami Big Ray himself

*** Ray chuckled***

Mat: jefe....you ready?

Ray: yeah is he ready for me?

Mat: yeah lets go

*** then they went to the room Kitso was held in and he got ready by wearing protective garments and so did Mat and Jabu***

Jabu: I wonder what he's gonna do to him

he said to Mat

Mat: just wait and see he loves experimenting and the results come out positive.....well most of the time

Kitso: pleaseeee ma...man stop im so...sorry please forgive me man please don't I hate needles

he said when he saw Ray holding a syringe then Ray got closer to him with that syringe that has a paralyzing agent called succinylcholine and he injected Kitso and almost immediately his body got paralyzed but he was still very much conscious....then he took a spray that contained pesticide vapors and chlorpyrifos in it and he went back to Kitso who was looking at him with tears running down from each side of his face

Ray: well my boy this is a pesticide spray and if it gets in contact with your skin or you inhale it you will get seriously ill and the exposed areas that gets in contact with it becomes permanently paralyzed....well it's a painful process before you become paralyzed but the end result is you get paralyzed and might end up being dead but im a doctor so I'll try by all means to make sure you survive ok.... well the thing is it happened once to some man in the US the thing is the dude didn't wear protective garment like the one im wearing while spraying some room so shit happened and now he's permanently paralyzed and he almost lost his life too so now I need to see if the same shit can happen to you and if you survive then I'll turn this into a drug and sell it in the black market and make some moola

Jabu: oooh shit

Mat chuckled.....anyway Ray sprayed the pesticide spray on Kitso's body from waist down and he sprayed a small amount on his nose and he put it away while Kitso was busy crying silently since he couldn't move an inch....After 30 minutes he became ill with nausea abdominal cramping and numbness from his waist down and he also had bilateral shoulder pain and chest pains....he couldn't move an inch of his body but he was feeling each and every pain and as much as he wanted to scream he couldn't.....and Ray treated him with atropine and pralidoxime the same drugs that were used in the hospital that man was in back in USA then he put an oxygen mask on his face and also put an IV on his hand that had some morphine in it cause he knew the pain was unbearable and he didn't want him to die from pain before he finishes with his experiment then he instructed that they leave the room

outside the room they took off the protective garments and they went to have some drink after they washed their hands

Mat: you done with him jefe?

Ray: nah I'll go check on him later and plus I still need to wipe out some of his memory

He nodded

Jabu: damn I could see the pain that was visible on his face big Ray

Ray: and he's gonna go through it for 12 days before I release him

Jabu: damn

Mat: La Parca at work Jabs

they laughed

.
. .
.

They were now inside a private jet ready for takeoff..... it was Ray Heath Mj Naledi Omphile and Lesedi while Jabu and Mat are gonna remain behind and keep a close eye at Kitso while injecting him with drugs Ray instructed them to inject him with at a specific time until he gets back

Heath: are you ok Obi m

he whispered in her ear and she nodded.....she didn't want to go to Nigeria because she knows Heath's parents don't like her or even want her as a daughter in law but she trusted Heath so here she is..... and as for Ray he was on a call with Mbali

Heath: all will be well Obi m trust me ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Mj: sister star don't worry ok we got your back especially me cause I know how to raise mother's blood pressure so relax

Heath chuckled and Naledi giggled

Naledi: I don't want you to leave Mj I swear im gonna be bored to death

she said pouting

Mj: don't worry I'll be back before you know it

Heath: oooh no no no no.....on your next visit you going to visit either Jabu's house or big Ray's house

Naledi laughed and Mj chuckled

Mj: really bros?

he said rolling his eyes

Heath: no man you eat a lot I mean even my pregnant wife doesn't eat as much as you eat

they laughed

Mj: sister star doesn't complain so im coming back ooo

Heath: well im complaining for her

Mj: well either way im coming back

Heath: mxm

an announcement was made that they should buckle up and they did and soon they took off

.
. .
. . .

*** they landed the following day and they were now on their way to their father's house***

Naledi: yho aowa bathong (no people) this weather no no no

they laughed

Heath: mmmmh and remember we grew up here

Naledi: and wonder why ya'll aren't pitch black in colour

Mj: skin lightening sister

they laughed again

Ray: don't count me in on that skin lightening ish

Mj: mxm biko don't even start with me Big Ray you are a master of skin lightening and we both know it you and brother Heath

they laughed

Ray: I go slap you Mj

Heath: don't start with me Mj abeg

Mj laughed

Omphile: dad can I also do skin lightening?

*** she said softly and everyone in the car went silent then Ray cleared his throat***

Ray: my princess is someone bullying you at school about your skin color?

*** Naledi saw her swallowing while looking down***

Heath: Omphile are you being bullied?

she nodded while playing with her fingers and Naledi's bottom lip trembled and she swallowed hard while the whole car went silent that's until Mj spoke with a serious tone

Mj: what is the name of that monkey or monkeys that bully you Phile?

she swallowed and Naledi pulled her to her chest and he held her tight and Omphile just cried as for Ray and Heath they were too angry to even say anything

Naledi: its ok baby I'll handle this ok.....no one and I mean no one bullies my daughter and gets away with it.....don't worry mommy will handle it ok

Omphile nodded and she kept on brushing her back until she calmed down....as for Lesedi she was sleeping on Mj's chest while Heath and Ray were sitting in the front with Ray as the driver..... they were escorted by two cars full of guards one was on the front while another one was at the back

Ray: Omphile!

Omphile: dad

she calls Ray dad and Heath daddy

Ray: we will deal with this when we go back home ok

Omphile: ok

she said softly and as for Heath he was just too angry to even say anything

Mj: and ya'll better face-time me when you go to that school cause I want to see how those monkeys that bully my beautiful "like a goddess" niece look like.....i have things I need to say to them him or her nx

then he clicked his tongue

.

.

.

*** They finally arrived and as soon as the cars parked the guards got out of their cars and walked around the yard checking the coast then the brothers got out of the car and Heath helped Naledi out of the car and they walked to the door while some guards took out their bags..... they opened the door and walked in they found their father sitting in the lounge drinking tea and they greeted them and he greeted them back***

Mr.Masden: welcome

then he looked at Omphile

Mr.masden: come say hi to your Nna ukwu (grandfather) properly

Omphile smiled and she went to him and hugged him then she sat next to him

Mr.Masden: Naledi how are you my daughter

they were all shocked by his words

Naledi: im...im fine sir and you

she said looking down

Mr.Masden: dad will do please and im fine too

he said smiling at her and she nodded smiling faintly and Mr. Masden looked at Mj who had Lesedi in his arms

Mr.Masden: I see the prodigal son is back to give us headaches

they laughed

Mj: dad please ooo I had a long flight so it's too early for all that

Mr.Masden: ooh shut up and bring her to me

Mj looked at Heath and he nodded and he took the sleeping Lesedi to him and Mr. Masden held her making sure he doesn't wake her up

Mr.Masden: what's her name?

Omphile: Lesedi grandpa which mean light

she said smiling and everyone laughed lightly

Mr.masden: ok princess..... and I'll call her light

Omphile: and I'll call her light too grandpa

Mr Masden laughed

Mr.Masden: Chineke m (my God) so you are stealing from me now

Omphile laughed and she hid her face on his shoulder then Lesedi woke up and she scanned around and her eyes landed on Heath

Lesedi: dadi (daddy)

she said with a sleepy voice raising her arms and Heath went to take her and she rested her head on his chest

Mr.Masden: mmmmh daddy's little girl just like princess Omphile here....ok then take your wife and kids upstairs and come back here with Akunna you have some explaining to do and your uncles are on their way

Heath swallowed then he nodded

Mj: what about me

Mr.masden: what about you...mxm my friend go upstairs to your room jorr its too early to be dealing with your crazy self at least wait until your brothers leave biko (please)

Mj sulked and Heath and Ray laughed at him

Heath: lets go Obi m

they walked out of the lounge and before they can get to the stairs Nomvula came walking from the kitchen while wiping her hands with a dish cloth

Nomvula: ooh welcome my babies

*** she hugged Mj who then kissed her cheek and she also hugged Heath who reluctantly hugged her back and he looked at Ray***

Nomvula: Raymond

Ray: mother

then she looked at Naledi with a fake smile

Nomvula: mmmmh I heard you even went as deep as making my son to marry you congrats

Naledi looked down and before Heath could say anything Ray spoke

Ray: this time you mess with Naledi then you'll be messing with me too mother and we both know you can't handle me

Mj: or me

she frowned then she chuckled

Nomvula: you even won this one mmmmh your muti must be good neh

Heath: NOMVULA ENOUGH!

he roared and she jumped a bit

Nomvula: so it's not enough that you once pointed a gun at me and now you even raise your voice at me Heath

Heath: didn't I warn you to lay off Naledi

Nomvula: uyabona wena.... heeh nx

she said pointing at Naledi and Naledi looked at Nomvula with teary eyes she couldn't understand why Heath's mother hated her so much

Ray: you know I though Dad wanting to take a second wife will humble you but nope a leopard will never change its spots

Heath: lets go Obi m this woman is not worth it nx

he pulled Naledi upstairs and Mj and Omphile followed them

Nomvula: remember this is my husband's house!

he yelled at them

Ray: you are a despicable woman and I actually feel sorry for you cause none of your children can stand you.....you better make sure you die before dad cause if dad's ancestors remember him first then you'll die alone woman and believe me none of us will even come to your funeral

then he walked up the stairs leaving her tongue tied

Mr.Masden: he's right you better make sure I don't die first cause he'll make sure you feel hell on earth I raised him and groomed him to be who he is so I know what im talking about

Nomvula: and you find humor in him treating me like shit isn't it

Mr.Masden: cause sometimes you deserve it nx

he clicked his tongue then he walked back in the lounge leaving Nomvula with tears in her eyes.....she clicked her tongue and went back to the kitchen

45

INSERT.....45

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Mat and Jabu were sitting in the office at the warehouse when Jabu's phone rang and she picked it up it was his grandmother

Jabu: magriza (gran)

Voice: Jabulani ukuphi ushaka (where is shaka) I've been calling him but his phone doesn't go through

Jabu: his father called him and Ray they are in Nigeria as we speak....what's wrong mkhulu and is that gogo shouting

his grandfather sighed

Mkhulu: yes...come home now Jabulani

Jabu: ok im on my way

he said getting worried

Mkhulu: now Jabulani!

he commanded him

Jabu: yebo mkhulu

then they dropped the call and Jabu quickly got up

Mat: what's wrong Jabs?

Jabu: I don't know granddad said I shout come home now and I heard gogo shouting or screaming in the background and he was also asking about Heath

***he said packing his things in his laptop bag ***

Jabu: I'll see you later bros

they fist bumped

Mat: keep me updated

Jabu: sure

then he rushed out

.
. .
. . .

Voice: Naledi listen to me and listen to me well.....your life is in danger so I want you to be careful....
wankutlwa?(you hear me)

Naledi: mmmmh

she said in her sleep and she turned and looked the other way....she was feeling jet legged so she took a rest along with her kids while Heath and Ray were having a meeting with the elders downstairs

Voice: do you hear me Naledi? don't trust anyone and beware of what you eat cause your life is in danger

Naledi: mh

then she continued to sleep*

.
. .
. . .

DOWNSTAIRS

Uncle1: why are you acting like you don't know our ways Ezeudo how can you marry a woman without the consent of your parents and us as the elders of this family why are you behaving like an outcast Gwa m nwoke! (answer me boy)

Heath: O wutere nwanne mama m (im sorry uncle)

Uncle2: yes it's good that you are sorry cause this is not how our brother and your mother raised you.... you can't just take someone's daughter and marry her without paying for her bride price

Mr.masden: paying for her bride price is not even much of a big deal imagine them finding out that their daughter is married and she even changed her surname and her daughter's surname too that is not even Ezeudos biologically to Owoh-Masden...imagine!

Uncle3: Ezeudo my boy our people say " one to whom an oath is administered says that if the ogu (swearing stick) annoys him and gives him two strokes will he give you one and take one?

Uncle1: ehe!

he chanted agreeing with him

Uncle3: now we know the damage is already done so listen to us and take our advice cause we will never mislead you or ignore our advises and if/when something bad results from you marrying a woman without her family's consent and our own consent then you will suffer the consequences alone cause im sure even our ancestors and hers are angry by what you did

all along Heath was looking down

Mr.Masden: and you Akunna you let him do this even though you knew it was wrong mxm birds of the same feathers

he said with an angry voice

Ray: my elders there's a saying that " one who has been bitten by a snake is afraid of an earthworm" so dad what happened in South Africa when you came with Adanma made Ezeudo to do what he did he was afraid that you might come with another wife for him and that Star might leave him he meant no harm or disrespect he was just doing what his heart was telling him to do at that time cause he was scared...right Ezeh?

Heath nodded

Heath: my elders Ururu (edible raffia termites) says rather than closing his buttocks(which would kill him) extract his oil so that he looks shriveled.....

the elders nodded

Heath: so it was better for me to ignore all the traditional rights I was supposed to do before marrying her and to also not tell both our families and save my relationship with Naledi than to wait for my family to accept her and lose her while waiting for that to happen which seemed impossible at that time

Uncle2: we hear you Ezeudo but im sure you know what you did is not how we do things and since we as your elders also have a hand into pushing you to do this then we need to do the right thing and that is for you pay for her bride price and have her introduced to our family and ancestors properly

Heath brushed his hair looking down

Mr.Masden: what is it?

Heath: her...her family disowned her when she chose me over them and im glad they did cause they are evil and they don't deserve her

Uncle2: thunder fire that your mouth mxm.... may Amadioha(God of thunder) fire that mouth of yours for talking such nonsense

the uncle said to Heath and they heard someone giggling on the other side and Mr. Masden knew it was MJ and Ray just chuckled

Mr.Masden: Michael Chukwuemeka Owoh-Masden!

he called out to him with a stern voice and Mj swallowed hard cause he didn't think they heard him

MJ: dad

he said with a low tone walking in and he stood next to one of the couches looking down

Mr.Masden: what are you doing eavesdropping on our meeting!

he asked him with a hard tone and Mj swallowed hard

Mj: Ekele m ndi okenye (greetings my elders)

Elders: Ndewo

they replied

Mj: ummm my elders you see the outcome of you not allowing your young sons to be part of family meetings we end up eavesdropping ooo but not because we are being naughty or anything but because we want to know what happens in these meetings and how you handle important issues which might end up building me as a young man because we all know that you all are closer to your graves and soon im gonna be an elder and I won't even know how to go about it

Ray and Heath were folding their lips holding in their laughter cause he looked serious

Mr.Masden: so the best way for you was to eavesdrop on us abi?

Mj: my elder come on we both know you told me to go to my room instead of telling me to sit in on this meeting

he said 'my elder' to his father and the uncles chuckled

Mr.Masden: ooh shut up..... Mj tell me how does your brain work mmmmh

Mj: it works very well my elder

Mr.Masden: Chimezie (uncle 2) please talk to your nephew biko before I ask Amadioha to strike his mouth shut

Mj: why would you do that my elder I mean im only speaking the truth and my mind

Mr.Masden: MJ!

Mj: my elder

***Mr Masden just shook his head defeated and Ray and Heath busted out with laughter especially when they looked at how serious Mj was and so did uncle Chimezie and uncle Chibuzor they laughed along with Ray and Heath while Mr Masden and uncle Chioke just shook their heads bewildered by MJ ***

Mj: so my elders do you permit me to sit in on family meetings from now on?

*** the elders looked at each other with smiles on their faces***

Uncle.Chioke: Chukwuemeka what do you think?

they asked Mj's father

Mj: uncle abeg don't ask him biko cause we all know he'll say no

Mr.Masden: so now you know what im thinking Junior?

Mj: no my elder but I know you don't see me as a man but as a boy and im a man my elder

Uncle.Chimezie: ooh a man you say?

Mj: yes my elder I mean ofcourse I still need my parents guidance and help financially since im still in school but I am a man...I mean I can father a child if I want to but I cant cause my father would skin me alive or even ask Amadioha to strike me mad but I am a man my elder

*** Ray and Heath were laughing silently while Uncle Chibuzor was busy wiping his tears off***

Mr.Masden: you know Michael if you didn't look like me I would say they changed you in the hospital cause no one from our past generation behaved like you

Mj: Ekem ekele Chineke m bu nwa gin woke m bu okenye (then thanks to God im your son my elder)

they laughed

Mr.Masden: shut up and sit down before you give me a headache

Mj smiled and he sat down and Ray's phone rang and it was Jabu and he asked to be excused and he went to the other room to answer it

Ray: bros haw far?

Jabu: Big Ray where is Mshikaro?

he said with a worried tone

Ray: he's in the lounge talking to the elders why what's wrong bros?

Jabu: Naledi's life is in danger bros so gogo needs to speak to him

Ray: wait what?.....is that her in the background?

Jabu: yeah Big Ray she's freaking me out...she keeps on saying Naledi's life is in danger and she wants to talk to mshikaro

Ray: shit ok hold on and let me get him

he went back to the lounge

Ray: ummm dad gogo is not ok and she wants to speak to Ezeudo

Heath: what? whats wrong with her?

Ray: I don't know but come she wants to talk to you

he quickly stood up and they left the lounge and Ray put the phone on loudspeaker

Ray: Jabu he's here you can give her the phone

*** they heard Jabu speaking to her and she sniffed***

Gogo: shaka?

Heath: my love what's wrong

Gogo: Naledi's life is in danger please save her....save her Shaka I see her on the floor bleeding from her mouth dead and I also see you hanging yourself when her death becomes too much for you

Heath looked at Ray with his eyes popped out then he thought of Naledi and he ran towards the stairs going up leaving Ray on the spot they were in

Gogo: please save her Shaka

Ray: gran please calm down Heath and I we'll make sure she's safe I promise and you know I keep my promised

Gogo: ok...ok....

she sniffed wiping her tears

Gogo: mzukulu wam (my grandson) I know you are home and your father called you and your brothers there but please come back cause Naledi and her unborn babies are not safe

Ray: who would want to hurt her gran

Gogo: I don't know all I saw is Naledi and Shaka

Ray: what...what if its Nom...Nomvula

Gogo: I don't care....nothing should happen to Shaka and his wife and kids you hear me.....if it's her then it will be her cross to bear cause I tried with her Ray God knows I tried so much that I prayed for her more than I even prayed for my own husband and she still has a dark heart and full of envy and hatred if her being exposed to everyone for her to heal from the evil she did then so it shall be

Ray: what evil did she do Gran?

Gogo: look I have to go please protect Naledi Raymond

then she dropped the call.....while upstairs Heath was holding Naledi tight after he woke her up from her sleep with his heart beating rapidly....he knew that his grandmother wasn't making things up so the thought of losing Naledi to death terrified him more than anything in the world

Naledi: what's wrong Heath?

he swallowed

Heath: nothing Obi m

Naledi: are you sure?

Heath: yeah I just.....i haven't checked on you for some time now so I got scared that Nomvula might have done something to you I don't trust her

Naledi: she might hate me but im carrying her grandchildren I don't think she would hurt her own blood

Heath: I wouldn't put it passed her Obi m

she sighed

Naledi: don't say that about your mother Heath she's just being over protective.....i don't know why cause I mean no harm to your life or maybe it's because im an albino and she's part of the group of people who don't see us as humans but im sure she means no harm

Heath didn't say anything back he just continued to hold her tight

Naledi: you know I had a dream

Heath: im listening

Naledi: a voice was busy telling me to be careful and also to not trust anyone and to also be careful of what I eat she's just being over protective.....i don't know why cause I mean no harm to your life or maybe it's because im an albino and she's part of the group of people who don't see us as humans but im sure she means no harm

Heath didn't say anything back he just continued to hold her tight

Naledi: you know I had a dream

Heath: im listening

Naledi: a voice was busy telling me to be careful and also to not trust anyone and to also be careful of what I eat it was strange but im sure it was just a dream

Heath's body tensed and he closed his eyes and he prayed silently

.
. .
. .

*** Jabu was now sitting outside in the veranda while his grandparents were inside in their bedroom with his grandfather holding his wife tight while brushing her back gently as she drifted off to sleep with her head on his chest....Jabu was worried about Naledi and Heath and he wished he left with them so he can help keep Naledi safe but he knew Ray's gonna help Heath keep her safe....then his phone rang and it was Amo***

Jabu: rato laka (my love)

she sniffed

Jabu: Amogelang what's wrong?

he said getting worked up

Amo: Jabu can...can you please come and pick me up

he stood up walking inside the house

Jabu: what's wrong?

Amo: I'll tell you when you get here please....i know you are busy but i....

he interrupted her

Jabu: I'll never be busy for you Amo ok.....just go wait for me at spesh's fast food join I'll find you there

Amo: ok

she dropped the call and Jabu knocked on his grandparents bedroom door

.
. .

***He parked outside spesh's place and he got out of the car with people looking at him but more especially at his expensive car and he closed the door and walked inside and he saw her sitting alone on the bench staring into space she had an uneaten kota (bunny chow) on her hand....he walked to her and as soon as her nose caught his cologne she turned and he was standing next to her he pulled out his hand to her and she took it and he helped her stand up and he could see she was crying she was a yellowbone so she couldn't hide that she was crying even if she wanted to.... he then perked her lips with some girls giving Amo nasty looks cause they didn't understand why she would end up with a good looking man who looks like he's made it in life while they end up with township riff ruffs ***

Jabu: let's go

***she nodded and she took her handbag and they went to his car got in and he drove off....silence filled the car with Jabu wondering what made her cry on top of that he was worried about Heath and

Naledi and his grandmother..... his head was just all over the place.....then his phone rang and he answered***

Jabu: bros

Mat: Jabs is your gran ok

he sighed

Jabu: she'll be fine but Heath and Naledi might not be

Mat: what do you mean?

Jabu: just call Ray he will explain everything to you cause I can't right now im with Amo and she's not well

Mat: ok let me call him

Jabu: ok shap

they ended the call and Amo wanted to ask him about Heath and Naledi but her mind wasn't in the right place it was all over what happened earlier on before she called Jabu.... they finally arrived at Jabu's house and he parked the car and they got out and went inside the house after Jabu unlocked the door and they went to the lounge and she sat on the couch while Jabu was sitting on the glass table facing her

Jabu: who made you cry?

she looked down and played with her fingers

Jabu: Amogelang kere ke mpya ya ko kae e e go llisitseng (I said which dog made you cry)

tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them and Jabu didn't move from where he was sitting he was looking at her with an intense look on his face

Amo: they.... they arranged a marriage for me with some well-known pastor's son

Jabu: ASKIES?

he said standing up with a deadly look on his face

Jabu: o reng? (what did you say?)

Amo: and...and when I told dad I don't want to be married off he said I'll do as he says or pack my things and leave his house

she then wiped her tears with the back of her hand as for Jabu he was standing there looking at her with his hands on his waist with his chest moving up and down fast

Amo: I then told him that im no longer a virgin and that im in love with someone else so that he could reconsider his decision and he lost it he....he slapped me and he told me from this day im dead to him and he told me I should get out of his house and never set my foot in his house.....he...he called me a sinner and he said im gonna burn in hell for choosing to be a whore rather than to follow God's way

she said wiping her falling tears and Jabu walked out going outside with a look that made chills to run down Amo's spine..... then after some time he walked back in with his eyes red with rage and he sat next to her and pulled her to his chest and he held her tight...she could now smell the strong scent of nicotine on him which means he went out to smoke so he can calm down

Jabu: its ok rato laka (my love) your father is not God ok he's supposed to be a messenger of God but now he's busy abusing his position..... wena just pray to God and let him deal with your father accordingly cause only God has a right to judge you and not some human whom I know wasn't all holy before he became a pastor

he kissed the top of her head

Amo: I'll...I'll call my friend nhlanhla and ask her if I can stay with her for....

he interrupted her

Jabu: that's not happening you are staying here with me.....i know you don't like cohabiting and stuff so pray to God about it but you are moving in with me and that's that

she didn't say anything cause her father always disapproved of vat n sat and now she was about to do it

Jabu: why did you lie to him about your virginity?

she sighed..... well she's a 25 year old virgin

Amo: I thought if I told him im no longer a virgin that will make him reconsider his decision of marrying me off but things didn't go like I thought they would

Jabu: I might as well break it cause now im sure they hate me for deflowering you even though they have never met me before

tears came out of her eyes

Amo: im sorry Jabu I thought they....

Jabu: shhhh its ok im gonna deflower you one of these days so it's all good

he said with a smirk on his face and she swallowed hard then he pushed her off him gently and he wiped off her tears

Jabu: you are mine Amogelang and mine alone.....remember I told you that I was once a bad guy who didn't give a fuck about anything or anyone except for my family members and now im reformed so your father shouldn't provoke me cause once the monster in me wakes up he'll regret it

she swallowed hard again then he perked her lips

Jabu: but don't worry he'll accept my lobola and damages money or I'll force the money down his throat

Amo: da...damages?

he smirked*

Jabu: ke nwa di ghubu my love mmmmh bo seroba mpeto le serathafatsa kuku (I drink traditional herbs) so I don't shoot blanks rato laka

her eyes popped out she was terrified by the thought of getting pregnant especially outside wedlock....well she has seen the bottles in the fridge and he once told her what they are for

Jabu: I love you ok and im not going anywhere and im never letting you go cause o waka wena(you are mine)

he kissed her forehead

Amo: I love you too but...but im scared Jabu

Jabu: you have nothing to be scared about Amo daddy J got you and you know he always keeps his promises right

she nodded

Jabu: good now e fa papa lelamza mo (kiss daddy here)

he pointed at his lips and she smiled shyly and she kissed him.... well deep down he was burning with anger but he knew he has to keep it together or he'll scare Amo if she's to see him enraged

.
. .
. .

∞∞∞ BACK IN NIGERIA ∞∞∞

**** they were now sited in the dining room table waiting to eat.... Lesedi was on Heath's lap and they were gonna share food like they usually do and Omphile was sitting next to her mommy busy brushing her belly smiling from ear to ear when the babies moved***

Nomvula: Heath give that baby to one of the maids to feed her so we can eat in peace biko

the table went silent

Heath: don't start with me please im not in the mood

Nomvula: but I was....

her husband interrupted her

Mr.Masden: ENOUGH NOMVULA....ENOUGH!

he shouted and the table went silent again

Mj: mother can you please for the love of God just act normal for at least two hours biko

Nomvula: will you just shut up Mj nx.....now can we just eat cause I can't stand to share a table with her...its like she's sent here to torment me nx

Naledi sighed looking down at her plate

Ray: what kind of a woman are you Nomvula in fact you know what you are a disgrace

Heath got up

Mr.Masden: sit down Ezeh

Heath: Its fine dad I'll just take my wife and kids and we will go eat somewhere else

Uncle.Chioke: Ezeudo your father said sit down.....leave her remember whatever happens in the dark always comes to light so leave her our ancestors will deal with her

Nomvula clicked her tongue looking at Chioke and Heath sat down and Mr Masden sighed

Mr.masden: lets hold hands so our princess can bless the food

they did and Omphile prayed and after she was done they started to eat except for Naledi who lost her appetite now

Heath: eat Obi m

Naledi: I've lost my appetite

she said with a low tone but unfortunately they heard her

Nomvula: I didn't slave away in the kitchen for nothing little girl so eat the damn food

Omphile looked at her grandmother with an angry look on her face and tears ran down her cheeks

Ray: Princess

Omphile: I wanna go home dad I don't wanna be here anymore

she said getting up and she ran out

Mj: I'll go after her

he got up and went after her

Ray: WHATS YOUR PROBLEM NOMVULA

Nomvula: don't start with me Raymond please....i didn't say anything to her

*** the uncles shook their heads while Heath was looking at his mother with an angry look on his face.....he wanted to jump on her now and just strangle her to death***

Uncle.Chimezie: now I see why you want a second wife my brother

Nomvula: ooh shut up Chimezie you two timing He-goat nx

she said looking at him with a disgusting look on her face

Uncle.Chimezie: WHAT DID YOU CALL ME WOMAN?

Nomvula: YOU HEARD ME....YOU ARE A HE-GOAT..... JUST BECAUSE I REFUSED TO LET YOU GET BETWEEN MY LEGS NOW YOU'RE PRETENDING TO LIKE THIS ALBINO CURSED THING WE BOTH KNOW YOU WANTED HEATH TO MARRY YOUR FRIEND'S DAUGHTER NX STUPID BACKSTABBER

Uncle.Chioke: what?

Mr masden shook his head looking down and Heath got up with Lesedi and he helped Naledi up too

Nomvula: SIT DOWN AND EAT YOUR FOOD HEATH

they walked out ignoring her and Ray got up too and he looked at his father

Ray: you should have divorced her when she cheated on you dad now look how her wickedness has also affected your granddaughter

Nomvula: CANT YOU ALL SEE THAT SHE WAS SENT HERE TO TORMENT ME.....CANT YOU SEE THAT

Ray: TORMENT YOU FOR WHAT NOMVULA WHAT DID YOU DO TO BE TORMENTED BY HER....WHAT DID YOU DO?

Nomvula: she was sent here to torment me ok and I'd rather die than to accept her as my daughter in law....my son deserves better....i won't let her come here and ruin my family..... she was sent here to torment me and I'll be damned if I let her win!

she then got up and took Naledi's plate and she walked away and Ray wondered why she took Naledi's plate then he also walked out thinking hard

Uncle.Chioke: like I said what happens in the dark will always come to light

then he turned to look at his brother Chimezie

Uncle.Chioke: im disappointed at you Chimezie from now on I don't want you anywhere near my wife you hear me or I'll kill you with my own bare hands

Uncle.Chimezie: she's lying against me my brothers

Uncle.Chibuzor: ooh keep quiet we all know you like other peoples wives so go tell that nonsense to the birds

Mr.Masden: Chibuzor and Chioke before the end of next week I want Patience (the second wife) in my house as my wife

Uncle.Chioke: what about your first wife

Mr.Masden: like you said what happens in the dark always comes to light so let her demons eat her up.... and you Chimezie I don't ever want to see you in my house ever again I hope im making myself clear

then he got up and walked out

Uncle.Chibuzor: she was right you are a He-goat and I always warned you that your lust for other people's wives will be your downfall

Uncle.Chimezie: mxm get away..... Chukwuemeka is not God so he can go to hell for all I care....nonsense!

he said getting up and also walking out and the remaining uncles shook their heads defeated

INSERT.....46

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Jabu: what did he say?

he asked Amo after she dropped the call she received from her elder brother

Amo: he wanted to know where I am and that we should meet at home

Jabu: that wont happen so call him back and give him my home address

she looked at him with her eyes popped out

Amo: Jabu I cant have him come here

Jabu: why not?....are you ashamed of me now Amo

he asked her with a serious tone and she swallowed hard

Amo: of course not

Jabu: then call him and give him my home address cause there's no way in hell you going back to your father's house after he slapped you and called you a whore....what if they want to kidnap you and forcefully marry you off to some piece of shit or you change your mind after they put pressure on you

Amo: I wont Jabu I promise

Jabu: im not taking any chances now call him

she sighed and called him back and she gave him an address and he said he's on his way

.
. .
. .

the was a knock on the door and Jabu stood up from the couch and he went to another room giving them space and Amo breathed out loud and she went to open the door and her elder brother was standing there

Amo: abuti (brother)

Modise: Amo

she made way for him and he got in while checking out the inside deco of the house

Modise: go take your things and lets go

she didn't move she just looked down

Modise: AMOGELANG I SAID GO TAKE YOUR THINGS AND LETS GO HOME!

he said with a stern voice and she swallowed hard

Amo: papa disowned me abuti

he looked at her with an intense look and he clicked his tongue

Modise: now tell me which of your friends lives in this expensive double story house Amogelang?

she didn't say anything

Modise: OOH I SEE...YOU BROUGHT ME TO THE HOUSE THAT IS OWNED BY THAT BASTARD THAT DEFLOWERED YOU ISNT IT?

she bit her lower lip looking down

Modise: ANSWER ME!

***he shouted ***

Amo: I love him abuti

Modise: LOVE HIM?...LOVE HIM? THAT BASTARD MADE YOU SIN AGAINST GOD AND YOU TELL ME YOU LOVE HIM

Amo: abuti ga o tlhaloganye (brother you don't understand)

Modise: DON'T TELL ME NONSENSE AMOGELANG WANKUTLWA (you hear me)...look papa called MAX and he told him about you losing your virginity cause some boy forced himself on you and he said it doesn't matter he still wants to marry you and that we don't have to tell his parents so you can come back home

Jabu: wanyela(you are talking shit) you rubbish nx

he said walking in the lounge

Jabu: wanyela san wankutlwa o bolela nyoso jou gaat (you are talking shit you ass)

Modise: askies?

Jabu: VOETSEK...O TLA MO O IMELA KE MARETE O TLO BOLELA MASEPA (you come here and talk shit)

he said with an angry voice

Amo: Ja...Jabu

Jabu: keep quiet Amo and let me deal with this bastard!

she kept quiet

Modise: I don't have time for you demon....Amogelang go take you things and lets go

Jabu: she's not going anywhere!

Modise: AMOGELANG!

Jabu: HEY WENA YOU BABOON DIDN'T I SAY SHE'S NOT GOING ANYWHERE

Modise: STAY OUT OF THIS YOU DEMON AMOGELANG IS MY SISTER AND SHE'S COMING HOME WITH ME

he said grabbing Amo's arm roughly

Jabu: ke tla o kgaola marete san....o tla nnyela wankutlwa....ke tla o bontsha masepa san (I'll cut your balls boy....you will shit yourself you hear me.....i'll show you shit boy)....now voetsek and get your fucken hand off her

Modise: LETS GO AMO

***he said pulling her and Jabu grabbed him by his collar**

Jabu: o nyako bonang wena heh?.....o nyako bonang jou moeskond?....(what do you want to see? what do you want to see you bastard) now voetsek get out of my house

Modise: SO YOU ARE CHOOSING THIS DEMON OVER YOUR FAMILY AMOGELANG?

Jabu: O RE MANG KE DEMON SAN?...O RE MANG KE DEMON?...KE TLAO MURA WANKUTLWA MSUNU (who are you calling a demon boy?...who are you calling a demon?.....i'll panel beat you you hear me)

he said pushing him to the closed door and he pinned him on it and he pulled a gun from his back and he pointed it on his face and Modise started shaking

Amo: Ja...Jabu please stop

and he ignored her

Jabu: o batlo nnyela san? (you want to shit yourself)

Modise: please man im sorry please don't hurt me

Jabu: voetsek....how dare you grab her like that in my presence....didn't your father disown her and called her a whore now why are you here and on top of that you fucken call me a fucken demon in my fucken house ontellisa keng ramarete

he said with the scariest look on his face which made Modise realize that he's in deep shit

Modise: look...look man im sorry ok please let me go

Jabu: now listen here and listen good Amo is mine now go back and tell your father that if he doesn't want his congregation to know about his past he will welcome her back and accept that she loves me and she wants to be with me jy verstaan?

Modise swallowed hard

Jabu: I SAID JY VERSTAAN?

he shouted and Modise nodded and Jabu let him go and Modise didn't even wait for him to say anything else he just opened the door and ran out and Jabu turned to Amo who looked scared and he put the gun away and went closer to her

Jabu: im sorry you had to see that.... I wasn't gonna hurt him I just wanted to send a clear message that he shouldn't mess with you or he'll regret it ok

he said with a soft tone and she nodded then he pulled her into a hug

Jabu: I love you and believe me when I say your father will welcome you back and even accept my lobola ok

she nodded holding on to him tight

Jabu: don't worry daddy J got you ok

she nodded with her face buried on his chest..... she would give anything to go back home and have her father forgive her but she knew it comes with a price and she also knew that all hell will freeze before Jabu let her marry someone else so she was caught between a rock and a hard place

.
. .
.

Nomvula: stop...stop....please stop

it was late at night and she was busy saying that crying in her sleep....her and her husband didn't share a bed anymore they were sleeping in separate bedrooms..... in her dream her hands were full of fresh blood and a chopped up body of a new born baby girl was laying on top of a table she woke up screaming and when she realized that it was just a dream she breathed out loud and she wiped her sweaty face and she got out of bed and she went to bathroom she did her business and after flushing the toilet she went to the basin and she washed her hands then she washed her face and when she lifted up her head to look at herself on the mirror she saw the mirror dripping with blood and she screamed and she ran out of the bathroom and she also ran out of her bedroom and she went and knocked on the bedroom door her husband was using repeatedly until her husband opened the door irritated and she threw herself at him and she cried with her body shaking

Michael: what is it Rain?

Nomvula: im...im scared Michael please can I sleep here with you please

he pushed her off him

Michael: what are you scared off?

she wiped her tears off and shifted uncomfortable

Nomvula: its...its nothing serious

Michael: if its nothing serious then why are you crying.....what did you do so bad that is tormenting you like this Rain

Nomvula: really Michael....im here scared and all you care about is interrogating me like im some sort of criminal

she said with some attitude and Mr Masden sighed and he shook his head

Michael: I see you don't wanna come clean so please leave I want to sleep

she looked at him with an angry look on her face

Nomvula: you...you promised to always protect me Michael when we were dating and now you are failing to do so

Michael: and you promised to be a good wife to me and to always be faithful to me and to put me and our kids above anything when we got married but you failed dismally so don't give me that shit

Nomvula: that girl is evil Michael and im trying to save my son ok im trying to save our family...why can't you all see that

Michael: what makes you think she's evil mmmmh...what have she done to show you that she's evil

he asked with a serious voice

Nomvula: she turned my son against me ok.....she made Heath to point a gun at me....me his mother

Mr Masden chuckled

Michael: and let me guess you did nothing to make Heath point a gun at you right?

Nomvula: she's evil Michael you have to believe me

Michael: please leave my room I want to sleep

he said opening the door wider for her to leave and she looked at her husband with teary eyes and that broke Mr Masden's heart but he didn't show her cause she has gotten away with a lot of things just because he loves her dearly

Michael: leave Nomvula I want to sleep

she swallowed hard and she walked out and Mr Masden closed the door after her and he held on to it looking down cause he missed his wife.... the wife she married many years ago and not this shell of a woman who has turned into something he's no familiar with

.
. .

*** she went downstairs to the kitchen and she drank some water and she sat on one of the bar stools with her head resting on top of the counter then she heard a cry of a new born baby that

sounded familiar and she quickly raised her head and listened carefully and she could hear the cry was closer to the staircase and she went to the other side of the counter and she opened a drawer and took out a butcher knife and she slowly walked towards the staircase holding the knife ready to attack... she got there and now the cry was up the stairs and she slowly climbed them and when she got to the last staircase the cry was now further down the passage of the bedrooms.....she slowly walked towards the passage and she stopped in front of Heath and Naledi's bedroom and she could hear that cry of a baby inside and she slowly turned the door handle and she got in and she saw the naked pale body of a new born baby lying next to Heath crying out loud and she quickly covered her ears***

Nomvula: STOP....STOP.....NOOO STOP

she said out loud and Heath opened his eyes and he turned and switched on the side lamp and he saw his mother covering her ears with tears running down her cheeks with a knife on her right hand

Heath: mo...mom what...what are you doing here?

he said sitting up and naledi stirred and she opened her eyes slowly

Naledi: Heath

she said with a sleepy voice and within a blink of an eye Nomvula was next to the bed with the knife held high with both hands ready to attack

Nomvula: GO BACK TO HELL YOU EVIL DEMON!

she said out loud and Naledi opened her eyes fully and when she saw Heath's mother holding the knife she screamed and Heath quickly covered Naledi with his body and he raised his arm to block the knife that was coming at her with force and the knife went through his arm deep with Naledi screaming her lungs out

Heath: FUCK!

he said when pain travelled from his stabbed arm to the rest of his body and that's when Nomvula came back to her senses and she screamed when she saw the knife deep inside Heath's flesh on his arm and she quickly ran out of the room..... Heath got out of the bed with the knife still stuck on his arm and he ran out of the bedroom going after her ignoring Naledi's screams as she called out to him when she saw the knife and also ignoring the pain he was feeling

Naledi: OOH MY GOD HEATH..... HEATH.... SOMEONE HELP...HELP....RAY....

she said screaming and trying to get out of bed as quickly as she could but it was a hard task to do.....just then Ray budged in their room with a gun on his hand

Ray: what going on why....

she interrupted him

Naledi: she stabbed him and he went after him please go help him Ray please

***she said with a hysterical tone and Ray put two and two together when he saw a trail of blood leaving the bedroom and he quickly got out following it and Mr. Masden was heard shouting what is going on outside their bedroom he couldn't get in the bedroom out of respect ***

Naledi: DAD COME IN!

she said crying and Mr Masden walked in....she was wearing short pyjama pants which exposed her thighs and one of Heath's shirts and you know what.....she didn't care

Mr.Masden: why is there blood on the floor...whats going on?

Naledi: she stabbed him and.... and he's bleeding he couldn't get in the bedroom out of respect ***

Naledi: DAD COME IN!

she said crying and Mr Masden walked in....she was wearing short pyjama pants which exposed her thighs and one of Heath's shirts and you know what.....she didn't care

Mr.Masden: why is there blood on the floor...whats going on?

Naledi: she stabbed him and.... and he's bleeding he went after her and.....please find him and help him dad please he's bleeding

she begged him crying and Mr.Masden rushed out of the bedroom and he went to wake Mj and told him to go be with Naledi and the kids and he followed the blood trail*

.
. .

Ray: EZEH LET HER GO BEFORE YOU KILL HER

he begged Heath as he pinned his mother on the cold tiles with his knee on her neck with his right hand that wasn't injured holding her by her long dreadlocks tight while Nomvula was busy chocking

Heath: THIS WITCH TRIED TO KILL MY WIFE RAY.....SHE WANTED TO STAB HER...SHE WANTED TO KILL HER

he said with an emotional and angry voice

Ray: let her go man....look at your arm you are bleeding and you gonna bleed to death and then what about Naledi and your kids..... please bros let her go man she will be dealt with her accordingly.....think of Naledi man she's freaking out upstairs and im sure her BP is already high

***he pleaded with him and Heath let go of her dreadlocks and he got off her and he sat down on the floor as blood dropped on the floor from his arm and Nomvula coughed hysterically..... Mr

Masden got down the stairs and what he saw made his stomach turn he rushed to Heath with his heart beating out of his chest as Ray went to get his medical aid bag and a rope***

Mr.Masden: what happened to you Ezeh...ooh God Rain what happened?

Heath: THIS WITCH WALKED INSIDE OUR BEDROOM AND TRIED TO STAB NALEDI BUT I BLOCKED THE KNIFE WITH MY ARM

his father looked between Heath and Nomvula shocked

Mr.Masden: No...Nomvula?

she didn't say anything she just cried holding her neck and Mr.masden sat on the floor defeated

Mr.Masden: ooh God come down now

he said facing down then Ray came back and he put the bag down and he roughly grabbed Nomvula and he pulled her up dragging her to the dining room and he tied her to a chair with Nomvula crying busy saying "she's sorry" and he went to the kitchen and he came with warm water in a bowl and he went to Heath and kneeled next to him and he did what he's good at..... after he was done he bandaged his arm and he gave him a brown bottle with a black liquid inside

Ray: drink this

Heath: what is it?

Ray: you lost a lot of blood so it will help you.... don't ask me what it does just drink and ooh its bitter as hell

Heath gave him a 'wtf' look

Ray: stop being a sissy and drink up man

Heath took a deep breath and he gulped it down and made a face and Mr. Masden patted his back

Mr.Masden: there you go

Ray: mxm daddy's boy

Heath: WHAT THE HELL DID YOU MAKE ME DRINK RAY?

he shouted with a frown on his face

Ray: ask no questions and I'll tell no lies bros

they were disturbed by Naledi walking down the stairs slowly while calling out to Heath with Mj behind her and Ray helped Heath up and he went to her

Naledi: are you ok....ohh my God you're hurt

she said with tears all over her face and Heath pulled her closer with his uninjured arm and he kissed the top of her head

Heath: shhh im ok Ray fixed me now you need to calm down for my babies Obi m

Mj: I tried to stop her bros

Heath: its ok Mj...are my girls ok?

Mj: yeah they are still sleeping

Heath: ok.....Obi m lets go back upstairs

he helped her up the stairs while Mj went downstairs and they went to another guest room

Heath: are you ok?

Naledi: I should be asking you

Heath: im a man Obi m so I'll be fine...this is nothing I've been through worse

Naledi: why did she....

he interrupted her by perking her lips

Heath: we will talk about it tomorrow for now I want you to rest....im sure even your BP is high so let me tuck you in and tomorrow you can ask me any question you want ok

she nodded....she was happy and relieved that he's ok so she didn't want to push....they got inside the covers and she rested her head on his chest

Naledi: thank you for saving me

he kissed the top of her head

Heath: im glad I acted quickly Obi m....i don't even wanna imagine what would have happened to you if I didn'ti love you

Naledi: I love you too

Heath: now rest my love

she just closed her eyes and listened to his heartbeat until she fell asleep.... and he only got out of bed when he heard her snoring softly.....he went to check on the kids and they were still sleeping and he went downstairs and he found his brothers and father sitting in the lounge silent while Nomvula was busy screaming and crying busy saying she's sorry she didn't mean to stab Heath

Heath: you staying for this Mj?

he nodded with his jaws clenched and Heath nodded

Heath: lets get this over and done with Big Ray Naledi needs me

Ray got up and his father and Mj also got up and they went to the screaming Nomvula

Nomvula: Heath my son thanks to God you are ok...im sorry baby im really sorry I didn't mean to stab you

Heath: BUT YOU MEANT TO STAB MY WIFE ISNT IT?

she didn't say anything

Heath: TALK DAMN IT.....YOU WANTED TO STAB NALEDI RIGHT!

he shouted and she just continued to cry

Mr.Masden: what's going on with you Nomvula....why are you doing all this and why are you behaving like this mmmh.....you have turned into something I don't recognize

he said with a voice filled with pain

Nomvula: im sorry Michael I didn't mean to stab him

Mr.Masden: THEN WHY DID YOU WANT TO STAB NALEDI?

he shouted

Nomvula: i...I heard a baby crying and I followed the sound to their bedroom and I saw it sleeping next to Heath....i just wanted the cry to stop...it was loud and.... and its as if it was near my ear

Heath: THAT'S BULLSHIT AND YOU KNOW IT NOW TELL THE TRUTH OR I'LL FORGET THAT YOU ARE MY MOTHER AND I'LL PUT A BULLET IN YOUR FUCKEN SKULL

he roared getting closer to Nomvula and Ray stopped him..... as for Mj he was just quiet looking at his mother with an angry look on his face

Ray: what did you do Nomvula.....why are you the only one who's hearing a baby's cry

she shook her head no repeatedly with tears gushing out as the cry of that wailing baby was loud in her head

Nomvula: make it stop please....please make it stop....i...I cant take it

Mr.Masden: confess or it will never stop Nomvula...confess that's the only way it will stop

she just kept crying while shaking her head with her eyes closed shut

Ray: CONFESS NOMVULA!

he shouted

Nomvula: im sorry but I had to do it....i had to do it

Mr.Masden: what did you do?

*** she looked at Ray with a wet face mixed with tears and mucus ***

Nomvula: im sorry my son I didn't mean to do it but I had to...i....i didn't want a cursed baby and....and I had to kill it....i couldn't raise that thing so the only way was to kill it....i didn't want people to know I gave birth to it that it came from my womb.....i didn't want it to come look for me years later when it was grown if I chose to give it up so I had to kill it

***Ray looked at her with a serious look on his face cause he couldn't understand why she was saying all this directing it to him

Heath: what are you talking about?

Nomvula: PLEASE MAKE IT STOP PLEASE....I CANT TAKE IT ANYMORE

Mr.Masden: confess and it will stop Nomvula!

she cried

Ray: TALK!

Nomvula: i...i...ooh God....i killed your albino twin sister Raymond

the room went silent with them looking at her with their eyes popped out

Ray: what...what did you say?

he said with a low tone

Nomvula: im sorry....i....

Ray: I SAID WHAT DID YOU SAY?

he said raising his voice looking at her with an angry facial expression

Nomvula: I couldn't keep her she was cursed and I couldn't allow people to see what came out of my womb

Raymond started pacing around the room with his hands shaking

Mr.Masden: start talking!

he said with a hard tone

Nomvula: after....after giving birth at a clinic I left to go home without telling my sister that I gave birth to twins and I went passed the bushes where I killed her and buried her

Mj: ooh God...

he said with his hands on top of his head while Ray Heath and their father closed their eyes when she said that

Nomvula: I worked in a hotel as a cleaner and that's when I got pregnant so when I found out I was pregnant I left my flat and went to live with my sister in Alexandra township to save money since the babies' father went back to his home country back to his wife and kids....i knew I was carrying twins so I needed to save every penny so when I went into labor our neighbor rushed me to the clinic since it was nearer cause my sister was at work.... he then left and hours later I gave birth to twins a boy and a girl the girl had albinism while the boy was ok so after they told me I can go home I didn't call my neighbor to come and pick me up since my sister said she will knock off later cause it was a busy day at the shop she worked at and that her boss refused to allow her to leave early.....i understood cause we needed the money so when I left the clinic i went passed some bush and I chopped the girl into pieces with a scissor I stole at the clinic and put her inside a plastic bag and buried her in a shallow grave I dug up using that scissor and my hands and I told my sister later on that I gave the baby up for adoption since I couldn't maintain both babies

Ray: no...no no...no

Heath: ooh God...this cant....no...

Mr.Masden: God have mercy on your evil soul

as for Mj tears were running down his cheeks while he looked at his mother with a trembling lower lip

Nomvula: she was a curse....not human enough and I couldn't mother that thing what would people say or think of me...I just couldn't...I did what was right so I know that thing upstairs was sent to torment me and to remind me of what I did....you can't stay with her Heath she's cursed!

she said with a raised voice

Ray: SHUT UP YOU EVIL WICKED WITCH!

he said shouting then a gun went off

47

INSERT.....47

.

.

.

NARRATED

Ray finished taking out the bullet on her shoulder and he even stopped the bleeding he wanted her dead but he couldn't kill her cause besides the fact that she gave birth to him Mj was also there and he didn't want to traumatize him like that and again he wanted her to show him where he buried his twin sister so he can give her a proper burial or have her cremated. Now the hate he has for her is worse than before and he wished he could just slit her throat and watch her bleed to death but he couldn't they then took her upstairs to one of the spare bedrooms and he sedated her and now they were sitting in the lounge after cleaning her blood and Heath's blood on the floor

Heath: I can't believe she actually did that she killed her own child my sister like that

Mr.Masden: God have mercy on her wicked soul

Ray got up and walked away with his jaws clenched and as for Mj he was quiet looking down with his eyes blood shot red he kept on asking himself what compelled his mother to do what she did. He knew Nomvula was hard to live with and she was one judgmental and materialistic person he knows but he never even for one second imagined her for a murderer right then Ray walked in

Ray: we are going back tomorrow she needs to show me where she buried her

then he walked away again

Mr.Masden: do you think he'll pull through from this?

Heath sighed

Heath: I don't know dad but I highly doubt it but the fact that he didn't kill her shows there's still a bit of his good side in him but then he could be keeping her alive so she shows him where she buried her

Mr.Masden: let's hope he doesn't do anything he'll regret later in life cause I know him sometimes he acts irrational

Heath: let's hope so

then he stood up

Heath: let me go check on Naledi and the girls

his father nodded and he walked away balancing his injured arm with his other hand

Mr.Masden: Mj come here

he said looking at him and Mj sighed and got up and went to sit next to his father and his father just wrapped his arm around him and pulled him closer to his chest and a sob escaped Mj's mouth as he held on to his father then a loud one came out and his father just held him tighter as he cried his lungs out

Mr.Masden: let it all out son...let it all out

and Mj just cried until he was left with only hiccups

Mr.masden: I want you to do something for me

he sniffed and wiped his tears off and he nodded

Mr.masden: don't bottle your feeling in if you want to shout do it even if you want to go see a professional tell me and I'll organize it for you but one thing I won't allow is you to alienate yourself from us and pushing us away.....you wanted me to treat you like a man right? so this is what men deal with if not worse and we take the bull by its horns and find a way to deal with things but when it gets too much we find someone we trust that we can confide in ok

Mj nodded

Mr.Masden: good now let's go sleep tomorrow we are leaving for South Africa and we will be back by Tuesday meaning Monday you'll miss school cause I can't leave you here alone after what just happened

Mj: ok

Mr.masden: I love you son

Mj: I love you too dad

they got up and walked upstairs

.
. .
.

The following day they were sited inside a jet ready for takeoff and Nomvula was sedated and laid in the bedroom that is inside the jet Mr Masden was sitting alone reading a newspaper to stop himself from thinking too much and Lesedi was sleeping on Mj's chest while Omphile was resting her head on Naledi's shoulder and as for Heath and Ray were sitting together silently with both of them lost in their own thoughts until Heath spoke

Heath: you good?

he asked his elder brother

Ray: I'll be fine....how's Star?

Heath: still freaked out but she'll be ok

he nodded and stared into space with his jaws clenched and Heath let him be and they stayed in comfortable silence.....Soon they took off and after what felt like forever they finally landed and the guards came to pick Nomvula up from the private jet to the car since she was still out of it and the rest followed going to the cars they found waiting for them and Rays phone rang it was Mbali and he sighed and he answered it

Ray: Mbali

she kept quiet a bit cause she's used to him calling her 'my flower'

Mbali: ummm hey are you ok?

Ray: yeah look im busy right now I'll call you later

Mbali: ooh ok

she said disappointed and he dropped the call and Heath gave him a disapproving look

Ray: don't!

he warned him

Heath: that was cold big Ray remember she's carrying your child

Ray: I said don't Heath!

Heath knew he shouldn't push him cause he just called him Heath while he always call him Ezech so he just shook his head and they went to the cars and they drove out.....after some time they arrived at Ray's house and they found Jabu and Mateo waiting for them since Ray called them before they left for the airport back in Nigeria.... Anyway the guards helped Nomvula inside the house even though she was awake now and Naledi and the girls also got out of one of the cars and went inside. She hugged Jabu and Mat and she sat down in the lounge the way things were so tense she didn't even have it her to admire the beauty of the house...Heath and Omphile went to her while he carried Lesedi he took her from Omphile

Heath: baby take your sister and go make something for you two to eat the kitchen is that way

he pointed towards the direction of the kitchen

Omphile: ok

then she turned to Naledi

Omphile: mama should I make you something to eat as well

Naledi smiled at her and she shook her head no

Omphile: ok.... lets go Light (Lesedi)

she said taking Lesedi from her father and Heath chuckled when she called Lesedi 'light'

Naledi: keep an eye on her ok my love you know how naughty she is

Omphile nodded and they walked away with Lesedi talking to her big sister and Heath turned to look at Naledi and he turned her face to face him and he perked her lips

Heath: you ok Obi m?

she shook her head no while she was brushing her baby bump

Heath: what's wrong?

he asked with a worried tone

Naledi: I have slight cramps on my lower abdomen it's not that bad but it's there and I haven't felt the babies move since we left Nigeria

Heath looked at her with a panicking look and he quickly got up and he went to where Jabu and Mat where while Ray went to the gym to blow off some steam and as for Mr Masden he was with his wife in one of the bedrooms upstairs he was just sitting on a chair next to the bed watching her sleep while he asked himself questions in his head

Heath: Jabu please look after the girls im rushing Naledi to the doctor she has cramps on her belly

Jabu and Mat got up and they followed Heath as he was rushing back to Naledi

Jabu: are they too painful Naledi?

she shook her head no and Heath helped her up

Mat: keep us updated

Heath nodded and they walked out and Jabu went to the kitchen and he kissed both Lesedi and Omphile's foreheads

Jabu: you need help?

he asked Omphile and she shook her head no smiling at him

Omphile: re shap ankere Light? (nope we good right Light?)

***and Lesedi nodded

she was eating a sliced palony***

Jabu: Light?

he asked and she nodded giggling

Omphile: grandpa and i call her now

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: ok then Miss Omphile and Miss Light call me if you need anything ok

Omphile: ok

he kissed their foreheads again and he walked out of the kitchen going back to look for Mj he found him in one of the bedrooms upstairs and Mj quickly wiped off his tears and Jabu sat at the edge of the bed next to him

Jabu: big Ray told me what happened

*** Mj didn't say anything he just sniffed and continued to wipe his tears off***

Jabu: I can't believe she did what she did but I don't want you to dwell too much on it Mj let her demons deal with her and wena just concentrate on you books so you can pass well and finish with your high school so you can come join me this side for good

Mj: she used a scissor to cut her to pieces bros who does that to an infant baby

Jabu sighed

Jabu: well there are lots of woman who kill their babies Mj some throw them into pit toilets while others throw them into rivers to drown or they just throw them into rubbish bins and they get eaten by dogs forgetting that there are other women out there who would give anything including selling their own souls to the devil just so they can have their own kids

Mj just shook his head while looking down

Mj: why did my own mother have to be one of the evil and cold hearted women who kill their own kids in cold blood bros?

he asked with his voice breaking and Jabu squeezed his shoulder

Jabu: the truth is Nomvula has always been fucked up but I just never knew she was this fucked up

then they kept quiet for some time

Jabu: this world is full of evil people Mj and as a man you have to hold the bull by its horns and deal with things and not lock yourself up..... if you feel like everything is too much for you then go talk to a professional

Mj: I can never talk to a stranger about my family problems bros

Jabu: well first of all that stranger can help you deal with shit and secondly she can never judge you no matter what and thirdly he/she can never tell anyone about what ya'll talked about you can vent all you want and he/she will sit there and listen to you until you are done

Mj: but still bros aren't shrinks for people with mental problems

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: first of all I hope you are joking Mj cause I can never partner with a dunderhead on our business venture and secondly if you aren't joking then ntwana Google matseba tsotlhe e teng (Google Mr. know it all is there) so do some research about shrinks

Mj chuckled

Mj: really bros dunderhead?

Jabu laughed

Jabu: yeah man come on o le 2000 so you supposed to know about these kinda shit unlike us ma80s apartheid fucked us up so bad that our brains are still cooped up on those ancient times man come on

Mj laughed out loud and Jabu joined him

Mj: you're not that old man... come on

Jabu: im twice your age so im that old.... I mean when Mandela was released from prison I was busy playing mantlwantlwane with my friends at our backyard while you were not even conceived yet man

Mj laughed

Mj: what's mant...whatever that is

Jabu: Mantlwantlwane is what ma2000 call playing-house and it's done by kids but im kidding I was too old to be playing mantlwantlwane I was probably playing soccer by that time

Mj chuckled

Mj: ok

Jabu: so no sulking and bottling things inside that's how Ray is and not you.... remember wena o SJB (se ja bantwana) so being all quiet and reserved is not in your DNA ntwana so deal with all this shit cause I can't handle a quiet and reserved Mj ok

*** SJB is a player/ fuckboy***

Mj: sho

Jabu: good lets go look after the princesses Heath rushed Star to the doctor

Mj: what? is she ok

Jabu: she said she has cramps lets hope is nothing serious

Mj sighed

Mj: all this shit is mother's fault

then he clicked his tongue and Jabu sighed

Jabu: all this will pass ntwana for now just take it one day at a time ok

Mj nodded and Jabu got up

Jabu: a re vaye (lets go)

Mj also got up and they walked out of the bedroom

.
. .
.

***** MBALI*****

now im sitting outside in the porch eating a fruit salad and my mind is all over the place I can't seem to make sense of Ray's coldness towards me over the phone he sounded like he didn't wanna talk to me and its stressing me out...i have been battling with myself on whether to call him again so I can ask him what's wrong or what did I do wrong but he said he'll call me back later so let me wait for his call like a good girlfriend that I am.... Anyway besides the Ray thing my visit here has been a peaceful one but im sad that my dad is not here but Ray said I should give him some time to digest everything that happened so that's what im gonna do until he's ready to talk to me well the truth is it hurts pretty bad that he's angry at me cause im a daddy's girl but im the one who hurt and disappointed him so I guess I have to suck it up (sigh!)....my phone rang on top of the table and it was Derrick so I answered

Me: hello

Derrick: princess hey...you good?

Me: yeah you?

Derrick: I'll be perfectly fine if I could just see your beautiful face

well I blushed a bit

Me: mmmh

Derrick: so can I come pick you up so we can go out for lunch

Me: Derrick i...

he interrupted me

Derrick: please don't say no

I sighed

Me: I was about to say no because im not in Gauteng...im actually in KZN now to visit my grandparents

Derrick: ooh ok ummm when are you coming back then?

Me: tomorrow

Derrick: ok so can we do like a late lunch or dinner then tomorrow?

I sighed again

Me: ummm Derrick im....im pregnant for him

he knows who im talking about... then he keeps quiet

Me: De...Derrick?

he then cleared his throat

Derrick: so tomorrow which one is it gonna be late lunch or dinner

Me: did you hear what I just said?

Derrick: yeah I did so tomorrow right?

I sighed deeply

Me: I can't ok I don't think its appropriate for me to go out to lunches and dinner with another man and I know he will be pissed when he founds out

Derrick: but we are just friends going out Princess

Me: I don't want problems in my relationship with Ray ok and I believe going out with you will cause those problems and im pregnant I can't be stressing about things I could've avoided so please understand

he sighed

Derrick: I hope he knows how lucky he is

Me: I believe he does

then he kept quiet for some time

Derrick: but until he puts a ring on it I won't give up on you Princess.... I feel like you were made for me and I know that I can make you happy and love that child you carrying as if it were mine

Me: Derrick please don't....

he interrupted me

Derrick: I have fallen for you Princess and there's nothing I can do to wipe off these feelings im having cause believe me I tried but every time I see you or think about you they get stronger so he better make sure he doesn't mess up cause if he does i will be there to pick up the pieces of your broken heart and glue them together myself then wife you instantly.....enjoy your day Beautiful

then he cut the call leaving me astonished

Me: wow ok....

That's all I managed to say to myself..... well I waited and waited for Ray's phone call until I decided to call him instead and guess what it send me straight to voicemail.....now its bed time and I have been trying to call him and his numbers still sends me straight to voicemail and my hormones gets the better of me and I cry myself to sleep

.
. .
.

*** I opened my eyes and I quickly grabbed my phone from under my pillow and I checked for a message or even a missed call from him and dololo nothing zilch and tears just fill my eyes and I just let them fall and once again I cry myself back to sleep..... I opened my eyes when I felt someone shaking me and it was Ma***

Ma: wake up and get ready for church

gosh I don't feel like going to church today

Me: Ma im not feeling well can I skip church today please

Ma: do you even go to church when you are back at your apartment Mbali?

I sighed

Me: ok... I'll go get ready

Ma: that's my baby... now make it quick breakfast is ready

she said smiling and she walked out and I reached for my phone and there was still no sms or even a missed call from Ray..... After I was done with my hygiene process I got dressed and I went downstairs for breakfast and I found my dad sitting on the dining room table with Ma and Baba and I swallowed hard

Me: morning

Ma: morning baby

I then kissed her cheek

Baba: aow Mbali yam entle (my beautiful flower)

I smiled and kissed his cheek

Me: dad

Dad: Mbali

he said it with a cold tone not even looking at me and I felt my tears filling my eyes and I swallowed hard and sat on the other side of the table

.
. .
.
****NARRATED****

heath and Naledi were now back from the doctor and the baby was fine the cramps were made by her blood pressure being high and the twins weren't moving cause mommy's BP was high. She was upstairs resting and Heath Jabu and Mat were sitting in the lounge drinking while Omphile Mj and Lesedi were also resting upstairs since they were jet legged

Jabu: so will there be a funeral or...

Mat: he said he's gonna cremate her remains and he doesn't want anyone present he wants to do it alone

Heath sighed

Heath: he must remember that she was our sister too

Mat: let him do this Heath believe me when I say you don't wanna argue with him on times like this

Jabu: what do you mean?

Mat sighed and he gulped down all his whiskey that was inside his glass

Mat: lets just say even Lucifer himself knows when not to fuck with him when he's like this cause he might make hell too hot for him to handle

they looked at Mat with their eyes popped out

Mat: stay out of his way bros please....just let him handle all this his way and also at his own pace

Jabu: but we are supposed to deal with this together as a family Mat

Mat: look I've been with Jefe for years and I've experience bone chilling things with him that I can't say with my own mouth and I've seen him do shit that might make you wanna go join a church and confess all your sins so im begging ya'll to keep out of his way until he's back to his right senses

Jabu and Heath looked at each other and back at Mat

Heath: who is Ray Mat?

Mat: he's someone that has a reserved sit next to Lucifer for when he's ready to retire and go join him and also help him rule hell

they gasped and Mat got up and he went to pour himself another drink

48

INSERT.....48

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

its Monday and everyone woke up to someone screaming on the hall way and Heath his father and Mj found Ray dragging Nomvula with his hand grip tight on her dreadlocks

Mr.Masden: Akunna what are you doing?

Ray: she's going to show me where she buried her

he said with an angry voice

Heath: big Ray this is not the way to go about it and plus she's still in pain

Ray: PAIN? REALLY HEATH PAIN..... WHAT THE FUCK ABOUT MY TWIN SISTER HUH? WHAT ABOUT HER..... THIS OLD WITCH CUT HER UP WITH A FUCKEN SCISSOR A FUCKEN SCISSOR.... EVEN ME AS HEARTLESS AS I AM I'VE NEVER HURT OR KILLED A CHILD AND THIS BITCH KILLED HER OWN FUCKEN BLOOD BY CUTTING HER WITH A SCISSOR SO DON'T TELL ME ABOUT PAIN YOUR SISTER FELT WORSE PAIN THAN WHAT SHE'S FEELING RIGHT NOW UNTIL SHE TOOK HER LAST BREATH ALL BECAUSE SHE WAS AN ALBINO !

he roared and everyone kept quiet and Ray continued to drag her towards the stairs

Ray: MATEO WHAT'S KEEPING YOU LETS FUCKEN GO!

he went down the stairs with Nomvula screaming and crying

Mr.Masden: go after him Ezeh and call Jabu to meet you there and son make sure he doesn't kill her cause believe me he'll regret it one day

Heath nodded and he quickly went inside his bedroom to get dressed....Naledi heard Ray's rant and when the door opened she pretended to be asleep....He finished getting dressed and he kissed Naledi's cheek and he whispered 'I love you' in her ear and he walked out dialing Jabu's number.... as for Naledi she released a low sob as Ray's words echoed in her head realizing that Heath's mother wanted to kill her like she killed her own baby that had albinism she knew that if it wasn't for Heath she would probably be dead by now

Naledi: God why....what did my fellow brothers and sisters living with albinism do to deserve this....why do people with albinism have to go through all this as if we the ones that killed your son....when will we catch our break and be allowed to live freely without fear of being abducted and killed for superstitions and mythical nonsense or being killed because we look different....doesn't the bible say we are all created by your own image? if so then why do other people think we are not human enough or not humans at all

she said all that crying painful cry

.
. .
.

They got to where Nomvula said he buried her and it was a dumping site now so they waited for Jabu and when he arrived he made some calls and soon an excavator crane came and it cleared the area then left and Mat started to dig using a shovel where Nomvula showed them and he didn't find anything and when Ray pointed a gun at her head she showed him another spot and Mat dug out some soil only three times and a black plastic showed a bit then Ray used his hands to get the soil off it and he pulled it out gently and he opened it and her little bone where there....his brothers got closer and they saw the little cut off bones with her tiny head detached from her tiny body and they became silent holding back their tears then Ray got up and he went and grabbed Nomvula with her dreadlocks and dragged her to the plastic and he forcefully showed her what she did

Ray: LOOK AT HER!

she was just crying

Ray: YOUR FUCKEN OWN BLOOD AND YOU DID THIS TO HER

*** she just continued to cry with her body shaking then he whispered to her***

Ray: im not gonna kill you cause I know she will haunt you until you run mad or decide to take your own life..... so from today onwards I disown you as my mother and denounce you nx you make me sick

then he let her go and crouched in front of her twin sister's little bones and he started to chant some weird words in a language that sounded strange over and over and right then it started to get a little windy around and when he stopped the wind also stopped then he went to the car and he came back with a container and he carefully put in her little bones inside and her skull and he closed it and he picked it up also getting up and he looked at Heath and Jabu

Ray: I'll go cremate her and I'll like to do it alone and when I comeback you can have the urn with her ashes inside and ya'll will have your own private time with it but for now I need to do this for my own sanity please understand and as for her....

he pointed at Nomvula who was on the ground

Ray: do what you want to do to her I don't care cause she's dead to me from now on.....i'll see ya'll later

then he walked to his car and he put the container on the passenger seat and he got in and drove away

Jabu: Mat what language was he speaking?

Mat: they call it 'the forbidden language' and I think he was commanding her little soul to follow the remains of her body

they looked at him shocked

Heath: everyday it proves how much I don't know who Ray really is

Jabu: me and you both Mshikaro.... anyway what about her?

Heath: dad will decide what to do with her

Jabu and Mat nodded

.
. .

Amo: you look flushed baby

*** she said to him.....it was late at night and they were in bed cuddling***

Jabu: had a long and stressful day rato laka (my love)

Amo: wanna talk about it

he kissed her forehead

Jabu: no don't worry I'll be fine ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead again

Jabu: I love you

Amo: I love you too baby

then comfortable silence fell between the two of them with Jabu reminiscing today's sad events while also asking himself who Ray really is until Amo spoke

Amo: ummm baby my mom called me today

***she told Jabu ***

Jabu: ok.... what did she want?

he asked with a chilled voice while brushing her back gently as she was lying on top of him

Amo: she said I should come back home and she'll talk to dad

his body tensed

Jabu: don't tell me you're going back Amo

she kept quiet

Jabu: Amogelang?

Amo: i...I have to

Jabu: what do you mean you have to? So you want to marry that bastard is that what you are saying to me right now

he asked her pushing her off him and sitting up

Amo: Jabu please understand

she said softly

Jabu: understand what?

Amo: i...I can't lose my family Jabu they are all I have and I can't have them disown me..... I mean what if you break up with me one day and fall for another woman where will I go

Jabu chuckled while shaking his head

Jabu: so let me get this right....you don't trust me..... that's what you're telling me right now

he asked with a serious look on his face and she looked down

Jabu: I asked you a question Amogelang

Amo: its...its not that Jabu

Jabu: then what the fuck is it?

he snapped and she kept quiet and Jabu got out of bed and he went to get dressed

Amo: Jabu please understand

she pleaded with him but he ignored her and he clicked his tongue and walked out and Amo's tears just rolled down her cheeks..... the following day she woke up alone in bed in the morning and she sighed she got out of bed and went to do her business in the bathroom and after she was done she went back to the bedroom and she found Jabu putting lotion on his body meaning he showered in the guest bedroom and she swallowed hard

Amo: hey

Jabu: jah

then he continued to put lotion on his body

Amo: im... im not going to marry him mom said she will talk to dad to forgive me so I can go back home

Jabu: do whatever you feel is right for you Amogelang cause I clearly mean shit to you...you don't trust me and also me and you both know that your father will never back down from you marrying that boy so do whatever you want to do woman

she swallowed hard with a heavy heart tears filled her eyes when he said that

Amo: I love you Jabulani a lot I just wish you would understand where im coming from

he didn't say anything he just went to the walk in closet and she wiped her tears off and she made the bed and she went to shower.....after she was done with her hygiene process she went back to the bedroom and Jabu was not where in sight then her phone rang it was her mother... she sighed and answered it

Amo: Ma

Her.mother: Amo tell me you are on your way remember I told you your father has to attend a meeting with the church council at 11h00

Amo: I just finished bathing mama I'll be there before he leaves

Her.mother: ok then hurry

then her mother dropped the call and Amo sighed with a heavy heart and she put lotion on her body and got dressed in a summer dress she went to buy with Jabu and a pair of sandals and she fixed her hair and she took her hand bag and she went downstairs then she bumped into Jabu and he clenched his jaws when he saw her all dressed up

Jabu: are you coming back?

she kept quiet a bit

Amo: im...im not sure I'll see how the meeting with my father goes

he sighed and just shook his head and went to the kitchen leaving her standing there she swallowed hard and she walked out with a heavy heart cause she's used to Jabu being all over her and always kissing her and grabbing her ass and now he just walks out of her like she means nothing to him

.
. .
. .

she got off a taxi and she walked home and when she arrived at the gate she exhaled loud and she opened it and went inside and she closed it behind her and slowly walked to the door then she knocked and her elder brother opened the door

Modise: ooh the prodigal daughter is back

he said that with an attitude then he made way for her to get in and when she got in she was met by her mother and father

Amo: dumelang

she greeted them but her father didn't greet her back

Her.mom: Amo welcome my babysit

she say down on the couch and her elder brother also sat down

Her.dad: your brother told me you live with a man a thug for that matter

***she looked down with sheer embarrassment ***

Her.dad: answer me man I don't have all day

Amo: ye...yes

Her.dad: you don't even have shame Amogelang...is this how I raised you?

she shook her head no while still looking down

Her.dad: not only did you disobey me you also sinned against God by losing your purity and now you cohabit with a good for nothing thug

Amo: im sorry papa

Her.dad: will your sorry bring back your purity mmmmh?

she didn't answer him she just kept quiet

Her.dad: nx now listen here

Sponsored

it's either you comeback home and marry Pastor Molefe's son or never set your feet in my yard ever again and also make sure you lose my surname too

her head shot up and she looked at her mother who looked away

Amo: Ma you said....

her brother interrupted her

Modise: she said what?

Amo: papa please I can't marry him I love someone else

Her.mom: why are you selfish Amogelang mmmmh why can't you also sacrifice for this family like we sacrificed a lot for you when you were growing up your father and I worked hard so you and your brothers don't sleep hungry and that you go to school and have clothes to wear now why cant you do this for us?

Tears fell from Amogelang's eyes while she looked at her mother

Amo: so my happiness means nothing Ma is that what you are saying?

Her.dad: Jesus sacrificed himself so that you and I can live and you fail to sacrifice your stupid happiness for the good and wellbeing of your family.....how selfish can you get Amogelang mmmmh why do you let the devil use you like this

she just cried

Modise: stop being selfish and do this for our family and the church its sinking and your marriage to the Molefe family will help it and make it strong!

Amo: so none of you care about my happiness?

Her.dad: listen here.... you have already disgraced me by whoring around so this is the only way you can redeem yourself

Amo laughed a bit while shaking her head

Amo: and you call yourself a man of God papa

Her.dad: what did you just say?

Amo: you call me a sinner but here you are selling your only daughter for money and reputation

Modise: AMOGELANG!

he warned her

Amo: NO MODISE....I DON'T REMEMBER A SCRIPTURE IN THE BIBLE SAYING ITS OK FOR PARENTS TO SELL THEIR CHILDREN TO GAIN MATERIAL THINGS AND MONEY

Her.dad: SHUT UP.....

he roared

Her.mom: AMOGELANG WHAT'S GOTTEN INTO YOU MMMMH...IS THAT HOW YOU TALK TO YOUR ELDERS NOW

Amo: im disappointed in you Ma it's your job to protect me but you have failed as a mother....first it was that time I told you uncle Medupe touched me on my butt and breasts and you told me you will tell him to stop and that I should not tell anyone cause it will taint the family name and church and now this

she said crying

Modise: WHAT!

Amo: also papa instead of advising me to ask forgiveness from God for my sins by fasting and praying you are here forcing me to marry a man I don't love in the name of a church..... what kind of a man of God are you?

she continued to cry

Her.dad: GET OUT OF MY HOUSE YOU DEMON! WHO THE HELL DO YOU THINK YOU ARE COMING HERE AND TALKING TO YOUR MOTHER AND I LIKE THIS

she got up with tears all over her face

Modise: what...what did you say Uncle Medupe did to you Amogelang?

she ignored him

Amo: I hope God forgives you all for allowing the devil to take over your hearts you have lost your way and I'll pray and fast for you so that you can go back to being the messenger of God papa you were before you gave in to earthly things

***her father got up and a slap landed on her cheek and he grabbed her by her hair and dragged her towards the door and he roughly pushed her outside and she landed on the ground while her mother was sitting in the lounge crying and as for her brother he was sitting there looking down with his jaws clenched ***

Her.dad: FROM TODAY ONWARDS YOU CEASE TO BE MY DAUGHTER AND MAKE SURE YOU LOSE MY SURNAME TOO CAUSE YOU DON'T DESERVE IT....NOW GET OUT OF MY YARD YOU EVIL CHILD

***he roared and she slowly got up crying then she wiped her tears off that kept on falling fast ***

Amo: fine... you are not God papa and since you don't want me to use your surname then from today onwards im Precious Amogelang Jesus cause I know he'll never judge me and he's a forgiving and understanding father unlike you

he rushed to her and she slapped her again and he grabbed her arm and dragged her towards the gate busy shouting 'get out ' while she was crying hysterically..... and when they got to the gate he pushed her outside and she fell on the ground then the driver side door of a black Audi that was parked on the other side of the street opened and Jabu got out and he quickly crossed the street and went to them

Jabu: listen here old man you are a boss inside that yard but out here im the boss so touch her one more time and you'll wake up in ICU!

he said that with a threatening tone then he helped Amo up then he picked her up bridal style and he crossed the road going to his car with her in his strong arms leaving her father looking furious.....After getting her in the car he also got in and he drove away

.
. .
.

***it's been two days since Mbali was back at her brother's place and the following day she's gonna move back to her apartment until she nears the month she's gonna give birth and she's either gonna go back to KZN or move to one of her brothers' houses and as for Derrick she called on him cause she didn't feel like meeting up with him..... The following day she was back at her apartment and she

was now in bed late at night and she tried to call Ray for the umpteenth time today and luckily the phone rang this time around and he answered on the fourth ring***

Ray: Mbali

*** he answered with a low tone and tears ran down her cheeks cause he was calling her by her name again meaning he was still gonna be cold towards her***

Mbali: what did do wrong Ray.....why are you treating me this way

he sighed

Ray: you did nothing wrong....look it won't be a good idea being around you now im not in a good state so believe me when I say you might end up losing that baby if I keep around you

a sob escaped her mouth

Mbali: Ray please don't do this to me to us and to your baby

she pleaded with him

Ray: Mbali stop acting crazy ok....im not breaking up with you im just telling you I need some time alone to deal with what im going through

Mbali: tell me what's going on and we will go through it together Ray please.....i need you and this baby needs you

she said crying

Ray: Mbali believe me it's for your own good and for your safety.....im not cheating on you or am I interested in breaking up with you I just need some time alone please understand

Mbali: you know what Ray go ahead and take your stupid alone time and you better pray when you done with your 'alone time' you'll find me waiting for you

Ray: what's that supposed to mean Mbali....why are you being selfish mmmh.... am I not telling you that im in a bad space now why can't you act like a good partner and try to at least understand?

he asked with a serious tone

Mbali: I guess my dad was right about you..... you know what do what you gotta do Ray and as for me and my baby we will be just fine without you

Ray didn't say anything but she could hear him breathing heavily then she dropped the call and just cried herself to sleep

.
. .
.

*** Mbali slowly opened her eyes when she felt the room gets extremely cold all of a sudden and she switched the lights on only to find Ray looking like a devil without horns as for the lights they were busy flicking vigorously with wind like sounds all over the bedroom his eyeballs where all black in color and he had large visible veins all over his body especially his face and his teeth were long thin and very sharp at the ends with his gums all black and his tongue also black in color and even though she couldn't see his face clearly but she could tell by the chills running down her body that she's in deep shit...she just froze with horror shaking ***

Ray: this is what you wanted to be exposed to right...is what you wanted to see isn't it?

he said with a deeper scary voice that sounded like two people were saying that at the very same time which send chills run down Mbali's spine... and when he spoke a black liquid was coming out of his mouth dripping down his chin all the way to the floor

Ray: why cant you listen for once...why do you have to be stubborn mmmmh?

Mbali sat there with her eyes popped out shaking

Ray: can't talk now?

Mbali: ple...please don't hurt me!

he grunted

Ray: ANSWER ME WHY DON'T YOU LISTEN WHEN I TALK TO YOU!

he said with an angry voice which made Mbali to jump a bit cause it was scary as hell

Mbali: im...im sorry please don't hurt me please

she said crying and he got closer and Mbali got to see his face clearly and she screamed hysterically and she passed out on the bed

.

.

.

*** Mbali opened her eyes in the morning when her alarm went off and she quickly sat up and switched it off and she noticed that she was nicely tuck in bed and the lights weren't on then she quickly got out of bed to check where "Ray" or that thing was standing to check drops of that liquid that was coming out of his mouth on the floor since she saw it dripping down from his chin to the floor and the floor was squeaky clean.... she sat there with her head all over the place wondering if it was all a nightmare even though it felt real or if it really happened***

.

.

.

***Mat woke up in the morning and he checked his phone for the time and saw that he received a message...he opened it and it read;

“ shit I fucked up bros last night Mbali saw La Parca and she passed out I didn't plan it one minute we were arguing on the phone and the next she dropped the call and I found myself in her apartment. When I left her she was still passed out and my son was ok but im not sure of when she will wake up please check on her and try to convince her that what she thinks she saw was just a mere nightmare even though I know she won't believe you since she won't be able to reach me and please make sure her and my son are ok until I come back cause im going rouge and MIA until La Parca is put to sleep....keep my family safe bros and let that boy Kitso go just drop him off at the nearby hospital and keep tabs on him just to be safe....wish me luck bros cause im gonna need it since he was worse than the last time”

Mat threw his phone on the bed and he rushed out of his bedroom going to Ray's bedroom and he found the bed made and his phone was on top of his bed and some keys a file and his wallet and right then he knew he wouldn't find him even if he wanted to***

Mat: FUCCCKKK!

49

INSERT.....49

.
. .
.

NARRATED

***it's been a week since Ray went MIA and everyone was just shocked by this as for Mbali she tried calling him a couple of times and his phone would send her straight to voicemail and that made her wonder if what she thought she 'dreamed' whether it was just that a dream or it happened for real.... even today she still asks herself about what really happened and now Ray going MIA just makes her suspicions seem real even when Mat told her Ray went away on a business strip and also to deal with things that he was going through she didn't believe him and she still doesn't. At the same time she's angry and hurt that he would just up and leave just like that without even seeing her she was now questioning his intensions towards her and if he really

loves her.....it's been one tough week for her and today she woke up and told herself that enough is enough and that even though Ray has abandoned her on her time of need but she's a strong girl and so her and her child will be just fine without him.... she was now on her way to campus and soon she arrived and parked her car and took her laptop bag and hand bag and she got out of the car and locked it***

Voice: princess!

a voice called her and she froze cause she knew who it belonged to....she swallowed hard and turned and she found him standing there looking yummy...he had a beard now and a new hairstyle he's never done before and it looked good on him

Mbali: Kyle

Kyle: hey

he was frowning because of her baby bump that was slightly visible

Kyle: you look good

she smiled weakly looking down

Mbali: thanks and you look different in a good way that is

he smirked

Kyle: thanks I guess.....I see there's a bun in the oven....congratulations

he said with a pained voice

Mbali: ummm thanks....i...I have to go... bye

she said moving

Kyle: wait!

she stopped and looked at him

Kyle: can...can we do lunch after your classes i....

she interrupted him

Mbali: I can't im sorry

Kyle: please I need to tell you something important...its not a date I promise

she sighed

Mbali: I...I don't think it's a good idea Kyle

Kyle: Mbali I know you moved on and now I can see that you are pregnant...trust me I'm not looking for trouble I just wanna talk to you about something important that's all

she sighed

Mbali: ummm ok

he smiled

Kyle: ok then I'll wait for you here

she nodded and walked away...he stood there looking at her behind and he bit his lower lip feeling his dick getting hard he couldn't believe he cheated on her like that. The truth is he still loves her a lot and the fact that she moved on that quickly in fact the fact that she moved on at all killed him and now she's pregnant....He sighed and he scratched his head.....well all these weeks he disappeared he was in rehab and he got to see a therapist too and it help him deal with a lot of things he was going through now he knows he cheated on Mbali because he was scared one day she will leave him cause truth of the matter is she's drop dead gorgeous and she comes from a wealthy family yes he also comes from a well off family but he didn't think for a second that she would be his every guy in campus lusted over her and even though she gave him her virginity he still was scared that one day she will wake up and find someone better so he gave in to temptation and the rest is history and now he's watching on the side lines as another man makes her happy and now she's even pregnant for him.....he was brought back from his thoughts when someone tapped his shoulder and it was one of Phindile's friends

Kyle: what?

she swallowed cause he said that coldly

Pabi: ummm I haven't seen you for quite some time now even Phindi has been worried about you

Kyle: ok

Pabi: bathong Kyle

Kyle: what?

Pabi: she's your baby mama

Kyle: mmmmh unfortunately

Pabi: do you even care that she's carrying your child

Kyle: ofcourse but now I cant be there for the baby cause its still inside her womb so I'll wait until she gives birth and I'll be there for my child....now move along and tell your stupid friend that....and I even doubt she feels my absence in her life cause she's busy chowing the money I send before I left nx...gold digging whore

she clicked her tongue looking at him

Pabi: karma is a bitch Kyle and soon she's gonna visit you believe me

Kyle laughed

Kyle: well she already visited me through that bitch Phindile and I ended losing my soul mate

Pabi: wow you know what.... I can't believe you right now

Kyle: nx I remember telling you to move along you're contaminating the air around me

he said with a stern voice and she clicked her tongue again and walked away

Kyle: bitch!

he said that annoyed as hell

Kyle: God I have been praying and begging you to lead Mbali back to me since I lost her so I hope you're working on it

he said to himself softly and he sighed and walked away

.
. .
.

****HEATH****

*** it's been one hell of a week and I have been trying to search for Ray to no avail I know Mat said he's gonna come back when he's ready but I just can't help myself he's my brother and I cant help but get worried about him..... as for my so called mother well Dad send her back to her parents' home (gogo and mkhulu's house) and when they found out what she did gogo collapsed everyone was shook by her evil deed and they just couldn't believe that she did that especially aunt Betty since she was the one that was living with her.....she couldn't believe that her younger sister gave birth to twins and killed another one cause mom told her she only gave birth to one child so she was shook the most amongst everyone well dad said he's not divorcing her cause she's the mother of his children unless she wants the divorce and he'll gladly give it to her but he doesn't want to live with her anymore cause he doesn't trust her. As for Ray's twin well every day I go past his place and I just spend an hour in his study with her gold urn and I just picture how she would have looked like and how far in life she would be now and I just find myself sobbing when my mind start picturing my evil mother cutting her with a scissor..... Nomvula is evil and I hope she gets what's coming to her soon nx.

Anyway as for Obi m well she's way too quiet for my liking and I kept asking her what's wrong and she always tells me she's ok and that nothing is wrong and I know she's lying I would find her staring into space lost in thoughts and when I beg her to talk to me she'll just say she's thinking about what happened in Nigeria....yes she might be telling me the truth about that but I know that's not all that is bothering her..... Then there's Jabu and Amo (sigh) I don't like what Amo's father did to her and what he doesn't know is he's gonna pay dearly cause i already gathered enough info to send him to jail for many years.... I must say that old man is one twisted

and fucked up human being well I don't know if he still is or he was the things he did before he became a pastor are fucked up and I wonder if he repented for real or he's using being a pastor to cover up his fucked up self.... I wonder how his family his congregation and the entire community will look at him if/when his skeletons are exposed Anyway now im on my way to meet Naledi's father to talk to him about me paying for Naledi dowry well I would have gone to her mother instead but they disowned her at least James is showing remorse for what he did and whether I like it or not he's Naledi's father at the end of the day..... Well I parked my car and I got out and I went inside the yard and knocked on the door the door opened and his wife opened
nx***

Me: Mrs Moeketsi

Mrs.Moeketsi: what are you doing here?

nx bitch! she said that with an attitude and I just took out my phone and I moved away from the door and I dialed James numbers and I heard it ring inside....i don't have the energy to deal with her right now

James: Heath

Me: Mr Moeketsi im at the door and your wife here is giving me attitude and I don't wanna be rude to her

James sighed and dropped the call and I heard his voice

James: what the hell is wrong with you Mapula?

Mapula: what do you mean what is wrong with me James...this boy broke my daughter's heart so he's not welcomed here

James: THIS IS MY HOUSE WOMAN NOW GO DO SOMETHING PRODUCTIVE AND GET OUT OF MY SIGHT!

he shouted

Mapula: its like you don't care about your daughter being heartbroken James

James: you mean Pule's daughter

then they went quiet and James clicked his tongue...ok what the hell does he mean by that...wait so Lerato is not James daughter....wooh damn

Mapule: how....how dare you said that James?

James: look I'll deal with you later now my son in law is here to see me

he said with an angry voice and all along im out here listening to all this cause their voices are high....damn im glad im married to Obi m imagine spending the rest of my life with someone like James' wife

Mapule: what do you mean your son in law?

James: ooooh you didn't know....he's married to my long lost daughter I had with Mamiki you remember her right? the lady I had an affair with....guess what she didn't abort like I asked her to and im grateful to God she didn't cause the girl is a carbon copy of my late mother unlike Pule's daughters you lied and said they are mine

Mapula: wha...what?

*** then he walked out and smiled when he saw me***

James: sorry about that...how are you son?

he said stretching his hand out for a hand shake and I shook it

Me: im good and yourself sir

James: well I've been better but im not complaining....come on in

we walked inside and his wife was nowhere in sight.... we sat down

James: can I get you something to drink

Me: I wouldn't say no to a glass of whiskey or scotch

he smiled and got up and poured us the drink and he gave me my glass and sat down then I took a sip as he did

James: how is Naledi?

Me: she ok but ready to give birth though

he nodded while looking down

Me: be patient with her she'll come around eventually

he sighed and nodded

James: you sounded serious over the phone

Me: yeah what brought me here is pretty much important

James: im listening

I cleared my throat

Me: I want to pay lobola for Naledi and I was wondering when do you plan on introducing her to your ancestors

he sighed

James: she made it clear that she wants nothing to do with me

Me: we both know she's just angry and she doesn't mean it look Naledi has been through hell and back and she doesn't know parents' love at all and im sure she has been wondering about you and where you are and stuff and now that you're here all the anger she has harbored all those years back is what she's showering you with....if you want her in your life you shouldn't give up until she forgives you and remember she's pregnant and her hormones are also playing a part

he was looking down all along

Me: so what is it gonna be?

James: I don't even know where to start

Me: start by apologizing and do the ceremony for her and then make sure the lobola negotiations go well then make it your mission to show her that you regret what you did when her mother told you she's pregnant

he nodded

James: will she agree to the ceremony and for you to pay lobola to me

Me: she's my wife don't worry I'll talk to her but you should reach out to her mother and let her know she might be evil and a heartless woman but she made sure she never slept hungry

James sighed

James: I don't think I wanna see that woman she lied to me and told me she gave Naledi up for adoption when I went to look for them khante all along Naledi was with her mother....i wasted years and money going from one adoption agency to another social workers and orphanages looking for her where else they were hiding her nx

Me: look you are not doing this for her but for your daughter...you need to do things right cause Naledi deserves some happiness after all the trauma she went through....believe me I despise her mother and grandmother for what they did to her and treated her but for Naledi I would even dine with the devil as long as she get to be happy at the end of the day

he sighed and nodded

James: I'll handle everything don't worry

Me: ok.... so should I send the letter?

James: it won't be necessary....before Friday I'll go talk to Mamiki and my brothers and wena talk to Naledi and tell her that this weekend im introducing her to my ancestors and tell your elders to come for the lobola negotiations next weekend

I sighed with relief

Me: thank you I'll do just that and tomorrow you should come to dinner at my house so you can talk to Naledi...don't worry I'll talk to her

he nodded then someone cleared their throat I turned and it was Lerato.....i didn't see the scars on her face which can only mean she had it removed...she just stood there staring at me nx

James: you don't know how to greet now Lerato

she cleared her throat

Lerato: ummm dumelang

Me: hi

Lerato: ummm what are you doing here?

Me: none of your business

*** and her face fell nx I see I didn't scare her enough that night for her to even look my way like this nx.... I gulped down my remaining drink and I got up***

Me: ok then let me get going I'll see you tomorrow Mr Moeketsi

he got up and we shook hands

Lerato: are...are you married Heath?

*** she asked looking at my wedding band and I turned and walked passed her ignoring her***

.
. .
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Lerato: dad is he married?

James: yes he's happily married

she swallowed hard then his wife walked in the lounge with her eyes puffy and bloodshot red

Mapula: Lerato excuse us me and your father need to talk

James: I have nothing to talk to you about

he took his car keys

James: I have somewhere I need to be....dont wait up!

Mapula: James please

he just clicked his tongue and walked out and Mapula's tears ran down her cheeks

Lerato: mama whats going on between you and papa

she went back to her bedroom ignoring her and Lerato just sighed and sat down on the couch thinking about how yummy Heath still looks she realized that she went about it the wrong way when she used Heath's daughter to fight her battles....even though he threatened her and even scarred her on her face the thing is she still loves him deeply and she had hope of him forgiving her and them working things out but now he's married she sighed....then she remembered something

Lerato: no it cant be...he cant be married to that cursed bitch I refuse it....he cant

she said to herself getting worked up.... as for James he was back home cause his Traditional healer advised him to so he will be able to introduce Naledi to his ancestors the proper way in his house when the time comes then after he has done what he need to do for Naledi then he can proceed with dealing with his wife

.
. .

Heath arrived at his house and he went inside and he found Naledi and the girls sitting in the lounge with the TV playing....Omphile was watching attentively while Lesedi was busy with Naledi's phone and Naledi was just staring into space....Lesedi is the one that saw him first and put Naledi's phone down and she got up and ran to him with a huge smile on her tiny face and Heath picked her up and kissed her cheek

Heath: you good my princess?

Lesedi: mmmmh good!

*** then she rested her head on his shoulder and he chuckled then Omphile got up and went to her dad and hugged him and he also kissed her cheek***

Heath: you good my baby

Omphile: yep

Heath: and school?

Omphile: aah school is school daddy it was just ok nothing interesting happened

she said that to her dad and then she looked at Naledi and Naledi smiled while shaking her head cause when she came back from school she kept on telling her about the girl that wanted to bully her and she remembered what her dad "Ray" told her to do if she finds herself in that situation and today she did and it worked cause it left the girl trembling with fear....even though she refused to tell Naledi what Ray told her what to do but Naledi was happy that she was now standing up for herself which is something she (Naledi) failed to do herself when she was still in school and she was glad that she didn't fight the girl

Heath: mmmmh ok

Lesedi: dadi push me dan (daddy put me down)

Heath chuckled and he put her down and she went back to Naledi's phone and Omphile went to sit down

Lesedi: dadi bona! (daddy look)

she was showing him the phone

Heath: ok e pila neh

she nodded and concentrated on the phone and Heath bend down and perked Naledi's lips and he sat down

Heath: hey mommy

she smiled at him

Naledi: hey daddy

Heath: are you and my sons good?

she nodded

Naledi: mmh but hey...they were kicking none stop today

Heath: that's my boys

she nudged him and he laughed

Naledi: mxm

Heath: lets go to the dining room so we can talk privately

Naledi: is everything ok

Heath: yeah now come

he got up and also helped her up and they went to the dining room and sat down on the chairs next to each other

Naledi: what's up husby

he sighed

Heath: I want to pay lobola for you Obi m

she kept quiet because she knows what it means

Heath: I know you're probably not ready Naledi but time waits for no one.... look back in Nigeria my elders told me I should pay for your dowry ASAP

she sighed

Naledi: Im disowned Heath

Heath: you have a father Obi m

she shook her head no

Naledi: that man is no father to me Heath ok...he's just a sperm donor

she said getting worked up

Heath: look I know you're angry at him and I understand my love but don't you think you've been angry for far too long? he's living his life and you are here harboring all this anger inside you and you know its not healthy for you or my sons

she didn't say anything she just swallowed looking away with tears in her eyes

Heath: Obi m he's still alive and he's remorseful for what he did and believe me he looked for you but your mother told him she gave you up for adoption...at least he's remorseful and he's sorry what about my own mother she's not remorseful at all for what she did she still thinks she did the right thing

Naledi's tears ran down her cheeks

Naledi: I heard your brother that day

Heath sighed

Heath: is that why you've been emotionally distant?

she nodded

Naledi: I just couldn't even imagine the cries and pain your sister felt when your mother did what she did to her....and to think she did that because she had albinism just hit me hard Heath

he clenched his jaws

Heath: and she doesn't even show remorse all she says is she had to do it and other words that I cant say out loud cause they make me mad....and with your mother she also doesn't show remorse for how she treated and said all those hurtful words she said to you all those years and concerning your grandmother im not even gonna say anything about her cause she's just pure evil like my mother....while your father shows remorse and he wants you in his life

he sighed

Heath: forgive him for yourself Obi m so you can heal its long overdue...you deserve to be happy Naledi and now is the time for you to be and for everyone that wronged you to come groveling down on their knees begging for your forgiveness

she was now crying and Heath wiped her tears off

Heath: I love you ok

she nodded

Heath: and you know I'll never forsake you or let anyone hurt you right?

she nodded

Heath: now believe me when I say now its your time Obi m.....God has finally answered your prayers so don't disappoint him by not forgiving them.....even your useless baby daddy forgive him for Lesedi and for you to have peace of mind and remember forgiving someone doesn't mean you are weak and it doesn't mean you should have them back into your life forgiveness is more for you than for them ok

she sniffed

Naledi: I hear you

Heath: good... and i invited him for dinner tomorrow and after dinner you two will talk privately then he'll introduce you to his ancestor and I'll pay your dowry then it will be up to you if you want to have a relationship with him or not and I promised I wont push

Naledi: ok

he wiped her tears

Heath: then we will deal with that boy Kitso so he can do the ceremony for my princess too

she sighed

Naledi: you are truly a God send my husband.....im thankful to God for bringing you into my life

he smiled at her touched by her kind words

.
. .

*** he dialed a number and waited for the person to answer and he did after the third ring***

Voice: yah

Ray: Serge Du Gardien De La Porte

(Serge the gate keeper)

Voice: Qui Est-Ce? attendez Je Connais Cette Voix....La Parka?

(who is this? wait I know this voice....LA Parca?)

Ray: Dans La Chair....comment Estes-Vous?

(in the flesh...how are you?)

Serge: Je suis Homme de Bien Wow Ca a Ete j'ai Tout

(im good man wow its been a while)

Ray: Oui Ou Etes-Vous J' Ai Besoin De Vous Pour M' Emmener La-Bas

(yeah where are you I need you to take me down there)

Serge: Je suis En France en ce moment pour les Affaires Et je serai La pour Deux Semaines ou en Etes-Vous?

(im in France right now for business and I'll be here for two weekswhere are you?)

Ray: im in Guinea Bissau and I need to talk to your master in fact im here to cash in on one of the favors he owes me

Serge: are you in a hurry?

he asked with his weird accent

Ray: no im here to put La Parca to sleep this time around he nearly caused some serious damage to someone dear to me

Serge: damn what could have made you that angry that summoned him to wake up

he sighed

Ray: I'll tell you when you get back

he said getting angry when he thought about Nomvula and her twin sister

Serge: ok...give me two weeks or even less and I'll take you.... and La Parca I hope you know that when you leave the dark world you'll leave with some demons hovering over you like before

Ray: I know....i can handle them what I can't handle is La Parca waking up like this and some fucker hurting someone dear to my cold heart while hiding in the shadows just because he thinks he's all that where else he's not

Serge: I already feel sorry for him

Ray: mmmmh or maybe I should let him meet La Parca since he thinks he's the 'it' shit in the dark world

serge laughed

Serge: don't torture the poor soul on earth and also in hell man that's just cruel

Ray: he deserves it... Regarde je vais Vous Voir a Deux Semaines de Temps Et Assurez-Vous de Me Trouver

(look I'll see you in two weeks' time and make sure you find me)

Serge: Ok rendez-Vous Et s'il vous Plait La Guinee Bissau A Ete Calme Depuis que Vous avez Quitte Afin de Ne pas causer des Ravages Comme La Derniere fois

(look Guinea Bissau has been quiet since you left so don't cause havoc like the last time please)

Ray: La Votre (up yours)

serge laughed and ended the call then he felt a liquid running down his chin and he quickly touched it and looked at it and the liquid was black

Ray: fuckkkk....

La Parca is out again to play

50

INSERT.....50 (SOMETHING SHORT FOR THE NIGHT...ENJOY)

.
. .
.

****NARRATED****

Kyle: I thought you'll ditch me by requesting an uber instead

****he said that with a smile on his face****

Mbali: you said we going out for lunch and im hungry so I hope you brought enough cash

****Kyle laughed****

Kyle: shem you look tired

****she nodded and yawned****

Mbali: hungry and sleepy

Kyle: don't worry I promise I won't keep you too long

Mbali: ok

****even though she was uncomfortable around him she also wanted to find out what it is that he wanted to talk to her about cause it sounded serious****

Mbali: where are we having "thee" lunch?

Kyle: is spur fine?

****she nodded then someone called out her name and she turned only to find Derrick walking towards them and she sighed****

Derrick: hey beautiful

****he said that when he got to her and he kissed her cheek which made Kyle to clench his jaws****

Mbali: hey

Derrick: you good?

****she nodded****

Derrick: and the little one?

Mbali: the little one is good too.....ummm Derrick this is....

****he interrupted her****

Derrick: Kyle

****he said looking at Kyle with an annoyed look****

Mbali: ooh you know each other?

Kyle: mmmmh unfortunately

Mbali: oohk

Kyle: can we go please so I can feed you two

****Derrick clenched his jaws****

Derrick: going someone princess?

****he asked her with his one eyebrow raised****

Mbali: ummm yeah he offered to buy me lunch and I agreed cause im starving

Derrick: he can take his offer back cause im taking you to lunch

Kyle: that's not happening

****then he turned to Mbali****

Kyle: lets go babe so you can go home and rest afterwards

****she frowned at him when he called her babe****

Derrick: Mbali?

Mbali: ummm I already said yes Derrick and plus he has something important to talk to me about

****she told him with a low tone and Derrick clenched his jaws****

Derrick: fine but after you are done "talking" come by my place ok

****Mbali gave him the "excuse me?" look ****

Kyle: that's not happening now excuse us we need to go nx

****he said looking at Derrick with a stern look and Derrick smirked and he looked at Mbali****

Derrick: I'll see you later ok

****she nodded slowly and he kissed her cheek and walked away leaving Kyle mad as hell****

*.
. .
. . .*

**** They were sitting in a restaurant waiting for their food to arrive****

Mbali: so what is it that you wanted to talk to me about?

****she said that and sipped her drink****

Kyle: I don't know where to start princess

****he said with a low tone****

Mbali: it's always good to start at the beginning Kyle

****he cleared his throat****

Kyle: ok ummmm....i was in rehab all this while

Mbali: huh?

****she asked shocked and he sighed****

Kyle: yeah I was in rehab

Mbali: for what?

Kyle: drugs

Mbali: since when do you do drugs Kyle?

****she asked with a frown on her face and he wanted to smile so bad and just smash his lips on her soft lips cause she looked so damn cute****

Mbali: im asking you a question Kyle!

Kyle: look I went to sleep and only woke up to someone knocking on the door I remember opening the door to finding a man wearing a balaclava and from then onwards I don't remember what happened

****the waiter came with their food and put it on the table****

Waiter: enjoy

Mbali: thank you

****then he walked away****

Mbali: you can continue

****she said eating a chunk of her fries****

Kyle: then the next thing I woke up to my brother shaking me with a disappointed look on his face and I looked around my room and there was cocaine and other drugs around

****she looked at him with her eyebrows raised then she frowned****

Mbali: why are you telling me all this Kyle?

****he hoped she never asks him that****

Kyle: cause you know me Mbali

Mbali: point of correction Kyle I thought i knew you but I was wrong

****he sighed****

Kyle: the person you know that's the real me Mbali the cheating part I don't even know where that came about cause you were enough for me

****she chuckled bitterly****

Mbali: why her

****he brushed his head with clenched jaws****

Kyle: I didn't plan it ok and believe me she wasn't worth it

Mbali: wow

****she said that dropping her fork on her plate****

Kyle: look im not justifying what I did but the truth is I was scared I might lose you I was very insecure Mbali and almost every guy in campus wanted you....you didn't know this but I did and my friends did too

Mbali: so cheating on me with someone whom I thought was my best friend was your solution to your insecurities

****she said with an angry voice****

Kyle: of course not babe look she always flirted with me when you weren't looking that's why I was always rude to her then one night I went to a club with my friends and got wasted the next thing I saw some guy being rough with her so I went there to help cause I knew you'll be mad at me if I ignored what was happening and she got raped or something then you would find out I was there but did nothing.....then I took her to my place to the guest bedroom and I went to sleep to my bedroom and in the middle of the night I heard someone getting inside my covers and the rest is history.....i was still drunk Mbali and the truth is in my mind I imagined that it was you your name is what I called and you could imagine how I felt when I woke up the next morning to find Phindile next to me naked

****by now tears where running down her cheeks****

Mbali: im no fool Kyle ok she told me you two fucked more than once so don't fucken play victim here

Kyle: cause she blackmailed me by saying if I don't sleep with her she'll tell you and I couldn't lose you Mbali....i did what I did cause my fear was about to come true

****she just cried****

Kyle: I know I was weak and gave in to her threats and I'll forever regret it cause he truth is I didn't have a plan on how to end it not that I didn't think of one cause believe me I did but it all pointed out that I should come clean to you but I was afraid of losing you.....please find it in your heart to forgive me Princess

****he said that and got up and went to sit next to her and pulled her to his chest and she just sobbed on his chest....her heart was heavy because of "Ray's " saga and everything else that's happening in her life and now Kyle just opened the wounds that she thought healed....she was just a mess and her hormones where also taking part****

Kyle: im sorry Mbali...im really sorry for hurting you and I'll forever ask for your forgiveness until you see fit to forgive me

****they stayed in that position for some time until she pulled away from him and he wiped her tears and they stared into each other's eyes until Mbali looked away****

Kyle: please forgive me baby

Mbali: I have forgiven you Kyle not for you but for myself to move on and to free myself of the anger I was harboring.... now please go sit in your seat you are too close for comfort

****he chuckled and he went back to his seat and looked at her and admired her beauty now she looked more beautiful with her eyes a bit puffy and her nose all pink in color...she was now concentrating on her plate busy eating****

Kyle: and as for the drug thing I just told you about....well I saw a therapist in rehab and I realized during my sessions that you are the only person who would believe me when I say im not an addict cause you know me more than I know myself...I mean I could tell the shrink didn't believe me too when I told her that I don't know where they came from and how they end up in my room and in my system

****Mballi sighed****

Mballi: do you at least remember anything about the man with the balaclava... I mean his smell

Sponsored

tattoo or something else

****His eyes filled with tears cause he could tell that she believed him****

Kyle: I remember his cologne and I've never smelled it before it was more masculine and something new.....it smelled expensive

**** right then her phone rang****

Mballi: it's Ma I need to take this

Kyle: its ok let me go to the bathroom while you take it

****she nodded and answered her phone as he got up and walking towards the men's bathroom****

*.
. .
. .*

**** In the bathroom he was all alone he took a leak and flushed then he went to the taps and he washed his hands and as soon as he closed the tap he felt a cold chill run down his spine and immediately the lights started flickering vigorously and his heart started beating fast as he looked around then the mirror started to crack quickly and he saw a figure on the cracked mirror standing behind him with a black liquid running down his chin....he quickly turned and there was no one there but when he turned back to the cracked mirror the figure was still standing there and his body started shaking visibly****

Kyle: wha...what's happening...oooh God help me....Help me please....

****he said moving back while his eyes ran around the room and he bumped with his back into what felt like a human figure and he screamed and jumped away and there was no one there...he ran to the door and tried to open it but it wouldn't open and he hit it screaming for help then a force he*

couldn't see dragged him and threw him towards the wall on the other side near the basins and he hit it hard with his right elbow and he screamed***

Voice: GET UP YOU PIECE OF SHIT!

the scary voice roared.....it was as if two people were speaking at the exact same time

Voice: I SAID UP!

*** and he sat up holding his elbow as he hit the wall with it with extreme fear all over his face....tears were now gushing out and his body was shaking vigorously***

Voice: SHE'S OFF LIMITS....FROM NOW ON NEVER TOUCH TALK TO HER OR EVEN LOOK HER WAY OR I'LL SEND YOUR SOUL TO HELL YOU HEAR ME!

he nodded continuously looking around but he couldn't see anyone especially with the lights still flicking vigorously

Voice: I SAID DO YOU HEAR ME?

Kyle: ye...yes plea...please don't...don't hurt me I'll...I'll stay away from her

***he figure out that the voice is speaking about Mbali cause she's the only woman he's after.... then the room became windy and he covered his face with his arms crying and begging not to be hurt in anyway then out of the blue the wind stopped.... and seconds later he got his arms off his face slowly and the lights weren't flickering anymore and the mirror was also not cracked anymore.....it was like everything was back to normal and what just happened was a pigmentation of his memory but the fact that his elbow was painful and he was still on the floor was proof enough that something evil and dangerous just visited him.....then the door opened and some guy walked him with a frown on his face ***

Guy: dude why was the door not opening?

he asked scanning Kyle who was still on the floor....he could see that Kyle looked like he just saw a ghost....but then Kyle just kept quiet and he was still shaking visibly

Guy: are you ok man?

no reply

Guy: should I call someone for you?

Kyle shook his head no and he got up slowly

Guy: look man....friendly advice stop taking drugs man those things are dangerous and they will mess up your life I mean look at you know

Kyle wiped his face with his shirt and he walked out ignoring him

.

.

.

****Mwali finished talking to her grandmother over the phone and eating still waiting for Kyle to come back and as she was getting up to go look for him as she was getting worried she then saw him walking towards her looking like shit he was sweating profoundly his body was shaking and he was holding his elbow and she quickly got up****

Mwali: ooh my God Kyle what happened to you?

****he didn't say anything to her or even maintain eye contact with her****

Mwali: Kyle what's going on with you....what happened in there?

****she tried touching him but he jumped away and he quickly took out his wallet from his pocket and he took out a couple of hundred Rands and he put them on top of the table and he walked away leaving the restaurant in a hurry with Mwali calling after him....then the guy that found Kyle in the bathroom went to Mwali who looked hurt shocked and confused all at the same time about what just happened****

Guy: drugs do that to people you know....and lady you are too beautiful to be associating yourself with junkies choose your friends carefully please before you end up like him

****then he walked away going to his table and Mwali sat down defeated...to think she believed him when he told her he's not a junkie made her want to slap herself cause she should have known that's what junkies do being to play with your emotions****

51

INSERT.....51

.
. .
. .

*****NARRATED*****

*****Mwali was sitting in the lounge now busy brushing her belly with the TV playing she just finished eating and now her mind was all over the place because of what happened earlier with Kyle.....she called Derrick and told him she cant come to his place cause she's not well but the truth of the matter is besides the fact that that whole Kyle scene that happened in the restaurant was troubling her the other reason was that it felt so damn wrong for her to be spending time with another man and also visiting him in his place where else she's still in a relationship with Ray she knows how Ray is and she didn't want Derrick's blood on her hands cause if Ray found**

out that she was entertaining him he'll go berserk and she doesn't need unnecessary stress in her life....despite the fact that she's angry at Ray she also misses him like crazy....tears ran down her cheeks when she thought of him and she just rubbed her belly as she felt her baby moving***

Mbali: its ok baby I miss him too and im also angry at him

she said to her belly with a sad voice

Mbali: and I also hope he's ok and safe wherever he is

***she said that and sniffed....then her minds went to Kyle she thought of how he looked when he came out of the bathroom he looked spooked and injured and not high from drugs it was like he saw a ghost or something and even though that guy talked about him being a junkie something in her doesn't believe that he was he would've came out of that bathroom high just like druggies and not terrified like he was or maybe he receive a call that left him terrified "she thought"....but then what happened to his arm or elbow "she thought" again....she then sighed and reached for her phone and she unblocked his numbers and send him a message and it read;

"i don't know what happened today at the restaurant but I know you were not on drugs something happened in that bathroom and I hope one day you'll tell me what happened cause you looked terrified not high.....i hope you are ok now cause im worried about you"

Then she send the message and sighed and continued to brush her belly..... right then her phone rang and she couldn't recognize the number so she answered quickly hoping its Ray***

Mbali: hello

Voice: Ray's flower

the voice said and she frowned cause she didn't recognize it

Mbali: ummm who's this?

Jabu: Ray's brother Jabu remember me?

Mbali: ooh yeah...hey

Jabu: how are you?

he asked with a serious tone

Mbali: well I've been better and you?

Jabu: same as you his flower....so how's the little one?

she sighed

Mbali: he's ok

Jabu: don't worry he'll be back Mbali that man lives for you just trust him and pray for him

Mbali: where is he Jabu I mean how can he leave me just like that

she asked him with a breaking voice

Jabu: he didn't leave you Mbali in fact he'll never leave you that man loves you.... now he's just going through some shit but he'll be back

Mbali: what shit....and please don't lie to me Jabu cause im starting to question his intensions towards me I mean my dad warned me about him and now he's doing similar things my dad said he will do now how do I trust him

he sighed

Jabu: look I shouldn't be telling you this but im gonna tell you anyway cause I don't want you to continue to think that he doesn't love you and shit.....the thing is he just found out that he had a twin sister and she was killed the day they were born

she kept quiet for some time

Mbali: wha...what?

Jabu: yeah and im sure by now you know Big Ray doesn't like talking about his feelings so please give him time to deal with it and when he comes back you can sit him down and talk to him and find a way to get through to him cause its not only you he doesn't talk to even us his brothers and even his father so don't think he doesn't trust you he's just Ray and its hard to get through to him

she didn't say anything she just wiped her falling tears

Jabu: don't give up on him you know you are the first woman he has ever fallen in love with whom he had committed himself to and the first woman who's carrying his first child so him learning to open up to you fully will also take time just like you made him stop calling you childish

she giggled through her tear

Mbali: he told you?

Jabu: yeah he was stunned shocked and also impressed that you put him in his place something that no woman has ever done before

she smiled

Mbali: really?

Jabu: yah....kyk suster Big Ray uyak'thanda kakhulu futhi (loves you too much) and he's coming back for you ok

she sniffed

Mbali: ok

Jabu: and word of advice he doesn't like to share period.....look I gotta go I'll check up on you tomorrow ok

she cleared her throat

Mbali: ummm yeah...thanks for the call

Jabu: sure his flower

then he ended the call and Mbali sighed cause she had a feeling that maybe Ray told Jabu to keep an eye on her and maybe he saw her and Kyle having lunch

Mbali: shit...what if he saw Kyle holding me

she said to herself feeling a bit scared cause she knows Ray can be crazy sometime but at the same time she was mad at him for leaving just like that and also mad at Mat for lying to her like he did....she clicked her tongue and continued to rub her belly and her baby continued to moved

.
. .
. .

After the call Jabu went to where Mat was and he sat down

Mat: how is she?

Jabu: I could feel pain in her voice man

Mat sighed

Mat: you know jabs I don't know how to deal with all this cause before she came into Jefe's life and he disappears like this I would just relax and wait for him to come back but now things are different cause he asked me to look after her and his baby and the rest of his family

Jabu: what happens when he disappears like this....i mean where does he go?

Mat sighed

Mat: I don't know bros but what I know is he's going to put LA Parca to sleep

Jabu: I don't understand Mat

Mat: that's all you need to know man I don't even know if im at any liberty to tell you anything

Jabu sighed

Jabu: what's going on man?

Mat: nothing man im just worried about Jefe that's all....anyway how did she take the news of jefe's twin?

Jabu sighed cause he could see that Mat knew more than he's telling and now he's avoiding his question

Jabu: she sounded worried....like I told you its better we told her a bit of the truth than a lie that she might not even believe

Mat: yeah.... like I told you im not good with women I mean I fail to understand and do good by mine so imagine having to deal with Jefe's flower

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: come on im sure you're not that bad

Mat: believe me I am but at least I know how to make it up to my woman

Jabu: how?

Mat: by making her scream in bed man

Jabu laughed

Jabu: mmm a real man does that man and maybe Mbali will pray for Big Ray instead of finding a step father for lil Ray

Mat: Prayers are a waste of time on Jefe bros im sure prayers for him won't even be allowed to enter the gates of heaven man

Jabu gave him the "wtf" look

Mat: im jus saying man..... anyway Diego said he's on his way here

he got up and went to pour himself a glass of whiskey leaving Jabu shocked by his statement

.
. .
.

*** Outside at the parking lot Derrick parked his car after Mbali cancelled on him again so he told himself that this time he's gonna go to her instead cause it seemed like something was stopping her from giving him a chance it's been a while since he saw Ray so he thought maybe they broke up and he left her all alone and pregnant he saw how territorial Ray was towards Mbali and since he haven't seen him around then he concluded that maybe they broke up or something in fact he hoped they were cause he really has fallen for her and he can't even help himself and today when she left with Kyle it became clear to him that she's the one for him pregnant or not cause he was mad angry he couldn't even stop thinking about why he was taking her out for lunch and why she agreed cause he knows that she once dated Kyle and he cheated on her with her best friend. He clicked his tongue and he unlocked the car and opened it and before

he can step out the door shut itself hard and the doors locked leaving Derrick shocked....he tried to unlock the doors but they refused to open and he took out his phone quickly attempting to call his elder brother but a mist started to fill inside the car***

Derrick: THE FUCK!

he cursed and tried to open the door but it wouldn't budge then his phone fell and as he tried to search for it with his hands shaking he felt a cold shiver running down his spine and he quickly sat up straight and on the front passenger seat he saw a scary figure and he screamed out loud

Voice: QUIET!

the voice said and it sounded as if different voices spoke at the exact same time but hey Derrick continued to scream and all the car's windows started to crack one by one and he froze with fear then tears started to run down his cheeks..... then the figure disappeared from the front passenger seat

Voice: she's off limits you hear me.... you gonna start the car and drive out of here and never look her way or even attempt to contact her....

***the figure was now speaking on the back seat and Derrick quickly looked behind him but the mist was making it hard for him to see clearly

Sponsored

he even peed on himself***

Derrick: plea...please don't...don't hurt me

he pleaded crying

Voice: you go anywhere near her and I'll send your soul straight to hell before it is your time boy you hear me

Derrick: I'll...i'll stay away from her just plea...please don't hurt me

Voice: don't make me come after you again cause I'll act instead of warning you like this

***then strong wind filled inside the car and Derrick covered his face screaming and shaking then all of a sudden it became quiet.... then he heard a knock on his window and he slowly opened his eyes and also uncovered his face then he saw a man standing outside next to his window with a concerned look on his face he was busy saying something but Derrick couldn't make out what he was saying as his mind just went temporary insane.....he looked around and the mist was gone and the windows weren't cracked anymore and he quickly unlocked the door and the doors unlocked.....he wanted to get out of the car and he felt that he was wet then he

remembered that he peed on himself and he sat still...he opened the window while wiping his face***

Guy: you ok man?

Derrick nodded he was still shaking

Guy: you sure? I saw you screaming while covering your face

Derrick: im...im ok man

he said with his shaky voice and he closed the window and started the car and reversed then he drove out with his mind all over the place...he was still shaking he kept on looking at his rearview mirror to keep checking if the figure was there

.
. .

****RAYMOND****

***I must admit Nomvula did a number on me I never thought she would be the reason why LA Parca wakes up.... I guess this heartless and cold heart I have took after hers I mean my number one code of honour is never hurt defenseless women and children at any cost but my own mother killed and cut my twin sister her own flesh and blood with a scissor then buried her in a shallow grave. I never knew my own mother can be this heartless I just saw her as a conniving and manipulative person but Murderer especially that kind wasn't on the list.... Anyway there is no use crying over spilled milk and now I know how all those families of the men I killed over the years feels and I must say it's not a nice feeling at all...well I always felt like a part of me was missing and I thought the absence of my biological father in my life was what made me feel like that but now I know it wasn't but im the La Parca so I'll make it out of all this shitty pain stronger I mean even death has rejected me a couple of times so yah I'll pull through...

Then there's that bullshit La Parca pulled on my flower nx that wasn't supposed to happen and im actually angry at him for pulling that stunt it was very reckless of him I mean what if he hurt her or she miscarried when she saw him nx....I know I can't control his movements but what he did was fucken out of order why can't he hurt those who tries to harm me and those who are close to my heart nx.... I just hope my flower will wait for me cause I would hate to kill those boys that are interested at her I would really hate it....Anyway I know LA Parca went to play

and I don't even know what he did cause now he's worse than the day he went to pay Mbali a visit I just hope he stayed away from my flower and any of my family members cause if he did he knows that I'll kill myself and have him go back to hell where he'll be tortured for eternity nx....Well now im on my way to the only man who knows how to put him back to sleep he's a good friend of mine well more like a brother and he specializes in anything that has to do with the dark world he lives deep inside some thick jungle here in Guinea Bissau and only those he trusts are allowed to find his location cause if he doesn't know you or trust you he'll never let you find his location you can roam around the jungle until you get lost or get eaten by wild animals or jungle things which I can't say by name cause people think they are just myths where else they are alive.....anyway I got out of the car and immediately two of his zombies appeared out of nowhere then they turned and I followed them.....the walk was a bit of a distance but soon we arrived at his house and as soon as the illusion that covered the house disappeared then his beautiful house stood there.....well the illusion is made by his dark magic it makes the house to look like some haunted abandoned cabin in the middle of the jungle but as soon as it evaporates you'll see a beautiful big house with a beautiful garden with his zombies working on it anyway his zombies that I came with went to the back while I went to the door then the door opened before I can even knock and I went inside***

Voice: La Francophonie Au Nigéria Bienvenue Mon Frère J' Ai Ete En Attente por vous (the French speaking Nigerian welcome my brother I have been waiting for you)

I heard him speak but I couldn't see him then i smirked when he came out of the kitchen with an apron on....he smiled wide and opened his arms and I went to him and we hugged for some time

Me: Ruslan my brother....its good to be back....mmmh I smell fish stew and fried cassava

***he chuckled**

Ruslan: and palm wine to wet your throat

.
. .

****NARRATED****

Ray laughed

Ray: I can already feel my stomach grumbling

they laughed again

Ruslan: sit and let me dish for us

Ray nodded and he sat down.....soon Ruslan came with their food and they washed their hands and began eating and within record time they were finished they were now sitting in the lounge drinking their palm wine

Ruslan: I couldn't believe it when I found out that you have finally found love

Ray chuckled

Ray: mmmmh and I didn't even go looking for it

Ruslan: well true love finds you when you're not looking and not the other way around

Ray nodded

Ray: true!

Ruslan: and what your mother did nc nc nc

Ray clenched his jaws and Ruslan saw his eyes turning black and his skin changing colour and he raised his right palm towards Ray and recited some words in what is known as the forbidden language and La Parca backed down and Ray took control

Ruslan: you need to calm down brother no wonder La Parca is this restless

Ray sighed

Ruslan: she is dead brother and there's nothing me and you can do to bring her back all you need to do is accept and try to move on from it for your woman and your child's sake

Ray: easier said than done bro

Ruslan: well you took the first step by coming here so in good time all will be well

Ray chuckled

Ray: you would have made a good psychologist you know

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: and waste my good talents nah

***they laughed.... well Ruslan lives and breathes dark magic and he's good at it Him and Ray met at an auction of "dark world artifacts" by then Ray had already sold his soul to the devil and he was there as the devils errant boy to search and buy the "Spear of Destiny" the Spear of Destiny is known to possess immense power and it is also rumored to be the spear that was used to stab Jesus Christ before he was nailed to the cross so even the devil was/is searching for it just like most humans especially in Europe and USA did..... Well the thing is Ray sold his soul to the devil for wealth and after a few years he realized that money become useless if your soul is owned by the devil the devil made Ray to do evil and despicable things just because he knew

Ray couldn't say no since he owned his soul and all that happened after Deshaun's father died their business went downhill and him and Deshaun were left high and dry until someone introduced him to a brotherhood named "sons of Lucifer" and the only thing you needed to do was to sell your soul to the devil but he didn't think about the consequences that came with the decision he took. So that day Ruslan could see that Ray's soul was caged and control by evil powers and because he could also see that Ray has a strong will to fight he decided to help him cause he knew one day Ray was gonna be a good ally to him and yes indeed he became one cause Ray then saved him by cashing in on one of the favors owed to him by the devil's front man who is the gate keeper's master in the dark world and they spared Ruslan's life..... Well Ruslan owed the master and failed to pay up so hell was what waited for him until Ray saved him.

Back to Ruslan well he told Ray what he needed to do to get his soul back and he told him when his idea works then Ray will owe him big time and since Ray had nothing to lose he agreed cause he was tired of the life he was living and being used as a puppet.....so he sold an idea to the devil's front man(the master) that he will kill his most hated rival that gave him sleepless night cause he was after his position at all cost and Ray said he only wanted his soul back as payback and if he wants him to also wipe off the enemies' entire kingdom too then the master will owe him four favors on top of the main request being his soul....What the master knew is the man Ray was talking about was dangerous and he did tried to take him out numerous times but the guy was always one step ahead of him and he was now being a pest that the Devil himself was getting impressed by his hunger for power which meant he might give him his position and he couldn't have that... Well Ruslan knew all this so he was willing to help Ray kill master's enemy cause he saw his own death in the near future and he believed Ray was gonna be his only savior so after the master agreed even though he couldn't believe that Ray could even get an inch closer to his enemy cause he was that good then he was immensely shocked to hear that his enemy has fallen along with his kingdom.....

Ruslan used his dark magic to make Ray invincible to the naked eyes and that's how Ray did his job....The master paid up by telling the devil what Ray did and since the devil was impressed by Ray then he offered the master's position to Ray which made the master to get angry but Ray refused the offer cause he was done with the dark world and he told the devil to pay up so he got his soul back but you know nothing is at it seems with the devil he never keeps to his word and he's not an honorable being so after giving Ray his soul back he then casted a demon inside Ray

and attached it to his soul meaning the only way it will leave his body is if Ray dies it was his way of saying “you are free now but not entirely free” but since Ray wanted to leave the dark world behind he accepted the demon cause at least he had his soul back that’s all that mattered to him at that time and now the master owes him three favors and he’s back here to cash in on one of them.... well he’s a legend in the dark world for killing the Master’s enemy so that’s why he got the Gate Keepers’ numbers on speed dial***

Ruslan: so you know going back there is not a good idea right...I can try and find that peasant’s location and how he looks like now

Ray shook his head no

Ray: you know you might die if you do that bro and I can have that remember you still need to see my son and soon to be wife

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: and im sure you know one of the demons in you have already attached its self to him right...your son that is

Ray sighed and he rubbed his eyes

Ray: yeah....i shouldn’t have sold my soul to the devil bro look now my entire generation of males will have this curse all because of my love for money nx

Ruslan: what is done is done my brother all you need to do now is never forget what is needed to be done to put them on a tight leash for when im gone cause I wont live forever

Ray: gone to where?...mxm bro you no go die ooo...you’ll live until you see it fit to transfer your soul to another body just like that peasant Zambo did

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: you know you are not immortal so you wanna leave me alone on this cruel world?

Ray: then teach one of your trusted sons your dark magic so he takes after you for when we are gone so he’ll be there for my son

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: Andre is still young for this brother

Ray: then you better make sure you don’t die until he’s ready

they laughed

Ruslan: let’s go there’s no time remember tonight is the blood moon so we don’t want La Parca free or else what happened years back will happen again

they got up and went to his basement and the room had red and black candles lit all over and others surrounding the black casket coffin in the middle of the room that was on the floor.....Ray took off his clothes and he was only left with his boxers and he gave Ruslan his phone

Ray: I should be in here for only two weeks and please tell Serge to wait for me if he comes back before I wake up

Ruslan nodded and Ruslan came with a small clay bowl and it had a black liquid inside and a knife and a piece of cloth then he gave Ray the knife and Ray cut his hand and let his blood drip inside the bowl and he wrapped the cloth around his hand to cover the wound and he got inside the coffin and laid down on his back then Ruslan helped him drink the mixture and he went to put the bowl and knife away and Ray closed his eyes with his arms crossed on his chest then Ruslan started to chant a spell using the 'forbidden language' and the room started to become windy and voices of people were heard speaking all at once as he chanted the spell and after he was done he closed the coffin and drew crosses around the coffin and cast a spell on the crosses

Ruslan: you better come back stronger my brother

then he gently hit the top of the casket twice and he walked out locking the door on his way out

.
. .

*** Well the Spear of destiny is not a made up story guys I read somewhere that its real and it possesses immense powers and it is also believed that Adolph Hitler(the evil and twisted piece of shit that used to rule Germany) used it when he was in power after he stole it from a church in Italy or Spain then one of his trusted soldiers which was forced to fight for him against his will stole it and that's why he was defeated cause the power he possessed to control people from it faded***

52

INSERT.....52

.
. .

****NARRATED****

Mamiki's phone rang and even though she didn't recognize the numbers she answered

Mamiki: hello

Voice: Miki!

***she kept quiet a bit cause she knew the voice ***

Mamiki: Ja...James?

James: yeah how are you?

she was shocked no lies but then she cleared her throat

Mamiki: alive why are you calling me especially after so many years?

James: can we meet up and talk its important

Mamiki: why would I want to meet up with you?

she said it with a bit of an attitude

James: cause it's about our daughter

she laughed

Mamiki: which daughter James o sa nyako nnyela wankutlwa (don't bullshit me you hear me) didn't you tell me to abort?

James sighed

James: and I remember coming back to ask about her and you told me you gave her up for adoption

Mamiki: since I told you that then why are you calling me?

James: will you just calm down

Mamiki: don't tell me to calm down wena James do you know how much I suffered while you were busy with that shapeless thing you call a wife and now you are calling me go tlo mpotsa masepa (to tell me shit)

James: Mamiki I didn't call you so you can insult me I called so we can meet up and don't worry I don't want dilove back I just want to talk

she laughed bitterly

Mamiki: and who said im interested in anything you have to say mmmmh? And again I would rather die than to get back with you so don't flatter yourself shem

James sighed

James: can we meet up please...it's really important

Mamiki: mxm I'll think about it and get back to you nx

***then she dropped the call and sighed....she asked herself what was so important that would make him want to meet up with her after so many years and why did he say it's about their daughter what if he found her.....she asked herself all this then she clicked her tongue and got up from her chair and she took her nose and mouth cover she put it on and went to her mother's bedroom....she was using it cause the smell in that bedroom would make one vomit ***

Mamiki: mama...mama

she shook her gently

Koko: mmmmh

Mamiki: tsoga (wake up)

she groaned with pain as she tried to turn since she was facing the wall...Mamiki also helped her...she was worse than before and now her skin was rotting and peeling off most of her skin were it peeled off was pink in color with black spots and the smell was horrible she's refusing to go to the hospital cause she said she's now waiting for death to take her cause she knows no one can help her

Koko: keng? (what?)

Mamiki: you wont believe who called me just now....James

Koko: whi...which James?

she said wincing in pain

Mamiki: nx naledi's so called father

Koko: mmmmh...what...what did he want?

Mamiki: he wants to see me he said its about Naledi.....can you believe he said " its about OUR daughter"

she mimicked his voice then she clicked her tongue

Mamiki: wantlwaela James truu Ma se shimane sele santlwaela nx

Koko: ke...ke seshimane byang a kgonne go go imisa Mamiki? (how can you say he's a sissy when he managed to impregnate you Mamiki?)

Mamiki: Ma please tuu

koko winced in pain as she moved a bit

Koko: you should go and meet up with him Mamiki

Mamiki: for what Ma? that man left me high and dry with a pregnancy and after some years he has the nerve to call me and ask to meet up with me and talk about OUR daughter..... which daughter Ma mmmmh which daughter? the one he told me to abort?

she said with an angry voice

Koko: Mamiki ngwanaka... Batswana bare " phoso e tsamaya le mogatisi"

Mamiki shook her head no

Mamiki: ma you failed to forgive Naledi and have her comeback home and you expect me to forgive letlakala le bareng ke James (that piece of shit called James)

koko sighed

Koko: just go see Naledi's father Mamiki and leave me to deal with my own demons.....you've been taking out your anger and hurt that man made you go through on to Naledi ever since she was born and now the culprit wants to see you so go and tell him how you really felt all those years and offload all that is in your chest so that you can heal and have a good mother and daughter relationship with Naledi

Mamiki: eng?(what?).....i would never have a relationship with that....

koko interrupted her

Koko: just go bring me my porridge im hungry o tlogele go bolela matlakala (and stop talking nonsense)

she said closing her eyes leaving Mamiki pissed off..... Well James did go to Heath and Naledi's house for dinner and him and Naledi did talk and she did offload what was on her chest and she agreed to let him do the ceremony for her

.
. .
.

Well Mamiki and James were now sitting in a restaurant Mamiki did call James the following day and told him its fine they can meet she spend the whole night thinking about him...besides the fact that she hates him she also was curious as to how he looks like now and exactly what is it that he wanted to talk to her about that concerns Naledi

Mamiki: mmmmh im here now bolela (talk)

James: still feisty as ever I see

Mamiki: mxm...onsenyetsa nako man James (you're wasting my time)...just talk already

she said that with a frown on her face

James: why are you this bitter Mamiki?

Mamiki: oska mpotsa nyoso James (don't tell me nonsense James) talk so I can leave I don't have all day nx

James just shook his head looking down

James: I found her

Mamiki: you found who?

James: Naledi our daughter

her eyes popped out

James: and guess what she looks just like me but more like my late mother

He sighed

James: look I know you lied to me about her whereabouts and I also know that I was wrong to tell you to abort but Mamiki I came back to my senses...why did you lie to me when I came back for the two of you

Mamiki: cause you didn't deserve to be in our lives

James shook his head

James: you know Mamiki Naledi told me what you and that useless mother of yours put her through and...

she interrupted him

Mamiki: you are calling my mother useless James?

she said raising her voice a bit

James: yes she is...infact both of you are useless

Mamiki: you know what I didn't come here so you can insult me wankutlwa (you hear me)

she said getting up and James grabbed her hand tight

James: SIT!

***he said with a firm tone ***

Mamiki: I WILL NOT SIT HERE FOR NONSE...

he interrupted her

James: I SAID SIT MAMIKI!

he said it with a commanding tone and Mamiki clicked her tongue and sat down

James: since she was eight years old Mamiki...eight fucken years old I have been looking for her after you told me you gave her up for adoption.....by now I would have made it up to her I would have been there for her send her to the best schools.....i would have taken care of her taken care of the two of you....in fact I wanted to take you as my second wife so we can be a family but no what did you do you fucken lied to me

he clenched his jaws looking at her

James: do you know I searched for her all over south Africa I searched for her at orphanages I contacted adoption agencies and even went to consult to a sangoma so I can have her back so we can be a family cause I kind of understood why you gave her up I wanted to find her more for you cause I thought you gave her up for adoption cause you couldn't take care of her but no you knew where she was all along....what kind of a woman are you mmmmh

Sponsored

I wanted to find her more for you cause I thought you gave her up for adoption cause you couldn't take care of her but no you knew where she was all along...what kind of a woman are you mmmmh what kind of a human being are you Mamiki?

he said all that with an angry voice and Mamiki's tears ran down her cheeks

Mamiki: you abandoned me James you told me to abort

James: and im owning up to that isn't it...i came back to my senses Mamiki I came back and asked for forgiveness and I asked you to give me a second chance to be there for the both of you but what did you do

Mamiki: I was still angry

he shook his head

James: anyway what is done is done I called you here to tell you that Naledi is married and she's even pregnant with twins

her eyes popped out

Mamiki: wha...what?

James: what did you expect? you and your mother treated her like trash and then disowned her right?

Mamiki: so she ran to daddy to tell him how much of monsters my mother and I are mmmmh? nx she's always been ungrateful so im not surprised

James just shook his head then he chuckled

James: anyway the guy she's married to wants to pay magadi (dowry) for her and I also want to introduce her to my family and ancestors

Mamiki: let me guess she's married to some good for nothing man who can't even take care of her like he's supposed to...and ooh what about your figureless wife mmmmh does she even know about your illegitimate child?

James chuckled

James: well as for my wife it's none of your business and concerning "my son in law" well for your own information Naledi is married to one of the richest young men in the country and she lives in a mansion and she's treated like the princess she is

she swallowed hard

James: anyway this Friday im introducing her to my family and on Saturday im introducing her to my ancestors....im gonna do anything in my powers to have her forgive me and for her to allow me to be in her life and I pray you also repent and ask for forgiveness Mamiki cause whether you like it or not she's your only child...yes I know and I also know that your businesses got bankrupt and now you are back home....

she interrupted him

Mamiki: what happens in my life is none of your business James

James: it's my business cause I know why you kept Naledi close....i know what you and your wicked mother did....repent Mamiki it's only a matter of time before that evil mother of yours dies and you'll be left all alone....look i know I hurt you and I take full responsibility for that but you mistreating Naledi is all on you and karma is still gonna show you flames ask me I know

Mamiki: haha it's too late to play daddy James

she said bitterly

James: it's never too late Mamiki and hugging her for the first time in my life two night ago showed me that its not.....Naledi is my daughter and there is nothing and no one who will stop me from making sure that she forgives me and that she let me be part of her life

*** then he stood up and took out his wallet and put a couple of hundreds on the table and he walked away leaving Mamiki thinking hard about what he just said***

.
. .
. .

*** Baba and his wife were sitting in the dining room table eating lunch while holding a silly conversation when the door opened and two guards walked in holding Bab'dlamini who was walking slowly he looked flushed and weak and he was even sweating and shaking profoundly...then Baba and his wife quickly stood up and rushed to him***

Baba: bafo what happened to you?

he asked him but Bab'dlamini just groaned as if he's in pain

Ma: ooh nkosi yami....(ooh my God)

she exclaimed with her hands on top of her head and Bab'Dlamini just groaned as if he's in pain again and Baba looked at the two guards with questioning eyes

Guard1: we saw a car parking recklessly near the gate and we knew it was him cause we recognized the car and the number plate and when he got closer we could see something was wrong with him cause he was sweating and shaking

Baba: shit!

Guard2: where should we put him boss?

Baba: take him to the bedroom that is downstairs

they nodded and helped him walk to the bedroom

Ma: let me go prepare something light for him to eat

she quickly walked away and Baba went after them....after the guards put him gently on the bed they walked out and Baba took off Bab'Dlamini's shoes and he covered him with a throw blanket since he was shaking and he sat on the edge of the bed looking at him with a worried look on his face

Bab'Dlamini: I...i tri....tried Langa but he's just too strong

he said with a weak voice

Baba: who are you talking about bafo?

Bab'Dlamini: Za...Zambo.....he....he's evil Langa he...he now works with the dark world forces and he's coming for all of us

he told him and Baba frowned

Baba: Dlamini you are stronger than him we both know it

he shook his head no slowly

Bab'Dlamini: not anymore...he...he deals with dark magic now Langa and he has links to the dark world too and he showed me how powerful he is now by doing this to me

Baba rubbed his beard roughly getting angry

Baba: what did he do?

Bab'Dlamini: all I can tell you mfowethu(my brother) is that its time

Baba stood up quickly looking at him as if he just swore at him

Baba: what do you mean by that Dlamini?

he said breathing heavily

Bab'Dlamini: its time Langa

then he groaned in pain and Baba shook his head no pacing up and down then he took out his phone

Bab'Dlamini: don't call a doctor for me he wont be able to help me.... just call my son Melusi for me

Baba: Siphon don't do this to me please bafo

he begged him with a pained voice then there was a knock on the door and Ma walked in with a tray on her hands that had a plate on it and when she saw her husband's face she then knew it was bad

MA: I...I brought you some food Jama (clan name)

then Bab'dlamini coughed out blood and Baba quickly went to him and he took out his handkerchief and wiped the blood off

Ma: ooh nkosi yami...haaayi.....Langa kwenzakalani? (ooh my God....Langa whats going on?)

then she put the tray on the night stand

Bab'Dlamini: ngicela unakakele indodana yami makoti (please take care of my son)

Ma: hai...hai Jama... ungakhulumi kanjalo please (don't talk like that)

Bab'Dlamini: icilongo liye ladlalwa MaKhumalo and ngilizwile (the trumpet has played and I heard it)

she shook her head no repeatedly with tears gushing out

Ma: whatever it is you can fight it Jama...please ngiyakucela (im begging you)

Bab'Dlamini: I...I tried our wife and I failed that bastard Zambo is stronger and only one person can defeat him.....plea...please excuse me and my brother we have some things to discuss

Baba: mkami call Melusi and tell him he should be here as in now....and tell him about his father's condition

Ma: ok

she sniffed and she went to Bab'Dlamini and kissed his forehead

Ma: this can't be it Jama....please try to fight it

then she walked out crying and Baba sat down defeated

Bab'Dlamini: take Melusi to the cave for the ritual before im buried and let him know off all the things I did for the family that he should also do....he's still young Langa so teach him well and make sure he marries the mother of his son she's good for him.....

Baba interrupted him

Baba: stop Siphon please

he said with a breaking voice

Bab'Dlamini: its time bafo at least im privileged to say goodbye while others don't have that privilege....

Baba: im not ready to let you go bafo...im not....i cant...

he said with tears running down his cheeks

Bab'Dlamini: you know I'll always be with you mfowethu....you need to be strong for Melusi and Mbalenhle

Baba looked at him

Baba: what about Mbali?

Bab'Dlamini: Zambo

Baba: shit!

Bab'Dlamini: you...you need to trust that boy Raymond cause he loves her to a point that he could even sell his soul to the devil just to save her.....yes he has a dark...dark past and the things he did in the past are bone chilling but he loves her Khumalo and will always protect her and I know deep down you know this

Baba: is her life in danger Dlamini?

Bab'Dlamini: I've said enough on the matter....just know he's gonna be back and when he does let him do whatever he needs to do to help her

Baba: Dlamini.....

Bab'Dlamini: Melusi is your son alone now Langa so it's up to you and Bongani to show him the right path

he coughed out blood again and Baba wiped it off again with his handkerchief

Bab'dlamini: this...this is all im supposed to tell you mfowethu now I need to rest....wake me up when Melusi gets here

he groaned in pain and he closed his eyes and Baba's tears continued to run down his cheeks as he watched his brother from another mother with a pained and broken look on his face

.
. .
.

after a few hours Melusi arrived....it was late in the afternoon

Melusi: Ma....Baba

Ma hugged him tight and she just cried.....Melusi knew what was about to happen....his ancestors showed him to prepare him and even though its hard to accept the outcome that is about to happen he knew it was time.....after the hug with Ma he shook Baba's hand

Baba: lets go see him...he has been waiting for you

Melusi nodded and they went to the bedroom and they found him lying there breathing hard with sweat all over his face

Baba: I'll give you two sometime alone

Melusi nodded and Baba squeezed his shoulder and he walked out and Melusi sat down on the edge of the bed

Melusi: baba!

Dlamini opened his eyes slowly cause he knew who was calling him and he smiled weakly

Bab'Dlamini: you...you came?

Melusi nodded

Bab'Dlamini: they showed you?

Melusi nodded again with tears running down his cheeks

Bab'Dlamini: I want you to always listen to Langa and Bongani cause they'll never lead you astray and make sure my surname never dies.....i want more grandchildren Melusi and I'll watch over you and them from the other side

Melusi's tears continued to run down his cheeks

Melusi: wha...what happened baba?

Bab'Dlamini: Zambo the man I once told you about.....but don't worry he'll reap what he sows one of these days

Melusi: he...the evil spirits surrounding him baba he...

Baba held his hand and squeezed it a bit tight

Baba: trust him cause he loves Mbali more than he loves himself he just haven't found the right way to express it to her in a right manner and he'll avenge for me..... something is gonna happen and I want you to wait for him and the rest will become clear to you ok

Melusi nodded

Melusi: im not ready baba.....im not ready to lose you

he said that and he cried and Bab'Dlamini also let his tears flow

Bab'Dlamini: have them check on Mbali and remember ndodana trust the Khumalo more than you trust yourself and you'll be fine cause they'll never let anyone hurt you...with me they can't save me cause the trumpet has already been played for me..... yiba namandla Dlamini futhi ukhumbule ukuthi ngizohamba nje ukujoina okhokho bami.....sizobonana futhi emaphupheni akho (be strong Dlamini and remember im only going to join my ancestors and I will see you again in your dreams)

***then he looked up and took his last breath with one tear running from the side of his face dripping on the pillow and his grip on Melusi's hand loosened and Melusi just cried a heart piercing cry with his head rested on his father's upper body then baba walked in and he closed his eyes and he bowed his head with tears running down his cheeks as he could see his best friend brother and confidante is gone ***

Melusi: LUSIBALUKHULU.

MALANDELA NGOKULANDELA IZINKOMO

ZAMADODA

JAMA KASJADUNKOMO ZIDLA EKHAYA NGOBA

ZESWELE ABELUSI

MADLOVU MAGADUZELA MAGWENYANE NKOSI MZIZI

MDINEKA NYANYAMSUDUKA

INKONEKAZ'EVELE NGOBUSW'EMGEDENI.....

he called out his clan names while clapping his hands and Baba joined him and they recited the rest of the clan names.....after they were done baba went out and came back with a basin full of water and two washing cloths and they cleaned him up and put his corpse accordingly and they picked him from the bed and they put his body on top of the sheet that they laid on top of the floor rug that was far from the bed but closer to the wall and they wrapped his body with that sheet....then they put a brick pressing the top of his head and another one pressing under his feet and they covered him with another white sheet.....they then removed the bed covers and pillow cases and lit a candle and put it not far from his head and they walked out to go dispose of the water and put away they bed covers.... and as soon as Ma saw them she wailed out loud and Baba went to her to comfort her

Melusi: Baba please call the boys and tell them to go check on Mbali now

then he walked away to dispose of the dirty water and Baba called Nhlaka*

.
. .
.

Nhlaka was now knocking on Mbali's door and after the third knock he decided to open for himself using his keys(all her brothers have spare keys to her apartment) since Mbali wasn't opening the door then he went inside and the TV was playing...his heart was heavy as Baba told him of Bab'Dlamini's passing and now he was also worried about Mbali cause Baba sounded like she was in danger

Nhlaka: Mbali!

***he called out to her and she didn't answer and his heart started beating fast ***

Nhlaka: MBALI!.....MBALI!....MBALI WHERE ARE YOU?

he said going to her bedroom and he got in and found her sleeping on the bed on top of the covers and he immediately panicked and he rushed to her and shook her

Nhlaka: Mbali...princess wake up!

***she moved a bit ***

Nhlaka: wake up princess!

she slowly opened her eyes but she didn't look at her brother but her eyes wondered about the room then her brother helped her sit up

Nhlaka: Mbali...hey look at me....what wrong?...are you ok?

she still didn't look at him or answer him....she continued to look around then a smile formed on her lips then out of the blue a loud laugh escaped her mouth which left Nhlaka looking at her with his eyes popped out....she continued to laugh then she would stop and become serious for a few seconds then she would laugh out loud again

Nhlaka: pri...princess?

Mbali: princess....princess...princess!

she chanted clapping her hands then she laughed again

Nhlaka: fuck nooo.....no...no... this is not happening.....

he said to himself with a shaking voice moving away from the bed then he took out his phone to make a phone call

53

INSERT.....53

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

*** This whole thing of Ray going AWOL has been taking a toll on Heath and Jabu. Mr Masden called and he was told about Ray's disappearance but Mat assured him that he will come back when he's ready and that its not the first time he did this..... Now Jabu is sitting in the lounge with Amo and she's watching TV while he's lost in his thoughts. He's also worried about Mbali cause he tried to call her but her numbers send him straight to voicemail and Mat told him that he saw through the cctv footage in her apartment complex that her brothers were carrying her to the car but she didn't look like she had passed out or anything she looked like she was laughing hysterically..... now they are both worried about her cause they both have a bad feeling about the whole thing.....they dont want to worry Heath about all this cause he has his own things to worry about like the fact Naledi was due to meet her father's side of the family another thing is Heath also told Naledi about Lerato and Karabo being James daughters and ever since then she has been tense especially to the fact that she's married to her half-sister's ex and that her half-sister hates her existence***

Amo: baby are you ok?

she asked Jabu with a concerned look on her face and Jabu sighed and pulled her closer to him and he kissed the side of her head

Jabu: yeah im ok im just worried about Ray

he truthfully told her

Amo: you know I pray for his safe returned every morning when I wake up and every night before I sleep

he tightened the grip around her

Jabu: I love you Amo a lot ok

she nodded

Amo: and I love you too

Jabu: and thank you for praying for him

she nodded....well Jabu hasn't eaten the forbidden fruit as yet and that's because his mind is always occupied by everything that's going on he doesn't want loose it and go all rough on her.... he wants her first time to be perfect but they do have oral sex which lately isn't enough for Amo she feels like she's ready but at the same time her conscious mind always remind her that sex before marriage is a sin before God so she just throws her desires at the back of her mind

Jabu: I want you to meet my son one of these days

*** he said to her out of the blue and she tensed***

Jabu: relax rato laka (my love) he doesn't bite

Amo: he's a teenager babe and you know how they are

Jabu: well my boy behaves cause he knows I don't take shit

she sighed

Jabu: and plus I was thinking once I put a ring on it that he should come live with us

she froze and swallowed

Jabu: relax my love I know Sibusiso he's a good boy and I have always wanted to live with him but I just wanted to live with him in a warm and homely house filled with happiness and love but I couldn't live with him cause none of the woman I dated before you deserved to meet him or become Mrs Me

she sighed

Amo: what...what if he doesn't like me or he hates me cause he will think im trying to take his mother's place

Jabu: first of all he'll like you in fact he'll love you and secondly it will make me happy if he could call you mom cause even though that bitch Thembi is still alive she has never been a mother to him my own mother is the one that's been taking care of him even when I was still in prison

he chuckled

Jabu: I remember I left her some money to use to take care of Sbu before I was arrested cause I knew I was going in and not coming out anytime soon but guess what she left Sbu with my mother and she used my money on her boyfriends and friends forgetting about him Heath is the one that made sure my mother and son never lack anything or sleep hungry so don't tell me about that useless thing even though I won't push it or force things but I would give anything for him to regard you as his mother

she didn't say anything she just kept quiet cause all this was just too much for her

Jabu: no pressure my love for now I just want you two to meet cause ya'll are gonna be in each other's lives forever

Amo: forever huh?

he chuckled

Jabu: yes forever

then he kissed her lips...then her phone rang and she reached for it and she didn't recognize the numbers but she answered anyway

Amo: hello

Voice: hey Amo its Max

her eyes popped out and she froze and swallowed cause she only knew one Max and she also remembered his voice cause it was scratchy in a sexy way

Amo: ummm...what...what can I do for you?

she thought of walking out of the lounge for some privacy but it would be rude to Jabu and knowing him he will make a big deal out of it

Max: ummm can we meet up and talk lets say tomorrow it's really important

Amo: ummm I cant...i mean...

then Jabu snatched the phone from her and put it on loudspeaker

Max: look your brother told me what happened and I just wanna make sure you are ok I know you might not believe me but I fell in love with you the day we first met when i came for dinner at your father's house with my parents.... remember the accidental kiss we shared well I must confess it wasn't accidental at all I just wanted to kiss you that night

Amogelang froze with fear all over her face because of the look on Jabu's face....yes she was shocked by Max's confession but that look on Jabu's face was just scary....she wanted to tell Max to stop talking but words failed her as Jabu's eyes were now red with rage

Max: so to me it wasn't an arranged marriage and I know you don't feel the same way but please give me a chance to make....

Jabu interrupted her

Jabu: are you done boy

Max kept quiet surprised by the male voice

Max: who's this? Amo? Amo are you still there

Amo: ummm ye..yeah look Max

Jabu interrupted her

Jabu: if you value your life boy you will take your stupid and useless love and shove it inside your fucken ass hole and stay the fuck away from my woman I hope im making myself clear nx

then he dropped the call and gave Amo a deadly look and he got up taking her phone with and walked away leaving Amo shaking with tears in her eyes

.
. .

It was late at night a few minutes before midnight when Jabu walked inside their bedroom with the smell of nicotine all over him he found Amo sleeping with used tissues next to her face which was clear to him that she was crying....he sighed and he took off his smelly clothes and got on top of the bed and he turned her to lay on her back and that's when she woke up

Amo: Ja...Jabu

he just got on top of her and he looked into her red eyes

Jabu: did you and that boy kiss that time you told me your father invited some pastor and his family for dinner....that time you cancelled on me

he wasn't shouting but his voice was stern...then tears ran down on the side of her face as she nodded

Jabu: you kissed him Amogelang?

Amo: no....he kissed me and when I reprimanded him he said it was an honest mistake he just wanted to perk my cheek..... I swear Jabu

she said crying and Jabu just looked at her with a serious face

Jabu: and wa no bona gore o didimale right? (and you decided to keep quiet right?)

Amo: im sorry Jabu I...all I could say to you is that I disliked the pastor's son I was afraid to tell you the real reason why...im sorry

he clenched his jaws

Jabu: if you ever keep shit from me ever again o tlo bona masepa wankutlwa Amogelang (you'll regret it you hear me)

she nodded quickly

Jabu: nx....luister hier die dang....(listen here this thing)

he said grabbing her pussy

Jabu:is mine and mine alone including the rest of your body and if you ever let another man touch you o tlo bona masepa jy verstaan? (you'll see flames you hear me)

she nodded again

Jabu: you don't wanna mess with me Amogelang cause ge nka tlala phinya o tlo nyella (cause if I get mad you'll shit yourself) I told you what I expect from you and you also told me what you expect from me so a re ska tlwaelana masepa ok (so lets not step on each other's toes)

*** she nodded then he got off her and he went to switch off the lights and he slept next to her facing up....she just swallowed hard and she turned the other way and she just cried silently***

.
. .

***The following day this thing)

he said grabbing her pussy

Jabu:is mine and mine alone including the rest of your body and if you ever let another man touch you o tlo bona masepa jy verstaan? (you'll see flames you hear me)

she nodded again

Jabu: you don't wanna mess with me Amogelang cause ge nka tlala phinya o tlo nyella (cause if I get mad you'll shit yourself) I told you what I expect from you and you also told me what you expect from me so a re ska tlwaelana masepa ok (so lets not step on each other's toes)

*** she nodded then he got off her and he went to switch off the lights and he slept next to her facing up....she just swallowed hard and she turned the other way and she just cried silently***

.
. .

The following day its Friday and around 11 in the morning Heath Naledi and their kids got in their car and drove to James' house.....James' elder brothers Karabo Lerato and Mapula were waiting for herwell James told Mapula that if she causes a scene or if she becomes mean to Naledi he will tell the whole family including Lerato and Karabo the truth about their real paternity and ever since then she has been behaving good which was odd to everyone especially her daughters cause they know how their mother is.....more especially to the fact that she didn't cause a scene when James told them that he has a daughter out there and he wants to introduce her to them and the rest of the family.....they were more shocked when they tried to cause a scene and their mother reprimanded them

Lerato: Ma I don't understand how you can be ok with dad bringing his bastard child to your house

Mapula: Lerato weee I thought I told you to behave today didn't i.....what happens between my husband and I is none of your business

Karabo: but mama this is not you

Mapula: YHO BATHONG ETSWANG MO GO NNA PLEASE (leave me alone)...YOUR HALF SISTER IS COMING TODAY AND THE TWO OF YOU BETTER BE ON YOUR BEST BEHAVIOR I DON'T WANT UNNECESSARY DRAMA LANKUTLWA? (you hear me)

***then she walked out of the kitchen going to the back yard and she wiped her falling tears....she wondered how James found out and how long he has known that Lerato and Karabo are not his her heart was beating fast cause if James spills the beans all hell will break lose cause Karabo and Lerato's real father is a ruthless man and she's sure that when he finds out that she kept his children from him she's dead cause he asked her multiples times if the pregnancies belonged to him and she said no...

Inside the house the girls were in the kitchen still stunned by their mother's behaviorthen there was a knock on the door and James got up from the couch and he went to open the door with a smile on his face and there stood his seed***

James: the Owoh-Masdens

he said shaking Heath's hand and he kissed Omphile's forehead and he picked Lesedi up.....well Heath introduced the girls to him that night he was invited to dinner and he told them he's their grandfather

Heath: Mr Moeketsi

he said walking in

James: Naledi

Naledi: hi

they side-hugged briefly and Naledi also walked in with Omphile and she greeted the elders in the lounge after Heath greeted them and James closed the door since it was chilly outside since winter just started

James: my brothers this is her.... her name is Naledi and im sure you can see the resemblance
they nodded looking straight at her....they couldn't believe how similar she looked like their late mother....it was like they were looking at the younger version of her

Jerry: I cant believe this....its like im looking at Ma's younger version

James: I told you

he said smiling

James: and this is her husband Heath Owoh-Masden and their daughters Omphile and Lesedi

Tshenolo: welcome our in law

Heath nodded respectfully

Tsheko: Naledi our brother told us what happened and how you were conceived and im apologizing on his behalf for his decisions back then....he told us about you years back and he asked us to help him look for you since your mother said she gave you up for adoption but we couldn't find you....im just glad he has finally found you and I also hope you forgive him as he's remorseful for his decisions back then....you are family Naledi and we would all like to be part of your life as you look so much like our late mother your late grandmother....when she passed on it was sudden and we weren't prepared but now its like she reincarnated through you
Naledi wiped her tears

Jerry: your father here told us what you went through my daughter but please find it in your heart to forgive him....i know its not easy but try....and our in law thank you for taking care of our daughter

Heath: you don't have to thank me sir Naledi is my life and she knows that

they nodded

James: I would like for you to meet my wife and two daughters....Heath told me you already met your sisters before but I want to introduce you to them officially as my daughter

Naledi sighed and nodded slowly and Heath squeezed her hand gently and he whispered to her

Heath: relax I got you....i love you ok

***she nodded but she wasn't looking forward to seeing Lerato and Karabo....when Heath told her who James' other kids were she couldn't believe it especially to the fact that she's now

married to her half-sister's ex but Heath assured her that its all good and he got her back and because she trusts Heath she decided to not worry herself too much about it***

James: Mapula!

he called out to his wife and she emerged from the passage that led to the bedrooms

Mapula: my husband

she faked a smile

James: call Lerato and Karabo

she nodded and went to the kitchen leaving James' brothers and Heath shocked by her new respectful manner and calm attitude cause they know how she gets

Jerry: and then?

he asked looking at James

James: I put her on a tight leash

they chuckled along with Heath.... as for Naledi she was just waiting for the bomb that was about to explode....Mapula walked back in with Lerato and Karabo on her tail and as soon as Lerato saw Heath and Naledi in the lounge she frowned

Lerato: What the hell is she doing here MA?

she said breathing heavily

Mapula: Lerato behave please

Lerato: don't tell me to behave what is this man stealing whore doing in my father's house Ma

James: LERATO!

he reprimanded her

Lerato: dad this thing is...

Heath interrupted her

Heath: SAY ONE MORE WORD I DARE YOU!

he roared and Lerato looked at Heath with a trembling lip

Karabo: heeh motlholo! (I cant believe this)

she said clapping her hands once

James: MAPULA I TOLD YOU TO MAKE SURE YOUR DAUGHTERS BEHAVE DIDN'T I

he shouted at her

Mapula: lerato...Karabo what did I say

Lerato: MA YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND THIS THING....

Mapula Interrupted her

Mapula: I don't care! sit down and behave

she warned them and they sat down looking angry....James was angrily looking at Mapula cause he warned her to keep a tight leash on her daughters

Jerry: I knew something like this was gonna happen.... I mean my brother tried to instill respect on these girls but no their mother knew better and she just ruined them now look at all this...such disgrace nx

they all shook their heads with disgusted looks on their faces directed at Mapula....well they don't like Mapula and she knows it and the reason is she never respected them as her husband's brothers and she never hid it

James: well let me not waste your time.....i wanted to introduce you to my daughter Naledi

Lerato: askies what?

Tshenolo: you heard him!

Karabo: but dad she can't be your daughter

James: what's that supposed to mean.... listen here she's my daughter and you'll respect her!

they looked at their mother

Karabo: mama

she didn't say anything she just kept quiet.....yes she already hated Naledi and her sight made her want to puke especially because of the fact that she has albinism and that she looked like her late mother in law but that was the least of her worries her mind was on Pule Lerato and Karabo's biological father and what he will do when he finds out she lied to him

Lerato: it...it can't be....dad she can't be your daughter

James: well she is

Lerato: but dad she stole Heath from me and she's the reason why I lost my baby

Naledi looked at her with a frown on her face

Naledi: askies!

Heath squeezed Naledi's hand

Lerato: YES I CAUGHT YOU IN BED WITH MY MAN YOU STUPID WHORE

Heath: LERATO....THIS IS MY WIFE YOU HEAR ME....MY WIFE SO DON'T DARE ME....AND WHICH MAN ARE YOU TALKING ABOUT? WE BROKE UP AND YOU DECIDED TO COME TO MY HOUSE UNANNOUNCED SO DON'T TALK RUBBISH!

Lerato: Heath...

Heath: don't call my name please..... disrespect my wife one more time and I'll forget that this is your father's house and I'll do something I'll regret

Naledi breathed in and out and she looked at James

Naledi: I think we should leave cause I won't sit here and let your daughter speak to me in that manner in front of my daughters

Lerato: nx vele tsamaya (yes just go)

Mapula: LERATO!

she warned her

James: Naledi please don't...

she interrupted him

Naledi: I'll come back tomorrow for the ceremony

Heath: Obi m

she shook her head

Naledi: I wanna go home Heath please

he nodded then he looked at James' brothers

Heath: we would like to take our leave my in laws...we will see each other tomorrow

they sighed

Tsheko: we understand our in law... we apologize for the embarrassment

***Heath got up and he helped Naledi up and Omphile got up with Lesedi in her arms and

Omphile gave Lerato an angry look***

James: I'll see you off

they walked out without Naledi saying even one word to anyone

Lerato: Heath!

she said with breaking voice and Heath ignored her as they walked out

James: Naledi im sorry about what happened

Naledi: well I expected chairs flying and police being called cause I know she hates me so its ok

He sighed and opened his arms for her and they hugged briefly

James: I'll see you tomorrow

she nodded and James shook Heath's hand and he kissed Omphile and lesedi's foreheads and the Owoh-Masdens got inside their car and drove away and James walked inside the yard fuming with anger

James: WHAT DID I SAY TO YOU MAPULA!

he roared at her he didn't even care that his brothers are present

Mapula: I tried James

James: TRIED YA MASEPA! TRIED YA MASEPA MAPULA

Karabo: dad don't you dare talk to mama like that because of your bastard child

James: WHAT DID YOU JUST SAY KARABO

she kept quiet breathing hard

Mapula: Karabo didimala man (keep quiet)

Lerato: no mama

Mapula: LERATO!

James: NOW THE THREE OF YOU GO IN THERE AND PACK YOUR SHIT AND GET THE HELL OUT OF MY HOUSE NOW!

Lerato&Karabo: WHAT!

Mapula: Ja...James please don't do this

James clicked his tongue and he walked out and his brothers got up and Tshenolo and Jerry went after him while Tsheko stood next to Mapula with a disgusted look on his face

Tsheko: I told you one day he's gonna see you for who you really are and that day has finally come nx

then he went after his brothers leaving Mapula crying and Karabo and Lerato shocked by what their father just said

.
. .
.

*** everyone was standing not far from the bed were Mbali was lying staring into space blinking slowly every now and then.....they were now in KZN and she was no longer laughing for no reason ever since they got here she has been quietly staring into space without saying even a word....even if you call out her name she doesn't even look at you or acknowledge you....Ma has cried and fainted and now she was just sitting next to her at the edge of the bed looking at her as she just stared into space.....Bab'dlamini's body has already been taken to the mortuary and when the brothers asked Melusi to do something he told them the only person who can help her is Ray and when the brothers and Pops got worked up by that statement Baba second him and told them that they will wait for Ray and that's his final order and so to say a dark cloud is hanging over the Khumalo household is an understatement***

Nhlaka: baba how long should we wait for that bastard while our little sister is like this

Baba: Nhlaka I have spoken so don't get on my last nerve.....you are all here looking at her like she's some exotic animal in a private zoo instead of looking for that boy Ray.....have any of you tried to contact his brothers to ask about his whereabouts? so don't piss me off....i just lost my brother so don't make me take out my pain on you all now VOETSEK go look for that boy

they didn't move they just looked at him with clenched jaws

Baba: NGITHE VOETSEK MAN! WHY ARE YOU STILL HERE? NOW GO LOOK FOR THAT BOY BEFORE I UNLEASH MY WRATH ON YOU

he roared

Pops: boys just go

they huffed and walked out looking angry

Pops: they are just worried about their sister baba

Baba: and I told them what can help Mbali so instead of looking for that boy they are busy harassing Melusi for unnecessary shit....that boy just lost his father he doesn't need their shit right now nx

Ma: will he really help her Langa?

she asked crying

Baba: Dlamini said he will before he passed on

she nodded

Baba: lets go mkami you need to rest

she shook her head no

Ma: I cant leave her alone

Pops: I'll stay with her Ma don't worry go and rest please

she wiped her tears and she kissed her forehead and Baba helped her up and they walked out and pops sat on the edge of the bed and he looked at his princess with tears running down his cheeks....Baba later told him everything Dlamini told him and now all he felt was regret and anger....regret for letting himself take being disappointed about her getting pregnant especially for Ray to another level....and for pushing her only daughter away because of anger....he now wished he reacted better to the situation...he also wished he never got that angry at her and he wished he kept in touch with her.....at the same time he's angry that Zambo now has the guts to dare him like this....he now made a promised to himself that after Mbali gets better he's going to hunt for Zambo and he wont rest until he finds him

Pops: please come back to me Princess....please my love.....im sorry I let myself get that angry at you....im sorry please don't do this to daddy please snap out of it please my princess

he said with a breaking voice as he cried looking at Mbali who just stared into space blinking slowly

.
. .

NARRATED

*** Amo decided to call in sick at work and she's been down ever since she woke up in the morning... her and Jabu haven't spoken since morning and he even left for work at around 10 without saying anything to her and now she's been sitting outside in the patio at the back lost in thoughts...her mind kept on going back to what happened last night she couldn't believe Jabu reacted like that and that he even left this morning still grumpy and that he didn't even kiss her like he does every morning and that hurt her even now its past two in the afternoon and he hasn't checked up on her like he usually does.....then she thought of her mother's words the first time her mother called her for that meeting with her father that went downhill she remembers that her mother told her that she heard that she's living with a man and her advice to her was to never allow herself to play wife to a man that is not her husband cause it never ends well back then she didn't actually care or take her advice seriously cause she was worried about losing her family and all she wanted was to go back home but now her words were ringing in her head because of what happened last night and especially this morning when Jabu left without even eating the breakfast she prepared for him.

The thing is Jabu has always been gentle with her he always spoke to her in a loving manner so last night she was shocked and stunned with the way he spoke to her using even swear words when speaking to her she never thought she would see that side of him and it scared her no lies....she knows she's making an unnecessary big deal out of what happened but she never thought her Jabu would ever speak to her like that and now she doesn't even know if he still wants to be with her cause to her it sounded like he sees her as a cheat....The thing is Amogelang has never had a boyfriend yes as old as she is she has never dated before she did have a crush on some guy at church but unfortunately he only saw her as a sister(they had that brother Thabang and sister Amo kind of relationship) until the guy stopped attending their church and moved away because of varsity and even though they never dated cause he never saw like that he was the first and only guy she fell in love with even in secret then Jabu came along and now she's here....

Now she wondered what would happen to her if he decides to end things with her where will she go since she has no family and she's sure her father poisoned her relatives against her and that they might not even want to help her cause they respect him as a man of God...she sighed then bit her bottom lip cause it was now clear that its time she stood on firm by herself and became independent cause depending on other people might leave her homeless and alone someday...she wished her grandparents were all still alive cause she knows that they would have taken her in***

Jabu: whatever one sided conversation you are having in your brain must be deep

he said with his deep voice which startled her...she turned to look at him and he was standing by the opened sliding door leaning on the wooden door frame with his hands in his pockets

Amo: hi

then she turned back to sit like she did before he startled her

Jabu: I see you called in sick...jaive?(what's wrong?)

Amo: headache

she lied her sore heart was what was wrong with her

Jabu: mmmmh...did you take any medication?

Amo: mmmmh

she said nodding then she heard him move and then she felt his hands on her shoulders and her heart started beating fast not because of fear it's how he made her feel every time he touches her she can't even explain it in simple words

Jabu: it seems like lying is becoming a norm to you now Amogelang

He whispered in her ear and she froze and swallowed by now her nana was moist and she had a tickling feeling down there...then he walked around and he sat on top of the table facing her and he looked at her with a serious look on his face

Jabu: so why are you not at work?

she looked down

Amo: because my heart is sore

he tilted his head to the right still looking at her

Jabu: ova im listening (talk im listening)

she swallowed

Amo: I think I should move out and go look for a cheap flat somewhere close to work

Jabu: ooh?

she looked up at him surprised that that's all he had so say and she found him looking at her with a raised eyebrow then she cleared her throat

Amo: i... I think im getting too comfortable around here and I need to learn to be independent cause I have no family to run to when things gets tough you know....and last night and this morning showed me that it won't always be rosy with us and so I need to stand on my own for just in case....you know

Jabu: just in case what?

he said with a chilled out voice

Amo: we don't work out

she said that in low tone and he chuckled

Jabu: weeh Amo....keng o gogile lebake or.....?(did you smoke weed or....)

Amo: askies?

Jabu: onkutlwile man (you heard me)....keng you found my weed stash place in the house and helped yourself?

Amo: please don't insult me Jabu

she said with a frown on her face

Jabu: oooh but its fine for you to insult me?

he asked with a stern tone

Jabu: look ka verstana gore (i understand that) this relationship thing is new to you but mogirl you are one of the smartest chicks I know so this blond moment you have going on baffles me

she took offence and she got up but he stopped her

Jabu: sit ke sa ova!(sit im still talking)

he told her with a commanding voice and she sat still with tears in her eyes

Jabu: Amogelang first of all you let another man kiss you and what? you expect me to be happy about it?....and when I get pissed about it and react then you want to move out cause "you want to be independent" blah blah blah....leister hier mogirl (listen here girly) you don't wanna know what I do to girls who messes with me or cheat on me so you should be glad that this is my reaction...

she swallowed hard looking scared

Jabu: I told you a kena nako ya mantlwantlwane Amogelang (I told you I don't have time to play)....that I want commitment from you...didn't i

she nodded biting her bottom lip

Jabu: I also told you that im not some cheese boy who tolerates nonsense I know this is your first relationship and you might be clueless on how you should handle things so I'll pardon all this

nonsense and im gonna say this for the last time....a re ska tlwaelana masepa Amogelang.... and this shit ya go mover out and what not scrap it off ra utlwana right?

she nodded then he looked at her for some time without saying anything

Jabu: look I know you're hurt that I spoke to you like I did last night and left without saying a word to you or kissing you this morning and im sorry

she didn't say anything she quickly wiped a tear that fell from her cheek

Jabu: kao rata Amogelang and a lot....and what you did pissed me off and trust me I reacted the safest way possible cause I know I get too much ge ke tletse phinya (when im angry)..... look I dated distraatmate and crazy chicks before and in a way I expected masepa(shit) from bona so I knew how to deal with them ge batswa mo tseleng(when they fuck up) so I didn't expect to find out gore you let that shit happen between you and that boy and kept it from me

Amo: im sorry Jabu

Jabu: I know...im just....you are mine Amo you get that and I know you are a good girl so you better remain like that until death do us apart....so never again ok

she nodded

Jabu: now come here

she got up and sat on his lap and he kissed her lips

Jabu: don't ever threaten to leave me again wankutlwa? (you hear me?)

she sighed and nodded

Jabu: and for your own info....I'll never stop you from reaching your goals Amo cause ga ke batle cherry ya stlaela (cause I don't want a dumb woman)....so if you wanna go back to school I'll support you....even if you want to start a business I'll be your first investor as long as you're close to me.... ga ke batle a trophy wife Amo I want you to be yourself and to be loyal to me and to accept me as I am and to be my rock at all times cause like I told you my life sometimes becomes a roller coaster.... I want your love and loyalty at all times and for you to always include me in your prayers that's what I need and desire from you

she sighed

Amo: and that's what you'll get I promise....im sorry i just got emotional hurt and scared....im not used to you talking to me like you did even earlier and I thought you see me as a cheat now and that you don't wanna be with me anymore....im sorry for concluding things in my head

he kissed her

Jabu: its ok and im sorry too for scaring you baby

Amo: well you did scare me Jabu like yho....you even used swear words towards me

she sulked and he sighed

Jabu: askies my church girl I guess I need prayers cause eish baby letlhapa lephela le le mo
(swear words are always here)

***he said pointing at the tip of his tongue and Amo smiled shaking her head and Jabu
chuckled***

Jabu: askies ok

she nodded

Amo: askies too

Jabu: I love you

Amo: I love you too

then they kissed and Jabu got up with her in his arms

Amo: jabu!.....what are you doing?

***she said laughing and he walked inside ***

Amo: where are you taking me?

Jabu: you are going to make it up to me for letting that prick kiss you by giving me a nice head

she looked at him with her eyes popped out and he laughed then she joined him

Jabu: im serious I want to cum in your mouth so you better start with exercises of stretching wide
that tiny mouth of yours

.
. .
.

*** Well Mapula and her daughters ended up staying cause James' brothers calmed him down
and made him see reason and since he wasn't ready to tell them the truth about Lerato and
Karabo's paternity cause he didn't want anything to disrupt Naledi's ceremony the following day
and her lobola negotiations the following week so he let them stay and things have been tense in
the house as Lerato and Karabo kept asking themselves why their father reacted the way her did
and why he even wanted to kick them out like that....anyway the following day things went well
during the introduction ceremony of Naledi to her ancestors and Lerato and Karabo made sure
they leave early in the morning cause they were against the whole thing so they made sure they
don't avail themselves to help around the house.

The following week passed quickly and Ray was still nowhere to be seen and Mbali was still the
same she didn't talk or eat on her own or even go to the bathroom on her own....Ma even had to

buy adults diapers for her cause she was now messing on herself.... and during the week the Khumalo brothers Baba Pops and Melusi went to the mountain like Bab'dlamini ordered and they did the usual ritual of introducing Melusi to the beasts and also linking Melusi's blood with all the Khumalo men's blood and to also introduce Melusi to the spirit of the witchdoctor.....its Saturday and the following day which is Sunday Bab'dlamini is going to be laid to rest. Anyway today (Saturday) it's lobola negotiations day for Naledi and even the Owoh-Madens' arrived on Friday along with Mj....now they are standing outside the gate with Heath's grandfather (Nomvula's father) as he will be part of the negotiating men for the Owoh-Masden they were waiting to be allowed to enter in the yard by the Moeketsis..... Well Naledi spend the night at the Moeketsi residence with Thandi her best friend Omphile and Lesedi while Heath MJ and Jabu spend a night at a nearby BnB just so they can be closer to Naledi and the kids.....Well as for Lerato and Karabo they were nowhere to be seen they didn't even sleep at home this time. Anyway right now Jabu Mj and Heath are in a car on the other side of the road waiting for the negotiations to happen so Heath can take Naledi home cause the previous day she wasn't feeling well***

Naledi: have they allowed them to come in mntase?

Thandi: not yet

Naledi sighed

Naledi: why are they doing this Thandi Mj and Heath are in a car on the other side of the road waiting for the negotiations to happen so Heath can take Naledi home cause the previous day she wasn't feeling well***

Naledi: have they allowed them to come in mntase?

Thandi: not yet

Naledi sighed

Naledi: why are they doing this Thandi I mean Heath is already my Husband im even using his surname for God's sake

she said with an annoyed voice

Thandi: relax will you I mean you know how uncles are and like you said you are already his wife so you have nothing to worry about

***Naledi sighed ***

Thandi: what's wrong Ledi you seem off and I've seen you've been like this since yesterday

she sighed again...as for Omphile she was busy on her phone chatting with her friends on Whatsapp while Lesedi was busy with Naledi's phone doing God knows what

Naledi: i...i just have a bad feeling and at the same time I kinda feel some sort of guilt with this Lerato issue

Thandi: what guilt Naledi first of all you didn't take Heath from her...this whole shit is between her and Heath and since Heath doesn't even give a damn about her feelings then you shouldn't too.....their relationship was doomed anyway Naledi believe me it was just a matter of time nje before Heath dumped her.....she's too full of herself and she looks down on people and she despised and looked down on our family cause we are not privileged like her and she made it known that she wanted nothing to do with us and you know how big Heath is on family

Naledi sighed

Naledi: still Thandi now I just found out that she's my half-sister and I can already imagine the gossip going on in this yard cause im sure by now they know that im married to Lerato's ex whom "I stole from her"

Thandi: and you care because?

Naledi: bathong Thandi

Thandi: hae Naledi...Heath a se boyfriend ya hao (Heath is not your boyfriend) or your fiancé he's your husband I mean even home affairs acknowledges that so oska nkwatisa assomblief (don't make me mad please) batho ba ga ba go rekele bupi le seshebo (these people don't buy you food) so fuck them hao

Omphile: haah Rakgadi wa rogana (aunty you are swearing)

Naledi laughed lightly

Thandi: askies nonos it's just these people ba nkwatisa man (they are making me mad)

then they heard commotion in the house

Thandi: let me go check what's going on

she went to check and came back with a smile on her face

Thandi: finally they were allowed in

Naledi: eish finally!

.

.

.

*** well after the greetings and introductions the negotiations commenced and as they were busy discussing the amount Lerato budged in the lounge breathing heavily...well Heath Jabu and Mj saw her walking in but they didn't think she was gonna do what she's about to do***

Tsheko: and now?

Lerato: sirs my name is Lerato and im sorry to disturb ya'll but this negotiations can't go on

Mr.Masden: excuse me?

James: LERATO!

he warned her

Lerato: no dad they need to know the kind of witch they came here to pay lobola for.... that girl is evil and she's the reason my baby is dead and on top of that she stole Heath from me

Mkhulu just chuckled shaking his head

Mkhulu: the devil is a liar

James: GET OUT OF HERE LERATO!

Lerato: no dad Heath is mine and that albino witch bewitched him

then she looked at the Owoh-Masdens

Lerato: please don't allow Heath to make the worst mistake of his life please...she's evil im telling you

Tsheko: ai.... waitsi ne ke re metlholo e fedile ka bo Rakgolo moshe (I can't believe this) but no....

he said shaking his head

Chioke: my brothers maybe we should listen to....

Mr Masden raised his hand to stop him and he looked at Lerato with a serious look on his face

Mr.Masden: young lady listen here and listen good.... you coming here to embarrass yourself and your father and uncles by calling Naledi a witch won't change anything...

she interrupted him

Lerato: im... im not lying she...

he interrupted her

Mr.Masden: IM STILL TALKING DON'T INTERRUPT ME!

he said with a stern voice and she quickly kept quiet looking down

Mr.Masden: as I was saying....Naledi is our daughter in law cause already she's legally married to our son now you delaying or you trying to make sure these negotiations don't go through won't change anything

tears ran down her cheeks and James got up looking angry and he grabbed Lerato's arm tight and he dragged her out to the back with Lerato shouting for her father to let her go and they found all the Moeketsi wives sitting at the back and as soon as Mapula saw them she got up and rushed to them and James pushed Lerato to her

James: I HAVE TOLERATED ENOUGH OF YOUR NONSENSE ALONG WITH YOUR DISRESPECTFUL DAUGHTERS MAPULA.....NOW KEEP HER ON HER ON A TIGHT LEASH OR I'LL BREAK THIS SUDDENLY EVIL HEART OF HERS AND SHE WONT EVEN BELIEVE IT

he roared

Mapula: what happened...Lerato what did you do?

she said looking at Lerato who looked horrible...she looked like she hardly slept the previous night...she was still wearing her pyjamas and a doek on her head

James: NOW I SEE WHY NEITHER OF THEM TOOK AFTER ME AND WHY THEY BEHAVE LIKE HOOLIGANS EVEN THOUGH I TOOK THEM TO THE BEST SCHOOLS IN SOUTH AFRICA NOW I SEE ITS BECAUSE THEY TOOK AFTER THAT RUTHLESS GOOD FOR NOTHING SPERM DONOR OF YOURS NX

Mapula froze and everyone gasped then Tshenolo walked out

Tshenolo: come back in James our visitors are waiting for you to come back so we can continue

***James looked at Mapula with a deadly look on his face and he clicked his tongue and he went inside and Mapula dragged Lerato inside the house to her bedroom...

Well the negotiations continued and the Owoh-Masdens paid lobola for Naledi and they also paid for the damages and they also paid lobola for Lesedi (Heath's orders) and also paid a fine because Heath married their daughter without their knowledge....The Owoh-Masdens didn't oppose to the demands made by the Moeketsi's cause Heath gave them strict instructions that they should make sure that they give them whatever amount they want so all in all the Owoh-Masdens paid R100 000 (Heath's orders) even though the Moeketsi's didn't even think of charging them such an amount***

Mkhulu: now that we don't owe you we would like to see our daughter in law please since we didn't see her so that she can confirm that she knows us because of obvious reasons

they laughed

Tsheko: well you are right about that....you don't owe us our in law

***they laughed again and Naledi was called and they told her that everything went well and that they are glad that everything went well or else Heath was gonna show them flames and they laughed...they told her other things like in two weeks' time a huge welcoming ceremony will be held back in Nigeria for her and her family members travelling expenses will be taken care off by them and the uncles cheered looking happy to be travelling out of the country especially for free....then Tshenolo went to the women outside to tell them the good news and they started

singing wedding songs at the back and they moved to the lounge still singing.....after they were done they left the lounge to start dishing food for everyone except for the visitors since Naledi and Thandi were gonna be the ones to dish for them.....well Naledi and Thandi went to fix food and drinks for her in laws while Heath Jabu and Mj were called in to join the elders in the lounge

Thandi: congratulations mommy

they hugged with Naledi giggling

Thandi: from now on you should learn Igbo so your in laws don't gossip about you in front of you thinking you can't hear them

they laughed

Naledi: ya o right mntase (you are right my sister)

Thandi: mmmmh and you should also learn to cook bo Yam and pepe soup jollof rice cassava and so on just like me remember James is Tsonga so now I can cook masonja friend

they laughed and continued to prepare food for the guests then Lerato walked in the kitchen looking like hell her eyes were bloodshot red and swollen

Thandi: ignore her

she whispered to her and Naledi nodded then Lerato opened cardboards then she would slam them shut....she went on and on for some time then she turned to look at Naledi

Lerato: how does it feel mmmmh eating my left overs

Thandi: Lerato walk away!

Lerato: did he tell you that a few weeks after I miscarried we fucked with him calling my name and telling me how much he loves me....he told me you meant nothing he just wanted the pussy and I guess you decided to give him love potion I mean why would he leave me and settle for a thing like you

Naledi swallowed hard but she chose to ignore her

Thandi: wow that's low even for you Lerato....now guess what we as his family don't mind that she gave him a "love potion" as you claim in fact we asked her to pour in some more

Lerato: fuck you Thandi you hear me fuck you

Thandi: fuck you too skheberesh (bitch).... nx let it go Lerato he doesn't want you and he made it clear to you a million times o busy o setse Heath morago like ntshi e setse masepa a go nkgá morago (you are busy after Heath just like a fly going after some smelly shit)

she clapped hands at Lerato

Thandi: leave him alone he...doesn't...want...you sfebe (bitch)

then Lerato rushed towards Naledi and she grabbed her by her doek pulling her and Naledi tried to cover her big belly for just in case she kicks or punches her but then Thandi got between them pushing Lerato away and she slapped Lerato hard on her face and Lerato stumbled back

Thandi: O NYAKO BONANG WENA SFEBE! (what do you want to see bitch)

then Uncle Tsheko walked in the kitchen to check what was happening since they heard some shouting

Tsheko: whats going on here...whats all this noise!

Thandi: malome please warn this girl cause she's asking for it...she's here harassing Naledi and it won't end well for her

Tsheko looked at Lerato with a serious face

Tsheko: whats wrong with you Lerato why are you troublesome like this? why tlhogo ya gao e tletse metsi so? (why don't you like to listen)

Lerato didn't say anything she just looked away breathing heavily

Tsheko: nx stop all this...you are embarrassing yourself and us at the same time...nonsense!

then he looked at Naledi and Thandi

Tsheko: hurry up with the drinks and food

they nodded and he went back to the lounge

Lerato: im not done with you wena sfebe (you bitch)....you not only stole my man and killed my baby but you also want to warm yourself into my father's heart you evil witch!

Naledi: moloi ke mmao (a witch is your mother)

Lerato: oreng? (what did you just say?)

Thandi: you heard her nx!

Lerato: o re mmaka ke moloi wena sfebe (you are saying my mother is a witch you bitch)

she said trying to jump on Naledi but Thandi pushed her and another slap landed on Lerato's cheek and they began fighting

Naledi: Thandi stop fighting...Lerato stop all this!

***she shouted at them then Mapula rushed inside the kitchen and she pulled Thandi away from lerato who was on the floor with Thandi on top of her throwing punches at her then as Mapula was busy holding Thandi Lerato saw a knife on top of the counter and she grabbed it crying and she charged towards Naledi who was holding her belly as she felt cramps then within a blink of an eye she stabbed her on her belly and as soon as Thandi saw what happened as she was busy fighting Mapula off her she screamed out loud and pushed Mapula off her roughly and she rushed to naledi who was holding on to the counter with one hand while the other one was holding the knife that was stuck on her...

Before everything happened Heath received a call just before the fighting started right after Tsheko walked back in the lounge and told them is just the girls arguing...he was about to call Naledi when his phone rang and it was his grandmother he answered the phone and he went outside to talk to her and she began telling him to be strong and to know that it's not his fault he was confused as to what she was talking about and when she started crying over the phone he became really worried and he comforted her over the phone and she kept on saying it's not fair why would God allow this to happen...right then he heard a loud scream inside the house and he stormed in and what he found made his world to crumbled down like a building being taken down by a bomb

Anyway now Everyone was in the kitchen and Heath was standing there frozen looking at Naledi he wanted to move but his body refused to move cause now his brain wasn't in sync with the rest of his body as it was still in shock***

Jabu: MSHIKARO SNAP OUT OF IT WE NEED TO RUSH HER TO THE HOSPITAL!

Mr Masden went over to Heath and he slapped him just to help him snap out of it and he came back to his senses then he rushed to Naledi and picked Naledi up and he rushed out of the door with her in his arms with everyone behind him....as for Lerato she was nowhere to be seen it's like she disappeared just like that.... as for Thandi she was just wailing out loud with blood on her shaking hands.... then Omphile came out of the bedroom with Lesedi when she had screams and cries and when she saw the blood on Thandi's hands she froze and thankfully Mr Masden saw her and he went to her

Mr.Masden: let's go my princesses

he said pulling them outside the gate towards the car

.
. .
.

Ruslan: welcome back my brother

***he said to Ray who just opened his eyes...his skin was pale with his lips dry...he coughed a bit and Ruslan help him to sit up inside the coffin and he gave him a cup that had some potion inside and Ray drank it**

Ray: is...is it two weeks already?

Ruslan: not really its Saturday today ...I was supposed to wake you up Monday morning but things are messed up back home so you need to leave as in yesterday

***Ray got out of the coffin but his legs failed him as they were weak but he balanced himself with Ruslan then he started vomiting on the floor....after he was done he wiped his mouth with the back of his hand ***

Ruslan: take it easy

Ray: wha...what do you mean things are messed up back home?

Ruslan: your woman is in danger bros Zambo got to her and your brother's wife was also stabbed

he looked at Ruslan with a frown on his face with his heart beating fast

Ray: Qu...Quoi? (wha..what?)

Ruslan: just go shower and eat to gain strength and go meet up with the Master I already called serge and he'll meet you at the entrance of this jungle and I already booked you a ticket to go back home and it leaves tomorrow morning.... so you have the rest of the night to go get your info from the master...lets go

he said moving with Ray who's mind was on what Ruslan just said to him....then one of Ruslan's zombies walked in

Ruslan: Nottoyer Ici (clean up in here)

the zombie nodded and Ruslan helped Ray out of the dark room

Ray: is...is Mbali and my child still alive?

Ruslan: yah but as for your son im not sure how long he's going to hold on the demon attached to him and something else is what is still keeping him safe in his mother's womb

Ray clenched his jaws

Ray: wha..what about my brother's wife

he kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: it doesn't look good brother....it doesn't look good at all

Ray: fuck!

55

INSERT.....55

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Heath: hey look at me stay awake okdon't close your eyes Obim please

she kept her eyes on Heath's eyes with tears gushing out

Naledi: my..my babies Heath

she said in a low tone

Heath: shhhh save your strength Obi m....don't talk ok....everything will be fine just don't close your eyes ok

she nodded slowly

Heath: good

then he looked at Jabu who was flying off the road

Heath: hurry up Jabu man she's losing a lot of blood

Jabu: im almost there Mshikaro....hold on Naledi im almost there

he said increasing the speed of the car...as for Heath he could see Naledi was now struggling to breath

Heath: hey breath slowly Obi m...don't rush it....and don't close your eyes ok...I love you

she nodded slowly and Heath kissed her forehead fighting back his own tears...he wanted to be strong for her but inside he was dying slowly....then she saw Naledi closing her eyes

Heath: Naledi don't close your eyes please stay awake for me please

he pleaded with her and she opened them slowly

Naledi: i....i wa...want to sleep Heath

Heath shook his head no then Naledi coughed and blood came out of her mouth

Heath: please don't do this to me Naledi...please.... don't close your eyes Obi m please...think of Omphile and Lesedi please

he said with a breaking voice with tears streaming down his cheeks he tried to fight them back but he failed

Jabu: we're here Naledi hold on!

he said driving inside the hospital premises and Heath looked outside the window

Heath: you see we are here Obi m

then he looked back at Naledi and her eyes were shut

Heath: NALEDI!

he called her but she didn't open her eyes

Heath: NALEDI!....Obi m....please don't do this to me please my love....open your eyes Naledi please

Jabu quickly parked the car and he got out screaming for help and nurses came rushing with a stretcher...Heath felt Naledi's pulse and it was there but really low

Heath: NALEDI!...BABY PLEASE OPEN YOUR EYES PLEASE...IM SORRY PLEASE OPEN YOUR EYES

the door opened and Jabu helped the nurses to take Naledi out of the car

Nurse: oooh Jehovah!

***she said that as her eyes landed on the knife stuck on her belly....

Anyway they put her on the stretcher and she was rushed inside***

Heath: NALEDI PLEASE FIGHT THIS PLEASE!

he shouted that part as they wheeled her in the theater room

.
. .
.

Heath and Jabu were now sited in the waiting area.....Heath was looking down with tears gushing out....His mind was on Naledi especially when she coughed out blood and when her eyes were shut he then closed his eyes and he prayed

Heath: Go...God pl..please don't take her away from me I know im a sinner and I probably deserve to be punished for every bad thing I did but please not like this....Omphile and Lesedi still need her God I...I still need her....ple...please God...I know...I know its not her time God I promised her happiness and this was supposed to be a start of that happiness ple..please don't take her please

***he said crying and Jabu squeezed his shoulder and wiped off his own tears then Mj and Thandi rushed in and behind them was James and his brothers....James looked like his world was coming to an end and the uncles looked like their mother was about to leave them again they looked broken and as for Mr Masden he went to drop off Omphile and Lesedi at Gogo and Mkhulu's place while Mkhulu was with the Owoh-Masden-uncles also driving to his house to make sure his wife is ok cause he suspected that the call she made to Heath was to warn him ***

Mj: has the doctor came out yet?

Jabu shook his head no and they sighed and sat down and silence took over....only Heath Thandi and Mj's sniffs were heard

Heath: what happened Thandi?

he asked her without even looking at her and Thandi told them what happened crying and Mj pulled her closed and he held her tight then James got up with the attempt to walk away then he held his chest and he groaned as if he's in pain and Tshenolo held him before he could hit the ground....nurses rushed to him and he was taken away leaving cries behind then a doctor walked to them with a nurse behind him holding some papers and they got up and met him half way

Heath: how is she?

Doctor: are you family?

Heath: she's my wife

Doctor: ok..ummm we need to perform an emergency C-section on her to save the remaining baby

*** Heath looked at the doctor with a trembling lip with tears running down his cheeks and Thandi busted out with a loud cry while Jabu put his hands on top of his head looking up and Mj just crouched down looking down with tears running down his cheeks and the uncles went to sit down and they looked down with their hands on top of their heads***

Doctor: im sorry but the knife also went through one twin's chest and it looks like he died on the spot but we need to save the other twin and your wife sir...im sorry for your loss

Heath indicated that the nurse should give him the forms and she did and he sighed them just like that

Heath: save them please.....

Doctor: we will do our outmost best sir....excuse me

he turned and rushed back to where he came from with the nurse behind him and Heath turned and as he was about to take a step he stopped and held his chest as he felt it closing in...he was struggling to breath and they rushed to him and helped him seat down

Jabu: Mshikaro don't do this please....breath man....breath please.....MJ CALL A DOCTOR

Mj ran away calling for help and nurses came rushing when he told them what was going on and the nurses could see he was having a panic attack and one of them rushed away and she came back with a syringe and she sedated him and they put him on a stretcher and he was admitted

Tsheko: what kind of bad luck is this....all because of that evil witch called Lerato.....she's the cause of all this and James better disown her before she's send to jail for murder and attempted murder!

he said with an angry voice

Tshenolo: they should lock her up and throw away the key nx.... I swear on our dead mother if...if

***then he got up and walked away....as for Jabu he was sitting there staring into space not knowing what to do Thandi was just crying now talking on the phone with her husband....as for Mj he got up and walked away he walked out of the hospital all the way to the parking lot and he got to Thandi's car and unlocked it since he was the one who drove here as Thandi was in no state to drive and he

still got the keys with him then he got in and he put his head on the steering wheel and he cried a heart breaking cry.....after some time he calmed down and he wiped his face and he took out his phone from his pocket and he went to his contacts and he scrolled down and he found the number he was looking for and he called it***

Voice: yah

Mj: Sunday its Mj Mjava's cousin

Sunday: aow Mj ntwana fida? (Mj my boy what's up)

Mj: I need a gun and a getaway car and someone's address I have R7000 with me

Sunday: ok but Mjava wa cava ka die dang? (does Jabu know about this?)

Mj: no and you can tell him after im done with what im about to do but only after im done and not before

Sunday sighed

Sunday: ok meet me ko dladleng laka(at my house) you still remember it mos

Mj: not exactly but I'll call you when im at that chisayama we once went along with Mjava I'll leave the car im driving there cause it has a tracker so you'll come pick me up

Sunday: smart boyok I'll wait for your call

Mj: shap (ok)

he dropped the call and he started the car and drove out of the hospital

.
. .
.

Heath: fuck!

he said trying to sit up on the hospital bed he just woke up from his sedation and it was late around 6pm....then Jabu opened his eyes he was sleeping on the chair next to the hospital bed....he has been sitting here ever since the doctor came back to tell them about Naledi...Mr Masden just left 10 minutes ago to go take Omphile and Lesedi and to make sure his brothers are ok since its been hours since he left them at his father in laws house.....

Jabu: shit you are awake!

he said getting up and helping Heath sit up comfortably

Heath: wha..what happened?

Jabu sighed

Jabu: you had a panic attack so they sedated you

Heath: how long have I been out?

Jabu: a few hours....it's around 6pm now

Heath: damn!

then his mind went to Naledi and he started breathing heavily

Heath: how....Na...Naledi? tell me she made it bro

Jabu sighed

Jabu: the C-section was successful and she's in ICU they said she's critical but stable.....whatever that means

Heath swallowed hard

Heath: and my...my s...son

Jabu breathed out loud

Jabu: the...the one that is alive is in a critical condition and he's also in intensive care unit remember he's premature they said the next couple of hours will be very critical and...and well the other twin is...is in the hospital mortuary

tears ran down Heath's cheeks and Jabu just squeezed his shoulder

Heath: and Naledi's father?

Jabu: he suffered a heart attack but he's still alive

Sponsored

they said the next couple of hours will be very critical and...and well the other twin is...is in the hospital mortuary

tears ran down Heath's cheeks and Jabu just squeezed his shoulder

Heath: and Naledi's father?

Jabu: he suffered a heart attack but he's still alive the doctor said he'll pull through

Heath Nodded wiping his tears off

Heath: i...I need to see my boys first before I go be with Naledi

Jabu nodded

Jabu: let me let the nurse know I'll be back

then he walked out

.
. .
.

*** they walked inside children's ICU ward and the nurse showed him his son inside the incubator...he looked tiny and pink in color he had tubes attached to him....he was so small that he could fit on Heath's one hand and as soon as Heath saw him a sob escaped his mouth and Jabu pulled him for a tight hug and Heath just cried on his shoulder....after he calmed down he turned to his tiny son***

Jabu: he's strong he'll make it through Mshikaro his father is not called Caesar for nothing

Heath: he...he's so tiny Jabu

Jabu: remember he's premature Mshikaro but he'll grow you'll see he has the Owoh-Masden blood in his veins so he's pull through

Heath didn't say anything he just looked at his son with a pained look

Heath: Ikechukwu

Jabu: huh

Heath: his name is Ikechukwu which means the power of God Ambrose Ikechukwu Owoh-Masden

Jabu: nice choice of names

then he got closer to his incubator

Heath: be strong for mommy and daddy ok my boy.....you need to fight and make it through cause you are strong like daddy ok.....fight my boy remember you are Caesar's son so keep fighting...I love you

Jabu: you need to fight and grow up so Uncle Javas can teach you how to shoot ok

Heath chuckled

Heath: really Jabu

Jabu: what im just telling him the truth....this little man is gonna be one heck of a shooter im gonna call him sniper

they chuckled

Heath: shame I already feel sorry for you my boy

Jabu: hai suka

*** they chuckled again..... well they stayed with Ikechukwu for some time then they left for the hospital Mortuary....

Heath was now crying hard looking at his dead son's body.....the pain that he was feeling was unbearable he felt like his heart was literally breaking into smaller pieces...he felt like dying he

wished it was him who was laying here and not his son....he cried until he calmed down then he looked at him especially on his stab wound on his tiny chest***

Heath: im sorry I failed you my boy....im sorry I didn't protect you like I was supposed to....im sorry I didn't kill Lerato that time she used your older sister Omphile If I did you'd still be alive safely in your mother's womb....im sorry I failed you my boy I hope you forgive me....look after your twin brother and make sure he pulls through don't take him with you please let him live cause you belong with God now so be his guardian angel and help him pull through

then he wiped his tears but they kept on falling.... as for Jabu he was waiting outside the door just to give him space to say goodbye to his son

Heath: your name is Armand Bunkechukwu Owoh-Masden

Bunkechukwu means the one that belongs to God

Heath: rest in peace my boy your mommy and I love you very much

then he kissed his forehead and he walked out and they went to Naledi's room...and they found her attached to wires with only sounds of beeping machines heard...he clenched his jaws then he rubbed his eyes and Jabu squeezed his shoulder

Jabu: I'll give you two some privacy....I'll just rush back to make sure Amo is ok and I'll bring you some food and change of clothes cause I know you'll spend the night here and tomorrow Mat Diego and I will handle everything.... all you need to do is be there for sniper and Naledi and leave the rest to us I'll even find that bitch

Heath nodded

Heath: thaa Jabu(thanks Jabu)

Jabu: brother's forever bros

Heath: yeah brother's forever

they hugged and Jabu left then Heath sat down next to the bed and he held Naledi's hand with Tears running down his cheeks....his heart broke when he saw all the wires that are attached to her

Heath: you need to come back to me Obi m i...I cant...i don't think I'll make it if you leave me....i swear I'll kill myself and leave our children as orphans if you don't come back to me...

then he clenched his jaws

Heath: im sorry....im sorry Obi m I know I should have taken care of her that time she used Omphile for her own selfish reasons....im sorry Obi m its my fault she stabbed you its my fault you are here and its also my fault our sons....

he kept quiet and a sob escaped his mouth

Heath: im sorry I didn't protect you Obi m...please forgive me Naledi....please come back to me
please I can't live without you please

he cried holding her hand

.
. .
.

*** It was later at night around 10pm when an uber dropped her off a few meters from her apartment complex's main entrance and she was now wearing a legging a vest running shoes a cap and a hoodyshe looked around and it was quiet then she walked to the main entrance then out of the blue three gunshots were fired and she fell to the ground...security guards that were on the gate took cover when they heard them and screeching tires were heard and then silence.....***

.
. .
.

the following day in the afternoon Heath was in Naledi's ward standing by the window with his hands in his pockets looking outside with his mind miles away...His father Mj and Jabu left an hour ago and now he was alone lost in thoughts

Voice: Ezeh

he froze and he turned slowly and found Ray standing there

Heath: bi..big Ray?

Ray: im here now everything will be ok

*** then he walked to Heath and Heath swallowed hard and he clenched his jaws then tears ran down his cheeks...he held Heath in a tight hug and Heath just let it all out....after some time he calmed down and Ray pulled Heath to the chairs and they sat down and Heath wiped his tears off***

Ray: the boys?

Heath shook his head with his jaws clenched

Heath: Ikechukwu made it but he's premature so he's not yet out of danger but as for Bunkechukwu....the knife went through his chest and he died on her spot in her mother's womb

Ray clenched his jaws breathing hard

Ray: who the fuck did this?

Heath: Lerato..... my ex

Ray: mmmmh

Heath: I heard she was gunned down outside her apartment complex last night and it wasn't me Jabu or Mat or even Diego

Ray: she's still alive?

Heath nodded

Ray: wrong choice she should have just let go and died

Then Ray looked over to Naledi and he got up and he went to her and he held her hand and he closed his eyes then he opened them

Ray: you are one strong woman Star and special..... don't worry she's just jealous cause she secretly envied you cause you might not know it but you have it all.... now wake up cause your husband looks like a hobo hooked on drugs

Heath chuckled

Ray: come back to us Star....

then he turned to Heath

Ray: she'll wake up but she's gonna need you more than she has never needed you before so be strong for her Ezeh and never give up or let go

then he sighed

Ray: take me to Ikechukwu and Bunkechukwu

*** they went to Ikechukwu and Ray smiled looking at him....they stayed for a bit and they went to the mortuary and when Ray saw his tiny body especially the wound on his tiny chest he clenched his jaws....he then spoke in "The Forbidden Language" commanding his soul to rest in peace and not trouble Ikechukwu....

Now they were outside Naledi's ward****

Ray: I need to go to KZN Mbali needs me some fucker is messing with her and her and my child are in danger

Heath: what?

Ray: yeah but I'll be back on Wednesday or Thursday but I'll keep checking up on you and when I come back im gonna deal with that bitch....now what about Bunke?

Heath: im waiting for Naledi to wake up and I'll suggest we cremate him just like you did with....

then he kept quiet

Ray: don't worry im good now and we should call her Samkelo since Nomvula named me Sambulo

Heath nodded then they hugged for some time

Ray: I'll see you when I come back...don't worry this is a test so make sure you don't fail it abi?

Heath sighed

Heath: yeah

Ray: good I'll check up on you later

Heath nodded...they fist bumped and Ray walked away

Heath: call Jabu he's been worried!

And Ray stopped walking and he turned to him

Ray: already did....along with Dad Mj Mat and Diego

Heath nodded and Ray continued to walk

.

.

.

Pops: yeah?

Guard: there's a man here by the name Ray he said he's here to see all of you

Pops' eyes popped out and he looked at his father and his sons

Pops: let him in

Guard: ok boss

then he dropped the call

Pops: Ray is here

Baba: eish finally!

Then Melusi groaned then he clapped his hands together and he looked at Baba

Melusi: prepare yourselves!

he told them

Jay: prepare for what bafo

***he just shook his head looking down and the room became quiet.....then the door opened and

Ray walked in and Baba got up and he met him half way and he shook his hand***

Baba: we have been waiting for you

Ray nodded....then he greeted everyone and only Melusi and Pops greeted him back

.

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

Continuation 55

CONTINUATION OF INSERT 55

.
. .
.

NARRATED

Jay: where the fuck were you Ray....do you know what Mbali has been through while you were busy gallivanting doing God knows what!

he said with a voice full of anger and Ray shook his head with a smirk on his face

Ray: only Mbali is allowed to ask me that question Spilo!

*** he said with a stern voice and Jay wanted to go to him and Melusi stopped him***

Melusi: yehlisa umoya Mntungwa (calm down) ...now is not the right time

Jay huffed and he sat back down and Nhlaka and Jase clicked their tongues while Muzi just looked at Ray with an angry look on his face....as for Thorsten he just sat there looking at Ray with a serious look on his face

Ray: Mr Khumalo please take me to her

Baba nodded

Baba: come with me

they walked upstairs and the brothers Pops and Melusi followed them.... they got in Mbali's Bedroom and they found Ma humming a song to her while Mbali was laying on the bed staring into space blinking slowly with saliva running down her cheek dripping on the pillow with Ma wiping it every now and then and Ray clenched his jaws as extreme anger took over him

Baba: mkami!

Ma turned and when she saw Ray she got up slowly and she went to Ray with tears running down her cheeks she couldn't believe he was here

Ma: you came...oooh God thank you....

she said holding Ray's hand looking up at him....Well Bab'dlamini was laid to rest today and around 6pm Melusi told them they should go back to baba's house because the ancestors told him they should and they went back home thinking maybe Zambo was gonna do another thing to Mbali but they just didn't think Ray was gonna show up....everyone went to lay Dlamini to rest in the most respectful way including the brothers' wives except for Ma who stayed behind with Mbali....right now the wives were in the cinema room with their kids and they were told that they should wait to be called out (Baba's Orders after Melusi advised him to do that)

Ma: please save her my boy.... please bring her back to me please

Ray: don't worry Ma I will

she nodded and Baba pulled her closer to him and he kissed the top of her head

Ray: sir she should excuse us....i don't want her to witness what is about to happen

Jay; uyahlanya she has every right to be here!

Pops: Nkosenye!!

Jase: no pops he can't come here and make his stupid demands!

Baba: HAI SHUT UP MAN....WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU BOYS.....THIS BOY IS HERE TO HELP YOUR SISTER SO IF HE WANTS US TO STRIP NAKED IT WILL HAPPEN AS LONG AS MBALI IS BACK TO US SIYAZWANA NX!

they kept quiet looking angry and Ray just shook his head

Ma: call me once my baby is back Langa

Baba nodded and he kissed her forehead and she walked out and Ray went to the door and he locked it and took out the key and he put it in his pocket

Nhlaka: why did you do that...why did you lock the door man?

*** he said to Ray then he looked at Baba***

Nhlaka: Baba did you see that? are you gonna let him lock us in

he said looking alarmed

Ray: im in a room full of beasts what can I possibly do....unless I want to die young

Thorsten chuckled

Thor: its good that you know that

Ray: mxm

then he looked at Pops

Ray: we need to put her on the floor

Pops nodded and he went to Mbali and Ray took out a white chalk and he drew a circle on the floor and crosses on all four sides

Nhlaka: what the hell are you doing man?

Melusi: hai man yehlisa umoya Nhlaka tuu(calm down)

Nhlaka: no Melusi...this looks like some voodoo shit to me

Baba: NHLAKA MAN!

***he kept quiet but you could see he was uncomfortable with what was happening and Ray looked at Pops who had Mbali in his arms ***

Ray: put her inside the circle

Pops: she wont be able to sit

Ray: don't worry she will but for now you can lay her down

Pops did as told and Ray took off his shoes and stepped inside the circle and he sat down folding his legs and he looked at the Khumalos

Ray: whatever is about to happen make sure you don't disrupt me or else I won't be able to bring Mbali back

Pops: do what you gotta do

Thor: make sure you bring her back man or you'll have 5 beasts to deal with

Ray: are you done?

***he asked with a bored look and Thorsten showed him his middle finger and Ray chuckled then he became serious and he closed his eyes ***

Ray: (let the shield of protection cover us)

*** he said in a forbidden language then the lights flicked a bit and everyone looked around but then the lights stopped and Snakes breathed out with relief***

Ray: (let darkness take over as I wake you La Parca)

then Ray's eyes turned black in color and his skin became pale and a bit deformed and it had visible black veins all over he also had two horns on his forehead and his teeth were thin and long and sharp at its edges and his tongue became black but this time around no liquid was coming out.....then wind like sounds were heard in the room and the lights started to flick vigorously and they started to hear different voices whispering around the room and Snakes jumped looking around with his eyes popped out...his heart was beating hard against his chest...then he rushed to Thorsten and he held on tight to his arm and when his eyes landed on Ray he cursed and he passed out(more like his mind switched off for like 5 seconds) while still holding Thorsten's arm tight and he quickly opened his eyes and he looked around

Nhlaka: ooh fuck! no...no...no this cant be....

*** others also looked around as the voices whispered....some were whispering close to their ears...they all looked spooked***

Thor: calm down Snakes or you'll have a heart attack

Muzi: what the fuck is happening...

he asked with a shaky voice looking around

Nhlaka: this nigga is about to take us to hell Baba that's whats happening...I cant go to hell mina...no.... I need to get out of here.....he's the fucken devil....lucifer.... satan.....

Baba: Nhlaka calm down!

Nhlaka: baba I cant...he...he's the devil....ohhh God Mbali brought lucifer in our family

as for Pops and Melusi they were just standing there looking at Ray and Mbali

Ray: QUIET!

he warned them and his voice spoke as if two people were speaking at the same and Snakes kept quiet looking at Ray with fear all over his face while still holding on to Thor and he wasn't the only one who was scared all of them looked frightened except for Baba

Ray: (I command you to sit up and look at me you spirit of mental obstruction)

he repeated what he said three times and Mbali sat up straight and he looked straight into Ray's eyes with her head tilted to the side a bit as if she's possessed and things started falling down in the room and the mirror cracked and the voices started getting loud around the room then Nhlaka knelt down and he closed his eyes

Nhlaka: GOD I REPENT....I REPENT....PLEASE GOD DON'T LET HIM TAKE ME TO HELL
PLEASE I REPENT...

*** he said with a shaking voice.....if it was on different circumstances everyone would have laughed but now everyone was frightened by what they were seeing including Thorsten even though he seemed chilled but deep down he was frightened about what he was witnessing with his own eyes.....

Then La Parca spoke in that forbidden language and Mbali's body shook a bit then it stopped and sat still***

.
. .
.

***There was no one in the room and La Parca looked around and his eyes landed on a transparent round bottle on top of a table and he could see that there were things moving inside it....then he heard a hissing sound behind him and he turned only to find a huge snake....it was big and long and it was right in front of La Parca's face...he then disappeared right in front of it and he appeared at its back and he lifted his hand and he pointed it with his open palm and he chanted some word in the forbidden language and it fell on the floor and he chanted more words and the snake turned into ashes....

Then he pointed his palm to that round bottle and a powerful force lifted it and threw it to the wall and it hit it hard and shattered then the pieces fell on the floor and he went to the pieces and he pointed his palm to them and he commanded the souls that were in that bottle to return to their bodies and a strong wind appeared and it filled the room and after a few seconds it stopped..... then he moves his

hand from the left swaying it to the right side and everything got lifted up from the left side and they went to crash to the wall on the other side then he moves them from the right side and they went to hit the wall on the other side leaving the whole room in shambles with broken things all over.... then he raised his hands up and a powerful force lifted everything up and he pushed his arms forward and everything went to the shrine that was in the room and everything landed there.....then he went closer to the wall and he chanted some words with his palm pointed to the wall then he disappeared***

.
. .
.

*** Meanwhile Zambo was with his fiancé at a restaurant when he suddenly felt hot....he felt like someone poured him with petrol and threw a lit stick of matches on him and he was on fire.... he quickly got up and he rubbed his face and his entire body***

Fiancé: baby what's wrong

she could see that he was even sweating hard and Zambo ignored her and he quickly took out some cash and he threw it on the table then the burning feeling got really bad

Zambo: SHIT...SHIT....IM... IM BURNING MARY....SOMETHING IS WRONG... I.... I HAVE TO GO

Mary: Robert what do you mean you are burning....why are you sweating like this....

***Zambo rushed out of the restaurant going to his car with Mary behind him then he quickly got in his car and drove away leaving Mary shocked that he left her just like that.

He drove away in total speed....he drove with his whole body in pain he even switched on the AC to extremely cold but still his body felt like it was still on fire.....after what felt like eternity to him he arrived at his house and he parked on the drive way and he quickly got out and he rushed inside the house with his body shaking with pain.....then he rushed down to the basement and when he opened the door to his shrine room his eyes popped out as he saw the condition the room was in he walked in slowly inspecting the room and things were broken or scattered everywhere***

Zambo: BHABHA?

he called out to his big snake walking in with his body shaking and sweat all over but it didn't show itself then he stepped on what felt like sand and he saw the way it was lined on the floor and he knew it was his bhabha

Zambo: no...no...no...shit!

*** he said with one arm on his head while the other one was on his stomach....then he looked around and his eyes landed on the wall and there was something written on it he got closer and the writing read:

“MENE MENE TEKEL ZAMBO: YOUR KINGDOM WILL FALL SOON! “

It was written in what looked like blood and Zambo stood there shaking with fear***

.
. .
.

Back in KZN....a force hit Mbali and she fell back on the floor but not hard and La Parca knelt next to her and he put his hand on her chest and he recited some words in the forbidden language and her upper body moved up a bit and he moved his hand with his palm facing up now with his hand closed a bit and he pulled it up still reciting in that language then he hit his hand on the floor hard still reciting in that language and Mbali's upper body rested down gently on the floor and he continued to recite some words then a strong wind filled the room with those voices getting louder and louder and everyone covered their faces with their arms while Snakes fainted on the floor....then everything stopped and silence filled the room the circle and crosses on the floor disappeared as if someone cleaned them off and the mirror wasn't cracked anymore and Ray was now himself La Parca was back to sleep....Ray then shook Mbali

Ray: my flower?

his voice was also back to normal as he called out to her but she didn't even move and the Khumalos then uncovered their faces and Jay and Jase rushed to Snakes who was on the floor not moving while everyone else was scared to get closer to Mbali and Ray

Jay: Snakes!....Snakes wake up....shit what happened to you...bafo wake up

he said with a panicking voice

Ray: he's fine he just fainted

he said without even looking at them cause his eyes were on Mbali who wasn't waking up

Ray: My flower wake up....snap out it come on....wake up!

he said with a commanding voice and Mbali moved

Pops: princess!

Ray: that's it ...now open your eyes baby

she did slowly and she blinked fast looking around then her eyes landed on Ray

Mbali: R...R...Ray?

Ray smiled and everyone gasped as they couldn't believe she was ok now

Ray: yes my flower.....are you back to me now?

Mbali: you are back?

he nodded

Ray: and im never leaving you again ok

she nodded with tears in her eyes and Ray helped her sit up slowly and he looked at the Khumalo and nodded at them and they rushed to Mbali

Pops: you are ok...you are back to us my princess

he said with an emotional voice and he kissed her all over her face and she giggled

Mbali: daddy stop

she said giggling then Ray took out the keys and he threw them at Thorsten and he caught them

Thorsten: what are you?

he asked Ray with a serious look on his face

Ray: im not just the La Parca by name.... just like you are not The Beast by name

then they stared at each other

56

INSERT.....56

.

.

.

NARRATED

Snakes opened his eyes and he groaned with pain as he tried to lift up his head

Snakes: shit!

he said holding his head

Muzi: take it easy you hit your head hard on the floor

Muzi told him getting closer to him and Snakes' eyes popped out with panic all over his face

Snakes: am...am I already in hell? but...but I prayed so God can't let me go there right?..... shit is it even allowed to say God's name here in hell?

Muzi frowned

Muzi: really mamba? come on we are all here looking at you

Snakes: demon don't patronize me ok this might be a figment of my imagination or this could be an illusion used by you demons to make me think im all good and at home so I'll relax kodwa nooo im actually locked up in a cage with demons disguised as my brothers ready to punish me for eternity

Jay: Mamba quit playing assomblief!(please)

Snakes: demon don't test me just because you look like my brother doesn't mean you should tell me shit....so what is this my punishment for eternity to wake up every day to see demons that look like my brothers as my punishment?

they all looked at each other with worried looks on their faces as they could see that he looked serious then Thorsten slapped him hard on his cheek that he even saw stars

Them: THE FUCK SMISO!

Thor: what? I think his brain moved a bit when he fell so I was putting it back to its place

Jase: Nhlaka snap out of it please ok this is not funny!

Snakes then saw the seriousness on Jay's face

Snakes: wait... im....im not in hell?

Muzi: nooo what the fuck is wrong with you?

Thor: maybe I should slap him again

he said getting closer to him and Snakes covered his face

Snakes: voetsek Smiso

Thorsten chuckled and he took a step back

Muzi: you ok now?

***he nodded looking around and they looked at him without saying anything as he was now rubbing his eyes with his fingers then out of the blue they busted out with loud laughter which startled snakes....they laughed bending while holding their stomachs and tears coming out.....

well Snakes let them laugh until they calmed down a bit***

Jase: this...this takes the cup mamba I swear this takes the cup

he said still laughing

Jay: yeer I thought that day in the woods when you saw Smiso's beast takes the cup but this...this takes the cup bafo

he said laughing too

Snakes: voetsek man cant ya'll see that im traumatized here

Jase: and we were not?

Thor: well speak for yourself

Snakes: ya'll know I can't handle supernatural shit so lay off me man

Muzi: dude you grew up with beasts around you

Snakes: beast don't look like satan on steroids and they don't open the gates of hell

Jay: which gates of hell?

Snakes: didn't ya'll hear those voices....im telling you those were voices of burning souls in hell

Thorsten chuckled and the rest of the brothers laughed out loud

Thor: I give up with you mamba

he said shaking his head then he walked out

Snakes: is he still around?

Muzi: who?

he asked knowing who he was asking about

Snakes: satan's bastard son

they laughed

Muzi: yeah he's waiting for Mbali to finish bathing

Snakes' eyes popped out

Snakes: shit...princess...is she ok?

Jay: yeah she's back to us relax

he sighed with relief then he frowned

Snakes: wait does this mean Mbali owes her life to satan's son?

they gave him the "really" look

Snakes: don't give me that look ok....i don't know what to expect from satan's son

Jay: maybe you should ask satan's son himself...should I go call him mamba

Snakes: voetsek Nkosenye....remember I can still tell mother of beasts about you smoking now even though you lied to her and said it's a one-time thing that time she caught you

Jay showed him his middle finger and Snakes smirked

Snakes: nawe!(you too)

then Jay walked to the opened door

Jay: EYY RAY SNAKES SAYS YOU ARE SATAN'S BASTARD CHILD!

he shouted but not too loud walking out....he knew he won't hear him since he was downstairs in the study with Pops Baba and Melusi while they were upstairs in mamba's bedroom

Snakes: ngiyomtshela uNomhle msunu! (im going to snitch on you to Nomhle you cunt)

*** he shouted back to Jay then Jase and Muzi laughed***

.
. .

They were now all in the study and Snakes was sitting far from Ray closer to the door

Baba: what are you boy?

he asked Ray and he could see that he wasn't happy with the 'boy' term he was called with

Baba: you are all boys to me so get used to it! now answer my question

Ray smirked a bit shaking his head while looking down

Ray: ok I guess you won't mind if I call you old man

he asked with a smirk on his face and a raised eyebrow

Baba: and I see you don't want my granddaughter anymore

Ray's face fell and Thorsten chuckled

Snakes: can we not make each other mad cause im still traumatized assomblief (please)

Pops chuckled looking at Snakes

Baba: im waiting

Ray: well that was the La Parca....let's just say I did messed up shit in the past and I ended up associating myself with bad bad people and by the time I realized it I was the devil's arrant boy with my soul belonging to him

Snakes: I knew it! I knew you are connected to satan

Pops: Nhlaka wait tuu

Ray: anyway.... I met someone who helped me get my soul back and I did but leaving the dark world comes with its conditions and La Parca is that condition

then room went quiet

Pops: is my daughter's life in danger?

he asked with a serious tone

Ray: no

he partly told the truth

Ray: but...

Baba interrupted him

Baba: but what?

Ray: our son has that beast of yours and something like the La Parca attached to his soul

Everyone: WHAT!

they said looking at him with Pops looking at him like he wants to kill him

Ray: ooh and I know where Zambo is and what he looks like now and how to send him straight to hell

Snakes: this is not happening!

he said to himself with his hands on top of his head

.
. .
.

she opened her eyes and scanned the room and her eyes met her father's

Pops: you are finally awake

*** he said smiling and she nodded then she sat up and she looked down she didn't know if it safe to even say anything to him cause the last time she remembers he was angry with her***

Pops: im sorry princess

he said that looking down at his hands and Mbali quickly looked at him with her eyes popped out. Yes she's aware that he was happy to see that she was ok last night that he even kissed her all over her face but now she didn't know if it was safe to even smile at him cause she doesn't know where they stand and him saying sorry now shocked her to the core

Pops: I let my anger get the better of me and I pushed you away im sure your mother wherever she is she's disappointed at how I handled things

*** Mbali shook her head no***

Mbali: she's disappointed at me not you

*** she said with a sad tone***

Pops: no she's not cause you stood up for yourself princess and that boy and even though I hate to admit it but if you didn't meet him I believe you wouldn't be here talking to me right now....i guess everything in life happens for a reason

Mbali didn't say anything....she was even scared to ask if he's had a change of heart or not

Mbali: I didn't plan any of it daddy he just saved me once and we became some sort of friends then one thing led to the other and now im here pregnant for him....i know he's way older than me and crazy most of the times but I love him dad I know you don't wanna hear it but I do and he loves me too even though he has trouble expressing it the right way

Pops looked at her daughter and he could see how grown she is now for the first time in like forever he could recognize that Mbali is no longer that 5 year old girl who always wanted to see herself next to him or that little girl that couldn't wait for him to come home so she tell on everyone that made her cry or refused to give her something she wanted or that little girl that couldn't wait for him to come back home from overseas so they can go shopping for toys and new pink clothes.....it was a hard pill to swallow for him cause he was never still isn't and he will never be ready to accept that she's now grown

Pops: I know...I just....i don't think he deserves you princess and he's not good for you

she didn't say anything for a bit

Mbali: but with the life you live you deserved mom?

Pops: as messed up as this sounds but your mothers wasn't my only daughter....i loved her more than I loved life in fact I still do that's why I will never get married again but the fact remains she was not my seed

Mbali sighed

Pops: look I'll try and acknowledge him as part of your life but that doesn't mean I like him or that he deserves you

Mbali breathed out with relief

Mbali: it's better than nothing so thank you daddy.....so does it mean im forgiven for disappointing you

Pops: come here

she slowly got out of bed and her father pulled her to sit on his lap and he kissed her cheek and tears ran down her cheeks and she wrapped her arms around his neck and she buried her head on his neck and she cried

Mbali: im sorry daddyim sorry I disappointed you

she said crying and her father held her tight

Pops: shhh it's ok....i know you are you are forgiven and I love you ok

***she nodded with her head still buried on her father's neck.....Well last night after everything that happened Ma was called in and she couldn't believe her eyes she cried holding Mbali not believing that she was now ok....after Ma asked the men to excuse them and when Ma helped her to bath Mbali couldn't believe that she was actually wearing an adult diaper....she even cried

a painful cry when her grandmother told her what has been happening to her. All she remembers that night her brother found her is she suddenly had a migraine so she went to lay down a bit in the bedroom after drinking some water then she woke up to hearing sharp voices in her head and she remembers screaming while holding her head and she suddenly felt everything moving slow and everything went blank from there on ***

.
. .

***After her father left her bedroom she took a bath and after taking a bath and getting dressed she went downstairs for breakfast and as soon as they saw her they got up and rushed to her meeting her half way and her brothers and their wives hugged her ***

Nhlaka: you good?

he asked her while cupping her face and she nodded then he kissed her forehead again.....she looked back to the table and Ray was sitting there with a plate next to him and he winked at her when their eyes locked and she looked away blushing

Ma: come and sit down baby so you can feed the little one

she nodded and she went to sit next to her father.....she was facing Ray since he was sitting on the other side of the table.... well they all sat down

Ma: lets all bow our heads so I can bless the food

Snakes cleared his throat with his eyes popped out

Snakes: i...I don't think that's a good idea Ma

he said looking towards Ray

Ma: huh?

Ray: Ma don't mind him....please bless the food

***they looked at him as he bowed his head and Ma also bowed her head and she blessed the food and she also thanked God for bringing Ray into Mbali's life as it proved that it was all fate that they met by being the only one who managed to save her life after the prayer they all started eating with Ray stealing glances at Mbali.....Well he came to see Mbali then Ma asked him to join the rest of the family for breakfast and he couldn't say no ***

.
. .

Ray and Mbali were now driving to his hotel he booked into he asked Pops if he could take Mbali out so they can properly talk especially about what happened and he agreed after baba convinced him she's save with him.....They parked the car got out and they went inside with Ray holding Mbali's hand women around the reception area were staring at him as he walked passed them he had that "im rich so don't fuck with me" but "sexy" walk he had that "im rich so don't fuck with me" but "sexy" walk his one hand was holding Mbali's handbag while the other one was holding Mbali's hand...he looked yummy that even Mbali felt insecure when those women were staring at him with seduction looks on their faces.....anyway they got inside the elevator and it took them to his floor and they got out and went to his room.....she was now sited on the bed as Ray was ordering food and drinks for them after he was done he went to sit next to her

Mbali: where were you?

he sighed and he got up and he pulled her up and they went to sit on the chairs that were next to the window in the room

Ray: im sorry I left just like that my flower but believe me I had to leave

Mbali: had to leave? Ray im pregnant in case you forgot so you can't just leave when you feel like it unless you don't give a shit about this baby im carrying!

she said getting angry

Ray: my flower calm down ok it's not good for the baby

*** Mbali stood up and she laughed an 'annoyed' laugh***

Mbali: which baby are you talking mmmh.....the same baby you left going to God knows where...heh which baby Ray?

Ray: Mbali you...

she interrupted him

Mbali: don't call my name....you don't deserve to call my name Raymond....you left me all alone scared....shit have been happening to me and you weren't there I had horrific dreams and you weren't there....i even ended up going mad and you still weren't there so don't call my name!

she was now fully angry at him and he sighed

Ray: im really sorry my flower

he said with a calm voice and it made Mbali more angry cause he was so damn calm

Mbali: take your stupid sorries and shove them down your ass nx!

Ray also got up

Ray: what did you just say to me....what the fuck did I say about respect Mbali!

Mbali: fuck you and your fucken respect you hear me.... fuck you Raymond respect is earned and not demanded...you didn't even call to check up on us....i cried myself to sleep because of you!

by now the little beast was awake and Mbali was feeling extreme anger

Ray: you know what.... im just gonna leave the room so you can calm the fuck down and when you are calm you'll call me and I'll come back and we will have a decent conversation

Mbali: leave nx....that's what you're good at so hamba (go)....and just so you know just because im pregnant doesn't mean men don't see me so don't think you're doing me a favour by being with me Raymond FYI men are still interested in me with this visible baby bump....now go what are you still waiting for....go!

Ray looked at her and he could feel himself getting angry but he calmed himself down telling himself that she's just angry and her hormones are adding more fuel to the already burning fire

Ray: are you now done disrespecting me?

and that fuelled her anger some more

Mbali: you know what just go suck a dick Raymond nx

*** she said that with her chest raising up and down fast with her hands shaking with anger and within a split second Ray was next to her grabbing her by her hair tight bending her head a bit backwards***

Ray: WHAT DID YOU JUST SAY TO ME!

he asked with a scary look on his face but Mbali wasn't moved

Mbali: you gonna hit me now Raymond mmh? not only do you suck when it comes to loving someone the right way and now are you also a woman-beater mmh?

she said looking at him straight in the eyes....she didn't know where the courage and anger she suddenly had come from....she didn't wanna feel like this cause she could recognize that she was disrespecting him but she couldn't help it...as for Ray the anger and disrespect he felt was extreme he wanted so bad to strangle her until she took her last breath but he couldn't cause he loved her and for some unknown reason he felt that this is not her

Ray: ENOUGH! YOU'RE PUSHING ME TO DO SOMETHING I VOWED TO NEVER DO TO YOU MBALI...YOU'RE PUSHING ME AND YOU'LL FUCKEN REGRET IT...I GET THAT YOU ARE ANGRY BUT NOW YOU'RE FUCKEN CROSSING THE LINE NOW TAKE A FUCKEN STEP BACK BEFORE YOU FUCKEN REGRET IT!

***he warned her and instead of taking the warning and taking a step back like he told her to she actually chose to continue crossing the line by kneeing him really hard on his private-parts and

he held his breath as the pain he was feeling moved from his crushed nuts straight to his heart and he let her go bending while holding his squashed nuts groaning with pain and cursing then she pushed him hard and he fell on the floor still groaning in pain ***

Mbali: DON'T EVER THREATEN ME RAYMOND UYANGIZWA(you hear me) IM NOT ONE OF YOUR STUPID BUSINESS ASSOCIATES NX

***she said shouting at him then she rushed to the bathroom and she locked herself in and she sat on the toilet seat and that's when tears started running down her cheeks....she cried hard until she calmed down and that's when what she just did started to come back to her as the little beast was now back to his cage....her whole body started shaking as fear of what Ray will do to her for disrespecting him like that took over ***

.
. .

*** Amo just came back from work and she went to take a quick shower before starting with the pots after her shower she came out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her naked body and she found Jabu laying on the bed with his back on top of a towel that was laid nicely on top of the duvet and he was naked his hands were under the back of his head with his eyes closed while his hard and erect big dick was laying on his lower belly with veins popping all over it and she swallowed hard as she felt her clit twitch then she tightened her inner thighs as the tingling feeling between her legs was getting too much..... she turned and she grabbed her body lotion trying to compose herself and she dropped her towel ready to lotion her body***

Jabu: let me help you with that

he said getting off the bed she thought maybe he was taking a nap or something but clearly she was wrong

Amo: ok

he got to her and he took her body lotion and he poured some on his big hands and he rubbed them together and he rubbed the lotion on her upper body gently which made Amo to moan lightly when he rubbed the lotion on her breasts

Jabu: o grand mami? (are you ok?)

***she nodded breathing heavily and Jabu smirked cause he loved how her body always reacted to his touch....now he started to lotion her from her feet going up and when he rubbed the lotion on her ass he squeezed both the butt cheeks tight and he groaned...as for Amo she could feel his

rock hard member poking her on her stomach and her nana was dripping wet she just didn't know what to do with herself he now rubbed her inner thighs and his hand went to her nana and rubbed it and she moaned out loud while he clenched his jaws.....then his finger rubbed her clit and she held his arms tight while biting her bottom lip***

Jabu: rato laka (my love)

Amo: mmmh

the sound came out like a moan and Jabu smiled and he kissed the corner of her lips

Jabu: I think re ready gore ke je kuku (I think we are both ready to make love)

her eyes popped out and he kissed the corner of her lips again

Jabu: khale keo galla blaen mara I was stressed ka big Ray so I knew gore ko ba rough (I've been craving you big time but I was stressed with big Ray so I knew I was gonna be rough with you) and I didn't want your first time to be a horrible experience for you

***she swallowed hard and out of the blue he inserted his finger in her and she flinched and moved uncomfortably ***

Jabu: relax baby ok

*** he whispered to her and she nodded then he moved it round and round gently inside of her and she held on to him tight as a mixture of a little pain and pleasure took over***

Amo: Ja...Jabu

Jabu: rato laka

she didn't say anything else instead she moaned then he pulled his finger out and he sucked on it then he grabbed her butt cheeks and lifted her off the floor and she wrapped her legs around him and he went to the bed with her then he laid her on the bed and he instructed her to lay on top of the towel and she did with her heart pounding against her chest then he got on top of her and they kissed the kissed got really heated with Jabu's finger rubbing her clit....then he inserted his finger again and she moved uncomfortable and he deepened the kiss..... then he started fingering her slowly sucking on her neck now with Amo moaning from all the comfortable pain mixed with pleasure she was feeling....after sometime he felt her getting close as her body tensed and he stopped fingering her and he sucked on his finger again and he kissed her making her taste herself....he then pulled out of the kissed and he gently bit her jaw line as he felt his dick twitching....he was now breathing heavily on her left ear and he whispered to her

Jabu: I'd really love to muff you but I want to enter my sacred place now mami...I wanna feel your tightness and warmth around my dick now

she swallowed hard but with her clit twitching like the way it was she also wanted him in but she was scared

Amo: im...im scared Jabu

*** then his hand went between them and she felt him rubbing the tip of his dick up and down his nana and he made things worse for her as she moaned out loud***

Jabu: what are you scared of baby...i love you and im never leaving you or letting you go ever...

Amo: what...what if you leave me after sleep...

he tried to push his tip inside her but she was just too tight he wanted to stop her from saying what she was about to say cause he knew it will make him mad

Amo: Ja..Jabu

she called out his name as her heart was beating out of its ribcage now

Jabu: trust me Amogelang please love

he said breathing heavily then he pushed his tip in two times and still he couldn't get in...he then started rubbing her clit in circular motion wanting her to relax cause she was tense and when she started to moan loud he stopped and he quickly pushed only his tip in and it went in and she flinched moving up a bit with her eyes popped out and Jabu quickly wrapped his one arm around her waist pulling her back and keeping her still

Jabu: do you trust me Amo?

she swallowed hard and nodded looking scared and he perked her lips

Jabu: then trust that im telling you the truth Amo...i love you so much...kao ncanywa Amogelang and thata (I love you Amogelang too much)

he said that then he pushed half of his dick in and she screamed a bit feeling some pain...she tried to move but his grip was tight around her waist

Jabu: I love you ok

she nodded with tears in her eyes and he perked her lips again and he pushed the rest of his big dick in her and he groaned out loud while she felt a tear and she screamed out loud as she felt extreme pain and tears ran down on the sides of her cheeks and Jabu stopped moving and he whispered closer to her mouth

Jabu: askies baby the worst is over ok...I love you

*** then he perked her lips and he started to move in and out of her gently and she shut her eyes tight with tears coming out as it was painful***

Jabu: relax so it won't hurt much

*** he told her and he groaned as she was too tight and she tried to relax but the pain was just unbearable.....then Jabu started increasing his pace as he moved in and out of her missionary style.....the pain was there but Jabu's groans and heavy breathing was what she decided to

concentrate on because they were sexy as hell...he went faster and deeper but not too deep and she moaned out loud with pain mixed with pleasure now....then as she was still concentrating on that pain mixed with pleasure feeling she felt him grabbing her hair as he went faster while groaning loud and mumbling things***

Jabu: ahhhh...shitttt...fuckkkkk....yessss mami.....ahhhhhh...youuu...ahhhh.....

is what he said as he moved in and out of her fast...she was warm and super tight and that drove him crazy....then with both of his hands he went to her ass and he grabbed her butt cheeks tight pushing his body up a bit making his dick to go deeper and which automatically made Amo to rise his legs up and wide and he fucked her hard going in and out of her fast while groaning out loud with Amo's nails digging deep on his back.... then he hit her G-spot and an orgasm hit her so fast and hard that she screamed out loud with her body shaking and her toes twirling hard and well Jabu didn't stop instead his grip on her butt cheeks got tight as he fucked her hard while chasing his own happy ending.... he went in and out of her fast as he felt his own orgasm getting nearer and nearer with his grip getting tighter and tighter on her ass and his body tensing....he fucked her hard losing himself in her until an orgasm hit him and he slammed into her hard with his muscles tight all over his body and he release hard in her while holding his breath a bit and he groaned out loud cursing

Jabu: AHHHH SHITTT...FUCKKKKK...FUCKKKK!

then his body collapsed on top of Amo's and they both kept quiet trying to catch their breaths then after sometime Jabu raised his head with a huge smile on his face

Jabu: you ok?

she just nodded...she didn't wanna tell him that her insides feel numb and she cant even feel her pussy....anyway he kissed her lips

Jabu: thank you for trusting me with your precious treasure Amo I'll forever be grateful....i love you ok

she nodded slowly

Amo: I love you too

she said with a low tone...she seemed tired and drained

Jabu: shit I cant believe your nana made me scream out like a bitch like that....i think im already addicted to it

she smiled weakly and he kissed the tip of her nose and her forehead then he pulled out slowly and Amo flinched with pain

Jabu: askies mami

he kissed her lips

Jabu: don't move I'll be right back ok

she nodded not moving she was laying on the bed with her back like a chicken ready to be stuffed up marinated then put inside the oven.....she then heard the water running in the bathroom and after sometime Jabu came back with a wet and warm towel and he cleaned her up and he smiled when he saw the blood on the towels he then picked her up and he went to the bathroom with her in his arms and he slowly put her inside a bath filled with warm water and he got in and sat behind her and she rested the back of her head on his chest and he rubbed her arms

Jabu: yeer o monate san(you are delicious)im serious....now I feel like standing on top of a rooftop and shout for the whole world to hear about how much kuku ya gao eleng monate ka teng(your pussy is so delicious)

Amo giggled

Jabu: o monate wa utlwa my love? (you are delicious you hear me?)

she nodded giggling and he kissed her neck

Jabu: and Mjava wa go rata wa utlwa(and Jabu loves you ok)

she nodded again blushing

Jabu: damn keng ke jele kuku ya gao sterek gore o be o nne smumu my love(damn did I fuck you to a point that you then went mute)

Amo laughed and Jabu joined her

Jabu: mmmmh?

he said trying to look at her face with a smile on his face

Amo: bathong Jabu ofcourse not haw

she said blushing and Jabu chuckled

Jabu: ai Ramasedi kea leboga man (Lord thank you) mmmmh imagine out kids asking me why mommy a le mute and I have to explain why mmmh

*** he said and he shook his head and Amo continued to laugh and Jabu kissed her neck***

Jabu: thank you again ok mami

she nodded and he kissed her cheek

57

INSERT.....57

.
. .
.

NARRATED

Amo: Jabu im sore

Jabu: we have to go again my love so you'll be able to walk tomorrow

he said rubbing his tip on her entrance he was on top of her missionary style again and he bend going to her lips and they kissed.....then he slid in slowly and she yelped with pain while Jabu groaned loud

Jabu: askies my love...damn you're warm and tight my skat

he whispered to her ear and he bit her earlobe gently while moving slowly....he then moved his face to look at her while still moving in and out of her slowly

Jabu: look at me Amo

she was closing her eyes tight concentrating on the pain then she opened them when he asked her to

Jabu: I love you ok

he said it with a sexy voice that was made sexier by of its natural deep tone and Amo nodded

Jabu: now relax so I can take you to paradise

he was still moving in and out of her slowly and she relaxed a bit..... then he stopped and kneeled straight up on the bed and he held her waist and he pulled it up while her upper body from her breast up was still on the bed and she wrapped her legs around his waist

Jabu: don't wrap them around my waist open them wide and lift your feet with your toes only touching the bed

she did as told

Jabu: good!

*** then he pushed himself in deeper and she moaned out loud and he groaned then he held her waist still making sure she doesn't move and he moved in and out of her while looking up as her tightness and warmth drove him insane and as for Amo she held on tight to the bed covers as that mixture of pain and pleasure took over..... Jabu then increased his pace going in and out of her now looking down at Amo who was moaning with pleasure***

Amo: goshhhh....Jabu....

Jabu: yes baby....you like that....

***he asked her increasing his pace a bit more and she started groaning as now that pain was disappearing and extreme pleasure was kicking in then Jabu stopped ***

Amo: jabu why did you stop?

Jabu: lift your legs and put them on my shoulders

he instructed her and she did as told without him pulling out and held her waist up again and he just started with a fast pace hitting the right spots which made Amo to scream with pleasure

Jabu: you like that my love?

he asked her going faster

Amo: yeea...oooh goshhhh...yesss...

and he went faster and hit her G-spot and she screamed like a mad woman with her body shaking and Jabu stopped then he pulled out

Jabu: turn around!

she did with his help cause her body was numb and it was still shaking a bit

Jabu: ass up and chest down!

she did as told then he put her in the right doggy style position and he rubbed the tip of his member on her entrance for some time then he slid in and he groaned deep while she moaned

Jabu: shit I don't think I'll ever get used to how tight you are rato laka (my love)

she didn't say anything she just moaned as he was moving back and forth slowly....then he pulled his member out completely and he slid back in again pushing himself deeper and he groaned

Jabu: ahhhh...

then he pulled out again and he slid in again and he cursed

Jabu: shitttt....

and he pulled out again and now he slid in again and moaned with his voice vibrating from deep down his throat

Jabu: mmmmh

then he started moving with a fast pacehe hit it hard while spanking her butt every now and then and as for Amo the pleasure she was feeling was out of this world she was busy holding the covers tight while moaning and screaming with Jabu's member ramming in and out of her from behind....Jabu was now holding her waist tight while he fucked her hard then an orgasm hit Amo and she screamed with her body shaking again and Jabu pulled out and he turned her around so she lays on her back and he got between her legs with sweat all over his body and some sweat dripping down on Amo's body from his face and he put a pillow under her back and he grabbed her thighs and he pushed them down to her upper body

Jabu: hold them and make sure they don't move

she did as told even though she was feeling weak and numb and Jabu directed his member and he slid in slowly and he pulled out and he slid in again and started moving with a fast pace as he looked down at his dick moving in and out of her nana

Jabu: shit...yesss mami

he said as he admired the sight he was looking at....he then closed his eyes as he increased his pace and soon he felt his orgasm getting closer

Jabu: let go of your legs mami

she did and he pulled the pillow and threw it to the floor and he rested his body on her and he pulled her right leg up and he fucked her hard and fast for some time until they both came at the same time

Jabu: you ok

*** he said perking her lips and she just nodded with her eyes closed and he pulled out slowly and got off her then he cleaned her up with a towel....he then got off the bed and he went downstairs still naked and he came back with an ice tray***

Jabu: open up rato laka

*** he said that kissing her bare yellow thigh and she slowly opened her eyes ready to tell him she can't go on for another round then she saw an ice cube on his hand***

Jabu: it will sooth your nana cause im sure its burning up

***she nodded with relief and opened her legs wide and Jabu did his thing and after he was done they cuddled in bed until Amo dossed off

.
. .

*** back in KZN 30 minutes later Ray decided to get up from the bed he was now lying on as he was waiting for the pain to subside and he went to the bathroom door and he knocked on it***

Ray: Mbali open up!

she slowly opened her eyes she was now lying on top of a towel she laid on the bathroom floor Ray knocked again but harder this time around cause Mbali wasn't responding or opening the door

Ray: MBALI OPEN THIS DOOR OR IM BREAKING IT DOWN!

she sat up biting her bottom lip scared while he continued to bang on the door

Ray: MBALI?

still nothing then he started panicking

Ray: MY FLOWER?.....BABY OPEN UP ITS BEEN 30 MINUTES NOW PLEASE OPEN IM WORRIED.....ARE YOU OK? IS MY SON OK?

still she kept quiet as tears were now running down her cheeks

Ray: YOU KNOW WHAT IM BREAKING THIS DOOR DOWN

he moved back a bit then she spoke

Mbali: Ray!

he stopped

Ray: Mbali open this door please

***she sobbed**

Mbali: im sorry Ray....im really sorry I didn't mean to disrespect you like that I was just angry

she said crying

Ray: open this door so we can talk properly

she shook her head no as if he could see her like a small child

Mbali: im scared Ray.....i know you hate being disrespected and I did more than disrespect you

she continued to cry and Ray sighed with his hands on his hips and his head bowed

Ray: I won't do anything to you now open the door so I can make sure that you and my son are ok

Mbali: you promise you won't do anything to me

then she sniffed and he clenched his jaws

Ray: I promise now open the door

Mbali: you sure you promise

Ray: yes im sure now open the door

***she kept quiet a bit then she got up slowly and she held the key and hesitated to turn it but she eventually did and after Ray heard the key turn he quickly opened the door and she was standing there looking down while fiddling with her fingers with her face pink and her eyes red and swollen from all the crying ***

Mbali: im sorry Ray I swear I didn't mean to disrespect you like that...I don't know what happened I just got too angry that I couldn't control it

she said that then she cried and Ray sighed....he looked inside the bathroom and he saw a towel lying on the floor and he clenched his jaws

Ray: come so you can lay down

she slowly walked out of the bathroom and she went to the bed and she saw two plates on the table covered and she swallowed hard cause she was hungry but now she was even scared to say another word to him....well she laid on the bed and Ray sat at the edge of the bed giving her his back and he brushed his head slowly

Ray: sit up so I can give you your food and after eating I'll drive you home

****she swallowed hard and tears filled her eyes***

Mbali: Ray im sorry please forgive me

Ray: I heard you now sit up

she sat up slowly while wiping her tears off and he got up and went to the table and came back with her food and he gave it to her

Ray: eat up

Mbali: Ray?

Ray: eat up please!

Mbali: nooo

Ray: look I don't have it in me to argue with you now please feed my son

she swallowed and her tears fell

Mbali: its...its fine I'll eat at home

she said putting the plate away and she got out of bed and Ray sighed

Ray: Mbali sit and eat before you make me mad abeg

she shook her head no with tears running down her cheeks while she was trying to wear her shoes

Ray: I cant deal with this I really cant....first you fucken disrespect me and now you're busy annoying me with all this shit...what the fuck is wrong with you mmmmh?

***she didn't say anything she just went to take her bag crying out loud now and Ray got up marching to her and he grabbed her upper arm roughly turning her so she can look at him and when he saw her face he quickly let go of her with his eyes popped out...she had visible black veins all over her face and he could see that they were slowly spreading to her neck and also her skin was pale but luckily her eyes weren't all black in color ***

Ray: shit....my flower you need to calm down

she was crying

Ray: Mbali calm down please...look im sorry for the way I spoke to you I shouldn't have ok...im sorry

he said pulling her closer and he held her tight with his heart pounding hard....he kept on brushing her back gently until she calmed down

Ray: you calm now?

***she nodded while sniffing ***

Ray: im sorry ok

she nodded slowly and he pushed her off him gently and the visible black veins were slowly disappearing....he was glad she couldn't feel whatever was happening to her face or see it cause he's sure she would've fainted....he then wiped her tears off and he bend a bit and perked her lips

Ray: I love you ok

she nodded with more tears filling her eyes and she blank once and they fell and Ray quickly wiped them

Ray: come you need to rest

he said pulling her to the bed and she put her hand bag down and she got on top of the bed and she laid down and Ray joined her and she rested her head on his chest and he held her tight

Mbali: I... I don't know what happened Ray....i suddenly got angry and I couldn't control it it was like I was possessed or somethingi swear it was like I wasn't in control of what I was doing like the anger I was feeling was clouding my better judgment

***Ray just tightened the grip around her ***

Ray: its ok my flower

his mind was still on what happened when Mbali's skin on her face changed....it was clear to him that little La Parca was taking over using his mother's body.....then it clicked that what if the little scene that happened earlier was the beast....he swallowed hard and he remembered Baba's words that time he met Pops' beast for the first time at Atteridgeville when Baba told him about the little beast Mbali was carrying..."shit" he thought to himself

Ray: my flower... sit up and feed our son so you can rest properly

she nodded and sat up then she took her plate and started eating while Ray sat there and watched her....he asked himself if Mbali is strong enough to carry both a beast and La Parca and also if she will understand when the time comes and he's forced to tell her the truth about what their son has or is....he sighed and looked down

Mbali: im sorry Ray I know I bruised your ego and I swear on my mother's grave it wasn't my intensions....i love you please don't end things with me....im sorry I disrespected you

she said all that looking down to her half eaten food on the plate and Ray looked at her with a frown on his face

Ray: end things with you?

she nodded and swallowed hard

Ray: look at me

she did slowly and she had tears in her already swollen eyes and Ray couldn't believe that this was the same Mbali that was swearing at him and challenging him....it was clear now that was the work of the beast and he wondered what La Parca would've done to him

Ray: im never leaving you Mbali so just get that thought off your head ok

she sniffed and nodded

Mbali: do...do you forgive me?

he sighed and nodded

Ray: yeah now stop stressing my son and feed him you need to rest so he'll rest too

Mbali: what about da....

he interrupted her

Ray: don't worry I'll call your grandfather and tell him you'll be back later im sure he'll understand

she nodded

Ray: now eat up

she nodded and started to eat

.
. .
. .

****Mbali was now asleep and Ray got out of bed gently making sure he doesn't wake her up and he went to sit on the chair and he dialed Baba***

Baba: yah

Ray cleared his throat

Ray: it's Raymond and I called to let you know that I'll bring Mbali back later cause she's resting now

Baba: I hope you didn't sleep with her after letting your demon out a couple of hours ago boy

Ray clenched his jaws

Ray: ofcourse not

Baba: good....anything else?

Ray: ummm....i have a question

Baba: im listening

Ray: ummm that beast thing in her well can it take control of her emotions while she's still pregnant?

Baba kept quiet a bit

Baba: what happened?

Ray: ummm nothing I was just ask....

he interrupted him

Baba: what did she do Sambulo?

Ray: wait how did you....ofcourse you did a background check on me mxm

he said that with a bored tone

Baba: now that's out of the way.... answer my question

Ray sighed

Ray: fine....ummm well she.....attacked me earlier

Baba: how?

Ray cleared his throat

Ray: well let's say my privates are swollen and my ears are still ringing with her intense insults directed to me

Baba kept quiet a bit then he busted out with laughter leaving Ray shocked with his reaction.... he laughed a bit until he calmed down

Baba: shit...the last time I laughed like this was when Nomhle shot Nkosenye when she was pregnant not forgetting when Kedi your sist....ummm I mean when Kedi beat the shit out of the boys with a golf stick and a baseball bat when she was also pregnant ooh and also not forgetting Mbali's father was shot twice by his wife when she was carrying the twins....and as for me well my wife stabbed me when she was carrying your father in law and when she was carrying Smiso's father she chased me around with an okapi but luckily I got away

Ray: Wha...what?

Baba chuckled

Baba: you're in deep shit my boy just make sure you tread carefully around her don't make her mad and also make sure you hide your guns knives golf sticks and baseball bats actually make sure you hide anything that she may use to fuck you up

Ray: shit!

Baba chuckled

Baba: shit indeed!

Ray cleared his throat again getting up and he went to stand next to the bed looking at her as she slept peacefully

Ray: I think La Parca almost took over her body but I quickly saw her before she noticed it

Baba: WHAT?

he sighed

Ray: yeah

Baba: when she wakes up bring her back so we can talk freely about it

Ray: ohk

then Baba dropped the call and Ray sighed and he got back in bed and her pulled her closer and he kissed her forehead

Mbali: Ray?

she said with a sleepy voice

Ray: shhh im here just go back to sleep

she nodded and snuggled closer and slept

.
. .
They were now on their way back to the Khumalo household and Mbali was quietly looking outside the window with a worried look on her face

Ray: talk to me

she sighed

Mbali: will I see you tomorrow?

he brushed her thigh

Ray: ofcourse and when im going back im leaving with you

a smile formed on her lips and she breathed out with relief while Ray laughed

Ray: what....you thought I'll leave you behind?

she nodded

Ray: I told you im never letting you and my son out of my sight.....i love you ok

she bit her lower lip blushing and she nodded

Mbali: I love you too and im sorry about....

he interrupted her

Ray: will you stop with your sorries we are good now stop ok

she sighed

Mbali: ok

***he took her hand and kissed the back of it ***

Mbali: im sorry about your twin

***he looked at her briefly surprised ***

Mbali: your brother Jabu I think....called me and explained the real reason why you went AWOL on me and he asked that I pray for you

he nodded...well he kind of knew that that's all Jabu told her

Ray: and you have some explaining to do back home about you entertaining dickheads when I wasn't around

she tried to swallow spit looking scared but the damn spit went through a wrong pipe and she started coughing hysterically for some time until she calmed down without Ray helping her or anything

Ray: you ok now my love?

she nodded coughing lightly now

Ray: mmmh....and you still have some explaining to do when we get back home and the explaining better be good

then they drove in total silence with Mbali biting her lower lip nervously until they arrived....they got out of the car and they went to the door and Ray stopped Mbali it was now around 8pm

Ray: I'll come see you before I leave ok

Mbali: ok

then Ray perked her lips and her forehead

Ray: I love you...both of you

he said rubbing her belly

Mbali: we love you too Ray

then they went inside and Ray greeted everyone and Baba got up opening his arms for Mbali and she went to him and he hugged her

Baba: you ok?

she nodded then she also hugged her father too and went upstairs to look for her grandmother and his brothers wives and kids

Baba: all of you follow me...including you Sambulo

they all followed him to his study

Baba: so what did you say the demon thing did boy

Snakes: what demon thing Baba?

he asked with a frown on his face

Jay: what is Baba talking about Ray

he sighed

Ray: little La Parca was trying to wake up using Mbali's body

Snakes: ooh Jehovah why mmmh....why

he said that with his hands raised

Pops: what do we need to do for that demon to behave?

well Baba told him and Melusi everything Ray told him including Ray being a victim of the little beast

Ray: well I have a way and I don't think my way will work for Mbali cause she's not the one who has the demon but our son in her womb does

he couldn't imagine Mbali in that coffin.....he wouldn't let her do it even if it was the only way cause he knows how it's like in there and how your soul wanders around seeing things no human being is supposed to see

Ray: look I wasn't born with La Parca but our son will be born with it so I don't know how to go about it but I know a brother of mine who knows what we can do

*** right then the lights went off and the room became completely dark***

Snakes: nooo God...not again...not again please

he said getting up and rushing to where the door is but then he tripped on Muzi's feet and he fell on the floor then the lights in the room came back up again and they saw a figure standing next to the window holding a glass of whiskey and everyone pulled out their guns pointing them at him including Snakes who was still on the floor but he was quick enough to pull out his gun..... as for Baba Ray and Melusi well they didn't move an inch

Ray: wait he.....

Immediately Jay let his beast out and he turned and so did Jase...well as for Smiso he didn't turn he continued to point his gun at the man.....then the man said something in a language the La Parca once spoke and their guns slipped out of their hands and a force flew them to the wall and they stayed up there as if they were glued there and within a blink of an eye the beasts sprinted to him and he said something again in that language and a shield covered him and the beasts tried to go passed the shield so they can rip the man to pieces but it was a futile thing to do

Baba: BEASTS STOP!

he commanded them and they stopped fighting to break the shield and they stood there grunting but ready to rip him to shreds

Baba: WHO ARE YOU AND WHAT THE FUCK ARE YOU DOING IN MY FUCKEN HOUSE WIZARD!

he roared

Ray: ummm Mr Khumalo this is Ruslan.....my brother from another mother and he lacks manners he just likes to badge into people's houses "uninvited"

Baba Pops Muzi Snakes Thorsten and Melusi turned to look at Ray

Pops: askies? so you know this fucken imposter!

he shouted and Ray nodded then he looked at Ruslan

Ray: ummm.... frère Couper s'il vous Plait (ummm brother cut it out please)

Ruslan: Leur dire De Mettre Leurs Chiens Sauvages Sur Un Tres Serree Laisse Parce que je ne suis Pas Pret A Etre Dechire en Morceaux.... Mes Zombies Encore Besoin de Moi (tell them to put their wild dogs on a very tight leash because im not ready to be ripped to pieces.....my zombies still needs me)

Ray chuckled and Thorsten sat down

Thor: mmmmh Enfin je suis a la Reunion de La Celebre Ruslan L'Assistant Ou Devrais – je Dire Le Sort Gourou En Personne (mmmmh finally im meeting the famous Ruslan the wizard or should I say the spell guru in person)

Ruslan smirked

Ruslan: Dans Le Flash (in the flash)

***he bowed a bit with one hand holding his stomach and the other one holding a glass of whiskey in it then he stood straight again and gulped down the whiskey ***

Ruslan: damn that was some good whiskey...shit!

he said looking at the glass

Ray: ummm he said you should tell the

Baba: I know what he said!

then he looked at Ruslan

Baba: just so you know wizard....you fucken owe me for entering my house without my fucken permission and it's not up for discussion

Ruslan: im used to owing people old man so it's all good

Baba clicked his tongue and he looked at Melusi and Melusi took out a plastic with white powder inside and he poured some on his hand and he went closer to the beasts and he blew the powder on their faces and they went down and fell on the floor

Ruslan: is it safe now bros?

Pops: voetsek...you're busy entering people's houses like umthakathi nobuso bakho ingathi amasende wombongolo kodwa usaba izilo msunu wakho nx (like a sorcerer with your face that looks like a donkey's balls but you are afraid of beast you cunt nx)

Muzi and Melusi chuckled

Snakes: mmmmh if it's not beasts its demons and now its wizards with spells..... ai I think God or was it Jesus? wasn't drunk when he said on the last day he will come back and now I think that day is nearer that we think...

Muzi: really mamba?

he gave him the "really" look

Snakes: ngiyak'tshela bafo (im telling you bro) we are going to hell

Ruslan: bros that fucker Zambo is seeking alliances in the dark worldI think now he's ready to sell his soul to the devil so he can defeat whomever that killed his beloved Bhabha so we need to act now or all hell will break loose

he said to Ray and they all looked at him

INSERT.....58

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Ray: so we should go after him now?

Ruslan nodded

Ruslan: that's why im here bros we need to act fast

Pops: why should we trust you?

he asked Ruslan with a frown on his face

Ray: cause I trust him with my life

they all kept quiet

Baba: what do we need to do to get rid of that fucker once and for all?

he asked with a deadly tone

Ruslan: the same way he defeated master's enemy to get his soul back

they all frowned at him.....as for snakes he just shook his head looking down

Ruslan: the spell of illusion.....then when we are next to him we will reveal ourselves and you can do whatever you want to do to him but his soul must be dragged out of his body by the La Parca and he will send it straight to hell

snakes swallowed hard and he breathed out loud

Ruslan: but your grandson here needs to stay back I can clearly see he's not a fan of the supernatural

he said pointing at Snakes

Snakes: and im cool with that....i support that 100%

Thor: how many people are we looking at?

Ruslan: four and many evil spirits

the room became silent

Ruslan: but don't worry about the evil spirits they bow down to La Parca so as long as he's there they won't possess you

Snakes: shit....im glad im not going there....i really need to start going to church now...all this shit is getting too much now mmmh im fine with beast I mean I grew up around them not all this hell La Parca dragging out souls and evil spirits shit

he said getting up and he went to pour himself a glass of whiskey and he gulped it down all at once.....Thorsten just chuckled looking at him

Ray: how will I put him back to rest bros I cant leave Mbali alone again man

Ruslan: don't worry now he's not coming all out because of anger but I will help command him out and make sure he rests after the whole thing

Ray nodded

Muzi: I think I should also stay back with mamba

they looked at him

Thor: why bafu?

Muzi: dude I have no beast to protect me so Snakes and I will stay back and protect the women and children....its safe that way cause the truth is we will be a liability there

Ruslan: the doctor is right

Snakes: just say you're scared man and stop talking about aboLiability and shit

he said that and chuckled

Muzi: fsek mamba

Snakes: nawe (you too)

Pops: are you two done?

Muzi: he started it Pops

Pops just shook his head defeated

Melusi: how can I help?

Ruslan: we will talk about that just the two of us man

Melusi nodded

Pops: all we did was to save Nomhle from being sacrificed to a cult and now we are dealing with the dark world and evil spirits...hai...

he said shaking his head

Baba: I don't care about evil spirits or even lucifer himself all I want is to rip that motherfucker to pieces with my bare hands.... he made my granddaughter go mad and he killed my brother....my best friend and he left Melusi an orphan and until I know he's in hell being tortured for fucken eternity I won't find closure and peace....i don't care how we get to him all I want is him dead period!

***then he got up and he walked out and Ruslan went after him ***

Ruslan: killer!

Baba stopped walking and he turned around with a scary look on his face

Baba: what!

Ruslan cleared his throat

Ruslan: we...we need to talk...privately

he said with a serious tone and a serious look on his face

Baba: follow me!

and they walked together and they went to the bedroom that is downstairs

Ruslan: you can't tell him

Baba: tell who?

he asked...he was standing next to the bed that Bab'dlamini took his last breath on with his hands inside his pockets

Ruslan: Ray

Baba frowned at him

Ruslan: I know the truth and believe me you don't want him to know the truth now

Baba raised an eyebrow at him

Baba: you will not come to my house and tell me what I can and cannot tell my friend's son boy

Ruslan sighed and he also put his hands inside his pocket facing Baba

Ruslan: can you handle La Parca when he comes out? no you can't and believe me he will turn this country upside down to a point that innocent people will die... well not innocent people per se but they will die I know this cause Guinea Bissau once fell victim of him...La Parca went around collecting souls of those that sin against the man upstairs and people never woke up from their sleep and others just dropped dead....luckily I managed to trap him and contained him and even though he took souls of sinners but an apocalypse almost befall Guinea Bissau with people thinking the world was coming to an end with the way people were dying

Baba looked at him with his eyes popped out

Ruslan: now here remember your son and grandsons including you are sinners too and ya'll might fall victim to him cause he doesn't give second chances and he doesn't chose who he should send to hell when he's like that...i made it out alive because of my protection spells

Baba swallowed and he frowned with his jaws clenched

Baba: so i should let him live a lie

Ruslan: ofcourse not Killer it's just now it's not the right time...look he just went to put La Parca to sleep two weeks back he just brought your granddaughter back from Zambo's claws his sister in law is in a coma he's still dealing with the fact that his "supposed" twin was killed by his "supposed" mother and his brother is going through shit and he feels guilty for not being there for him his nephew was killed and many other things.... at least let's get rid of Zambo and wait for his sister in law to wake up then maybe just maybe you can tell him

Baba sighed and he clenched his jaws again looking down

Baba: how did this happen....we buried his woman and his son who had albinism....we mourned their death to a point that he became a shadow of himself

Ruslan: that woman that claims to be his mother knows what happened the day he was born....she has all the answers....and I have a bad feeling we wont like her confession

Baba shook his head

Baba: yes it was odd that the mother and son died at the same time but when the nurse said her blood pressure was extremely high after she gave birth we thought thats what killed her and that her son died because of his albinism condition

Ruslan: I doubt it....that woman knows what happened that day.....i see blood on her hands whenever I look at my crystal ball and her heart is cold as stone....now I understand why Ray hated her all along its because his mother didn't want him to show her any sort of love or tolerance.... it wasn't because of her cheating ways like I thought

Baba sighed

Baba: I swear if he didn't meet Kedi's mother my best friend and brother would have died because of a broken heart and guilt he blamed himself but Kedi's mother brought him back from the dark path he was heading to and all along his son was alive out there

he huffed and brushed his beard with his fingers with his jaws clenched

Ruslan: this world is full of evil people man can you believe she told him his real father is some Portuguese man and he believed her

Baba: nx that bitch.....the DNA I did on him and Kedi shows that they are brother and sister which means she's Mary-Ann's son cause the day he was born is the day Mary-Ann gave birth and died along with that baby we buried her with

Ruslan: this is all messed up

Baba: that bitch....that bitch.... I swear im going to kill her myself

Ruslan: that's if Ray doesn't first

Baba: I need my wife so I can calm down... I swear that bitch's existence pokes my beast and it might wake up after it has been asleep in its cage for years nx

*** then he walked out leaving Ruslan in the bedroom....all these years he feared to tell Ray the truth because of the aftermath of what might happen after he tells him and now he doesn't have a choice cause he knows Baba will tell him ***

Ruslan: shit!

he then bushed his hair and he walked out

Ray: bros where did you disappear to

Ruslan: I needed to talk to the big man about something

he said avoiding eye contact with him

Ray: you ok?

he could see something was up with him

Ruslan: yeah you know how fucken intimidating he is man

Ray chuckled

Ray: tell me about it...i mean I have La Parca but him and his son still make me uncomfortable

they chuckled

Ray: im glad you're here bros

he said squeezing his shoulder

Ruslan: you know I never miss an opportunity to show off with my spells man

they laughed

Ray: let's go I need you to meet my flower and my little La Parca

Ruslan chuckled and he followed him

Ray: ooh and whatever it is that you are so afraid to tell me know that one day you won't have a choice but tell me

he said not even looking at Ruslan as they were walking and Ruslan stopped walking with his eyes popped out

Ray: lets go bros so we can go rest tomorrow is a gonna be a very busy day

.
. .
.

Jabu: mami wake up

he said shaking Amo and she moved a bit...it was the following day around six in the morning

Jabu: baby wake up

*** she continued to sleep***

Jabu: AMO...AMO WAKE UP NTLU YA FYA! (the house is on fire)

he said shouting

Amo: mmmmh

then it registered in her head and she jumped up

Amo: where... omg where is the fire!

she said panicking and Jabu laughed out loud leaving Amo confused

Jabu: ka dlala man rato laka (im playing my love) I just wanted you to wake up

Amo frowned at him

Amo: mxm wa bora jabu mxm odlala rough man (you are a bore jabu....dont play like that)

***she said sulking and Jabu laughed ***

Jabu: askies my love

he said kissing her forehead

Jabu: look I woke you up to tell you that im going to pick Omphile and Lesedi up and I'll take them to school and day care then I'll go past the hospital

Amo: ummm ok let me shower quickly and we will go together....i'll call in sick at work

she said pushing the covers off her and Jabu stopped her

Jabu: no you need to rest baby cause I did a number on you....we will go together later ok and ooh I called that colleague of yours wa go phapha (who is forward) and told her you're not well and that you won't make it to work today

Amo: ohk

then he bit his lower lip looking at her naked body

Jabu: I swear my ancestors must have really begged yours with everything they got to allow us to meet

Amo giggled

Amo: bathong Jabu

Jabu: im telling you the truth....i mean you are here with me Amo and now im ready to give my son something that I have been longing to give him...a warm home and a mother figure

Amo smiled

Jabu: and now im also pussy whipped to a point that even if you tell me to repent and become a pastor I might consider it

Amo laughed

Amo: ok but would you really consider it...being a pastor?

she asked with a raised eyebrow and Jabu chuckled

Jabu: a re ska tlwaela Modimo masepa rato laka please (let's not test God my love) I mean it's enough that he let us meet after im sure he was convinced thoroughly by our guardian angels to let us be now let's not push him to his limits assomblief (please)

Amo: bathong Jabu....you know what I give up shem

she said laughing and Jabu joined her...then he perked her lips

Jabu: ok let me go

she nodded

Jabu: kao ncanywa ok and blaen gape wankutlwa(I love you and a lot ok)

she nodded blushing

Amo: le nna kao ncanywa (I love you too)

then she giggled and Jabu laughed

Jabu: ok rato laka let me go I'll see you later ok

she nodded and they kissed then Jabu walked out

.
. .
. .

**** Well he went past Thandi's place to take Omphile and Lesedi to school and day care and he was glad they moved from Soshanguve to centurion cause he didn't know how it was gonna work with school for Omphile because of the distance then he went to the hospital and he found Heath sitting on a chair next to Naledi's bed with his forehead resting on the edge of the bed as he held Naledi's hand and he cleared his throat and Heath raised his head and looked behind him to see Jabu standing there***

Jabu: bros

Heath: bros

Heath got up and they bro-hugged

Jabu: how is she?

Heath: the same man

he said with a sad tone then he sighed

Heath: I just want her to open her eyes that's all....i swear im about to lose my mind

Jabu: hang in there bros I know she'll wake up..... and you need to go see your brats it's one thing they can't see their mother you can't abandon them too

Heath: I have not abandoned them Jabu I do call Omphile

Jabu: you know what I mean man Mshikaro....tlogela go iketsa lecoconut man (stop acting like a coconut)...bona (look) I went past Thandi's place to take the girls to school and day care and Omphile asked me if you and Naledi will ever come back for them or they'll have to be raised by their aunt just like her friend mpho is

Heath clenched his jaws

Jabu: bona mfowethu I understand you need to be here for Star and Sniper but don't forget gore you have two daughters that need you too

*** Heath sighed***

Jabu: If it was possible I would change and become your doppelganger so you can be here for Star and Sniper and I'll go be with the girls but jy veet gore yo nna boloi fela dai dang(you know that will be witchcraft at its best)

Heath chuckled

Heath: I'll go pick them up from school and day care then

Jabu: my man!

Heath just shook his head smiling then Jabu went closer to naleli's bed and he held her hand

Jabu: hai man Ledi tsoga man ebile poo ya gao e tlhafil eka o tsupa nyaope (Ledi wake up man even your man here looks like shit as if he smokes nyaope "a drug")

Heath chuckled

Jabu: mmmmh o busy o robetse hier and rumor has it gore Jesu o buile bare o sa le Limpopo o busy o dealer le baloi ba daar and o tlo theogela kwano ge a fetsa and wena o robetse mo no man tsoga(you are busy sleeping here and rumor has it that Jesus is back they say he's still at Limpopo dealing with witches there and once he's done he's coming this side and you are busy sleeping here...no man wake up)

Heath just laughed while shaking his head

Jabu: bona ntwana tsoga so that di tweebenaare di bone gore wena oskhokho and ba ka se go kgonemara Star come on gape Mshikaro o tlhomola pelo man shem aram skepsil sa modimo tsoga so a kgone go boela ko bo charmer boyeng ba gae gape nkare bo "mama makapane? or suster wa namela?" (he said mimicking nyope boys' voices)..... mmmmh ke ra bona bo nyaope boys...(look young one wake up so that witches out there can see that you are the boss and that they can't bring you down.....but Star come on Mshikaro looks like shit shem God's poor thing tsoga so a kgone go boela ko bo charmer boyeng ba gae gape nkare bo "mama makapane? or suster wa namela?" (he said mimicking nyope boys' voices)..... mmmmh ke ra bona bo nyaope boys...(look young one wake up so that witches out there can see that you are the boss and that they can't bring you down.....but Star come on Mshikaro looks like shit shem God's poor thing wake up so he can go back to being a charmer boy cause now he looks like nyaope boys)

Heath: voetsek Jabu!

Jabu laughed

Jabu: ke ova vaar and wa itsi (you know im telling the truth)

Heath: mxm

then he showed him his middle finger

Jabu: bona nou o tsuputsi cause ke mo chaela vaar.....eeh gape nou poo e ya gao e nale pelo ya tshotshwane le ge o kare o e shapa ka joke nyana e no gontsha meno ka feish mmmmh ke tsona mara.... so tsoga man o kgone go re lamolela gape nna ke setse ka tipsi fela then ke meno uit (look now he's sulking cause im telling him the truth....eeh even now this bull of yours has a short temper even when you tell him a small joke he just punches you mmmmh this is not on so wake up so that he can stop even me im walking on thin ice and one mistake he'll punch my teeth out too)

Heath laughed while shaking his head defeated and Jabu chuckled

Jabu: ok..ok...ok on a serious note you really need to wake up Naledi if you can't do it for yourself and Mshikaro then do it for ditshotshwane tsa gao kera tsona dincosi tsa gao ok (your kids)

then he kissed her forehead and he turned to Heath

Jabu: o tlo tsoga sa wara (she's wake up don't worry)

Heath sighed

Jabu: ke matwetwe mshikaro so ntshepe (im a seer mshikaro so believe me)

Heath chuckled and Jabu joined him

Heath: since when?

Jabu: since last night when I finally ate the forbidden cookie mfowethu

Heath's eyes popped out

Heath: you mean you...

jabu interrupted him

Jabu: ke jele kuku bros (I ate the cookie bro)

they both laughed

Heath: for real jabu?

Jabu: ke re bona even now im sure o tsamaya e kare ledada ko tlong daar (she walks like a duck at home)

they laughed again and bro-hugged

Heath: finally man...congrats

Jabu: eish finally bros gape ne ke bolaya ke letswai blaen mfowethu even le letsogo laka la ka mo right le nale more tight muscles than la ka mo left ka 'self-service' (salt was killing me bro

even my right arm has more tight muscles than my left arm because of 'self-service') mmmmh
bona fela(look)

*** he said showing him his right arm and Heath laughed and Jabu joined him***

Jabu: on a different topic we need to discuss how you want that bitch to be dealt with

he whispered to Heath

Heath: I talked to big Ray early in the morning and he said we shouldn't touch her until he gets here so let's wait for him and see what he has in mind he pointed out that I shouldn't paint my hands with her blood cause she's Obim's sister and Lesedi and Ikechukwu's aunt whether I like it or not and he's right....imagine Obim finding out it was me who took her out I can't lose her for anything or anyone bros...she's my life so if I have a choice now to prevent certain things from happening in the future I'll take that choice so I'll be able to grow old with my mamiwota.... so you and big Ray will deal with her

Jabu nodded

Jabu: I understand you bros.....and Bunke?

Heath sighed

Heath: around two im going to have him cremated....Gogo called and she said a child is not supposed to stay in the mortuary for more than three days at least

Jabu: we will go together bros

Heath: thanks man and gogo and mkhulu said they'll also be there

Jabu nodded

Jabu: what about her father...how is he?

Heath: he was here 30 minutes before you got here a nurse brought him in

Jabu: at least he's alive

Heath: yeah

*** Then they stood there looking at Naledi***

Jabu: a re vaiye ro bona Sniper (lets go see Sniper)

Heath went to Naledi and he kissed her forehead and he whispered to her

Heath: I'll be back....i love you

then they walked out of Naledi's ward

.
. .
.

Mamiki: mama don't talk like this please

Koko: it's the truth ngwaanaka.....Naledi...Naledi almost...almost died Mamiki and you know she's...she's your only daughter you need to stop directing your anger and hurt to her the culprit is back and you should direct that anger to him and...and stop hating your only child

Mamiki.....right now she's gonna be the only family you'll have

then she coughed and she ended up coughing out blood and Mamiki wiped her

Mamiki: mama don't speak like this you are also my family

Koko: im leaving Mamiki and I want you to fix your relationship with your daughter or else no one will look after you the way you are looking after me now.... at least I have you here now but who will you have when you get sick Mamiki

Mamiki just cried

Koko: also tell Naledi that im sorry for each and every bad thing I did to her especially disowning her and calling her a liar when Thabo tried to rape her.... re...repent Mamiki or you'll end up just like me

Mamiki: Mama don't do this to me please

*** she begged her and koko started coughing hysterically and Mamiki rushed out to get her some water***

Koko: im sorry Naledi.....

then she took her last breath and Mamiki came back

Mamiki: Ma here is your....

she stopped when she saw her looking up without blinking and she dropped the glass and it fell and broke into pieces on the floor with water spilling all over the floor and she rushed to mother

Mamiki: mama?

nothing

Mamiki: mama...mama please don't do this to me....mama

she said with tears running down her cheeks

Mamiki: mama don't leave me please

she said falling down to her knees and crying out loud

.
. .
.

*** Jabu woke up to his phone ringing and he answered it without looking at the screen***

Jabu: yah

Voice: SHE'S AWAKE MAN...SHE WOKE UP.....OBIM WOKE UP JABU!

Jabu: Heath?

Heath: YEAH MAN MY WIFE IS AWAKE MAN....SHE'S FUCKEN AWAKE!

Jabu pushed Amo off him gently and he sat up then Heath sniffed

Jabu: shit.....ok im on my way bros...im on my way ok

Heath: no its ok its already late bros its fine you can come in the morning.....and please bring Omphile and Lesedi she's asking for them

Jabu: ok I'll bring them.....im glad she woke up Mshikaro im happy for you man...shit im glad she's finally awake

Heath: i guess she took your ranting earlier seriously cause when she saw me she said I look like shit

they laughed

Heath: ok give your woman some loving I'll see you in the morning

Jabu: ok shap

Heath: shap

they ended the call and Jabu smiled wide while looking at his phone

Amo: is everything ok baby

she asked sitting up

Jabu: yeah everything is perfect rato laka.....Naledi woke up

Amo: what?... ooh my God finally

then she closed her eyes with her one hand raised in the air and the other one on her chest

Amo: all glory be to you God...ohh thank you my Lord.....ooh the all mighty God I thank you thank you for performing your miracles on your child....thank you Lord for showing the devil that you never forget or abandon your children.....thank you for showing your powers through Naledi now God please show your amazing powers again by healing Heath and Naledi for the loss of the baby they lost don't let the devil take control of them by clouding their judgment and filling their hearts with hate revenge and anger....keep them together ooh Lord and show them the right way of healing be there for them and shame their enemies by continuing to bless them abundantly.....show your strength through them my God.....Isaiah 41:10 says " so do not fear for I am with you; do not be dismayed for I am your God. I will strengthen you and help you I will uphold you with my righteous right hand"..... So God strengthen them and help them and also uphold them with your righteous right hand and keep them strong together my Lord nothing is impossible with you my God.... and Isaiah 43:2 says " When you pass through the waters I will

be with you; and when you pass through the rivers they will not sweep over you when you walk through the fire you will not be burned; the flames will not set you ablaze”.... So please God walk with them on this rough path they are about to walk on be their light and strength and protect them....be with them my Lord and show how powerful you are through them by shaming their enemies and the devil.....thank you God....Thank you Jesus....thank you the holy spirit.... ooh thank you my God....glory be to you my Lord...you are amazing God and please continue to show your amazing powers and how wonderful you are through your children and let the devil eat dust....you are amazing my God you are truly amazing.....Amen

Jabu: Amen

she quickly opened her eyes and looked at Jabu and it was clear that he had his eyes closed too and his head bowed when she was praying she was shocked no lies....then he wiped sweat on her face with his hand and he perked her forehead

Jabu: I love you ok

she nodded looking into his loving eyes

Amo: I love you too

then he pulled her closer and he held her tight

59

INSERT.....59

.
. .

****HEATH****

***To say im nervous is an understatement I feel like im about to shit on myself cause I don't know if she blames me for what happened and for our boy's death or not and her not saying a word to me ever since she woke up this morning is making things worse....well I told her about Bunke not making it after she asked me why her belly was now flat and she cried so hard and painfully that they had to sedate her and when she woke up she only asked to see Ike and since then she hadn't said a word to me..... I took her to Ike and her cries when she saw his tiny body in that incubator that is attached to wires broke my heart to piecesWell I also got a call from James (her father) and he told me that Naledi's mother called him to let him know that Naledi's grandmother passed away (well good ridden to bad rubbish if you ask me) but I know

that even though she disowned Obi m and all but I also know that Obi m still loves and care for her even though she was treated badly by her so I don't know how she'll take the news.... mxm eish.....

I also told her about Bunke that we should have him cremated and she agreed with me with a nod (sigh) so now I just came back from the crematorium and im walking inside the hospital with Bunke's white wooden box with a small blue pearl brass urn inside filled with his ashes the wooden box has an infant on top of it sleeping inside blue wings it's a beautiful box and I had it engraved with "our angel Bunkechukwu your wings were ready but our hearts weren't" and it stated his date of birth and death date.....and as for Jabu he went passed the mall to get Obim Thandi and my girls some food.....

Anyway I walked inside her ward and she was holding a conversation with Thandi and the girls I cleared my throat and they all turned to look and I saw Obim's eyes fill with tears as her eyes were staring at the box I was carrying and I clenched my jaws***

Me: ummm Thandi please take the girls to the cafeteria to go get some snacks.... please

Thandi: ok... ummm lets...lets go girls

she carried Lesedi and they walked out after I kissed my girls' foreheads

Me: Obi m

tears ran down her cheeks and a sob escaped her mouth and I put the box on the side drawer and I got in bed and held her as she cried....i let her cry until she calmed down and was only left with sniffs and small hiccups

Naledi: can... can I hold it

Me: ok

I took the box and gave it to her and she held it closer and tears ran down her cheeks i also felt my tears run down my cheeks and I wiped them off.... shit I need to be strong for her we both can't fall apart

Naledi: what did I do to deserve this God.... who did I offend so badly to deserve all this why is it hard for the universe to let me be happy just once

she said crying and that broke my heart

Me: its all my fault Naledi...I take full responsibility for our boy's death I would understand if you hate me....im sorry Obi m....im really sorry I could've prevented all this I should have listened to you that day when you said I should deal with my issues with Lerato before bringing

you into my life...i should've listened to you im sorry Obi m but please don't leave me I swear i won't be able to handle it please

she didn't say anything she just cried

Me: please Naledi im begging you don't leave me baby if you need space I'll give it to you but don't leave me please

I begged her and she didn't say anything she was brushing the box while looking at it and also sobbing and I swallowed hard...i swear my heart will stop beating if she leaves me...i can't live without her...Anyway she never said anything until Thandi came back with the girls and she wiped her face and smiled at them and conversed with them and that broke me some more Jabu came back with their food and Jabu and I walked out leaving them eating and conversing we went to sit on the couches on the waiting area and I looked down and covered my face as I felt tears threatening my eyes

Jabu: Mshikaro

Me: she blames me and I think she wants to leave me

I said with a breaking voice

Jabu: what? shit... what did she say?

I sniffed and wiped my falling tears still looking down

Me: she doesn't talk to me Jabu....but she laughs and talks to the kids and Thandi....she blames me Jabu I can tell

I honestly told him

Jabu: come on Mshikaro im sure she's laughing and talking with the girls to ease their worries especially Omphile just to assure her that she's ok

Me: what about Thandi mmmmh?

Jabu: Mshikaro don't do this man assomblief (please)

Me: i...I can't....i need her man I need her so badly Jabu....i need her to talk to me to tell me how she's feeling

Jabu: Mshikaro

I shook my head no as more tears came out and Jabu sighed....fuck im a mess.....i wiped my tears and we sat in silence

.
. .
.

*** It was now in the afternoon and she was sleeping while im standing next to window looking outside with my hands in my pockets lost in thoughts with my heart heavy***

Naledi: Heath

I quickly turned and looked at her she was now holding the box looking at it

Me: Obi m

Naledi: I don't blame you but I blame myself I got our son killed

(what?...hell no)...I shook my head no with a frown on my face....how can she say that

Me: no you're not to be blamed Naledi and you know it

she shook her head no and I attempted to go to her but she raised her hand indicating that I should stop and I did and swallowed hard

Naledi: I should've walked out when she started insulting me but I stayed and tried to ignore her

I won't let her blame herself for what that bitch did never!

Me: well since you also blame yourself you should join the line cause I also blame myself

Thandi also blames herself your father uncles my father Mj Jabu and even Big Ray

she didn't say anything she just sobbed

Me: and you know the messed up part is we blame ourselves but we don't blame Lerato she's the one that fought and stabbed you Obi m

Naledi: maybe....maybe we pushed her to do this

Me: LIKE HELL WE DID NALEDI.....SINCE WHEN IS IT A CRIME TO MOVE ON....

FIRST OF ALL RELATIONSHIPS ARE NOT BY FORCE NALEDI WHY DIDN'T YOU FIGHT OR STAB YOUR BABY DADDY'S NEW WOMAN WHEN HE LEFT YOU FOR HER MMMH? SO DON'T MAKE EXCUSES FOR THAT EVIL BITCH IN FACT I WONT LET YOU!

I shouted...it wasn't my intension but i won't let her do this

Me: look Bunke is gone baby what we need to do is mourn him then find a way to heal for our girls and boyI know it hurts Obi m I know believe me but please let's not let Lerato succeed in breaking us up

she didn't say anything she just continued to sob and I just clenched my jaws with a lump growing on my throat...I kept swallowing hard but it just won't go away

Naledi: she...she killed my boy Heath....she killed him in cold blood....she...she killed him Heath...she killed him

she said that and release a heart piercing cry and I rushed to her and I held her tight as she cried

Naledi: she killed him Heath she killed him...he's gone Heath I didn't even get to hold him or see him grow up.....she killed him...she killed our baby boy Heath

she said between her painful cries and I just held her tight as my own tears were running down my cheeks....life is really fucked up and unfair how can God allow this to happen more especially to Naledi after everything she's been through why mmmh?..... Anyway she cried herself to sleep and I laid her down on the bed gently and I took Bunke's box and I put it on the side drawer and I sat down and watched her sleep

.
. .

****NARRATED****

*** They were now in Mozambique and they were inside Ruslan's house and the drive to where Zambo is it's about +-45 minutes'...its Ruslan Baba Pops

Sponsored

Pops Jay Jase Thorsten and Melusi.....As for Zambo he wasn't in his house anymore he left that day he found his Bhabha turned to ashes to his secret house that is not 'secret' anymore all thanks to Ray. The place he was at now is secluded somewhere in the middle of nowhere it's not gonna be as easy as Ruslan thought it is to get in cause this time Zambo is well prepared and he's not alone he's with his accomplices and many other evil spirits that lurk around in that place***

Thor: so when are you summoning his demon so we can get this over and done with

he said looking at Ruslan

Ruslan: in an hours' time cause right now Mel (Melusi) needs to go through some spells and make sure he remembers them before we leave

Jay: I still don't get why we should trust you I mean we don't even know you and strangers aren't allowed in our circle

he said annoyed

Ruslan: im not here for you boy im here for my brother ok

he said getting pissed off and Jay got up

Jay: who are you calling a boy wizard?

Ruslan: you!

he said getting up too and Jase got up too

Baba: SIT DOWN BEFORE YOU PISS ME OFF!

the Khumalo brothers kept quiet looking at Ruslan with their jaws twitching

Thor: ya'll know that we are all fighting for the same cause right? so all this bullshit is not necessary

Jase: we just don't trust this wizard Smiso

Ruslan: and I don't give a fuck... boy

Jase: call me that one more time and see what I'll do to you you piece of shit

Ruslan: b...

Ray interrupted him

Ray: bros don't....

Jase: yeah you better listen to him nx

then Ruslan chanted some dark magic spell pointing at Jase and Jase immediately saw darkness

Jase: the fuck!

he said rubbing his eyes

Jay: what's wrong?

Jase: my eyes man...my eyes!

Jay rushed to him

then Ruslan recited some more dark magic spell and Jase cursed with his heart beating out of its rib cage as he walked back and he fell down on his ass and Pops and Baba got up....Jase closed his eyes and opened them again and the huge face of a black anaconda was still staring at him with its long tongue almost touching his face

Jase: FUCK..... GET IT AWAY FROM ME...FUCKEN GET IT AWAY FROM ME!

he said trying to grab the snake and fight it off but he couldn't touch it

Jay: get what away?

he asked panicking also trying to restrain Jase

Ray: Ruslan stop it man!

he warned him

Ruslan: what? im teaching this boy some respect im tired of them talking to me like they are taking a shit in the toilet!

Pops: YOU BETTER STOP WHAT YOU ARE DOING TO MY SON NOW!

he roared and he took a step towards him and Ruslan rolled his eyes and he shook his head

Ruslan: trust daddy dearest to come to the rescue mxm

he said with a bored tone

Jay: STOP WHATEVER YOU'RE DOING TO MY BROTHER YOU BASTARD!

he warned him

Ruslan: ooh you still have mouth to talk mmmh?

Jase: FUCK....GET IT AWAY FROM ME....GET IT AWAY!

he screamed

Ray: RUSLAN STOP IT MAN!

Ruslan: ask nicely bros!

Ray gave him a stern look and Ruslan huffed

Ruslan: fine.....

he recited some dark magic spell and Jase's sight came back and he looked around with sweat all over his face with his heart beating out of his ribcage

Jase: fuck!

Jay: you ok bafo?

Jase nodded then he looked at Ruslan who was now sitting down.....Baba and Pops were also sitting down now

Jase: what... what did you do to me you bastard?

Ruslan: I taught you a lesson that's what I did....Now listen here I may not be part of your 'circle' but im older than you so the same respect your lovely grandmother instilled in you two you must show case it to your elders in her honor and stop acting like you were raised by cave men.....i know you hate being disrespected and guess what I also hate being disrespected so disrespect me again and I'll do worse... capish?

Jay clicked his tongue and he helped Jase up

Ruslan: I could just make your mind believe that you are looking at your wife dead on the floor covered in blood.....don't piss me off or I might end up traumatizing you for life!

Ruslan said to Jay and Jay looked at him with a scary look on his face

Baba: enough man yerrr eish nx..... Melusi!

Melusi: baba

Baba: just go do what you have to do so we can leave this fucken place I miss my wife

Melusi: ok baba

then he looked at Ruslan

Melusi: let's go man

Ruslan: ok let's go play

He said smirking and they walked away

Jay: I don't like this motherfucker!

Baba: you don't have to like him Nkosenye but he's here to help

Pops: what did he make you see?

he asked Jase

Jase: a really big snake right in front of my face

he said that and sighed brushing his face

Ray: one of the reasons why you should never mess with him

Jay: well he should not mess with me or any of my brothers you better tell him that

***he said with a stern look on his face and Ray chuckled**

Ray: do you know what your problem is spilo?

Jay: im sure you gonna tell me DEMON

he said with a bored look on his face

Ray: you don't know when to let spilo out and when to be the guy your grandmother raised you always attack and attack you the one that started this whole argument and believe me if you continue with it you won't be able to handle the outcome

Jay: im not scared of that wizard of yours Ray

Ray: you should be cause you need to get to him to hurt him but he can hurt you by just uttering some few words...think about it

he said pointing at his own head and he sat back and enjoyed his drink

Thor: ai....I need some air....Pops call me once the wizards are done

Pops chuckled and so did Baba

Pops: I see you don't like to get involved in small squabbles son

Thor: some squabbles aren't worth my time and energy Pops

he said getting up

Jase: wow so you gonna let that piece of shit do as he pleases Smiso

Thor: Jase I don't like him and im sure he knows it so there's no need for me to waste my energy on making him aware that man is here for Ray only so whether you don't like him or don't trust him he doesn't give a shit don't you get it....i always....always tell ya'll to stop entertaining nonsense but you never listen man

*** then he shook his head walking out***

Baba: he's right boys

Jay: I won't sit back and let some piece of shit disrespect me Baba

Ray: and how did he disrespect you cause you started this whole shit

***he said getting pissed by Jay's unreasonable attack on Ruslan ***

Pops: ok enough....Jayden stop it ok we are all here for the same purpose so stop it!

Jay huffed and he got up and walked out and Baba shook his head

Baba: I swear these boys will never change

Pops: mmmh and I wonder who they take after

Baba: VOETSEK!

Pops laughed and Ray chuckled while shaking his head

.
. .

Ruslan: you ready?

Ray: yeah let's do this

***Ruslan and Ray were sitting inside a circle....then Ruslan started reciting some words in the forbidden language for some time and the room began to shake a bit and out of the blue the lights went off and so did the candles that were surrounding the circle then they heard voices around of people screaming and everyone swallowed hard as the voices sounded like they were being tortured or something then the lights came back up and the candles lit as if someone lit them and there stood the La Parca floating on a black smoke he was wearing a long robe with the hood of it covering his head and face and he was holding a sharp scythe his hands looked like that of a skeleton and everyone curse moving back ***

Baba: so he's real he's not a myth

he said to himself then Ruslan spoke in the forbidden language

Ruslan: በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለባቸው ነፍሳት አሉ (great one there are some souls that need to be collected)

La Parca turned to look at him

La Parca: ጊዜው ገና አይደለም እነሱ በዝርዝሩ ላይ አይደሉም (it's not yet their time they are not on the list)

***he spoke with a scratchy voice that came out almost like a whisper ***

Ruslan: ብዙ ጊዜያቸውን እንዲያሳልፉ እናደርጋለን ብዙ ደንበኞችን ስለጣሱ እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳጅ ከሆኑት ሰው ጋር እምቢተኞች ናቸው (we gonna make it their time great one....they have broken too many rules and they messed with the one your carrier holds dear)

La Parca kept quiet a bit

La Parca: Zambo

Ruslan: አዎ ታላቅ(yes great one)

he said and he looked down

La Parca: እምም ሞትን ያታልላል (mmmmh he did cheat death way too many times)

then he turned to the Khumalos and they all swallowed hard with Jay Jase and Melusi shaking they couldn't believe they were in the same room with the real Angel of death....then The La Parca moved like the wind to them and he went to Thorsten and Thor swallowed hard

La Parca: ይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል(this one also cheated death)

Ruslan: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው እሱ ነው (not his choice but his father's.....and he's the one that needs to be blamed for that)

La Parca: እሱ ጠንካራ ነው (mmmmh he's strong)

Ruslan: አዎን እርሱ ታላቅ ነው (yes he is great one and he's not even aware of his magnificent strength)

La Parca: ሰዓቱ ሲመጣ ጥሩ ጋኔን ይፈጥርለታል በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል(he'll make a good demon this one he's be off good use in the dark world one day)

then he moved like the wind to Baba and Pops

La Parca: ጊዜው ሲመጣ ለእኛ ስላለሁ(when the time comes im coming for their souls myself)

Ruslan looked at Baba and Pops and he swallowed then La Parca move like a wind to Melusi

La Parca: እምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው የአጥንት ቅዱስ ስብዕና ለመያዝ ይችላል. (mmmmh this one will be a good wizard teach him well so he can be able to handle the Skeletal Saint that is about to be born)

Ruslan: በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለባቸው ነፍሳት አሉ (yes...yes great one)

then he turned to look at Jay and Jase

La Parca: ከዚህም በተጨማሪ ንስሏ ካሌገባችሁና ሁላንም ኃጢአታቸውን ካሌተሊከቡ: ጊዜው ሲመጣ: ውድ ነፍሴ እመጣሁ(im also gonna come for their souls too myself when the time comes unless they repent and confess all their sins)

Ruslan swallowed hard then La Parca moved to the middle of the room

La Parca: ታገኙኛላችሁ ታገኙኛላችሁም (you'll find me there come prepared!)

then he hit the bottom of the scythe on the floor and the lights turned off and so did the candles and seconds later the lights came back up again but the candles weren't lit too this time and he was gone then Ruslan sighed and he got up and when the khumalos looked at Ruslan the circle was gone

Jay: i...I can't believe it

Jase: me...me too

Thor: what was he saying?

Ruslan: you all are sinners and he's the angel of death so figure it out

he said wearing his shoes

Jay: what...what do you mean by that?

Baba: he's gonna come for us personally when its time right?

Ruslan nodded

Ruslan: unless you repent

they all swallowed

Baba: I hope a seat will be reserved for me in hell next to lucifer

Ruslan chuckled while shaking his head

Ruslan: ok let's go people

Melusi: what about him

Ruslan: im sure he's already there by now

Melusi nodded and they walked out

.
. .

45 minutes later they arrived and it was already late in the afternoon....they got out of their cars and they could see a dark cloud covering the whole forest with lightning all over

Jase: this is some fucked up shit

Pops: and you should be glad he's on our side

Jay: fuck it...remember he wants our souls

Ruslan: only when you're about to take your last breath will he then come to collect

Jase: as if that makes me feel better

Ruslan: dude you kill people what do you expect will happen to you when you die....that you'll go to heaven and the big man will congratulate you for taking another human's life come on

they kept quiet

Baba: can we just go before some of you start crying

Pops Ruslan Melusi and Thorsten chuckled and they went inside the forest and the wind was getting more intense the more they got closer to where the La Parca was and when they finally got to him he was surrounded by strong wind with dust black smoke and lightning then he turned to look at them and the wind died down but the lightning and black smoke didn't stop

La Parca: ያ ስፍራው በጣም ተጠብቆ የተያዘ ሲሆን ፍርሀት ለእነሱ እንደሚሰጥ ሲያስታውቁ ግን በእነሱ ላይ የእርምት ችግሮች ላይ ቢያስቀምጡትም እንኳ አያደርጉትም (that place is heavily guarded and they won't make it even if you put a spell of illusion on them as their fears will give them away)

then Ruslan turned to look at the Khumalos

Ruslan: you all need to turn into your scary beasts cause he says you won't make it in human form

Baba: what about Melusi

Ruslan: he will have to go back to the cars cause he won't make it out alive

Baba looked at Melusi and Melusi nodded

Melusi: ok kick some ass then

they chuckled and he went back glad he didn't have to enter that evil house he tried to consult with his ancestors to see if they'll all make it on this journey and they were silent and didn't show him anything so he didn't know how this whole thing is gonna go down

La Parca: ጦጠበቅ (keep up!)

then he moved like the wind with that black smoke lightning and that windy-dust moving with him along with the dark clouds on the sky..... then Ruslan chanted some dark magic spell pointing at the Khumalos and an illusion spell covered them and he also covered himself with the illusion spell too and he also chanted some other dark magic spell for him the Khumalos and a protection spell also covered them

then he looked at the Khumalo's

Ruslan: try and keep up

*** then he recited some words in a strange language then he wand-less disappeared (he disappeared) and the Khumalo's turned one by one including Baba and their beasts growled out loud and the ground shook as they started running bumping into each other following the La Parca***

.
. .
.

****TO BE CONTINUED****

Continuation 59

CONTINUATION OF INSERT OF 59

.
. .
.

NARRATED

The beasts got to the entrance and found Ruslan and La Parca waiting then Ruslan used black magic to remove the protection spell they put around the house and he indicated that they keep moving. They walked inside and it was awfully quiet

Ruslan: it's awfully quiet here

he said to himself then he looked at the beasts

Ruslan: be ready for anything!

they grunted with thick saliva dripping down from their mouths.....they moved then out of the blue they started hearing voice of people whispering not far from them then Pops beast saw a spirit approaching him and he growled at it then Ruslan chanted some spell pointing at it and it burned and evaporated

La Parca: ጊዜው ሲመጣ ለነፍሳቸው እመጣለሁ (stay close and they won't get to you)

Ruslan: he said stay closer to him and they won't get to you

*** he told the beast and they grunted again.....they moved but the evil spirits were getting angry cause they couldn't get closer to them now.....they got to the door and La Parca turned then he hit the bottom of his scythe on the ground and all the spirit burned and evaporated then he turned again and he went through the closed door and Jay's beast busted the door open and the rest followed and the house had candles lit all over it***

Voice: you cowards you went and got help from the angel of death to defeat me....you all are pathetic

the voice spoke and the beast growled looking angry and right then La Parca disappeared

Ruslan: ignore him and let's move

***they moved then they heard screams coming their way and Ruslan chanted some dark magic spell pointing at the spirits coming from the passage and they burned one by one then they kept moving.... the passage was huge and the buildings' inside structure was different from normal houses ***

Voice: well well well if it isn't the wizards and his wild dogs

they turned and one of Ruslan's enemies was standing there with a smirk on his face

Ruslan: Jargon you fucken pussy

Jargon's smile disappeared and Smiso's beast immediately charged towards him and Jargon chanted some spell pointing at Smiso's beast and it just bounced on it as it is protected and his eyes popped out as he was shocked then the beast got to him and started ripping him apart while he screamed..... then the screams died down and the beast turned and it was covered in blood

Ruslan: damn!

then they walked down the passage with Ruslan blasting off the spirits that were coming at them with his spells until they got inside a huge room and they found La Parca in the middle of the room floating on that black smoke with Zambo and his disciples standing next to the shrine that is in the room ready for a fight

Zambo: mmmh the mighty beasts working with the angel of death how interesting

Ruslan: there are only three of you here and the beast ripped one of your friends apart so where is the other one

Zambo: maybe he got cold feet and ran

Ruslan: I doubt it but it's all good

Zambo: so what do you want....are you the one that killed my master wizard?

he said looking at Ruslan then he also looked at La Parca who was just floating there not moving an inch

Ruslan: The mighty La Parca did

*** Zambo swallowed hard and Baba's beast took a step forward looking deadly***

Ruslan: ooh remember you killed his brother and made his granddaughter mad

*** he said pointing at baba' beast and Zambo laughed***

Zambo: ooh the mighty Khumalos.... damn I knew my enemies were behind my almost downfall

Ruslan: not really just that La Parca's carrier is dating killer's granddaughter and Nighthawk's daughter who is carrying La Parca's mixed seed the mighty Skeletal Saint

Zambo and his accomplices swallowed hard

Ruslan: yeah and you should be glad that we're the ones that are gonna kill you cause we both know that The Saint knows what you did to his mother and once he's born he's coming after you and we both know how that will pin out

Guy: Zambo why didn't you tell us about the angel death and The Skeletal Saint

Zambo: well...well im not going down without a fight

he ignored the guy and he chanted some spell pointing at them and Ruslan blocked it and he chanted his own dark magic spell and it hit one of Zambo's accomplices and he flew across the room then Baba Jay and Pops beasts charged towards them and Zambo quickly covered himself with a protection spell.....Pops beast grabbed one of Zambo's accomplices and it ripped him apart while Baba's beast was trying to break the spell as it couldn't get to him.....as for Jay's beast it was busy tearing the other guy to pieces while Smiso's beast stood there next to La Parca watching

Ruslan: HOW LONG ARE YOU GONNA KEEP THAT SPELL ACTIVE MAN

Zambo: FUCK YOU....I'LL KEEP IT ON FOR AS LONG AS I CAN

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: what if I do this?

***he chanted some words in the forbidden language and Zambo's spell got removed and baba's beast grabbed him by his neck with one hand and the other hand ripped Zambo's arm from his body and he screamed out loud as blood oozed out then La Parca hit the bottom of his scythe on the ground two times and Zambo's spirit left his body and it stood not far from La Parca and witnessed what was happening..... then LA Parca hit his scythe on the floor three times and he stopped time he only reversed time to when Ruslan removed Zambo's protection spell and La Parca played the whole scene over and over as Zambo's spirit was watching the whole scene where Baba ripped his arm from his body over and over while looking spooked....

Then La Parca turned and looked at Zambo's spirit but Zambo's spirit couldn't see La Parca's face since it was covered by a hood then he hit the scythe on the floor and Zambo's spirit went back to his body and his face changed from pain to extremely terrified and La Parca hit the scythe again and time resumed and the beast ripped his other arm off his body and he screamed with so much agony.....then the beasts started having a bad feeling and Baba's beast turned to the twins and they telepathically spoke and the twins beasts turned and ran out and Ruslan also ran out as he saw what was about to happen he couldn't disappear (disappear) cause he needed some time to charge.... then Baba's beast pulled Zambo's face closer to its face breathing hard against it***

Zambo: please....

***he whispered to it and it grunted looking straight into his eyes then it pushed its long nail into his eyes and plucked out his eyeballs with him screaming out loud and it dropped him on the floor and he laid there losing blood while screaming with pain.....then it turned to look at La Parca and back at Zambo on the floor and it looked at him long and hard before it quickly ripped him apart leaving his flesh scattered all over...then La Parca collected the souls of Zambo and his accomplices and he

disappeared and went to deliver them to hell and Baba and Pop's beasts ran out to where Melusi is***

.
. .
.

Outside the beasts were running in the forest trying to get to Melusi when a force hit Jase's beast so hard that his beast went flying and it hit a tree with its left side breaking its ribs in the process and he immediately went back to his human form....(the remaining wizard saw them running towards his direction and he removed Jase's protection spell since he was on the front) then Jay's beast charged to the wizard and the wizard pointed at the beast and hit Jay's beast with a ball of fire and the beast flew and fell.... but it got up and he hit it again and it fell and still got up again charging towards him but when he hit it again Ruslan diverted that ball of fire and it went the other way and Ruslan immediately chanted a spell of illusion with his palm pointing at the wizard and he blinded him

Ruslan: NOW!

he shouted at Jay's beast and it charged to the wizard and ripped him apart leaving his flesh all over the ground and he howled out loud calling other beasts while Ruslan rushed to Jase who was groaning with pain while holding his right –side ribs with blood coming out of his mouth and he knelt next to him and he put his palm on Jase's rib and chanted some dark magic spell and stopped his internal bleeding then he got up and looked at Jay who now turned to his human form

Ruslan: im going to Mel....you got this?

Jay nodded with a painful look on his face and Ruslan got up as he felt the ground shake and the beasts growling coming their way and he ran to where Melusi was since he couldn't disappear (disappear) cause he needed some more time to gain strength

.
. .
.

*** He heard unsettling noises outside the car and he looked outside the window and mist was all over it was a scary sight then the hair on the back of his neck stood and he chanted some ancestral

praises with his voice breaking asking them to protect him.....he sat there and continued to chant them and that unsettling noises got closer and closer and that made Melusi's heart to beat faster and then..... silence.....

Out of the blue the window of the car broke as if someone threw a brick on it and he jumped a bit and he looked around to see what or who broke the window but the mist was now thick and he couldn't see anything***

Melusi: shit!

he said with his heart beating out of his chest then he heard a loud scream and he chanted the protection spell Ruslan taught him but he was saying some words wrong

Melusi: fuck!....ok ok Melusi calm down and try again!

***He said to himself and he breathed in and out then out of the blue something got in the car and it grabbed him by his neck and squeezed hard he tried to fight it but its grip was getting tighter and tighter around his neck....It was a demon that had pale skin long nails long sharp teeth a black tongue and black round eyeballs.....he fought it until he managed to get it off him and as soon as he saw more demons charging towards the car he finally remembered the words of the protection spell and he quickly chanted it and it covered the car with him inside along with that demon he was fighting earlier....

Then the demon quickly jumped on him using its sharp nails to cut him all over and Melusi tried by all means to fight it but it was just too strong it was busy cutting him with its sharp nails while Melusi tried to block it....then more demons got to the car and tried to get inside the car but the spell prevented them but they didn't stop they tried to break through the spell over and over until a powerful force hit some of them and they flew and hit some trees and landed on the ground Another powerful force hit some of them and they also flew and landed far from the cars while inside Melusi was trying to fight off the demon that was busy using its sharp nails to cut him

Sponsored

then the ground shook as Smiso's beast was coming towards them***

Ruslan: SAVE MEL!

***then he lifted off the spell covering the car and smiso's beast changed form and it transformed again and it grabbed the door of the car and detached it from the car and it growled looking at the demon with an angry look on its terrifying face and the demon hissed at the beast then the beast

turned a bit and its sharp tail sliced the demon on its neck and it burned and evaporated...then another demon tried to get inside the car but the beast used its sharp tail again and it stabbed the demon on its gut area and it also burned and evaporated then it turned to Ruslan and growled at him and he quickly covered the car with a protection spell then Smiso's beast grunted charging towards the demons and he ripped them apart one by one with Ruslan using his dark magic to fight them too...as for Melusi he was inside the car covered in blood groaning in pain.....then Pops beast also came and it helped fight the demons.....

Ruslan rushed to the car and he removed the protection spell and he chanted some spell holding Melusi's bloodied hand and finally he wand-less disappeared (he disappeared)with him and he appeared at his house***

Ruslan: hold on

he put his palm on his chest and he chanted some dark magic spell and he stopped the bleeding

Ruslan: I'll be back

then he wand-less disappeared back to where Jase was and he was now with Jay and Baba

Baba: where is Melusi is he ok?

Ruslan: he's alive and safely in the house and now I need to take your grandson to the house too but I can disappearate with only two people

Baba: its ok take the twins and I'll go help Ty and Smiso

Ruslan nodded and got down on his knees and he held Jase's lower arm and he looked at Jay

Ruslan: hold him and never let go

Jay nodded and Ruslan chanted some spell and he disappeared along with the twins then baba turned and his beast charged to where Thorsten and Pops were

.
. .
.

*** They appeared at the house and Ruslan got up and he stumbled back a bit and he fell on his back and passed out with blood coming out of his nose***

Jay: the fuck....

he rushed to Ruslan and he shook him

Jay: man wake up!

but Ruslan didn't and Melusi coughed and Jay left Ruslan and he rushed to Melusi and he knelt next to him and Melusi whispered

Melusi: in...in his bag there's a...there's a small bottle with green liquid inside help...help him drink it

Jay did as told and he helped Ruslan drink the liquid and he waited but Ruslan didn't even move

Jay: nothing is happening bafo

Melusi: wait he...will...wake up

then Jay nodded and he rushed to the kitchen and came back with a bowl filled with water and a dish cloth and he cleaned Melusi's wounds then out of the blue Ruslan breathed in loud and he also breathed out loud holding his chest then he quickly got up and he paced around the room still holding his chest as it was burning up with Jay looking at him shocked he went to the wall and he punched it a couple of times as the burning sensation on his chest was making his heart to accelerate....but punching the wall didn't help so he went around kicking things as he tried to breath normally but the burning sensation was still there

Ruslan: fucken shit.....FUCKKKKK!

he said cursing and kicking things as Jay watched shocked as hell then he stopped and tried to get his breathing pattern right as that burning sensation was now fading away

Ruslan: FUCK I HATE THAT SHIT....I FUCKEN HATE IT.....MOTHERFFUCKEN SHIT... FUCKEN SHIT....FUCK!

then he coughed a bit still holding his chest while bending a bit and that feeling died down and he raised his head and looked around and his bloodshot red eyes landed on Jay who looked shocked to the core

Ruslan: sorry about that I think that potion was made to torture us wizards' im telling you

then he walked slowly to Jase and he touched his body and chanted some dark magic spell and Jase screamed then he stopped and he looked at Jay

Ruslan: broken ribs but I stopped his internal bleeding the rest can be done by your brother and Ray since they are doctors

Jay nodded and he got up and rushed to get his phone to call Muzi and Ruslan went to his bag and he took out a small bottle filled with some black liquid and he went to Melusi and knelt next to him

Ruslan: it will help flush out the poison that demon might have left on your wounds when he was scratching and cutting you

Melusi nodded and Ruslan helped him drink it

Ruslan: you did good man you never gave up and that shows you can handle The Saint after he's born

.
. .

*** Back in the forest more demons were coming out of nowhere and the beasts were killing them one by one..... then lightning stroked out of nowhere hitting some of the demons and strong wind filled the place with black smoke all over then out of the blue they stopped and La Parca stood between the beasts and demons and the demons moved back slowly***

La Parca: እነሱ በዝርዝሩ ላይ አይደሉም በጣም ጥሩ የሆነ መሰብሰብ ያለባቸው ነፍሳት አሉ (return back to your world willingly or I'll summon Cerberus "a gatekeeper in hell that prevents the dead from leaving" to come collect you one by one since you left without his permission)

they all looked down and some looked away moving back slowly

Demon: ልላል ይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያታልላል (we were summoned here great one)

the demon spoke with a fading and rusty voice

La Parca: የሆነ እነሱ በዝርዝሩ ላይ አይደሉም በጣም ጥሩ (I SAID RETURN BACK TO YOUR WORLD NOW!)

he told them and hit his scythe on the ground and the ground shook like an earthquake just happened then the demon looked at other demons

Demon: በጨለማው አለም ውስጥ በጥሩ ሁኔታ ጥቅም ላይ ይውላል (let us go back or he'll call Cerberus)

*** the demons turned looking scared and charged towards the other side of the forest and La Parca disappeared and he appeared not far from the opened portal the demons came out of from the forbidden world and soon demons went through the portal then he closed the portal chanting words in the forbidden language....then he disappeared and appeared next to three demons that were hiding behind the trees and they screamed when they saw him and they moved back slowly***

La Parca: እና ተወዳጅ ተወዳጅ ከሆኑት ሰው (YOU DISOBEYED ME DEMONS?)

they hissed avoiding to look at him

La Parca: ምመጤ ይህ ጥሩው አስማተኛ ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረው ስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው የአ(since you don't like taking orders from me then im sure you'll take orders from the leviathan)

***(the Leviathan is a demonic creature that lives in a dimension between our world and the dark world) Well the demons shook begging the La Parca not to send them there but then he pointed his scythe at them and they turned attempting to run away and blue fire emerged from the scythe and hit

them one by one and he send them to where the Leviathan is.....then he hit his scythe to the ground and a force moved from him to the rest of the forest clearing all the evidence that demons where ever there then he disappeared***

.
. .
.

***The following day around 10 in the morning Mbali was talking to his brother Snakes on the phone she was asking permission from him to go shopping..... Well after Muzi got Jay's call he left for Mozambique while Snakes stayed back to look after the family and now he went to a private mediclinic that Muzi is a shareholder at to make sure they prepare well for Jase and Melusi's arrival in a few hours ***

Snakes: I don't think it's a good idea princess

Mbali: bhuti come on im even willing to go with guards to the mall some retail therapy will do me some good...im stressed bhuti and it's not good for the baby

Snakes: eish fine but your security team should be with you all the time

Mbali: ok

Snakes: and don't give them grief please princess your safely is my priority and theirs too

she laughed

Mbali: really bhuti you think im like some rich spoilt brat?

Snakes: I didn't say that but don't forget that you are pregnant and hormonal....need I say more?

she laughed

Mbali: fine I promise I won't give them grief

Snakes: good look I have to go I'll check up on you later ok

Mbali: ok I love you bhuti

Snakes: I love you too my princess

they ended the call and she went to find her grandmother to tell her that her brother agreed that she can go

.
. .
.

*** she was now sitting at Mug n Bean eating after her intense shopping spree she even did her nails and hair and she felt rejuvenated...then her phone rang and it was her brother she rolled her eyes before answering the call but then she saw her security team coming towards her looking alarmed and she got worried a bit***

Mbali: bhuti

Snakes: I hope you got everything you need cause now it's time you came back home

he sounded worried

Mbali: bhuti is everything ok?

Snakes: yes just let your guards do their job please princess

the guards then carried her shopping bags and waited for her to finish talking on the phone

Mbali: ok

Snakes: I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too

then they ended the call and she got up then one of the guards put some few hundred Rands on the table and they escorted her out with people watching them....They went to the main entrance and her car was waiting for her and one guard opened the back door and Mbali got in but then as he was about to close the door he saw that the driver is not one of his men then he drew out his gun and pointed it to him and Mbali's eyes popped out

Guard: put your hands where I can see them now!

the driver slowly did as told

Guard: princess come out of the car now

as Mbali was grabbing her handbag so she can come out then gunshots were heard and Mbali screamed and the car she was in drove away quickly with the door flipping until it closed shut with Mbali screaming inside the car.....one of Mbali's guards was shot down while others ran to the other car to go after Mbali they couldn't even shoot at the tires of that car to stop it cause they feared it might crash or just roll over with Mbali inside

.
. .

***Immediately as the car took a sharp right the car that the guards were in blew up in flames as a bomb that was put under their car exploded.....the driver then stopped the car and another SUV parked next to them and Mbali was sedated and carried to the other car and the driver drove out in total speed.....

Immediately the man in the car stripped her and only left her in her lace bra and lace G-string and they scanned her entire body with some device***

Guy: found it

then he took out his knife and he cut her on her thigh and black blood came out instead of our normal red blood and the guy stopped looking freaked out

Guy1: what the fuck!

he said moving from her

Guy2: what the hell is this

Driver: what is it?

Guy1: her...her blood is black man

Driver: what? mxm quit playing man

Guy2: its true man....he's telling you the truth

Driver: look whether her blood is black green pink or purple it doesn't matter boss wants her and you better remove that gps tracking device out before we arrive at Eshowe

the guy swallowed and he dug into her flesh searching for the tracking device and he found it and he removed it and they destroyed it and threw it out of the window and they bandaged her....the guy looked at the black blood on his hands and his hands started shaking with his heart beating fast

60

INSERT.....60

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Baba: where is Ray?

Ruslan: umm resting

baba gave him the "don't fuck with me look" and he sighed

Ruslan: ok jeeez....ummm lets...talk in private....you should come too Ty

Baba and Pops followed him and they went to the room they used to summon La Parca yesterday and they cursed when they saw a black casket coffin in the middle of the room with a white circle drew around it and candles lit on all four sides

Pops: what the fuck!

Baba: what's going on here?

Ruslan: well Ray is in there

Baba&Pops: WHAT?

Ruslan: shhh...keep it down please

Baba: start talking boy!

Ruslan sighed and he started telling them why he's in there

Pops: this is just....this whole shit is just too fucken much now

Ruslan: look it's the only way La Parca goes back to sleep look the last time he spend two weeks in there since he came out because of Ray's anger but this time since he was summoned it will take him only a couple of hours

Baba: can he even breathe in there? and where the hell was this casket hidden last night

Ruslan: well he's more like....in a coma....i mean a powerful black magic spell I used is what is making him not to run out of air and die and the casket was over that corner and a spell of illusion is what made sure you didn't see it

Baba shook his head not believing what was happening

Baba: when will he wake up?

Ruslan: in 3 and a half hours' time

Baba sighed and he nodded

Pops: I need to sit down...this is just too much to take in

they went outside to the veranda and they sat down then Jay rushed out and he put his phone on loud speak

Jay: what happened Mamba?

Snakes: Mbali... Mbali was kidnapped

everyone gasped and got up

Pops: WHAT?

Snakes: im sorry I was sloppy dad I was busy arranging things for Jase and Melusi's arrival and then she asked me to go shopping saying she's stressed and it's not good for the baby and I allowed her to go with some guards then I got a call from Nomhle telling me Lwazi's beast was starting with its white eyeballs and I told her and the guards to be wary and for them to immediately bring her home
then he sighed

Snakes: then few minutes went by and I got a call from the head guard telling me she's been kidnapped and as I was about to question him I heard a loud explosive sound and the line went dead
by now they were all on their feet pacing around

Baba: where is she?

Snakes: that's the thing baba her tracker has been removed and destroyed

Pops: fuck no...no..no

Snakes: I tracked her car and it was abandoned not far from the mall and a cctv footage showed that she was moved from her car to an suv and I managed to track it but I lost it in Mandini

Baba: what are you trying to say Nhlaka?

Snakes sighed

Snakes: i...i can't find the car baba maybe when they entered Mandini they changed the cars again cause I can't find it anywhere

he said with a breaking voice

Jay: this is not happening

he said breathing heavily

Ruslan: she's fine and safe

they looked at him

Pops: and how the fuck do you know that?

he snapped at Ruslan

Baba: Bongani khawume tuu yehlisa umoya man (Bongani stop calm down man)

he warned him and Ruslan just shook his head then he sat down and chanted some words in a foreign language and his eyeballs turned all white and he looked around without blinking with his head slightly bend backward

Ruslan: its three men....ohh and she bled black blood where they took out the tracker which mean she's safe

they gave him the "what the fuck" look

Baba: black blood...safe....elaborate man eish

he blinked twice and his eyes went back to normal

Ruslan: The Saint is awake and the people who took her are in deep shit

then he leaned on the phone

Ruslan: Snakes your sister is safe you have nothing to worry about but....you need to find her before she wakes up so she doesn't see what her unborn baby did cause believe me that shit will traumatize her

Snakes: huh? she's ok

Ruslan: yeah but you need to find her before she wakes up cause The Saint is gonna do some fucked up shit to those people and you have three hours to do so before Ray wakes up cause once

he finds out that she's missing La Parca will take over feeding off his anger and people are gonna die cause a near-apocalypse experience will befall your country

they all gasped

Snakes: shit!.....but...but how will I find her?

Ruslan: I'll try and find out more about the their surroundings cause The Saint is already awake im sure and maybe ya'll might recognize the surroundings

Snakes: ok

Baba: Nhlaka?

Snakes: baba

Baba: don't blame yourself cause I know you are worried about your brother and Melusi so I need you at your A-game and show us what you are made of

Snakes sighed

Snakes: ok baba

Ruslan: and Snakes when you get to her location go inside alone without the guards and take your sister out and burn that place to the ground.....what you will find in there might turn your stomach upside down so you need to be strong for your sister

Snakes: shit ummm.... wont I need some protection from the supernatural

Ruslan: no....the won't be any supernatural shit in there but only an aftermath of what The Saint did

Snakes: ok....find out more about her surrounding and get back to me

Pops: where are you now?

Snakes: im near Dolphin Coast now Pops

Pops: ok keep us updated

Snakes: ok and ya'll make sure Jase and Melusi are ok

Jay: ok foza

then Snakes ended the call and Pops rubbed his face feeling emotional and angry and he sat down

Ruslan: believe me when I say she's ok and The Saint won't let anything happen to her....they gonna wish they didn't kidnap her.....what we should be worried about is Snakes finding her before she wakes up and before Ray wakes up too cause im still worn out from last night so I don't have the strength to trap La Parca and put him back to sleep cause beside being an almost impossible task it's also dangerous

Jay sighed feeling worked up

Jay: when will we ever catch a break mmmmh? why does all the women in our family have to be kidnapped or their lives threatened?

Ruslan: perks of having beasts and being part of the mafia just like Ray selling his soul to the devil has now cursed his entire future male generation.....look every bad shit you do in this world has consequences and the fucked up shit is most of those consequences will also affect our loved ones
they all kept quiet then Ruslan chanted some foreign words and his eyeballs turned all white again and he looked around without blinking for some time then he blank twice and he looked at Jay

Ruslan: call your brother

and Jay quickly did

Snakes: bafo

Ruslan: The Saint is looking at a board saying Ash...owe

Snakes: huh?

Ruslan: E...S...H...O...W...E

he spelled it for him

Jay: Eshowe bafo

Snakes: shit ok

Ruslan: I'll keep looking and remember what I said

Snakes: sure

Pops: where are you now?

Snakes: reaching KwaDukuza

Jay: damn you must be flying on the road

Snakes: yeah...look I have to go

***then he ended the call and Pops got up ***

Pops: I cant just stay and do nothing so im going to go and help him look for my princess

he went inside and they all kept quiet

Ruslan: she's fine but ok I understand his frustrations

Jay: let me go book him a plane ticket

he went inside he hasn't slept a wink since last night.....he watched over his twin and Melusi like a hawk feeling like that wizard should have hurt him instead.....he was also worried about how angry Kedi will be at them when they get home in fact all the wives will be mad at them

Baba: tell me more about this Saint inside my great-grandson

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: well it is said that The skeletal Saint escaped hell during 630 -800 BC years and he found refuge in an underground bunker in what is called Rome today in Italy and he hid there and lived in peace for many many years then a Roman catholic church was built on top of that bunker many

years later and they renovated the underground bunker and used it to store secrets document books like the book of life the malleus maleficarum also known as the hammer of witches and the devils book and many other sacred books the spear of destiny before it was stolen and many other things like the Da Vinci's code but what they didn't know is something was hiding in there all those years

Baba: mmmmh

Ruslan: so every Sunday morning during church service the demon would listen to the sweet melody playing upstairs and it wondered what it was it was soothing its dead soul so its curiosity made it do something it never did before.....one Sunday the caretaker of the church was busy cleaning the secret bunker before a church service started and the demon possessed him when church service started it took a risk and it went up the stairs for the first time in many many years and it went to sit at the back row of bench and church started.....after the church service it would leave the body of the caretaker and go back to its hiding place and that happened for a couple of years

Baba: and they didn't notice anything different with the caretaker?

Ruslan: they did every Sunday during a service the caretaker wouldn't say a word to anyone and he never touched the bible or looked anyone in the eyes but any other day he would be fine....then the chief priest saw something wasn't right with him cause he paid attention to him cause he knew about the secret bunker and what's in there then one Sunday they surprisingly went to him before a church service and by that time the demon had already possessed his body and they did an exorcism on him and even though the demon put up a fight first but they managed to cast it back to hell but before it left it told them it only wanted peace and to listen to the priest tell them about the mysterious good God and to also listen to the sweet melody of the music

Baba: damn!

Ruslan: it went back to hell and waited for another opportunity to come back to our world and Ray getting his soul back with conditions is what brought it back it saw a life time opportunity when the devil said all his future male generation will be born with demons attached to their souls

Baba just shook his head looking down

Ruslan: look it's just like ya'll with beasts so judging him will make ya'll cowards' man

Baba: don't you dare compare our beasts with demons

Ruslan: well they were created by some witchdoctor in dodgy looking cave but ok

Baba: you are so full of shit you know that nx

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: but The Saint is one dangerous demon man all he wants its peace believe it or not but that's what he wants and to attend church services to read books and to listen to soothing music

then he chuckled

Ruslan: but if you poke him nc nc nc.....Anyway your grandson will be a very calm child and he'll like to keep to himself he'll love reading and listening to soothing music but hurt him or his loved ones and he'll bring hell to earth just for you cause when The Saint went back to hell he got more stronger and he's not like other demons that's why they called him the Skeletal Saint the fucker lived under a church and he also attended church services for years man until they found out about him and all he said to them is he wants peace and to learn more about the good God so they called him The Skeletal Saint cause "skeleton =death" and well Saint explains itself

baba just rubbed his beard with his jaws clenched and Ruslan chanted some words again in a foreign language and his eyes turned all white again

.
. .
. .

HEATH*

***Obi m and i are with Ikechukwu and we're just watching him lying there with wires and tubes connected to him the doctor says he's growing but to tell ya'll the truth I think he's still tiny and pink....i had him moved to Naledi's ward until she's discharged because of what happened last night we were in NICU (Neonatal intensive care unit) looking at Ike and then out of the blue the lights started flicking vigorously..... I remember nurses rushing in to make sure all the babies are ok and I remember looking at the glass wall and I saw lights switching off then they would switch on again and the next one would switch off then also switch on while all the lights inside the room were flicking along with others on the passage.....Then I went to the door to see what was happening and I saw a shadow moving whenever the lights went off on the passage and a cold shiver ran down my spine.... Well everyone witnessed what we also witness except for the shadow part ofcourse all the way from the reception area and they even said all the computers there went off while lights were flickering vigorously after the lights went back to normal and they assured us that everything is ok and that it was just an electric and technical malfunction I just didn't believe them cause I saw what I saw and even though I can't explain what I saw in simple words im just not taking any chances so I told them I want my son inside my wife's room immediately and two hours later they did as I requested and I spend the whole night watching over them....Well today is a new day and im glad they slept well again and that thing I saw didn't come back again anyway an hour ago gogo called me and she didn't sound good I must say even though she tried to convince me that she's ok but I could tell her spirit was down

Sponsored

anyway an hour ago gogo called me and she didn't sound good I must say even though she tried to convince me that she's ok but I could tell her spirit was down she was checking on Naledi and Ike and she said he's gonna be ok and that he's gonna be a strong boy when he grows up just like his father....i swear I felt relieved there and then cause I even remembered once she told me that this time I will hold my son in my arms and watch him grow and I also in a way accepted that Bunke was conceived for a purpose maybe he wasn't supposed to be born in the first place maybe his purpose was to die so his twin could live....i believe his fate was already sealed when he was also conceived and I believe he served his purpose that's why gogo once said I will hold my "SON" and not "SONS".....I thought about it thoroughly and I realized that everything happens for a reason that God wont let you experience pain just for fun its either he's testing your faith in him or there's a good enough reason why he's letting certain things to happen to us....

And now I believe Naledi was brought into my life for other purposes on top of the fact that she's my soul mate I believe she was also brought into my life to stop me from making the worst mistake of my life of marrying Lerato to also expose my mother's evil deeds for Omphile to have a mother figure amongst other things like to bring peace and content into my roller coaster life....i love her and scared to lose her so now im gonna do anything in my power to make sure she's always happy***

Naledi: I can't wait to hold him in my arms

she said bringing me back from my thoughts

Me: and you will Obi m believe me

I said and kissed the side of her head.....fuck I love this woman

Naledi: it hurts deeply that his twin brother didn't make it

I swallowed hard

Me: I know Obi m and I believe he's in a better place and he's gonna watch over Ike if you believe in God Obi m you should know that everything happens for a reason and now it's the time that we hold on to him Naledi cause he's the only one that can help us heal properly

she just sniffed and she wiped her tears and I pulled her in for a tight hug

Naledi: but he shouldn't have let him die Heath

she said sobbing

Me: and who was supposed to die Naledi mmmmh....Ikechukwu or was it supposed to be you if so then what about Omphile Lesedi and i?...look everything happens for a reason Obi m remember God never gives us heavy loads that he knows we can't carry

she didn't say anything

Heath: look as hard as it is for us to accept what has happened but we should for Ike and the girls let's not question God Obi m...i know it wont be easy but we should find a way to heal properly together as a couple and as a family ok

she nodded and I turned her face and perked her lips...fuck I love this woman

Me: I love you Obi m ok

she nodded and she rested her head on my chest and I kissed the top of her head with my hand wrapped around her then Jabu walked in with his girl Amo

Jabu: aow madodammmmh ke ra tsona die liefde voëls ka se Afrikaans (love birds in Afrikaans)

I chuckled and they walked further in

.
. .
.

***They parked inside the yard closer to the door and the two guys carried a passed out Mbali inside the worn out house from the car and they went to tie her to a chair in one of the rooms and she walked in cat walking in her high heels with a smile on her face ***

Devonia: you checked her and removed the tracker?

Guy1: yeah

Devonia: good

then he looked at Mbali then at the guys

Devonia: mmmmh im impressed boys.... jy het goed gedoen en ek is beindruk (you did good and im impressed)

the driver smiled while the other two guys looked troubled

Devonia: bring that bucket of water and let's wake her up

the driver did and he splashed Mbali with the cold water in it and she woke up gasping for air.....she looked around trying to make out where she was and her eyes landed on Devonia

Mbali: yo...you!

then she coughed and Devonia laughed

Devonia: and she remembers me how nice

Mbali: what do you want gogo

Devonia's smile vanished and she slapped Mbali hard on her cheek that she even bit herself inside her mouth and she spit out saliva mixed with blood

Mbali: do you know who I am gogo...my brothers along with MY Ray they gonna hunt you down and make you pay

Devonia laughed

Devonia: how will they know im the one who have you mmmmh I mean my guys here removed your tracker and they also checked for other trackers and you are clean now tell me how will they find you little bitch?

she said moving her face closer to Mbali's and Mbali spat on her face and Devonia moved back and she punched Mbali hard on her face breaking her nose in the process and blood came out of her nose and she bowed her head as she felt the room spinning

Devonia: Ray is gonna be mine you little bitch you hear me he's gonna be mine.....i wont let you mess up my plans NEVER!

she said getting worked up

Devonia: I won't and will never let a small child mess up my plans....Ray is my ticket to riches I need his protection and you girly are standing in my way of achieving my goal so your death is the only way I can have him to myself

the other guy's bottom eyelid started twitching fast and he swallowed hard

Devonia: hey don't tell me that punch actually killed you girly

she said and laughed grabbing her hair tight attempting to raise her head and she froze when she saw Mbali smirking with her eyeballs turned all black and her skin getting pale with black veins visible all over her body

Devonia: what the hell!

she said letting go of her with a frown on her face

Saint: you shouldn't have touched her!

she spoke with a possessed voice....it was a scary voice of a possessed man and Devonia took a step back

Guy1: fuck I knew something bad is gonna happen...I knew it

he said looking at Mbali and she turned and looked at him*

Saint: you also shouldn't have touched her....worst part you cut her and let her bleed nc nc nc nc

the guy swallowed and he moved back a bit

Devonia: wha...what are you?

Saint: your worst nightmare

the guy rushed to the door with the other guy behind him and he attempted to open the door but the door handle suddenly melted burning and they jumped back

Saint: no one leaves here alive except for mommy

he said that and smirked then they pulled their guns out pointing them at Mbali and she laughed like a possessed person then she quickly pulled a serious face

Saint: you want to kill her mmmmh?

the guys' hands started shaking as they were pointing the gun at Mbali

Saint: I asked you all a question!

Devonia: look I don't know what you are and what game you are playing but know this you and that bastard child in your womb are about to meet your maker whether it's God or the devil himself

Saint: why do humans like to talk too much mmmmh?

the guys looked at each other looking terrified

Guy2: i...I shouldn't have agreed to this....fuck I shouldn't have agreed

he said looking spooked

Driver: lets....let's just kill her boss

Devonia: yeah...give me your gun

the guy did and she took out a gun-silencer out of her pocket and she put it on slowly and Mbali looked at the driver

Saint: and for that statement im gonna kill you first

then Devonia pointed the gun at Mbali

Devonia: bye little evil bitch

then she pulled the trigger but the gun jammed she tried again but still nothing

Saint: my turn..... ተዎጥላል (burn!)

when she spoke the forbidden language all their guns suddenly caught fire and they started melting and they dropped them on the floor cursing... she then turned to the driver and she looked up and she opened her mouth wide and some thick black smoke came out of her mouth and the smoke came out of her and shot straight to the roof and Devonia and the guys ducked covering their heads but it then floated around the room making bone chilling windy-like noises with voices of possessed people also being heard

Mbali: ጥሩ ልምምድ እንዲያስተምረውስለዚህ ሊወለድ የነበረው የአጥንት ቅዱስ ስብዕና ለመያዝ ይችላል.በጥሩ ሁኔታ (him first and those two should follow and the woman should go last)

she said to the thick smoke and the guys turned and tried to open the door but they knew they couldn't open it from the inside since the door-handle melted on the door

Devonia: SAVE ME FIRST YOU DUMMIES.....REMEMBER IM PAYING YA'LL!

***she shouted at them and they ignored her and they kicked and hit the door screaming for help then that thick black smoke went to the guys and when it got to them it decided to go up to the roof instead while the guys tried to dodge it while taking cover....then Saint said some words in the

forbidden language looking at the driver and he screamed holding his head as he felt like it was about to explode then the smoke quickly entered the driver's mouth going through his throat all the way to the rest of his body it looked like the smoke sucked his insides dry as his skin dried up immediately and it looked like that of a mummy with his eyeballs turning to ashes..... then the smoke came out of the mouth ears and the place where the driver's eyeballs where in his mummified body and it went up to the roof and it floated there....the two remaining guys looked spooked with their bodies shaking and Devonia was now on the floor looking shit scared with her body shaking too***

Guy1: plea...please forgive us we are sorry please forgive us

they got down on their knees begging her

Saint: you shouldn't have touched her

Guy2: i...I didn't touch her I swear I just helped carry her I swear it

his friend gave him the "what the fuck" look and he ignored him

Saint: and you still say you didn't touch her

the guy knelt there tongue tide with his body shaking

Saint: ህጭጭ (pain)

the first guy held his head too screaming and the thick black smoke entered his mouth too and the same thing that happened to the driver happened to him and the smoke came out of his body through his nose mouth ears and where his eyeballs where

Devonia: shit....look i....i made a mistake I shouldn't have had you kidnapped ok....look I have kids and they still need me so just let me go and....and I'll never bother you or Ray again I swear

Saint: you shouldn't have touched her!

then she smirked at Devonia

Saint: ህጭጭ (pain)

*** and Devonia screamed as she held her head then Mbali looked up at the thick smoke***

Saint: አሱ (him)

and the smoke came down and circled the guy who was crying like a little girl on the floor then it entered him through his nostrils and he also was left mummified on the floor and she turned to look at Devonia who was crying with tears gushing out as she held her aching head and she looked at the smoke that is floating on the roof

Saint: ያዝት (get her up)

*** the smoke went to Devonia and it formed a figure of a person and it lifted Devonia up who now looked weak as her head felt like it's about to explode***

Saint: ያህጭጭ ለቆም! (pain stop!)

***she stopped moving and screaming and she looked at Mbali with her eyes slightly opened with her face covered in tears and mucus ***

Devonia: im...im sorry plea...please forgive me

she said with a low tone

Saint: you shouldn't have touched her!

then he looked at the smoke

Saint: ያጠናቅቅላ (finish her up)

then the smoke started entering her by her ears and Devonia fell on the floor and it came out of her mouth then it entered her again through her nose and it remained inside her for some time then it came out of her mummified body by the area where her eyeball were and it went up to the roof and Mbali opened her mouth wide looking up and the smoke entered her mouth and she dropped her head and The Skeletal Saint went to sleep immediately leaving Mbali passed out while still tied to a chair

61

INSERT.....61

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Ruslan: like I said I only saw a pink house and they moved a bit and turned right then I couldn't see anything anymore

Snakes: ok

then he sighed

Snakes: turn right on that pink corner house

he said to the guard that was driving

Snakes: ok it means they are around somewhere around here maybe that was a sign that they have arrived to their destination when you suddenly couldn't see anything

Ruslan: yeah I like how you think just drive around the neighborhood to look for any suspicious things

Snakes: ok ummm how are my brothers?

Ruslan: they both will be fine just concentrate on finding your sister man.... like I was dead serious when I said she can't see what Saint did there and hurry up cause Ray is about to wake up in an hours' time man

Snakes breathed out loud

Snakes: ok let me find her

he ended the call

Snakes: let's drive around this area here and look for anything suspicious

Guard1: sure bozza

they drove around for some time and still they didn't see anything suspicious

Snakes: FUCK WHAT ARE WE MISSING NX

*** he rubbed his head roughly then out of the blue it clicked***

Snakes: wait a minute..... we drove around that pink house street for some time and at the end of the street I saw a worn out house which is standing out alone and there was two expensive cars parking outside and the windows and the door of the house aren't opened

Guard2: yeah but bozza there's also that house that has a shack at the back it has two cars in the yard too and all the time we drove passed it I didn't see any movements in the yard

Snakes huffed

Snakes: ok let's start at the house you are talking about first Menzi you'll go in and find out if it's the right house we are looking for or not

the guard nodded and they drove to the street and parked a house before 'the' house and the guard took out his gun and crocked it then he put it back on his lower back under his shirt and he got out of the car and he went inside the yard with his eyes rooming around to see if he can spot anything suspicious.....he got to the door and he knocked twice and no one opened the door but the third time he did someone opened the door and a middle aged woman opened the door and she was wearing only a towel and the guard raised his one eyebrow looking at her admiring her beauty and her half naked body

Woman: yes

Menzi: hi.... ummm I don't know if im lost or what but im looking for the Vilakazi family and I was wondering if this is the house

she frowned a bit like she was thinking then she smiled

Woman: ooh you mean VV's house?

Menzi: VV?

she giggled

Woman: yeah I mean Velaphi Vilakazi's house.... we call him VV around here

Menzi: ummm yeah he's the one

he played along to all that

Woman: ok then his house is on the next street....i think house number three.....ummm are you related to him?

Menzi: nah im an old friend the last time I was around here was ten years ago so now im a bit confused as to which street his house is at cause the area changed a bit

*** he continued lying and the woman smiled at him flirtatiously***

Woman: yeah it has changed.....

Voice: who is that Kazi?

someone spoke inside the house and her face fell and a bored looked was now plastered on her face

Menzi: I should get going thanks for your help

Man: what the fuck are you doing here half naked speaking with a man Kazi

the man spoke with an angry voice

Kazi: yho Phila khawume tuu (stop it please)

Phila: voetsek sfebe ungazong'tshela amasimba uyangizwa....ngizakufahlaza ngempama unye uyangizwa (piss off bitch don't tell shit you hear me.....i'll slap you and you'll shit yourself you hear me)

*** Kazi kept quiet looking embarrassed then Phila looked at the guard***

Phila: usasela....voetsek hamba msunu (and you are still here....voetsek leave you cunt)

he didn't see it coming.... The guard punched him hard on his face and he fell on his back and passed out immediately and Kazi stood there shocked then the guard went closer to Kazi and he pulled her closer with his hand tight on her waist and he smashed his lips on hers for some time then he pulled out and looked into her eyes

Menzi: leave this piece of shit cause he doesn't even deserve to look at all this

he said running his eyes on her bare thighs

Menzi: or let alone touch them....look I'll come back for you soon and he better be an ex

then he turned and walked out leaving Kazi shocked to the core and he went to the car

Snakes: and?

Menzi: it's not the house bozza

Snakes: ok let's go to the other one

the driver immediately started the car and they drove to the other house and they parked under a tree not far from the house

Menzi: how do we do this?

Snakes: im going inside that house alone and you two will keep a look out outside
he said looking at the shady house and the guards looked at each other not happy with that

Snakes: I'll be fine just make sure you are on the lookout
they nodded hesitantly

Snakes: good.... and after 1 minute of me not coming out you should drive in and under no circumstances should you come after me you hear me

Them: sho bozzaz

The agreed even though they didn't agree with him about going inside alone

.
. .

He got to the door and he tried to peep through the keyhole but he couldn't see anything then he went to the dirty window and tried to peep in again but a "what once was a curtain" prevented him from seeing anything.... then he went around the house and still he couldn't see anything then he breathed out and he stepped back a bit and he kicked the door open and the house looked rusty and dirty inside with a foul smell

Snakes: shit I hope no one lives in this dirty shitty place yeses

he whispered to himself with a disgusted look on his face as he went inside with his gun ready on his hands...he went further in and the hair on the back of his neck cringed

Snakes: fuck!

he whispered and he moved to the first door that was closer with his heart beating fast and he turned the door handle slowly and it made noise as it opened and he got his gun ready.... he looked around the room and it was a bedroom and the dirty blankets on that sinking scary looking bed made him feel like throwing up

Snakes: the fuck!

he whispered to himself and turned and walked out slowly.....he went to another room with the door slightly opened and he peeked inside and it was another dirty looking bedroom and he moved to another door that was closed and his heartbeat accelerated...he touched the door handle and tried to turn it but it wouldn't*

Snakes: shit ok here goes nothing

***he moved back a bit and he kicked the door once and it didn't open and he kicked it again and harder this time and it bust open and his eyes landed on Mbali tied to a chair with her head

bowed....he felt a chilly feeling run down his spine and he said a silent prayer asking God and his ancestors to protect him he then walked in and his eyes landed on the mummified body on the left side and he cursed moving backwards***

Snakes: what the fuck?

he looked around and he spotted three other bodies on the floor and he cursed again then he heard a car driving in the yard

Snakes: shit I really need to go to church for real this time and confess all my sins and repent....oh God what did that baby just do

***he said with his heart beating fast.... he walked further in and when he got closer to the bodies his stomach turned and he felt like vomiting but he did breath ins and outs looking up and the foul smell wasn't helping at all it was a smell of something rotting no but it was a different smell that made him sick to the stomach..... then he moved towards Mbali still feeling nauseas and when he got to her he felt like vomiting again and he stopped moving and he looked up trying to stop his vomit from coming out ***

Snakes: fuck!

after a few seconds he took off his shirt and took out his pocket knife and cut the rope that tied Mbali on the chair and he helped her wear it and he picked her up bridal style and walked out of the house all the way to the car and one guard opened the back door and he put her inside and he went to the boot of the car and took out a 10L plastic bottle filled with petrol and he went inside the car and also took a box of matches and he went inside feeling somehow....he went to the room the mummies where in and he suddenly felt sick to his stomach and he just threw up on the floor next to the mummy that was closer to the door and he felt his head spin and he tried to balance himself with the door but it moved opening wider and he lost his balance and fell on the floor and it was lights out

Voice: nhlaka?

a voice called his name

Voice: Nhlaka vuka man! (wake up)

he didn't move

Voice: NHLAKA!

Snakes: mh?

Voice: vuka man!

Snakes: mh?

Voice: VUKA! (wake up)

Snakes opened his eyes slowly

Voice: vuka manje! (wake up now)

he suddenly recognized the voice

Snakes: bab....bab'Dlamini?

Voice: phuma ku lendawo manje (get out of there now)

Snakes then sat up quickly and his eyes landed on the mummy closer to him and he jumped and got up quickly moving backwards

Snakes: fuck!

then he looked around

Snakes: bab'Dlamini?

silence

Snakes: bab'Dlamini?

silence

Snakes: shit... not only am I traumatized im also hearing a dead person's voice...I really need to go to church....yah I'll talk to Ma she needs to take me to church

he then picked the bottle and opened it then he poured it all over his vomit and the mummified bodies all over the floor and the wall and he went to all the rooms and he poured the petrol all over and he went out he then went to the two parked cars and he tried to open them and luckily they weren't locked then he poured more petrol inside them and he went to the house and he lit the stick of matches and threw it on the trail of petrol on the floor and he went to the cars and also threw sticks of matches inside them and he went to their car and got in the back putting Mbali's head on his lap as the driver drove out....about two to three minutes later a man saw flames coming out of the window in that house and the windows of the cars and he blew his whistle and people came out

Snakes: its ok princess you are safe now ok....you're safe

he said brushing her hair as the driver was driving fast on the road

.
. .

Heath: what's up?

he and Jabu were sitting outside in the waiting area while Amo and Naledi were inside her room

Jabu: heeh you won't believe what I found out about your evil ex

Heath: what did you find out?

Jabu: that she's also admitted here in this hospital and she's or rather she was in a coma

Heath: what?

he said surprised

Jabu: mh! and guess what Mj is probably the one that shot her

Heath: wait...wait...wait....our Mj?

Jabu nodded

Jabu: a "friend" of mine I once spend a day with at a chisanyama along with Mj called and he told me Mj paid him for a getaway car and a gun

Heath got up and he looked at Jabu with his hands on his waist

Heath: heh?

*** Jabu nodded and he sat down and looked down with his hands on top of his head and his elbows on his thighs***

Heath: SHIT!.....tell me he didn't leave his DNA at the crime scene and that no cctv footage caught him

Jabu: I told Mat to help out and he hacked into the police "weak system" as he called it and apparently they can't see the suspect cause he didn't come out of the car he fired the shots while inside the car and the bullets found on Lerato aren't traceable and as for the car it didn't have number plates

Heath: and how the fuck did he even manage to shoot her bros I mean I didn't even know he can handle a gun

Jabu: only he can tell us where he learned how to shoot and gape gore o kereya kae sebeta sa go batlo bodisa motho (where does he get the guts to want to kill someone)

Heath sighed

Heath: I knew him and Naledi are close but for him to do this

Jabu: dai ntwana (that boy) is going through some serious shit Mshikaro and his heart is full of anger and resentment for le ou'lady la lona(for your mother) remember you said ne a le daar (he was there) that night Nomvula tried to stab Naledi and ended up stabbing you and also when she confessed to killing Big Ray's twin so when dai moeskond Lerato stabbed Ledi I think it triggered something in him

Heath: shit!

Jabu: we need to do something Mshikaro before Mj turns into something we won't be able to handle

***Heath sighed**

Heath: yeah.....he's coming with dad and dad's second wife on Friday so we will deal with him then

Jabu nodded and Heath looked at him and Jabu just smirked

Heath: I don't like that look on your face man

Jabu laughed

Jabu: I just thought of a way to make sure he never does anything as shitty as this one dai ntwana (that boy) almost ruined his life Mshikaro...imagine fela a traffic cop a mostopile (if a traffic cop stopped him) im sure after what he did he was shaking and sweating blaen and they would have searched him and the car and found the gun and soon they were gonna connect it to the crime scene

Heath: eish!

Jabu: mara sa wara ro mmontsha dirope tsa seboko ka sati.....kao chaela after that a ka se tlhole a yetsa masepa a le gape (don't worry we're going to show him thighs of a worm on Saturday.....im telling you after that he will never do that shit ever again)

Heath: yeah....shit and we shouldn't tell big Ray about Saturday or he will leave Mj traumatized instead of teaching him a valuable lesson

Jabu: yeah I agree cause yeses Big Ray can be Hitler when he wants

they chuckled

Jabu: anyway back to dai moeskond Lerato.....well after i found out she's here I paid some nurse to get me info on her condition and the nurse called me in the morning and she said last night the hospital experienced some electrical and system malfunction and guess what after the whole light flicking and all the systems going down they found Lerato awake but the thing is she can't speak or move her body from her shoulders down

Heath: wait what?

he asked shocked by the news

Jabu: bros ke smumu and gape ke segole....shame aram skepsel (she's mute and disabled...shame poor thing)

then he laughed

Heath: wait did those bullets really damage her to that instant?

Jabu: that's the things bros those bullets didn't the nurse said even the doctors are busy doing different tests trying to find out gore dintshang ka yena (what's wrong with her)

Heath: mmmmh

Jabu gave him the "look" cause he had a worried look on his face

Jabu: don't tell me you're feeling sorry for her

Heath: the truth is I kinda but just a little I mean she once carried my seeds and she also once meant a lot to me bros

Jabu: VOETSEK! kinda ya masepa bona mo sefebe sele se bolaile ncosi ya gao in cold blood(look here that bitch killed your child)

Heath: im just being honest im not saying I want her back or I still love her

Jabu got up

Jabu: oska nyako ntlatza phinya Heath wankutlwa o tla ka masepa nou...honest ya masepa nx...i hope you'll also feel kinda bad for sefebe sele when you look at Naledi's scar segole sa gao se mo tllhabileng ka thipa mo teng nx (don't make me mad Heath you hear me don't bullshit me...a shitty honest nx...I hope you'll also feel kinda bad for that bitch when you looks at Naledi's scar where your handicap stabbed her with a knife nx) or when you look at your son's urn

he said with an angry voice

Heath: why are you getting angry when im just being honest with you

he said also getting up with a frown on his face

Jabu: voetsek honest ya masepa...look here since wena o nale a soft spot for segole sa moloi gape sa go tsamaya se tllhaba baimane ka dithipa mo maleng (you have a soft spot for your witch disabled woman that goes around stabbing pregnant woman on their bellies) then cool but since you don't give a fuck about Naledi's feelings or pain anymore then guess what jou hond(you dog) some of us do care I mean even Mj almost killed for her

Heath: fuck you Jabu you hear me fuck you for saying that...how dare you say that

he said getting angry

Jabu: voetsek!

Heath: you too voetsek!

Jabu just started walking away then he stopped and turned and pointed at him with his finger

Jabu: since ka bona gore o faretswe to a point mo eleng gore le tllhaloganyo ya gao gae sa bereka pila then bona a doctor a go fe something sa go bofolla teng then oye toilet o nnya o ntse masepa ao gore dai houd kop ya gao e bereke pila cause o bolela masepa fela nnyoso fela...kinda a little she once carried my seeds bla bla bla nx (he mimicked his voice)... (since I can see that you are constipated to a point that your brain is no longer working properly then ask a doctor to give you something to drink that will help you then go to the toilet to take a shit so that stubborn head of yours can start working properly cause you are talking shit)nx ne o llang when you were looking at your dead son if o tlo filela sfebe sele sorry heh?... (nx why did you cry when you

were looking at your dead son if you know you gonna feel sorry for that bitch)... and gape why did you say I must take out Naledi's uncle since he only tried to rape her mmmmmh why didn't you feel sorry for him too cause your bitch did worse she fucken killed your son....ooh or is it because he doesn't have a vagina like her?

Heath: o yako nnyela Jabu? (you want to shit yourself Jabu?)...don't fucken talk to me like that you hear me you may be older than me but I'll fuck you up pretty bad you piece of shit....i see you have forgotten who the fuck I am

he said pointing at him looking mad angry

Jabu: voetsek le lerete nx (piss off you dick)

then he walked away then he stopped and turned looking at an angry Heath

Jabu: if I hear you talking about feeling sorry for Lerato know that im going to snitch on you ko Naledi and I'll even help her divorce you and o tla sala le segole sa gao le marete nx(you'll remain with your disabled woman you dick nx)....ooh and tell Amo she'll find me outside ko tsuba cause o ntladitse phinya ka go bolela masepa a go nkgga podile jou hond (im going to smoke cause you pissed me off by talking shit)

Heath: FUCK YOU!

Jabu: VOETSEK RAMARETE JOU FOKKON BLEKSEM! (vulgar words)

he said it loud and the two nurses that were passing by heard him and they stopped looking at them

Jabu: keng le sa pretender as if you don't know gore marete keng I mean you even suck on them and play with them ge le na le dibari tsa lona nx busy acting like mavirgin and o kereya le le difebe tsa bofelo mo lefatsheng nx.... (what don't pretend as if you don't know what balls are I mean you even suck on them and play with them when you are with your fools (boyfriends) nx busy acting like virgins only to find out that you are the biggest whores in the whole wide world)

he said with an annoyed voice and he walked away leaving the nurses gasping with shock and Heath chuckled while shaking his head

.
. .
.

***she opened her eyes slowly and she quickly closed them as she felt that her eyelids were heavy and her hand went to her head as it suddenly started pounding and Ray quickly got up from a chair he was sitting on and he went closer to her ***

Ray: hey my flower

*** she opened them again slowly and she blinked a couple of times until her eyes landed on Ray's eyes and her eyes filled with tears as she realized that she was now safe***

Ray: shhhh its ok you're safe now

he said kissing her forehead

Mbali: she....she.... she wanted to kill me Ray

****then she cried and Ray got on the bed next to her and she rested her head on his chest crying and Ray held her tight and there and then she felt safe in his arms....she cried herself to sleep and she later woke up and she looked around the room and she now realised that she was in hospital as for Ray he was standing next to the window with his hands in his pockets staring outside with his mind far away....she admired his physical appearance and she admitted to herself that this man was yummy and appetizingthen her eyes travels to his tight butt and she bit her lower lip as she felt her clit twitch a bit she then sighed as she thought of how long it's been since he buried himself inside her and right then Ray turned cause he heard her loud sigh and he went to her***

Ray: you're awake....umm do you need anything I mean can I get you something to eat or to drink....just anything and I'll get it for you baby

Mbali: I want you

she said with a low tone and he raised his one eyebrow at her and she looked away and he chuckled and sat on the bed and he made her look at him and he smashed kiss lips on her and they shared a mind blowing French kiss that left them both breathless then he stared into her eyes

Ray: don't stress or worry about anything and also do as the doctor say and you'll be out of here in no time and I'll take you to my hotel and fuck you anywhere and anyhow you want me to ok

she swallowed hard and she bit her lower lip nodding slowly and he kissed her forehead with his hand on her belly

Ray: now tell me who took you you said it's a she and I want to know who would dare me that much

he said with a serious look on his face and Mbali looked down and she played with her fingers

Mbali: it...it was that colored woman that we once found in your house drinking wine and she was wearing a long coat

Ray got up from the bed with a scary frown on his face

Ray: wait....De...Devonia is the one that had you kidnapped?

Mbali: if that old woman's name is Devonia then yeah

Ray shook his head looking angry and he paced around the room trying to calm himself down

Ray: she....she dared me like this....she fucken dared me like this

Mbali: what happened to her and those guys all I remember is when she punched me and it was lights out

***he stopped pacing and he looked at her with his hands shaking from all the anger he was feeling inside ***

Ray: that...that wrinkled bitch Devonia did that to your face...she...

Voice: who is Devonia?

they looked towards the door and Pops was standing there with a frown on his face and Ray turned to Mbali with clenched jaws and Mbali swallowed hard with her eyes popped out

Mbali: ummm....ummmm she....she was the ummm....she was an older woman my ex-boyfriend dated before me the ex that slept with my now ex-friend Phindile

Ray looked at her shocked that she just did that for him and she looked down trying to cook up a story for her father cause she can't have them know that she was kidnapped because of Ray she just can't let that known to them

62

INSERT.....62

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Pops: uthini? (what did you say?)

he said walking further in

Mbali: ummm ye...yes dad he...he was dating her before he dated me well more like he left her for me....then one day she confronted me and I threatened to expose her to her children and the world if she doesn't keep away from us and also said some nasty things to her....maybe she still

thinks im still with him or she did what she did cause I once threatened and embarrassed her I don't know

*** she shrug her shoulders...Pops shook his head looking down not believing this then he raised his head to look at Ray then at Mbali***

Mbali: I told him about her when we once bumped into her and she gave me a nasty and scary look...when we were still...ummm getting to know each other

Ray was still shocked by what Mbali was doing he didn't expect her to do this at all

Pops: didn't she know who you are or who's family you belong to?

he asked with an angry voice and Mbali swallowed hard

Mbali: dad she's just some single old woman that has a thing for amaben 10 and I guess his favorite ben 10 fell for me and me and my big mouth threatened and embarrassed her maybe that's why she did what she did...im sorry dad

she said that and looked down feeling like shit for lying to her dad but she knew it has to be done for peace to rein

Pops: hey listen here it's not your fault you hear me

she nodded still looking down while playing with her fingers and her father raised her chin so she looks at him

Pops: it's not your fault ok

he assured her

Mbali: ok

she whispered to him and he kissed her forehead

Pops: you are safe now and no one will hurt you ever again ok

she nodded with tears running down her cheeks and her father sat on the edge of the bed and he pulled her closer and she just sobbed in his arms and Ray decided to leave so they can have their father-daughter moment in private.....he went to the waiting area and found Ruslan flirting with some nurse and he chuckled as he saw the nurse blushing and giggling

Ray: sorry to interrupt but can I steal him for a bit.....don't worry when im done talking to him he'll be all yours

she blushed some more and she nodded and quickly walked away

Ruslan: Amor your numbers please so I'll be able to call you later when I'll come pick you up

she turned and quickly gave him her numbers

Ruslan: and remember you are sleeping over and its not up for discussion

***he winked at her and she walked away feeling like the ground could just open up and swallow her cause she felt embarrassed but she was also blushing cause Ruslan was a handsome

tall dark man and that it's also been a while since she got some and the possibility of her getting some later made her stomach to do flip flops ***

Ray: wow really bros?

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: what? I also need some South African pussy to chow and who knows she might end up being the one to make me want to be a family man mmmmh I mean I might even consider leaving my zombies for her

Ray laughed out loud

Ray: I doubt that happening but you also deserve some loving bros

Ruslan: yeah I just hope she'll accept my zombies man

they laughed

Ray: don't push it abeg

they laughed some more and went to sit down

Ruslan: what's wrong?

Ray sighed

Ray: Mbali just lied to her father about who send those men to abduct her

Ruslan: and that should show you that she's loyal to you and that she got your back

Ray sighed

Ray: I honestly didn't think she'll do that

Ruslan: Saint's mother was taught about loyalty at a very young age so you shouldn't be too shocked by her decision plus I think she knew that her family will be too hard on you if they found out that she got abducted because of you....i must admit that girl truly loves you

Ray sighed

Ray: I still can't believe she did that for me

Ruslan: believe it man....you're one lucky son of a bitch

Ray chuckled then he stopped and looked at Ruslan with a frown on his face

Ray: wait a minute....you knew who took her?

he shook his head

Ruslan: well not entirelyi only saw some man cutting her and she bled black blood so i knew there and then that Saint was awake then I would see what Saint was only looking at and it was like he was showing me where they were and where they were headed then booom I couldn't see anything anymore....i tried to check again and that's when I saw a woman talking about you and talking about killing your flower cause she's a stumbling block between you and her being together or something like that then he started his thing killing them one by one

then he sighed

Ruslan: and Saint just kept saying “you shouldn’t have touched her” to them

Ray: I think this child is more dangerous when he’s still inside his mother’s womb than when he’ll be born

Ruslan: true

Ray: so what did he do to them?

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: he turned them to mummies

Ray: what?

Ruslan: mmmmh....look bros just tread carefully around your flower and tell her family too cause it seems he’s a mama’s boy so if mommy is hurt he’ll come out and sort out the person that hurt her

then he laughed but Ray didn’t join him he had his eyes popped out looking at Ruslan

Ruslan: damn look at your face....priceless!

he laughed some more

Ray: ok you’re joking right?

Ruslan: nope....look Saint didn’t even ask why they took your flower or what the woman wanted or anything else except being mad that they touched mommy dearest

Ray: shit!

he said scratching his head

Ruslan: mmmmh shit indeed bros

Ray looked at him with a raised eyebrow

Ray: you find this amusing abi?

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: you have no idea....Saint is gonna make ya’ll go to church I just know it (then he laughed)and we both know the last time you went to church was before even Noah’s ark was built

they both laughed

Ray: piss off man....are you saying im that old

Ruslan: well La Parca is probably older than that ark and since ya’ll are one thing now then yeah

Ray pushed him

Ray: puta (fool)

Ruslan: mumu (fool)

then they busted out with laughter grabbing people's attention but they ignored them and continued to laugh

.
. .

Naledi: Heath what's troubling you?

she asked Heath as she could see that something was worrying or troubling him

Heath: nothing serious Obi m but I have something to tell you

Naledi: ummm ok im listening

he sighed

Heath: its about your grandmother

she frowned

Naledi: what about her?

Heath: she...she passed away my love

He said looking at her and she swallowed hard with tears filling her eyes and he got up and went to her

Naledi: wh...what?

she asked with a low tone and Heath sighed

Heath: your mother called you father and he told me....im sorry Obi m

Tears fell down her cheeks and Heath sat on the bed and he pulled her into a tight hug and she just cried for some time until she calmed down a bit

Naledi: even...even though she disowned me but she raised me Heath and she showed love even if maybe she was pretending but she was always there for me she never showed me any hostility until that faithful day....she always had my back even when Kitso abandoned me with a pregnancy....she showed me the love I needed that even my own mother failed to show me....im gonna miss her dearly

she said with a breaking voice while sobbing

Heath: I know my love....i know....it's gonna be ok....i know you loved her and still do even though she has hurt you deeply

she didn't say anything she just sobbed

.
. .

Naledi: you still don't wanna say what's really bothering you Heath?

they were now eating and Heath was silent playing with his food that Jabu brought for them (yes he did bring them food even after his fight with Heath and he greeted Heath by calling him Ramarete)

Naledi: Heath!

he snapped out of it

Heath: huh?

Naledi: what's wrong with you and don't tell me it's nothing

he sighed loudly and something in him convinced him to tell her the truth and that maybe she might understand him

Heath: its...its about your sister Lerato

she frowned at him

Naledi: you worried about Lerato Heath?

she asked with a hard tone and he cleared his throat

Heath: umm no ofcourse not...its just that something happened to her and now she's paralyzed from her shoulders down and she can't speak anymore

Naledi chuckled bitterly

Naledi: and what's that got to do with you..... are you worried about her Heath?

He sighed

Heath: not worried per se just that..... look I know it's wrong Obi m but she doesn't....

he kept quiet a bit trying to choose his words

Heath: she doesn't deserve what happened to her

Naledi: askies?

she asked him with her chest raising fast

Naledi: what did you just say Heath?

Heath: Obi m look don't

she cut him off

Naledi: she doesn't deserve what happened to her Heath so that how you feel.....so you still care about that murderer!

Heath: Naledi look that's not what i....

she cut him off again

Naledi: SHE STABBED ME AND KILLED MY SON OUR SON HEATH AND YOU HAVE THE ROTTEN NERVE TO SAY SHE DOESN'T DESERVE WHAT HAPPENED TO HER....SO MY BOY DESERVED TO DIE AND I DESERVED TO BE STABBED HEH IS THAT WHAT YOU'RE TRYING TO SAY TO ME

*** she shouted at him and he quickly got up going closer to her***

Naledi: DON'T COME NEAR ME! DON'T YOU DARE!!

She stopped him with tears running down her cheeks and he swallowed hard as he realized what he just did

Heath: Obi m look I didn't mean it like that ok im...im just blaming myself for what happened cause im the one that turned her into that crazy woman im...im just blaming myself for what happened cause im the one that turned her into that crazy woman I shouldn't have pursued you....shit....ummm that didn't come out right I meant I should have listened to you when you warned me to deal with my shit before I involved you...i knew fully well that she was pregnant and that I just broke things off a night before so I should have waited a bit before dragging you in all my mess...I just feel like im to be blamed for what happened and cause I indirectly drove her to do what she did and you being her sister just made things worse

Naledi took off her wedding ring and she threw it at him and it hit his chest and fell on the floor leaving him shocked to the core

Naledi: I'll make things easy for you then....it's over and I want a divorce now you can go nurse her cause her killing my son is nothing compared to her being paralyzed right?

his eyeballs were all out and his heart accelerated as his eyes were looking at the ring that was now on the floor...he then closed his eyes as if he's in pain

Heath: Naledi

he said with a pained voice

Naledi: leave Heath! go be with your precious Lerato I see she's more important than you dead son and that one that's busy fighting for his life cause your precious Lerato almost killed him

***he looked at her and his eyes were now blood shot red and his jaws were tightened ***

Heath: you took off your wedding ring and had the guts to tell me its over and that you want a divorce just because I told you how I felt

she chuckled bitterly with tears running down her cheeks

Naledi: so my son's death means nothing you Heath....you sat there and you told me to my face that your precious girlfriend doesn't deserve what happened to her....MY SON IS DEAD HEATH HE'S DEAD AND I'LL NEVER GET TO HOLD HIM OR SEE HIM GROW

UP AND YOU FEEL SORRY FOR THE BITCH THAT KILLED HER....I SWEAR ON BUNKE'S ASHES I'LL NEVER FORGIVE YOU FOR THIS...NEVER!!

his heart clenched as she said that and he breathed out loud

Heath: that's not what I meant when I said she doesn't deserve what's happening to her and you know it!

He tried to convince her or was it to also convince himself?

Naledi: that's exactly what you meant....i can't believe you feel sorry for her Heath how could you...how could you feel sorry for her...how could you betray me and our sons how could you or do you still love her?

He shook his head looking down as he couldn't believe how things quickly took the turn it just did

Heath: Obi m you know I live for you...you are my everything I love you and....

she cut him off

Naledi: stop lying to me Heath you don't love me maybe you wanted a mother for Omphile or maybe you wanted to know how it's like to fuck an albino but you don't love me wena or care about my feelings or my pain you...

Heath cut her off getting more angry than hurt by her words

Heath: ENOUGH! LOOK I KNOW WHAT I SAID CAME OUT WRONG OR YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND WHAT I WAS TRYING TO ACTUALLY SAY AND THAT I MADE YOU ANGRY BUT DON'T YOU DARE QUESTION MY LOVE FOR YOU NALEDI DON'T FUCKEN DARE!!

Naledi chuckled bitterly

Naledi: leave Heath please

she said with a low but cold tone and Heath picked her wedding ring and he walked to her and he tried to hold her left hand and she quickly moved it away

Heath: give me your hand Naledi

Naledi: I said leave!

Heath: give me your hand!

he said with an angry voice

Naledi: even if you put it back on my finger just know that I'll flush it down the toilet....leave and go put it on your precious Lerato's finger I mean it's now clear that she was the one that was supposed to be Mrs Owoh-Masden in the first place and not me

Heath looked at her with a scary look on his face

Heath: Naledi you crossing a line now...i get I hurt you with my words but you're crossing a fucken line!

Naledi: and you crossed a line when you defended my son's killer...now take your stupid ring and get the fuck out and stay away from me

Heath swallowed hard cause he could see that she meant every word

Heath: im not going anywhere!

Naledi: leave Heath I don't want you here i don't wanna see your face anymore

she said with a breaking voice and Heath attempted to touch her but she pushed him away

Naledi: I said leave!

Heath: Obi m look I love you ok and im sorry I said what I said...please don't do this

*** then she called out a nurse and heath looked at her with his heart pounding out of its ribcage as she screamed calling a nurse then two nurses rushed inside***

Nurse1: what's wrong...mam is something wrong?

Naledi: I want him out...please tell him to leave

she said sobbing and the other nurse went to the incubator to check on Ike

Heath: naledi please don't do this...im sorry ok please let's talk about this

he begged her

Nurse: sir please you know about her current condition and your son is there in that incubator all of this is not good for her and your son so please leave at least until she calms down

Heath was looking at Naledi this whole time who was sobbing painfully and right then and there he knew he really fucked things up pretty bad....he made her cry...he hurt her and with the way things are she might even leave him

Heath: i...I'll leave but please make sure they are both ok and call me if something happens

the nurse nodded

Heath: im sorry about what I said and know that I love you so much

then he walked out with his heart bleeding...he suddenly felt slight chest pains and he stopped walking and he balanced himself with the wall trying to calm down....after sometime they faded and he slowly walked out of the hospital asking himself why he said what he said about Lerato even after that fight with Jabu where he told him his piece of mind.....many things were now running through his mind and he felt like shit and fear was now creeping in and filling his heart and mind and the thought of Naledi leaving him broke his heart even more

Heath: what did I just do....why....God no I can't....she can't.... shit what have I done...what's wrong with me...something is definitely wrong with me cause I would never do that to Naledi

he said that as his hands were shaking he was even sweating

Heath: God what I done.... ooh God what have I done

he said that with a breaking voice and tears ran down his cheeks

63

INSERT.....63

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

***Things are not looking good for Heath at all and at the same time he doesn't know what was happening to him....Ever since his fight with Naledi two days ago he hasn't been himself and even he can feel it yesterday he didn't even go to visit Naledi and his son at the hospital besides the fact that he can't face Naledi after what he said to her well he also gets angry and annoyed whenever he thinks of her but the weird thing is his heart longs for her but he can't help but get angry or annoyed whenever he thinks of her. He can't even sleep at night cause the scene of him fighting with Naledi haunts him in his dreams and the worst part is now he dreams of her leaving him in his dreams so his life is messed up and he can even feel himself slipping into depression slowly cause his heart is in serious battle with his mind and its messing him up pretty bad....

Jabu tried talking to him but they ended up arguing instead with Jabu throwing insults at him and he ended up kicking him out of his house to avoid having a physical fight with him....Anyway around 9 in the morning he decided to go see his grandmother hoping that maybe she can help him with whatever is going on with him but when he got to his grandparents' house his grandfather told him gogo is not well that she's going through some things that has to do with her calling. Heath got worried about her instantly but mkhulu assured him that something like this once happened before Heath was even born so she'll bounce back soon so instead Heath hanged out with his grandfather catching up. His grandfather could see that something was bothering him and he automatically thought it has to do with the death of his son and his wife being stabbed so he let him be right after he gave him some words of advice and encouragement and he then changed the topic and they spoke about random things he knew men don't like talking about their feeling especially Heath so he decided not to push him and just let him breath instead of suffocating him with endless questions and stuff....

Then two hours later Mkhulu's friend came to visit him and Heath excused himself and he went to lay down a bit thinking that maybe when he's here he'll be able to catch some sleep without having a nightmare but even though he managed to sleep "peacefully" for a couple of hours he woke up again to a nightmare that felt so real in that dream he could see Naledi in a white dress getting married to another man and he couldn't even see the man's face they were on the altar with a pastor busy blessing their union he tried to scream calling out to Naledi's name but it's like she couldn't hear him that nobody could hear him.... he even tried to run to them so he stops the wedding but it's like he was glued where he was standing and he couldn't even move an inch he watched the whole vow exchange scene while he cried his lungs out and when Naledi and the guy kissed when the pastor said "you may kiss the bride" he felt like someone was stabbing him with a sharp object in his heart and he felt dizzy..... then he woke up gasping for air sweating all over with his body shaking***
Heath: fuck!!

***he cursed and he moved and sat at the edge of the bed and he rubbed his eyes.... then his phone rang and it was Jabu he sighed and he let it ring until it stopped then he received a message from him and it read:

" you need to fix things with Naledi man before she leaves your black ass"....

He sighed again after reading it and he got up and went to the bathroom to pee and clean himself up.... He was now in the kitchen sitting on the barstool drinking one strong coffee while sliding through Naledi's photos his heart missed her and longed for her but at the same time he had this feeling of annoyance when he thought of her***

Voice: mmmmh you are here

he turned and it was his grandmother and he half-smiled at her

Heath: ummm yeah I came to see you but Mkhulu said you are not well

he could see that she was not well she even lost a bit of weight

Gogo: and why are you here to see me when you know what exactly you need to do?

she said making herself a cup of tea and Heath didn't say anything

Gogo: you came here to ask for help where else you could've prevented all this from happening

he sighed

Heath: gogo I don't even know what's wrong with me or why I did what I did

Gogo: your problem Shaka is that you have become weak yes you did your gangster things but you always and I mean always remembered God.... and whenever people or myself warned you about things you listened and you prayed and also stood firm and you never let anything shake you you

even saved Lesedi with your prayers when Naledi's grandmother send evil things to her and what made you think you couldn't have stopped all this with a prayer mmmmh?. Even your brothers Sambulo and Jabulani warned you but what did you do mmmmh you did exactly what the devil wanted you to do and buka manje (look now).....this days you let people play on top of your head Shaka and I must say im disappointed in you even abathakathi (witches) have found a playground on you nx

Heath: what...what do you mean?

Gogo: I warned you and told you that you are the only person that will make Naledi to leave you and you just proved me right....yazi uyadina Shaka entlek ungenza ngithukuthele man (you are annoying actually you make me angry)

Heath just looked down and his eyes filled with tears

Heath: help me then gogo

gogo sighed

Gogo: I wish I could but I can't cause my mind is not on the right place

she sighed again

Gogo: something big will befall our family and even though I don't know what exactly at the moment or when it will happen but I can already feel the pain in my heart

she said closing her eyes with her hand on her chest and Heath swallowed when he thought that maybe his son won't make it or that something might happen to Naledi

Heath: is it Naledi or my son

she shook her head and she breathed out and took her cup of tea

Gogo: its something big something that might break our family apart

then she indicated that he come closer and he did and she held his ear and she pulled it towards her and Heath screamed

Gogo: if Naledi leaves you just know that I will never forgive you for that and you'll suffer until death remembers you remember what I told you about how special she is?

he nodded

Gogo: I wasn't joking and if you want confirmation go ask her mother and her dead grandmother

***then she kissed the side of his head ***

Gogo: I love you now go find help so le nkunkuma yobuthakathi isuke kuwe (to get rid of this witchcraft rubbish on you)even if it means going back to Nigeria your birth country to get help then do so as long as you'll get help uyangizwa? (you hear me?)

***he nodded and she let him go and he rubbed his ear with a frown on his face and she walked away**

Gogo: you better fix things with your wife Shaka and never set your big foot in my house until you do so...ooh and it's not yet over

Heath: what...what do you mean?

she stopped walking and turned to look at him

Gogo: you left the door open Shaka now people do as they please

*** then she continued to walk and Heath sighed and after a few minutes of him thinking hard he got up and he went to rinse the cup he was using and he followed his grandmother and said his goodbyes to her and he also said his goodbyes to his grandfather and Mkhulu's friend then he got in his car and drove away.....he wanted to drive to the hospital to go see Naledi and his son but he suddenly had that annoyed feeling he has lately when he thought of her and he decided to go to his office instead..... on his way there his phone rang again and this time it was Ray and he answered***

Heath: big Ray

Ray: YOUR MAMA YOU BLOODY MUMU NX (insults)

he said it with a Nigerian accent and Heath sighed

Ray: ARE YOU MAD?...U DEY CRAZE?... ARE YOU OK UPSTAIRS HUH?...ARE YOU FUCKEN OUT OF YOUR MIND EZEH?

he said with his Nigerian accent again and Heath sighed

Heath: bros calm down abeg

Ray: don't tell me to calm down what the fuck is wrong with you Ezeh!

Heath sighed

Heath: look na juju dey make me do that bros (its witchcraft that made me do what I did)

Ray: SHUT THAT YOUR MOUTH MY FRIEND.... JUST SHUT IT IF YOU HAVE NOTHING TO SAY !!...na juju na juju (he mimicked his voice)

Heath: look I know I was wrong to say what I said to her but bros it's like something was forcing me to say what I said

Ray: whether its juju or you being plain stupid and inconsiderate of your wife's feeling the fact is you shouldn't have said what you said to her man do you want to lose her is that what you want

Heath: ofcourse not I wont survive it bros and you know that but Ray you no dey hear word (you're not listening)

Ray: what do you mean I no dey hear word?... Biko make you no vex me (im not listening?.. please don't upset me) THAT BITCH KILLED MY NEPHEW AND YOU EZEH FEEL SORRY FOR HER AND YOU HAD THE FUCKEN AUDACITY TO SAY IT TO YOUR WIFE THE SAME WIFE THAT WAS ALMOST KILLED BY THAT BITCH

Heath parked on the side of the road and he sighed

Heath: I know ok that's why I say na juju dey make me say what I said to Naledi bros

Ray: mxm I no gree (I don't agree).....no person that is bewitched is aware that he/she is bewitched so don't tell me that bullshit

Heath sighed

Heath: bros im telling you the truth..... im aware cause my mind and heart are in a serious battle about this whole shit....my mind is annoyed and angry at Naledi while my heart yearns for her

Ray sighed

Ray: im coming back on Friday and we will talk and find a solution so in the meantime try and fix things with your mamiwota while the rod is still wet cause once you give it time to cool off then it will be very difficult to bend it don't listen to this "give her time to cool off" shit cause sometimes you might do that and she gets enough time to realize that you actually don't deserve her and that she's better off without your disloyal ass

Heath sighed with his heart breaking some more because of that "disloyal" word

Heath: I hear you bros

but he knew that he wasn't ready to see her or better yet that other mysterious feeling he has been feeling lately wouldn't let her go see her

Ray: just pray that she doesn't leave your black ass

then he dropped the call and Heath decided to drive to a bar in town to go drown his sorrows and heavy heart instead of going to see or fix things with his wife

.
. .
.

he was having his fourth drink and even though he was tipsy the fact that he could still feel guilt regret annoyance anger and fear of losing Naledi made him feel like he hadn't had enough yet so he told the bar man to give him a refill and the bar man did as told

Voice: mmmmh you do know that getting drunk won't solve your problems right?

Heath: fuck off!

*** he said without even looking at the person and the person chuckled***

Voice: mxm what am I even saying.....im here busy drowning myself with the same alcohol you're drowning yourself in because I can't face my own problems...sorry next time I'll practice what I preach

then she laughed and Heath looked at her.... and he noticed that she was a beautiful caramel skinned woman with beautiful eyes a Rihanna-like forehead and sexy pouty lips and he could tell that she was blessed with “divine consequences” (she was gifted ass-wise)...he then cleared his throat and he looked back at his glass

Woman: well not that you asked but guess what...i caught my fiancé of two weeks in bed with my sister the same sister he told me he doesn't like being around cause she's judgmental and has a stinking attitude

then she laughed bitterly

Woman: I trusted that motherfucker and he did that to me...me Londiwe

she chuckled and she drowned her drink

Londi: but its all good cause this just made me realize that blood only makes you related and men are trash and dogs nx

Heath chuckled

Heath: I think my mamiw...my wife will agree with you

Londi: mmmmh you married and you cheated...wow

Heath: nah I said something I shouldn't have and I cant even take it back

Londi: ouch but at least you didn't cheat hey

Heath: believe me what I said to her is worse than cheating even though it came out wrong than it was intended to cause I cant take it back or make it up to her

Londi: damn but im sure she will forgive you eventually

Heath clenched his jaws as he remembers that she said its over and that she wants a divorce

Heath: I hope so

well they continued to drink while holding a conversation with Londiwe flirting with him here and there even though Heath tried to ignore her flirtatious way then after he downed his drink he started feeling dizzy

Heath: shit i...i think im sloshed now

*** he said rubbing his eyes then he chuckled and Londiwe laughed at him***

Londi: mmmmh and im sure wifey will be mad at you some more when she sees how sloshed you are

then she laughed

Heath: nah she...she's in hospital she was stabbed while pregnant and she lost one baby but at least the other baby is alive and she's alive too

Londi: damn sorry for your loss man.....you know I don't even know your name

Heath chuckled

Heath: Shaka.... my name is Shaka

Londi: mmmmh nice Shaka so are you Zulu?

Heath: shit!

***he said rubbing his face cause he was now seeing double ***

Londi: ummm are you ok?

she said brushing his hand and he quickly moved it and he cleared his throat

Heath: I think I had one too many....shit.... I should go

he tried to get up but he felt the room spin and he fell back on the chair

Londi: ummm did you come with your car?

Heath: shit....ummm yeah

he said rubbing his eyes

Londi: ummm ok but I don't think driving is a wise move so I should just call an uber for you

Heath nodded and Londi took out her phone and dialed she talked on the phone looking at Heath who was now sweating and after she dropped the call she cleared her throat getting up

Londi: the uber is around the corner so we should go wait for it outside

Heath struggled to take his wallet out of his pocket but he eventually did and he paid for his drinks and londiwe's and Londiwe helped him up and she said bye to the bartender and they went outside....it was now a bit dark outside

Heath: fuck...imnot feeling well

after saying that he threw up on the ground and afterwards he held his head as he felt lightheaded and Londiwe helped him sit down on the ground without saying anything

Londiwe: you ok baby?

she said running her finger on his pink lips and he tried to raise his hand so he can push her finger away but it was even a struggle to lift his arm

Heath: what...what did you do to...to me you...you bitch?

she chuckled

Londiwe: shhhh all will be well baby just stop fighting it and go to sleep ok

Heath: fu...fuck you!

then his body gave in and Londiwe caught him before he hit the ground with his head and he put him down gently and she took out her phone and dialed a number

Londiwe: he's out you can come

then she listened

Londiwe: it wasn't that hard cause he was already tipsy when I approached him

she listened again and that's when Heath passed out completely after he heard her say all that

.
. .

he opened his heavy eyes and immediately his head pounded hard and he screamed a bit closing them again then after a while he opened them again swallowing hard as his throat was dry he then sat up straight while holding his pounding head and he looked around to see where he was and he didn't recognize the bedroom

Heath: fuck!

he said closing his eyes again and he opened them and his eyes wondered around the room again and they landed on the empty space next to him on the bed and it was drenched with blood

Heath: what the fuck!

he said jumping away and he ended up falling off the bed and he cursed as he hurt his hip-bone... then he saw that he was naked and his dick had a condom on it that was filled with what looked like his cum and he shook his head continuously as painful as it was not believing what he had done

Heath: no...no....no...fuck no....no

*** he got up holding his heavy head and he quickly looked around and his eyes fell on the picture that was on top of the side drawer and it was of a beautiful caramel woman smiling and he closed his eyes trying to think about what happened last night and it all flooded back in his mind like a movie playing on a big screen including what Londiwe said on the phone before he passed out and he cursed***

Heath: fucken bitch!!

he then looked at his dick

Heath: fuck shit...shit!!....God this has to be a bad dream please make it a bad dream

***then he sighed with a heavy heart and he looked around and he spotted a door and he walked to it and it was a bathroom and he took off the condom and he wrapped it with a tissue and flushed it down he then went back to the bedroom and he picked his clothes on the floor and he searched for hidden bugs planted on them and he found none then he wore them and he searched for his car keys phone and wallet and he found them in the lounge on top of the table and he also searched for bugs that might be planted on his items and he found none again....then he switched his phone off and shoved them in his pockets....

He sighed with tears in his eyes as he thought of how he just messed things up so more and how Naledi might definitely want a divorce if she found out about this his heart shuttered some more

when he realized that if he decided to go to the hospital or to his office instead he wouldn't be in this predicament***

Heath: I really don't deserve her and it will take a miracle for her to even consider forgiving me for this too

***he said that to himself and tears ran down his cheeks but he quickly wiped them and decided to switch to Caesar mode to deal with all this properly..... he went to the kitchen area and he searched for refuse plastic bags and he found one and he went back to the bedroom and he removed the bloody sheet off and he shoved it inside the big refuse plastic bag and he also removed the bed cover along with the pillow cases and he put them inside the refuse bag too then he went back to the kitchen and came back with a bowl filled with warm water and he poured a bit of bleach and washing powder inside and he cleaned everywhere he remembered touching from the bathroom bedroom lounge and kitchen then he went to the bedroom and he tried to clean the bloodstain on the mattress off making sure he doesn't drench it too much with water and after he was a bit satisfied with the result he searched for a clean bed sheet a bed cover and pillow cases.... he found them and he made the bed....

He then went to discard the dirty and bloody water and he even cleaned the bowl but he took the wet dishcloth and he went all over the apartment carefully searching for hidden cameras or bugs and he found none then he took the big black refuse plastic bag and he went outside making sure he cleaned his fingerprints off the door handles and he went straight to the big-steel rubbish bin that was not far from the building after he spotted it and he tossed the refuse bag inside and he walked past the parking lot but then he spotted his car.....he took out his car keys and pressed the unlock button just to be sure and indeed it was his car as it unlocked.....he then went inside quickly and before he could start it he searched it for hidden cameras and planted bugs and he found none then he went under the car to search for any explosives and he only found a foreign planted GPS tracking device and he destroyed it immediately then he went to that rubbish bin and he took out the refuse plastic bag and he tossed it inside at the back instead of at the boot as he didn't want to waste any more time there and he quickly got in and drove out and luckily the security guards didn't search cars when they drove out cause you can only go inside the complex if the person you came to visit buzzes you in or you sign in and the guard writes down your car's number plate so he just pressed a button and the gate opened and he drove away....

As soon as he was quiet a distance between him and that complex he breathed out loud with his heart now pounding hard as he just realized that there is a missing body he knew that whomever

bleed out on that bed is probably dead cause the blood was too much and the fact that there was no body in that house it meant it could be anywhere even in his.....(then his eyes popped out)... he quickly swayed to the left attempting to park on the side of the road and he heard a sound coming from the boot he parked and he looked on his mirrors to see if there are any police cars coming his way and there were none then he quickly got out of his car and he went to the boot and opened it... then right there lay Londiwe's naked body with her eyes opened wide without blinking she had gunshot wounds on her chest and she also had strangulation marks on her neck he quickly closed the boot and he got inside the car and he rested his head on the steering wheel and he cursed***
Heath: shit....im fucked!

.
. .

*** She was sitting in her lounge inside her apartment busy on her laptop she was on the internet trying to learn more about her sister's current condition since the doctors were busy doing tests on her left right and center and they still couldn't explain what was wrong with her she decided to do some research on her own to see if she could come up with something tangible and get her the necessary help she needs to regain control of her body and speech (even though she knew money wise it was gonna cripple her and her family)... since the ones that are supposed to know what was wrong with her were "clueless" at the moment. Yes it was frustrating for your loved one to wake up from a coma paralyzed and mute where else their wounds weren't supposed to make them like that in the first place and worst part the doctors can't even explain themselves why he/she woke up like that.....then her phone beeped indicating that she received a message and when she opened it she was shocked to the core it was pictures of Heath and some woman naked in bed with the woman sucking on Heath's erect dick with Heath's eyes closed and a small frown plastered on his face with his mouth opened a bit the next picture was the woman licking the tip of his dick with a smirk on her face as she faced the camera***

Katlego: damn this nikka is gifted dzeem no wonder Lerato was that obsessed with him

she said biting her lower lip and she opened another picture and "the woman" was on top of him and it looked like she was riding him and another one was "the woman" posing with his Black American Express Centurion card Sberbank gold card and his Visa Infinite card on her hand

Katlego: wow!

she was shocked for realshe didn't even know Heath was that loaded to own such cards anyway she tried to call the numbers that send her the pictures but it didn't ring or even send her to voicemail which meant whomever send those pictures destroyed the simcard immediately after he/she sends them and she sighed..... she then read the caption and it said; "expose this son of a bitch" and she smirked

Katlego: well well well lets see how strong your "love" is you stupid albino bitch to that manwhore of yours nx

***she laughed then she went to Facebook and she posted the pictures on her Facebook account with the caption:

" look at your man-whore of a husband and his side dish 'little sis'.....karma is a bitch neh I mean look at her she looks sizzling H.O.T shem you know I don't even blame him for going for her I mean look at her she's flames while you look like....ummm yeah you know how you look like...aarg shame"

Then she tagged Naledi and Heath and she logged out of Facebook and she smirked feeling proud of herself***

64

INSERT.....64

.
. .

NARRATED

After a few seconds he raised his head and his face had a cold look on it then he took out his phone and he switched it on and dialed Jabu's numbers he knew no matter how bad they fight or argue but he will always have his back

Jabu: keng? (what?)

Heath: stop acting like a bitch on her period man shit just hit the fan..... look I have a dead body in my trunk and I don't know how it got there

Jabu: heh?

***he asked with a worried tone ***

Heath: yeah...I went to a bar to drink last night and I ended up having a drink with some bitch that said she's also there to drown her sorrows then I started feeling dizzy and she pretended to help me get an uber since I couldn't drive then she helped me outside but before I passed out I heard her say "he's out you can come" and I woke up naked with a condom on my dick this morning and the side of the bed I was on drenched with blood and now I found her naked dead body in the trunk

he told him with a calm voice

Jabu: fuck! fuck! fuck!.....ok where are you now?

Heath told him

Jabu: ok I'll call Mat and we will come to you wena just find a quiet spot away from the main road or somewhere where there aren't people moving around or cameras around and send me your location

Heath: ok

then Jabu kept quiet a bit

Jabu: Mshikaro

Heath: yeah

Jabu: as mad as I am with you but know that I believe you cause I know you can never lie to me so I got your back.... remember brothers for life

Heath: yeah brothers for life

then they ended the call even though Jabu could sense that Heath was too calm and his voice sounded a bit different more like cold there wasn't even a bit of panic on his voice and he knew what that meant

Jabu: shit... eish inkathazo iqalile manje (trouble has started now)

He sighed and dialed Mat's numbers

.
. .
. . .

*** Meanwhile Heath started the car and found a quiet back street and he parked there and send Jabu and Mat his location and he got out of the car and he went to hide somewhere for just in case the police shows up cause its clear to him that all this is a set up soon a car parked behind his car and he watched as Jabu got out of the car and he came out of his hiding place ***

Jabu: bros

Heath: Jabu

*** they bro-hugged but Jabu could see that he wasn't looking at or talking to the Heath he knows but to Caesar***

Jabu: Caesar?

a creepy smile emerged on Heath's face and Jabu swallowed hard

Caesar: in the flesh

then he chuckled

Jabu: shit!

Caesar: so...where is Mat?

Jabu: he...he's coming

he nodded and moved to the boot of his car and Jabu followed him and he opened it

Jabu: damn

Caesar: mmmmh and I suspect they even used Heath's gun to kill her

Jabu swallowed cause its now officially confirmed that Caesar is out

Jabu: I suspect so too

Caesar: mmmmh and as i was searching his car for bugs I didn't find his gun

Jabu: damn that means you have to go to the police station to report it stolen so that when its found you'll have the police report as back up

***Caesar looked at Jabu with a raised eyebrow ***

Jabu: what?

Caesar: you do know this is not your cousin right

Jabu sighed deeply

Jabu: I know but Naledi or your kids or rather his kids should never meet Caesar you know that right

he smirked

Caesar: I know you know Im a very... very private person

Jabu nodded

Caesar: good now I know there is a road block somewhere they know he will definitely pass and they are waiting for Heath to drive by

Jabu: yeah so we need to move the body to another car and have Mat or Diego drive your car after we have cleaned it thoroughly and see what will happen and the reaction of the cops that will stop him

Caesar nodded

Caesar: and what about the disposal of the body?

Jabu: I know someone who owns a mortuary we will go there and remove the bullets on her body and make a deal will him then have her cremated

Caesar: mmmmh good plan

Jabu: yeah

then Mat's car parked next to them and him and Diego got out and they all fist bumped and Diego whistled when he saw the body

Diego: who the hell did you piss off man?

Caesar: someone who's about to die

***Diego and Mat chuckled but Jabu didn't cause he knew what is about to happenanyway they put the body on the ground and switched the boot carpet from Jabu's car with Heath's boot carpet then they carried the body to Jabu's car and also put the plastic that has the bloodied sheet bed covers and pillow cases along with the body in the boot ***

Caesar: Diego you'll drive Heath's car to his house while I'll use your car to go to the police station and Mat and Jabu you'll take the body to the mortuary and I'll meet ya'll there

Diego and Mat looked at Heath with their eyebrows raised

Jabu: I'll explain later let's go man

Caesar: don't touch her body until I get there

Jabu nodded and they all got in the cars and drove to different directions

Mat: explain now

Jabu sighed

Jabu: multiple personalities

Mat: wait what?...wait does Jefe even know about this

Jabu: yeah...only me and him...and Heath know

Mat: damn....what made him have multiple personalities?

Jabu sighed

Jabu: well when I was still in prison he was kidnapped by some Nigerians who wanted to use him to get his father to do some illegal shit for them and apparently he created Caesar to cope with the torture he suffered when he was still kidnapped...and we didn't know about Caesar until he killed some fool that send a hitman after me after I got out of prison he killed that man in a more gruesome way that made me question his sanity man and the same dark look he has now is the same one he had back then and when big Ray came after I told him what happened that's when we realized Caesar wasn't just a name and the worst part is we don't even know how many personalities he has since we have only met Caesar so far

Mat: shit....that's messed up man

Jabu: tell me about it....i just hope he doesn't talk to Naledi using Heath as a third person

Mat: that would be creepy to her man as much as it was creepy to Dee and i....he's too calm and cold at the same time even his serious tone dark eyes and creepy smile is not on man

Jabu sighed

.
. .
Heath or Rather Caesar was driving to the police station when his phone rang it was Thandi so he answered

Caesar: yeah

Thandi: how could you Heath mmmmh? how can you hurt Naledi like this what did she do to deserve this from you

Caesar just shook his head

Caesar: Thandi can I call you later im driving now

Thandi: FUCK YOU HEATH CALL ME LATER SE GAT...HOW CAN YOU CHEAT ON NALEDI AND THEN TAKE PICTURES WITH YOUR BITCH AND NOW KATLEGO POSTED THOSE PICTURES ON FACEBOOK HOW CAN YOU BE THAT CRUEL

Caesar: wait what?

Thandi: HOW CAN YOU CHEAT ON NALEDI HEATH MMMM? AFTER EVERYTHING SHE'S BEEN THROUGH YOU DECIDED TO HURT HER LIKE THAT HOW COULD YOU....AND TO THINK I THOUGHT YOU WERE GOOD FOR HER BUT NO YOU ARE.....

he just dropped the call and parked on the side of the road and he logged on to Facebook and he went to his notification box and he saw that Katlego tagged him and Naledi and he clicked on it and what he saw made him extremely angry

Caesar: ooh wrong move bitch fucken wrong move!

***He said that and he clenched his jaws ***

Caesar: ok let me do some damage control

***he said to himself and he reported that post and after he was done he also decided to post on his/Heath's account and he wrote:

“well KATLEGO aka “WHORE” MOEKETSI I will never cheat on my beautiful wife and good people just so you know that low life bitch named KATLEGO the same bitch that photo-shopped and posted this rubbish is a sister to a bitter ex I once dumped and now her evil sister did this cause im married to a beautiful woman that has albinism that I love with everything in me and I guess they couldn't stomach the fact that I left her sorry ass and married Obi m someone they looked down on....wow I must say this was very low even for her.....Anyway guess what my wife knows how I look like when im naked so she knows this is not me cause I have a tattoo on my right rib of a dragon (he lied) so

too bad for your plan bitch..... ooh and my beautiful and sexy wife and i are cool so whatever you hoped to achieve KATLEGO know that you FAILED”

then he tagged Katlego back and he logged out of Facebook and started the car and drove away***

.
. .

*** He went to the police station and reported his gun stolen then before going to the mortuary he decided to go do damage control at the hospital too he got there and he slowly opened the door and he could hear Naledi's sobs...her back was facing the door and her sobs would even touch the most coldest heart ever anyway he just went inside and Naledi caught his scent before he even said anything and she tried to wipe her tears off but it was a futile thing to do as they kept on falling***

Naledi: I...i don't wanna see your face so leave Heath

*** she said with a breaking voice and he didn't say anything or move from his spot***

Naledi: I can still feel you standing there I said leave didn't i

Heath: im not going anywhere until you listen to what I have to say... now sit up

he commanded her and she chuckled bitterly

Naledi: leave Heath or I'll have you thrown out

Heath: try that shit and you'll see what will happen

he said it with a cold tone and she swallowed hard

Heath: now sit up and listen

she didn't move she just sniffed

Heath: I can make you sit up forceful you know so which one will it be you doing it yourself or me making it happen for you

she couldn't miss the coldness of his tone and even the slight change of his voice.....she closed her eyes shortly then she opened them and she slowly sat up straight she was still bothered by the slight difference in his voice it was bone chilling in away.... well she found him standing next to the bed and she could tell there was something different about him he had his hands in his pockets and his eyes were dark and he had this cold look on his face she expected him to be in panic mode or for her to see fear in his eyes but none of that was visible on his face

Caesar: you know lke can sense your negative energy and it could make him sick in a way

she didn't say anything she wasn't even looking at him now cause her mind drifted off to those pictures Katlego tagged her on Facebookshe couldn't believe that Heath would do that to her while she's in hospital with their son because his ex stabbed her she couldn't believe the turn of events and the betrayal she just witnessed from him.... at the back of her head she always knew that she wasn't his type or in his league but he kept on whispering sweet nothings to her and she actually fell and believed them and now as she was sitting there she realized that she has been a fool to believe that a man like Heath could actually love her and commit to her alone

Caesar: are you done holding that intense meeting by yourself?

***she didn't say anything and he took out his hands out of his pockets and he rubbed them together and got closer ***

Caesar: ok then look at me

she didn't and he sat on the bed and held her chin lifting her face

Caesar: look at me Naledi

***she didn't ***

Caesar: Naledi I said look at me now!

he commanded her and she just lifted her eyes and he noticed her eyes where swollen and red

Caesar: shit...ok look he didn't...

he stopped

Caesar: I didn't cheat

she chuckled bitterly and looked away

Caesar: don't look away when im talking to you....now look at me

she did feeling a little scared of his cold tone and now tears where running down her cheeks

Caesar: look the thing is I was drugged at a bar I went to drown my sorrows in a woman sat next to me and she started talking to me about how her fiancé cheated on her with her sister and I started talking about how I messed things between us and how I didn't know how to fix things yes she flirted with me but I ignored that cause I was more worried about what I said about Lerato to you

***she kept on wiping her falling tears ***

Caesar: then I started feeling dizzy and I thought it's because I was drunk but when she helped me outside after she said she called an uber for me I started feeling sick she helped me sit down and I got worse and when I managed to ask her what she did to me she just said I should stop fighting it and go to sleep but before I passed out I heard her say to someone that the person should come cause I was out and that it wasn't hard to get me cause when she decided to approach me I was already drunk

Naledi: and you expect me to believe that nonsense is that how gullible and naïve you think I am Heath

Caesar: im not done now will you keep quiet until im done

he said with a hard tone and Naledi chuckled bitterly with tears still running down her cheeks

Caesar: then I woke up on a bed to find the space next to me drenched with blood and I was naked with a condom still wrapped on my dick and the “girl” was nowhere to be found and even now I still don’t remember what happened after I passed out right there and then I knew im being set up somehow and it was true cause as I was driving trying to make sense of what was happening I heard something move in the boot and I stopped the car and went to look and a body of that dead woman was in there

Naledi’s eyes popped out as she looked at him shocked and she could see that he was dead serious

Caesar: then your frie....i mean then Thandi called me shouting saying I cheated on you and when I logged into Facebook I saw that it was the same girl I found in the boot and on the pictures I looked out of it

Naledi was just looking at him still shocked as she couldn’t believe what she was hearing.....and the worst part was Heath’s chilled and calm voice not to mention an emotionless look on his face.... she has never seen him like this

Caesar: and I saw that that useless waste of breath called Katlego is the one that posted those pictures so it means whomever made that girl to drug me is also working with her

then he moved away from the bed and he stood there with his hands in his pockets looking at Naledi who still looked shocked and confused

Caesar: you know me Naledi you know I’d rather die than to lose you

Naledi: please just..... leave

that’s all she managed to say looking away

Caesar: its ok I’ll leave but know this firstly we are not divorcing or separating and secondly we will not give Katlego or whoever is after me the satisfaction and thirdly I know you’re hurt and probably hate me but just think about what I just told you cause all this doesn’t make sense someone is after me and now that his/her plans didn’t work they might come after you or our kids to hurt me

Naledi looked up at him alarmed

Naledi: wha...what do you mean?

Caesar: I mean im not lying to you Naledi or trying to bullshit you with some cock and bull story im dead serious someone is after me and I want you to be strong for our kids and not let your hate towards me to stop you from being the protective mother hen to our chicks

Naledi closed her eyes

Naledi: Heath are my babies lives in danger?

Caesar: I don't know im just being careful and not waiting to see if they are in danger or not

Naledi: now you listen here Heath Ezeudo Owoh-Masden if anything and I mean anything happen to my babies you better commit suicide before I get to you you hear me...now you better make sure nothing happens to them or my "hate" towards you will be the least of your worries

she said that to him with a serious look on her face that turned "Caesar" on but he didn't show it

Caesar: yes mam

he said that looking at her as she was breathing heavily looking at Heath with a deadly look on her face

Caesar: not everything is as it seems Naledi always remember that some people don't want to see us together or happy and so they will do anything to break us up some might even go to an extend of using witchcraft to break us up...just don'tlet them win

then he went to the incubator and he looked at Ike

Caesar: guards will be deployed outside your door and I'll also deploy others for the girls too

then he turned and walked to the door then he stopped and turned to look at Naledi

Caesar: also be wary of the nurses too I'll tell the guards to also be wary of them or any suspicious doctors

then he walked out he didn't know if it was "appropriate" to even kiss her or tell her he loves her like "Heath" does

.
. .
.

*** He got to the mortuary after Jabu send him the location and he went inside and they receptionist took him to the owner's office and he got in and greeted him then he sat down***

Jabu: how did it go?

Caesar: good...ooh and you should send two of your guys to the hospital to make sure Naledi and the baby are safe and two others should watch over Thandi's house

Jabu nodded

Mat: well I guess you were really set up cause Diego was stopped by some cops and the stupid cops' reaction was what gave them up when they saw Diego instead of you

Caesar: did they search the car?

Mat: yeah and he saw one of the cops talking on the phone looking frustrated after he didn't find what he was looking for in the boot

Caesar: mmmmh interesting.....anyway where is the body?

Owner: this way

they followed him and the owner wanted to remove the bullets himself but Heath stopped him and he did it himself

Caesar: I want her body to be cremated....when can it be done?

Owner: umm I can make it happen today

Caesar: good

*** then he took out an envelope with money inside his pocket and he gave it to the owner***

Caesar: make sure it happens and I'll send someone to come for her ashes

the owner nodded smiling

Mat: what are you going to do with her ashes man?

Caesar: im gonna mix it with water and make the person who paid the bitch to set Heath up drink it before I kill him

*** he said with a chilled out but cold voice and the owner's smile faded as he looked at Heath shocked***

Mat: damn

.
. .
.

*** They were now at Heath's house and Mat was going through the security cams of that bar and the moment Heath stepped inside they just went blank***

Jabu: damn it

Heath huffed and he got up

Caesar: ok how about any cameras around that bar didn't they catch anything?

Mat: well they are not clear and you cant even see the number plates of their car or let alone their faces

Caesar: ok then we are going after the cop im sure he'll tell me who tipped him off and how much does he know about all this shit

Jabu: yah we should....im sure dai moeskond knows something

Mat: wait a minute

Caesar: what did you find?

Mat: the number plate

Diego: but you said you couldn't see it

Mat: yeah but the minute it made a right turn I checked for any public cctv cameras and I found one on some government building facing the road and I got the sons of bitches

Jabu: so who does the car belong to?

Mat: wait let me hack into the traffic department and find out

he got busy on his laptop

Jabu: how is she for real?

Caesar: she's one tough cookie so she'll be ok....with time....anyway I heard the insults you showered Heath with

he said with a raised eyebrow and Jabu frowned

Jabu: well he deserved them

Caesar: ooh is it?

Jabu: yeah or keng o nale skhalo? (or what you have a problem with it)

Caesar: you do know im not Heath right so I can just fuck you up right now

Jabu: voetsek le marete....go fuck up dithaka tsa gao I see wa lebala gore ek is jou groet man jou muur (your mates)

Heath chuckled

Caesar: one day Jabu

he said pointing at him and Jabu showed him the middle finger

Mat: got him....the car belongs to a Stanley sfitso Ngema

then he turned the screen to them and they looked at his picture

Jabu: moeskond

Caesar: Jabu get your guys to go pick him up before night falls and they should take him to that spot where I slid that fucker's throat named Jacob or something

Jabu nodded

.
. .
.

Thandi: im sorry Ledi I cant believe he did that to you

Naledi just wiped her tears off

Thandi: really like I cant believe Heath did that to you....how could he and on top of it he lied on his account saying you two are ok

Naledi: can...can we not talk about it please....the doctor said my BP is high and talking or thinking about those pictures and everything that happened makes me angry

Thandi nodded

Thandi: so what's up with bo mantjengelane mo monyako (the guards outside the door)

Naledi just shrug her shoulders....she didn't want Thandi asking her questions she cant answer or for her to get involved in her marital problems cause she's Heath's cousin and also her best friend at the same time so she doesn't want her to be caught between a rock and a hard place

Naledi: so how are my girls?

Thandi: they miss you?

she sighed

Naledi: I miss them too....can you bring them along tomorrow

Thandi: of course...Ledi o tlo ba shap mara?(are you going to be ok?)

Naledi sighed

Naledi: I have to be Thandi I mean i should be used to being hurt by now and i have kids that need me more than I need to mend my broken heart so I have to be strong for them

***Thandi just went closer to her and she hugged her and Naledi just sobbed painfully while

Thandi's own tears ran down her cheeks***

Thandi: go tlo loka Naledi o tlo bona go tlo loka (all will be well Naledi you'll see all will be well)

***she said with a breaking voice..... Well after Thandi left Naledi's father walked in her ward and found her staring into space ***

James: can I come in?

she quickly looked at the door and when her eyes landed on her father they filled with tears

Naledi: ple....please hold me dad please

she said with a breaking voice with tears now running down her cheeks and her bottom lip trembling and James rushed to her and he sat at the edge of her bed and held her tight as she sobbed painfully

James: daddy is here baby now let it all out....all the pain and hurt you are feeling just let it all out

he said rubbing her back and she just continued to sob painfully on his chest

65

INSERT.....65

.

.
.
NARRATED

*** Jabu dragged Stan from the boot of a car all the way to where Heath Mat and Diego where and he pushed him to the ground and he took off the black bag that covered his head and when the bright car lights hit his face he closed them quickly looking away...then he slowly opened them turning his head and he looked up and when his eyes landed on Heath they popped out***

Stand: you!

he said frowning

Caesar: mmmh me

then he chuckled

Caesar: mmm I must say im disappointed I thought you'd be tougher to find but nah...this fucker used his own car to a mission

Diego and Mat laughed

Stan: do you fucken know who I am now release me this instant

Heath slapped him hard across his face and he fell on the ground

Caesar: get up!

and Stan laughed as he was still on the ground and Heath or rather Caesar waited for him to finish

Caesar: you done?

Stan: oooh man you are dead you hear me dead!

Heath chuckled

Caesar: ok but one question though.....do you perhaps know of thee mighty Caesar or heard of him before

Stan: mxm come on no one knows who he really is and guess what I found out you also call your weak ass Caesar too

then he chuckled

Stan: you know I wonder if he appreciates you using the same street name as him

Jabu just laughed

Jabu: well you are looking at thee mighty Caesar bari ke wena (you fool) and you just threatened him with death jou moeskond

Stan's face fell and fear was now visible on his face

Stan: wh...what?

Caesar: great...now that is out of the way lets get down to business shall we

then he went to the car and came back with a jug filled with water mixed with the ashes and he stood in front of Stan who was now kneeling on the ground looking frightened

Caesar: guys hold him still

Mat and Diego did and Heath got closer to him

Caesar: open up

Stan: fu..fuck you man!

*** he said with a shaky voice and Heath moved back a bit looking at him with a raised eyebrow then he frowned***

Caesar: I hate repeating myself man cause I would hate to torture you before killing you like I did with Jacob whom im sure his soul still roams around this spot as I speak

Stan swallowed hard looking around

Caesar: now drink up

Stan: what...what's in that?

Heath took out his gun and shot Stan on his thigh and Stan screamed out loud as pain ran from his wounded thigh to the rest of his body

Caesar: I said drink up

he said that through his teeth looking scary

Stan: fuck....ok ok look can we talk i...

Heath interrupted him by shooting him again on his other thigh ad he screamed again

Caesar: im waiting man

Stan: shit...ooh fuck....ok ok I'll drink...I'll drink

he said crying and Heath helped him drink the liquid until he finished it all with Mat Jabu and Diego making disgusted faces

Caesar: good now that her ashes are safely discarded then we can get down to some real business before you bleed out to death

Stan's eyes popped out

Stan: wh...what?

Diego: oye estúpido (hey stupid) you just drank some bitch's ashes mixed with water puta (bitch)

then they laughed except for Heath then Stan looked at Heath with a disgusted look on his face and he threw up on the ground and the guys laughed some more

Caesar: ok.... now tell me who's after me

*** Stan didn't say anything he was just coughing and making sound of someone who was vomiting but nothing was coming out this time....then the chilled out Heath or rather Caesar shot him again on his left thigh and he screamed with Mat and Diego still holding him***

Caesar: didn't I say I hate repeating myself....now answer me who is after me?

Stan: look man Im sorry ok...im sorry

he said crying and Heath shot him again on his other thigh and he screamed some more feeling weaker by the second since he was losing a lot of blood

Caesar: give me a name Stan

he said pacing around slowly in front of Stan

Stan: look man im...I was only doing what I was told ok

Caesar: look its either your boss or your family cause I can see you want me to force it out of you.....now which one will it be?

Stan: ple....please leave my family out of this

Caesar: you give me a name and I won't involve them it's as easy as that

Stan swallowed hard getting weaker

Stan: his real name is Pule

Jabu: who the fuck is that?

Stan: he blames you for what happened to his new found daughter

Caesar: which new found daughter?

Stan: Le..Lerato your ex

Heath looked at Jabu with a raised eyebrow

Jabu: Amen!

Heath chuckled shaking his head

Caesar: wow

Jabu: so sfebe sele se shaping James ka hands-ball heh?(so that bitch made James to father children that are not his?)

Caesar: what about Katlego?

Stan: she's also his daughter but they don't know yet

Caesar: ok...now tell me who send her those pictures?

Stan: Pu...Pule did

Caesar: mmmmh ok... anything else I should know Stanley?

he shook his head no

Diego: wait what about the cops?

Stan: he...he...he has friends in the police department

Caesar: figured as much

then he put his gun away and he took out a pocket knife and he knelt in front of him and he breathed out heavily then a creepy smirk emerged on his face

Caesar: rule number one when you go after someone is...never go after someone you haven't done some serious background check on ok

Stan: please man im sorry

Caesar: N'ogbo gi ozo i ga - anopu ndu na nchikota ndu na – eme ka o ghara idi gi (in your next life stay away from gangster life cause it's just not for you)

*** he said to him looking at him with a scary look now even though he knew Stan couldn't understand him then he held the back of his head and stabbed him on his lower abdomen multiples times while looking straight into Stan's eyes then he pulled the knife out and he got up and stabbed him on top of his head and he pulled the knife out again and the guys let him fall on the ground and Jabu gave Heath a computer typed A4 letter with bold letters and Heath put the paper on top of Stan and he stabbed the knife and it went through the paper to his body and he left it there and the letter said;

“Dear whomever you are that send this weak fucker after me

Know that im coming for you with guns blazing so you better run and never look back.

TICK TOCK TICK TOCK! ”***

Caesar: good now let's go I need a shower...damn

he said taking out a handkerchief in his pocket and he wiped the blood off his face and he also took off his bloodied gloves off

.
. .

****BACK IN KZN****

Ray: how are you feeling now?

she shrug her shoulders and he sighed

Ray: can you do me a favor?

She nodded

Ray: can you please not stress my flower already my boy has been through a...traumatizing experience so any more stress is not good for him Biko

she sighed and closed her eyes a bit then she opened them

Mbali: I just...cant believe he's gone Ray he meant the world to me

she said and a sob escaped her mouth and Ray held her tight

Ray: its ok baby....its ok

Mbali: he's even buried and I wasn't even there to pay my last respect to him

Ray: look once you are discharged from here we will go to his grave and you'll go see his final resting place ok

she nodded and wiped her tears off and she moved her head from his chest sniffing

Mbali: I wonder how baba is taking all this....they were more like twins cause they were always together....he's always been there and he was also an amazing grandfather Ray

Ray: don't worry about your grandfather im sure your grandmother is making sure he's ok...if you know what I mean

*** he said wiggling his eyebrows at her and Mbali frowned then it clicked to her what he actually means and she made a disgusted face***

Mbali: EEW SIS MAN RAY!

Ray laughed and she ended up joining him

Mbali: how can you even say that ?

Ray continued to laugh

Ray: what? how the hell do you think your father was conceived

she hit his shoulder and he continued to laugh

Mbali: mxm

then she laughed and Ray smiled

Ray: and I made her majesty laugh...am I good or am I good?

she giggled then he stole a kiss on her lips and she blushed

Ray: I love you ok

she nodded

Mbali: I love you too

then he sighed

Ray: look i... have to go back to Joburg tomorrow

she frowned

Mbali: what....how can you leave Ray when you said we will go back together

she said looking hurt

Ray: can you let me finish first before you start stressing please

she kept quiet and sulked

Ray: look my brother Heath just lost his son and now he was drugged and nasty pictures of him were taken of him with some woman when he was out of it and posted on Facebook and his wife saw them and now she's threatening to leave him they even tried to set him up for murder....someone is after him my flower and his head is all over the place

Sponsored

he's not thinking straight....he needs me Mbali

he said that and clenched his jaws

Mbali: ooh.. my... God

Ray kissed her forehead

Ray: I need to be there for him my flower so I need you to understand please

Mbali: ofcourse Ray he's family and when it comes to family you drop everything and be there for them so don't worry I understand even though I'll miss you

he looked at her shocked

Mbali: what?

***he smiled ***

Ray: you just keep shocking me my flower and in a good way I must add

she smiled looking shy all of a sudden

Mbali: you lucky I was raised by a family of gangsters in suits which made me "understand" certain things or else mmmh I don't know

he chuckled and perked her lips

Ray: im lucky in deed

Mbali: so when are you coming back

Ray: late Sunday....my father his new wife and little brother are also coming

she nodded

Mbali: ok

Ray: you sure you ok with me leaving?

she nodded

Mbali: like I said he's family Ray and im sure he'll also drop everything and be there for you in your time of need

he smirked impressed by her

Ray: and she makes me fall even deeper for her

she laughed

Mbali: Ray?

Ray: my flower

Mbali: find whoever did that to your brother and send a message to others so they never mess with your family again

he looked at her intensely

Mbali: I cant even imagine what I would be going through if the same thing happened to you and I saw pictures of you naked with another woman on social media so I can't imagine what his wife is going through and she just lost a baby on top of that Ray so make whoever did that pay

she said with a serious but also emotional look on her face and Ray kissed her forehead

Ray: you were definitely made for me my flower

he said that proudly

.
. .
.

*** The following day he woke up and sat at the edge of the bed thinking hard about everything with his head aching then he took his phone and dialed Jabu's numbers***

Jabu: Caesar?

Heath: nah it's me bros

he said with a low tone and Jabu sighed

Heath: I can remember some of the things he did but.... did he fuck up too much?

Jabu: nah he actually behaved this time around....well I think

Heath sighed

Heath: fuck I hope he did man cause I can't have Naledi despise me even more

Jabu: well....he went to see her and lke I don't know if you remember though... and I don't know what he said to her

Heath: WHAT?

Jabu: yeah man even though he said Naledi is gonna be fine "whatever that meant" still I don't truly trust his word Mshikaro

the line went quiet a bit then he spoke

Caesar: really Jabu?

Jabu heard the change of his voice

Jabu: hai voetsek Caesar man....now I can't even gossip with my brother in peace heh?

Caesar: just because I have been "behaving" doesn't mean I still cant remind you who the fuck I really am

he said with a cold voice and Jabu sighed

Jabu: I hear you now bring Heath back I need to talk to him.....and Caesar?

Caesar: what?

Jabu: marete a gao!

***Caesar chuckled and the line went quiet a bit ***

Heath: hello.... bros?

Jabu sighed

Heath: he took over again?

Jabu: yeah

Heath: shit!

Jabu: its like you are no longer in control Mshikaro

Heath sighed

Heath: it looks like it.....my mind is all messed up Javas im terrified that Naledi might leave me and also that my son might not make it and on top of it gogo said im bewitched

Jabu: what?

Heath: yeah and now this shit happened....how am I gonna face Naledi now

Jabu: well Caesar did and he said he's going there to do damage control so lets hope he didn't mess things up some more

Heath: yeah....anyway I need you to take me to the best traditional healer around I need help man

Jabu: its ok sa wara (don't worry) I'll take you to the one that I go to when I need help

Heath: ok

then he sighed

Heath: I need to go pass the hospital and see if he did damage control or messed things up further more

Jabu: ok call me when you leave the hospital then

Heath: sho

then they ended the call and Jabu dialed Ray's numbers

Ray: Jabs

Jabu: its bad big Ray...it's really bad

Ray: I know Mat filled me up on what happened

Jabu: well im not talking about him being set up im talking about Caesar

Ray: Mat told me about him too

Jabu: well I don't think Mshikaro is in the right state of mind to tame him right now we were just talking Mshikaro and I and he just took over just like that

Ray: shit!!....look im coming back today and we will find a way to deal with everything

Jabu: ok shap

they ended the call and Jabu brushed his head roughly

.
. .
. .

Well after the call Heath sighed rubbing his face and that feeling of annoyance and anger towards Naledi was still there but he told himself he was gonna fight it back when he goes to the hospital and he also hoped to get help from Jabu's sangoma (traditional healer)... right then the intercom rang and he sighed and wore his shoes and then he went downstairs

Heath: who is it?

James: James Moeketsi

he sighed and opened the gate for him and he went to the door and opened it...he watched him drive in and get out of the car then he walked towards him with a displeased look on his face

James: im sure you know why im here

Heath: yeah come in

he made way for him and they went to sit down

James: I saw the pictures.... I thought you said you loved my daughter more than you loved yourself

he said with an angry voice

Heath: that's true

James: then why the fuck did you break her like that

Heath sighed heavily....everything was becoming too heavy for him and he hated defending himself to people who judged him unfairly

Heath: it was a set up and Pule your wife's baby daddy is responsible cause he apparently blames me for her daughter's current condition as if im the one that shot her nx

he said getting up and he went to pour James and himself some whiskey and he gave him his own glass and he sat down and took a sip

James: Pu...Pule how?

Heath: apparently he knows about Lerato and Katlego being his and im his target for whatever reason...or maybe your wife told him the truth about their paternity and everything that happened and also spiced things up to make her useless daughter seem like the victim

James swallowed hard looking down as he couldn't believe this...he couldn't believe that Mapule met up with Pule and actually told him the truth just like that

James: I cant believe this....so the pictures?

Heath: I went to a bar to drown my sorrows and I was drugged and the girl I was seen with well I found her in my car boot dead and later I found out about some pictures of me and the girl naked posted on Facebook and Naledi saw them....wait you on Facebook too?

James: no Katlego send me those pictures she said she found them on Facebook

Heath chuckled while shaking his head

Heath: she's the one that posted them tagging Naledi and i...that's how Naledi saw them and Pule is the one that send them to her and I guess she saw an opportunity to break Naledi more than she already is and she took it with both hands and now we are here

James clenched his jaws with his hands shaking with anger his eyes were even becoming red

Heath: im glad this is what they did to me instead of physically hurting Naledi and my kids even though Lerato killed my son....i mean now its clear they have been tailing me and planning my downfall it could have been worse man it could have been worse so despite everything that happened im glad Naledi Lesedi Omphile and Ike are ok

James: she's broken Heath

Heath rubbed his eyes

Heath: after all this is over im gonna fix things between us even if it's the last thing I do before I die....she's my life and her leaving me is not an option

James nodded with a heavy heart

James: I swear on my mother's grave that bastard Pule will pay for making my daughter cry

Heath: look just be there for Naledi and leave Pule to me....that bastard doesn't know what im capable of and believe me when I say he'll curse the day he fucked your wife and ended up conceiving those two whores Lerato and Katlego

James just gulped down his drink with his head all over the place

James: what about Lerato and reporting her to the police for what she did

Heath: we have no business with the police man....in my family we handle shit our selves

James nodded and he sighed.... Well after some time and James left and Heath went to shower and he then left the house going straight to the hospital

INSERT.....66

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

He stood by the door watching her as she breast fed Ike and he smiled with his heart jumping with joy

Naledi: I can't believe im holding him in my arms right now

she said to the nurse

Nurse: well you better believe it mommy

she said smiling at Naledi and Ledi wiped her tears...she was breast feeding her son and it was an amazing sight to see that even Heath was getting emotional but he knew he shouldn't get closer to Ike because of what he did or rather what Caesar did to Stan so he didn't want any bad spirit to lurk around his son so he stood there and watched Naledi breastfeeding him until the nurse spotted him

Nurse: oooh Mr Owoh-Masden

she said smiling at him and Heath faked a smile....Naledi didn't even attempt to look at him

Nurse: ummm I'll give you three some privacy you'll call me when he's done feeding ok

Naledi: ok

the nurse walked to the door and Heath made way for her and she walked out and Heath leaned against the door frame

Heath: gosh I miss you Obim...I miss you so damn much

she didn't say anything

Heath: I wish I could hold you and even kiss the hell out of you right now

then he sighed

Heath: we should be mourning our boy's death together and also celebrate the fact that you and Ike are alive but more especially the fact that Ike is finally out of that thing and off those wires and tubes but shit happened and now we are here

Naledi: and whose fault is that

He clenched his jaws as what she just said made that annoyed and angry feeling he's been lately to escalate but he fought it off hard and he just kept quiet not answering her but it was forcing him to say something mean to her

Naledi: anyway since you wont answer me then please motho wa modimo give me heads up before you are arrested so I be ready

he chuckled not believing that she just said that to him and before he could say anything to her Caesar decided to take over as he could feel that whatever Heath was about to say was not gonna be good at all

Caesar: that's not a nice thing to say

Naledi: why are you even here Heath mmmmh cause you not even interested in seeing your son at close range so why are you here

she asked not even looking at him

Heath: well I thought I should come here to see my wife and son is that... wrong?

Naledi: you mean soon to be ex-wife...anyway you can see your son without talking to me so next time just do that ok

***Caesar chuckled ***

Caesar: yes maaam

he just said that to stop this argument from going further and Naledi swallowed hard cause she didn't think he will agree just like that

Caesar: well let me get going then...just take care of my son ok

then he walked out and Naledi's tears ran down her cheeks and she quickly wiped them off and she took her phone and dialed a number

James: Naledi

***she sniffed**

Naledi: ple...please come

she said with a low tone

James: its ok my baby im on my way ok

Naledi: ok

then they ended the call and she looked at her son and smiled not believing that she was actually holding him in her arms

Naledi: I wish your twin made it too and your daddy and I were good but hey mommy is not destined for happiness or even peace my boy let alone to be loved without getting extremely hurt in the process

she said with a sad voice and she looked at Bunke's wodden urn box and tears ran down her cheeks

.

.
.
In the car Caesar decided to go back to sleep and Heath took over and when he realized that he was now in the car he got extremely angry and he hit the steering wheel countless time shouting

Heath: NO..NO..NO..NO....WHY DID YOU DO THAT YOU BASTARD THAT WAS A SPECIAL MOMENT AND YOU DECIDED TO FUCKEN TAKE THAT AWAY FROM ME....WHY...HOW CAN YOU BE THIS HEARTLESS...I HAD EVERYTHING UNDER CONTROL YOU PIECE OF SHIT!

***he said hitting the steering wheel countless times then he rested his head on it as his mind went to Naledi and his son...how that should've been the most happiest moment of their lives that he would be holding his son in his arms now if it wasn't for Lerato and her shit Katlego the person who's bewitching him and their newly found father.....he got extremely angry to a point that he started feeling dizzy he then raised his head holding his head then he suddenly saw darkness and his head fell back on the steering wheel and he passed out...

After a few minutes he regained consciousness and he raised his head frowning and he looked around and he sighed then he started the car and drove out of the hospital***

Heath: you "called" for me and im out....now lets go have some fun mmmmh what do you say lover boy?

he said smirking.....Anyway as he was driving his phone rang and it was Jabu so he answered it

Heath: yah

*** and Jabu kept quiet a bit***

Jabu: Caesar?

Heath: really man do I sound like that show off bitch?

Jabu got confused instantly especially to the fact that the voice sounds like Heath's but it has an accent a Nigerian accent

Jabu: Mshikaro?

he asked still confused

Heath: ooh hell no I don't sound like that "Mr romantic" fool

Jabu swallowed hard realizing that this might be another one of Heath's multiple personalities

Heath: wow so you don't even remember me Javas mmmh Mr rotten mouth....you know I thought you would cause I once killed for you...how disappointing man

Jabu swallowed hard with his heart raising

Jabu: what do you mean by that?

Heath: that weak bastard that send that hitman after you jorr...come on!

Jabu: that was Caesar and not... whoever you are

Heath chuckled

Heath: wow im so hurt right now

***he said mimicking a woman's voice with his one hand on his chest then he chuckled**

Heath: wait let me get this straight....you think that mumu Caesar could do that to that man?

then he laughed

Heath: biko don make me laugh abeg

Jabu swallowed hard

Jabu: whe..where is Mshikaro....just let him go so I can talk to him

Heath: he's...somewhere safe so leave a message with me and I'll make sure he gets it

then he chuckled and he stopped

Heath: like for real chale....leave a message and I'll make sure he gets it

now he said with a serious tone

Jabu: look man just don't...

he interrupted him

Heath: the name is JEEPERS CREEPERS

then he laughed

Heath: im kidding but damn I always wanted to say that

he laughed some more

Heath: ok but on a serious note you can call me THE OBSERVER....cause "real" names are just overrated you know so since I like to "observe" things and decide if they are worth of me coming out to deal with them then I figured I call myself that....cleaver abi

***Jabu sighed cause he could tell this new personalities was cray cray upstairs and probably more dangerous than Caesar ***

Observer: so the message?

***Jabu swallowed hard**

Jabu: we are supposed to meet

Observer: ooh for him to get help...yes yes I remember....don't worry he'll make it but later around two

Jabu: where...where are you going?

Observer: somewhere you shouldn't follow me to....track me and we will have some serious problems so go see that beautiful girl of yours or go do something ummm productive until your Mshikaro calls you...don't test me man or else I'll ruin Heath's little family in a way that that beautiful mamiwota of his would hate him for real and I'll also make sure his kids hate him

Jabu: man come on don't....

he interrupted him

Observer: keep away and say nothing to that big brother of his or else you'll cremate his remaining baby boy too with Mr Romantic as the killer this time

then he dropped the call and sang along to Barry white's "practice what you preach" song that was playing on the radio

.
. .
. .

Mbali: you sound down baby what's wrong

Ray: it's nothing I can't handle my flower so don't worry

they were talking on the phone cause Ray called to tell her that he landed safely

Mbali: don't do that Ray please

Ray sighed

Ray: ok....look I had a chat with your father last night and I told him I'll like to send my people to your family to come and pay for your damages and dowry so my son wont be born out of wedlock and he blatantly refused

Mbali's eyes popped out

Mbali: you...you want to marry me Ray?

she asked with a low tone and Ray sighed

Ray: i love you Mbali and a lot and believe me if traditions and what nots weren't standing on my way when you get discharged from that hospital we would go straight to the magistrate court and get married...well after I proposed first that is.... but now your father said you still young and he'll only accept damages money only

Mbali: but he should've ask me first before he made that decision Ray

Ray: he says he knows what's best for you so now we have to wait until he thinks you are ready before I come pay for your dowry.....you know the worst part is your family is not some normal

family were I can just use money or even threaten them to allow me to wife you so I guess I have to be patient....lets just hope he won't wait until im 80 before he agreed for me to pay your dowry

Mbali sighed with a heavy heart

Mbali: I...i thought he accepted you Ray

she said with a sad tone and Ray sighed

Ray: come on my flower you promised not to stress my son...

Mbali: how can i not stress Ray when my own father doesn't want me to be happy....why can't he see that you are good for me and that you love me...we deserve each other Ray now why cant he see that

she said sobbing

Ray: my flower come on don't do this please you'll upset my boy.... and you need to understand that your father is just being protective and in a way I get him cause truth be told if you were my daughter I would make sure you start dating when you're 50 years and that's if I would still be alive to make sure

then he sighed

Ray: just give him time plus I asked your grandfather to talk to him

he lied just so she calms down

Mbali: but still Ray

Ray: Mbali you're about to be a mother so as a parent to be just put yourself in your father's shoes

she sighed

Mbali: I hear you but we both know why he said no its because of our age difference and the fact that you are also a gangster

she said with a sad tone and Ray sighed again cause Pops did make it clear that if it was up to him Mbali would even abort that baby that will be born with a demon and he would also make sure they even break up and that made him angry to a point that he nearly grabbed Pops by his collar ready to punch him but he stopped himself....Pops even said Ray doesn't deserve Mbali and he hoped that she leaves him voluntary when she finds out that he has a demon in him that he got cause he sold his soul to the devil and Ray just walked out of him to avoid saying or doing things he probably wouldn't even regret one bit

Ray: look please don't stress out ok cause nothing and no one will break us up my flower

he assured her

Mbali: you promise?

Ray: I promise my flower now stop stressing ok

Mbali: ok...I love you Ray

Ray: and I love you too... now rest and I'll call you later ok

Mbali: ok bye

Ray: bye

***then they ended the call and Ray sighed ***

Ruslan: we both know that's not what that old bastard said

Ray: yeah but she can't know that...but he was right though what if she leaves me when she finds out about the demons

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: and the worst part is we don't even know how the baby will be born and with what

Ray frowned and he turned to look at him briefly before he turned to look forward as he was driving

Ray: what do you mean by that?

Ruslan: man come on we don't know how Saint will come looking like he might be born with complete teeth

Sponsored

he might be born with complete teeth black demon eyes or even born with horns and a tail

Rays eyes popped out and Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: damn you should see your face right now

he continued to laugh and Ray pushed him and he laughed louder

Ray: fuck you man

he said chuckling

Ruslan: damn that was fun

he said wiping his tears off

Ray: wait you were kidding right?

Ruslan: yeah look in my visions I can't see his face but his body and his body is that of a normal kid but we both know how he will behave

***Ray sighed and nodded ***

Ray: yeah...you know I still can't believe that her father said he would have made Mbali to abort my son if it were up to him...his own grandson man

Ruslan: I know he's scared for his daughter but what he said is uncalled for man I can't believe he said that to you

Ray: I'll never forgive him for saying that man never!

*** he said with an angry voice then they drove in silence for some time.....soon they arrived at the hospital Ray told Ruslan that they will go past the hospital to see Naledi and Ike and he didn't have a problem....Anyway he parked the car and they got out and walked inside***

Ray: knock knock

He said opening the door slowly and when Naledi saw him she smiled widely and Ray walked in with Ruslan behind him

Ray: hey mommy

he said kissing her forehead

Naledi: hey Ramogolo (uncle)

Ray chuckled and Ruslan got closer to Naledi and he also kissed her forehead and she looked at Ray who was holding in a laugh with her eyes popped out then she smiled

Ruslan: hey mommy

Naledi: ummm hey

Ray chuckled

Ray: man come on you making her uncomfortable she doesn't even know you but you already kissing her forehead and calling her mommy

he said laughing and Ruslan showed him the middle finger

Ray: anyway Star this is my brother from another mother Ruslan and Ruu this is MY YOUNGER BROTHER'S WIFE Star

Ruslan showed him the middle finger again and Naledi and Ray laughed

Ruslan: its nice to finally meet you in person Belle (beautiful)

He said taking her hand and kissing the back off it

Ruslan: you truly are a star Belle (beautiful)...ohhh and Belle means beautiful

***Naledi giggled ***

Ray: hey lay off man she's my sister in law

Ruslan: lets ignore him and maybe he will disappear

Naledi giggled and Ruslan smiled....Ray was now next to the incubator looking at Ike with a smile on his face

Ray: when did they remove the tubes and wires?

Naledi: today

Ray: mmh he's gonna be out of here soon

Naledi: I even breast fed him for the first time today

she said with tears in her eyes and Ruslan squeezed her hand

Ruslan: you are one strong and highly favored woman Star and don't let anyone tell you otherwise I mean even witches and the devil himself know that so don't let anyone come between you and what is yours and what the universe and fate blessed you with

Naledi looked at him confused

Ray: what he's trying to say is stand by your husband and shame the devil and witches that would give anything to see the two of you apart

Naledi swallowed and she looked down

Ray: Star that husband of yours is guilty of being too relaxed and failing to protect you and your sons but with that girl he was really set up....someone is really out to ruin him and they are also using you in a way to break him further than he already is

she didn't say anything

Ruslan: don't let them win....Heath is your soulmate and nothing and no one will change that

Ray: but the decision to stay with him or leave him like your enemies want is all up to you

she swallowed hard

Ray: anyway lets stop stressing you up so tell me how are you feeling...concerning the stab wound and your C-section Stitches?

Naledi: ummm they are painful sometimes but they always give me pain medication when that happens

Ray: ok

then the door opened and Thandi walked in and when Ruslan saw her his eyes popped out with his mouth slightly opened

Thandi: hey hey good people

she said smiling then went to Naledi and kissed her cheek

Naledi: and wena why aren't you at work?

Thandi: I took a day off I had to go to Mpilo's school apparently my terrorist son decided to prank his teacher...imagine fela Ledi

they both laughed and she went to Ray and they hugged for some time and broke it

Thandi: hey big bro

Ray: hi little sis

***then they both laughed and she turned to Naledi ***

Naledi: don't tell me he was expelled or something

Thandi: Nah but yeses ke nyakile go mo trapa blaen (I almost beat him up) in front of his teacher I told him the only time I should be called to their school is when they are either sick or im told to come collect their reports or their awards and certificates

Naledi laughed and Ruslan cleared his throat

Ray: good you are back to reality

then he chuckled

Ray: anyway Thandi this is my brother from another mother Ruslan and Ruu....

Ruslan interrupted him by holding Thandi's hand and kissing the back of it

Ruslan: its really a pleasure to be of acquaintance Amor

Thandi smiled then she looked at Naledi and Ray who were holding in their laughs

Thandi: ummm ok

Ruslan: is it Thandie like Thandie Newton?

Thandi: well im more gorgeous than her if you haven't noticed Mr

she said flicking her invisible long hair and Naledi giggled

Thandi: and no its Thandi like Thandi Vilakazi soon to be Mashaba

Ruslan: well im sorry to bust your little bubble but you will soon be Thandi Monteiro...Mrs

Ruslan Mahamadou Monteiro

he said that with a serious face and Thandi swallowed hard

Thandi: ummm

that's all she managed to say and she pulled her hand from him slowly

Ray: Ruu quit it man you're making her uncomfortable

he said chuckling

Ruslan: Je Pense Que je Viens De Trouver Ma Femme Homme (I think I just found my wife man)

he said with a serious face on while staring at Thandi making her more uncomfortable

Ray: Arreter De Jouer A L'Homme Je Pense Que Vous Panique A Votre Visage Serieux (stop playing man I think you freaked her out with your serious face)

he said with a serious tone and Ruslan was still staring at Thandi

Ruslan: Je ne joue Pas de Rayons Elle Va Etre Ma Femme Et je suis Meme Pret A se Debarrasser De Toutes Mes Zombies Pour Elle (im not playing Ray she's going to be wife and im even prepared to get rid of all my zombies just for her)

he continued to talk with a serious tone still staring at Thandi and Ray could see he wasn't joking

Ray: Attendez Vous Etes Serieux? (wait are you serious?)

he asked frowning

Ruslan: Je suis tres Serieux! (im dead serious!)

Rays eyes popped out and he looked from Thandi to Ruslan and from Ruslan to Thandi

Ray: Merde! (shit!)

Naledi: umm guys English please hau

The guys didn't say anything and Ruslan was still staring at Thandi but now his jaws were clenched

.
. .
.

*** Katlego got out of her car and she locked it and went inside the yard....She got a message from her mother saying she should come home asap and since she called in sick at work she just drove here as quick as she could cause when she called her mother back she answered the call and she sounded distraught....well she felt embarrassed by the turn of events when "Heath" posted on his account calling her names and stuff so she wasn't ready to face people at work especially after people on Facebook called her a liar and all sorts of names for the pictures she posted after Heath posted on his own account....she feels like shit and she cant believe that everything just blew up to her face just like that....

Anyway she knocked and walked in from the back door since its the one they always use***

Katlego: MAMA?

she called out to her three times then Mapula answered

Mapula: im...im in my bedroom!

Katlego: ok!

*** she firstly took out bottled water from the fridge and she walked to her mother's bedroom and she opened the door and she saw her mother tied to a chair with blood coming out of her mouth and her face badly bruised***

Katlego: OOH MY GOD MAMA!

*** she dropped the bottle on the floor and she rushed to her and the door closed when she quickly turned she saw Heath locking it and putting the key inside his pocket***

Katlego: He...Heath what...

he interrupted her

Observer: nope im not him.....now give me your phone

Katlego: huh

Observer: im not Heath.... now sit down next to mommy and give me your phone

she stood there looking scared and her eyes landed on a butcher knife on his left hand

Observer: I said sit missy!

he said through his teeth and she went to sit on a chair that was next to her mother's looking scared and he indicated that she give him her phone and she did and he threw it hard on the floor and stepped on its screen with the heel of his shoe multiple times until the screen was totally shattered and he looked at a terrified Katlego

Observer: good now we can start....firstly tell me here....what demon possessed you to poke a sleeping bear mmmh?

she swallowed hard

Katlego: ple...please Heath im sorry...im really sorry I was stupid I shouldn't have posted those pictures on Facebook

she said with a shaky voice

Observer: is that your answer?

***tears ran down her cheeks then she looked at her mother and then at Heath ***

Mapula: please for...forgive her

***Katlego nodded repeatedly ***

Katlego: yes forgive me please

Observer: simple English and people still don't understand and im baffled cause it's one of the official languages in South Africa ai Chineke m (ai my God)

then he walked to them and Katlego cried

Katlego: don't hurt us please

*** she begged and he grabbed Mapula with her hair and he looked at Katlego***

Observer: I ask you simple questions and you give me direct answers ok

she quickly nodded and The Observer looked at Mapula

Observer: open up

she just cried

Mapula: please my boy don't do this

Observer: im not your boy.... now open up woman!

he said through his teeth and Mapula did and he held her tongue then he looked at Katlego

Observer: you scream or move from your seat and I'll also remove her eyeballs out ok

she nodded sobbing and Observer cut Mapule's tongue and blood oozed out and Katlego screamed

Katlego: NOO MAMA!

then observer quickly stabbed Katlego on her thigh and he pulled the knife out

Observer: shhh

*** he indicated that she shouldn't scream and she quickly put her hand on her mouth stopping herself from screaming***

Observer: listen here sweetie im a man of my word...when I say I'll do something know that I'll definitely do it now shush!

she cried with her hand covering her mouth

Observer: good now back to my "word"

he then plucked out Mapula's right eye and the next one followed with her screaming and she continued to bleed on her eyes too and Katlego continued to cry with her eyes closed and her hand still covering he mouth

Observer: good...now look at me sweety

***she slowly opened her eyes cause she didn't want him to tell her twice ***

Observer: now let's talk

he said smiling widely at her

Katlego: please

Observer: ah ah... no begging or you'll just make me mad

she just cried and as for Mapula she was busy moaning and making sounds of someone who's in serious pain

Observer: now tell me....why did you involve yourself into shit that didn't concern you?

she just cried and he held Mapula's right ear and he sliced it off and she screamed then he stabbed Katlego again on her thigh and she shut her eyes feeling pain and covered her mouth trying not to make noise

Observer: listen her woman....you scream I stab your daughter and your daughter screams or doesn't answer my questions and I cut you ok

he said looking from Katlego to Mapula

Observer: I said OK?

they nodded quickly

Observer: good now let me repeat that question again Katlego..... why did you involve yourself in shit that didn't concern you

Katlego: it...it was for...for my sister

Observer: ok but did your sister ask you to do or say all that shit for her

she shook her head no

Observer: now you see your stupidity has no boundaries mmmh

she just sobbed and he cut Mapula's other ear

Katlego: yes...yes.... please...yes

she quickly said but it was too late cause her mother's remaining ear was gone

Observer: oops you weren't quick enough...I hope that was a lesson learned

then he laughed and he stopped

Observer: now tell me...how should I end her life cause look at her she's in pain shame

***Katlego just shook her head sobbing with her hand on her mouth and Observer grabbed Mapula's finger and he cut it off with the knife and she moaned out loud with pain and Observer stabbed Katlego on her thigh again and she covered her mouth with her hand stopping herself from screaming ***

Observer: nc nc nc

he said shaking his head

Observer: you two know that i can do this all day right...i can just call Javas and tell him Mr Romantic wont be able to make it for their appointment and we can continue having fun until your souls depart from your bodies after your bodies give in

Katlego: ple...please don't kill her

Observer: Katlego...Katlego...i said I ask simple questions and you give direct answers you don't listen do you

*** he said getting upset then he grabbed Mapula's other finger and he cut it off and Mapula moaned out loud and he stabbed Katlego on her thigh again....the floor under them was bloody and Mapula was even turning pale from blood loss***

Observer: look at her Katlego only you can release her from all this pain she's feeling so now tell me how should I end her?

he said smiling at her and she looked at him sobbing and in pain....she could see that this guy looked like Heath but the accent and the psychotic behavior not to mention those soulless eyes of his made her ask herself who the hell is The observer and why does he look like Heath this much

67

INSERT.....67

.

.
.
NARRATED

He now stood in the middle of the room half naked admiring his “art work” of Katlego and Mapula’s blood all over the wall bed and floor...before killing them in a more gruesome way he took off his clothes and wore one of Mapula’s dresses so he doesn’t dirty his clothes with their blood... MMH YES HE DID GUYS!... then he went down to business. He then went to take Mapula’s phone and he unlocked it (Mapula told him her password before Katlego arrived) and he send Pule a distraught message pretending to be Mapula telling him that she’s scared cause Heath was here and he threatened her and her children and that he should come over (well Mapula confessed everything about Pule Lerato and Katlego’s paternity and everything she told Pule including all the lies she added on top of everything to make Pule’s anger to divert from her lies and betrayal to Heath)... anyway Pule decided to call her phone back

Observer: mxm why do this people like calling back mmmh...why mmmh?...why don’t they just send a message back nx

***he said looking at Mapula’s phone ring and when it stopped he send another message quickly and it read;

“I was in the kitchen washing the dishes when James called me telling me he’ll come take the rest of his things tomorrow when those scary guys budged in along with Heath and I dropped the phone in the water even though I got it out quickly and its working but I think the speaker is damaged and they broke Katlego’s phone when she tried to call the police”

then he send it and chuckled***

Observer: good

***then his phone beeped and the message read;

“ok stay put im coming”

And the Observer smiled widely***

Observer: good man...damn its easy and fun to lure fools in to their deaths damn

***then he chuckled and he send another message and it read;

“please hurry Katlego and I are scared what if they come back and the back door is broken so I cant even lock it”

He said the message chuckling***

Observer: damn other people out there are just stupid and gullible

***then a message came through and it read;

“go lock yourselves in your bedroom and I’ll just let myself in”

And Observer laughed***

Observer: and he falls for my trap mumu (fool)

then he send another message back saying “ok” and he went closer to the dead bodies and he sat in between them on the floor and he looked at the bloodied wall smiling

Observer: damn this is some good artwork don’t you think so mommy and daughter?

then he chuckled

Observer: oops sorry I forgot you can’t speak....but you can listen abi?

then he chuckled

Observer: I meant you can listen in the afterlife....if that makes sense..... aarg anyway I wanted to say in your next life make sure you mind your own business and never involve yourselves in shit that doesn’t involve ya’ll ok

then he got up

Observer: good im glad we had this talk....anyway let me go wait for daddy dearest and you two better keep quiet and not make noise ok

then he chuckled and walked out

Observer: im seriously losing my mind im talking to dead people now chai

and he continued to chuckle while shaking his head and he went to the kitchen and took another knife and waited

.
. .
.

Jabu watched as Ray called him for the second time and he decided to answer this time

Jabu: big Ray

***he said with a low tone**

Ray: Jabu where are you?

Jabu: my warehouse

Ray: ok im coming....oooh and where is Ezeh I've trying to get hold of him but his phone is off

he sighed again

Jabu: just come to the warehouse and I'll tell you what's going on

Ray: you sound offish man what's wrong?

Jabu sighed

Jabu: Mshikaro has another deadly personality man

Ray: wait what?

Jabu sighed again

Jabu: just come and I'll tell you everything

Ray: ok

then they ended the call

.
. .
.

***As the Observer was waiting while playing with a kitchen knife he heard a car park outside and he went to stand behind the kitchen door quietly and he waited...then he heard footsteps and someone talking and it sounded like he was talking on the phone and soon he heard the burglar bar open since it wasn't locked and the door handle moved and Observer let whomever it was to open the door and two man walked in....they scanned the kitchen briefly but not behind the door and they walked to the lounge while the third guy didn't walk in he was still on the phone and Observer quietly went to the lounge after the men and found them standing there waiting for whoever was on the phone outside then he quickly jumped on one of the guys and stabbed him on his lower back on his spine and the other guy turned pulling is gun out but Observer pulled the knife out of that guy's back and the guy fell on the floor and he quickly threw it to the other guy and it stabbed him on his left eye and he also fell down and he quickly rushed to the guy's gun and he took it and also took the gun from the guy he stabbed on the back and slid both their throats with the knife and rushed to the kitchen but stopped immediately when he heard the third person walking in and quickly went back to the lounge and he hid just behind a single couch with a cushion on him and he waited.....The third guy walked in with Observer peeping behind the couch and when the guy cursed taking out his own gun when he saw the two dead guys he came with on the floor with blood on their necks and also on

the floor Observer put a pillow on the mouth of the gun to make sure he minimizes the gun shot sound and shot the man on his left knee and the man groaned falling to the floor and Observer picked the kitchen knife that he put on the floor and quickly went to him and he took his gun and threw it towards the couches and he got on top of him and sat on his lower body and smiled at him***

Observer: hello....Pule right?

Pule's eyes were popped out looking at Heath or rather at the Observer

Pule: y...you!

Observer: nope Im one of his multiple personalities and the alpha one I must add

*** he said with his deep voice and he smiled again***

Pule: Fuck you! what did you do to Mapula and my daughter?

Observer laughed at him

Observer: you are very funny you know that...anyway do you think this dress looks good on me?

he asked with a raised eyebrow looking at Pule who was in excruciating pain

Pule: get the fuck off me you fucken faggot....get off me and tell me what you did to Mapula and my daughter

Observer frowned

Observer: that's not a nice thing to say man...do you know that word faggot is actually offensive to gay people

Pule: fuck you and your gay tendencies and get the fuck off me you bastard!

Observer: well for your info im not gay I in fact prefer a shaved pussy rather than a hairy ass hole “ and no offense to gay people”.... the thing is I just like your baby mamma's dress and I think it looks good on me but for calling me a faggot and actually saying that name you deserve this.....

*** he stabbed him on his shoulder and pulled the knife out and blood oozed out and before Pule can scream Observer covered his mouth with his hand that had bloodied gloves until he stopped***

Observer: anyway im send here to do damage control and to clean up fuckers like you who are after the owner of this body

Pule: fuck....just kill me and get it over and done with...kill me you bastard!

Observer shook his head

Observer: not yet mannot before you see your baby mama and daughter

he got up from him and rushed to the kitchen and closed and locked the burglar bars and the door and went back to Pule and found him trying to make a call he was sweating and in pain and the Observer quickly took the phone from him

Observer: nope no phone calls are allowed to be made here baby daddy

then threw it to the floor and stepped on its screen with Pule looking like he wants to cry

Observer: ok let's check for any hidden objects or phones on you baby daddy dearest ok

he searched him

Pule: look man let's talk about this and find common ground please....don't do this im begging you

Observer looked at him with a frown

Observer: told your daughter the same shit that she shouldn't beg me cause I hate it and she didn't listen so don't make the same mistake as she did man.... just don't ok

Pule just groaned with pain breathing heavily

Pule: ok then how much do you want then?

Observer: simple English and people still fail to understand again... Chineke m I give up ooo

he shook his head

Pule: come on man I'll give you any amount just don't kill me

Observer: aah didn't you say I should just kill you and get it over and done with....chai I respect pain ooo.... anyway any amount you say mmmh?

he nodded continuously

Pule: yes...yes just don't kill me....let me go and I'll pay you any amount

Observer: ok then how about a billion?

Pule's eyes popped out

Pule: come on man

Observer: a billion dollars and I let you live

he said with a smirk on his face

Pule: come on man be reasonable

Observer: who's holding a knife between me and you mmmh?

he said that raising his eyebrows

Observer: me! so what I say goes now what is it gonna be baby daddy

Tears ran down from the sides of Pule's face

Pule: man come on I don't have that kind of money

Observer: mxm mumu and you had the guts to set up Heath

Pule: im sorry okim sorry

Observer: and just so you know Heath is not the one that shot your bitch daughter and now you're dying for stupid shit just like your baby mama and other daughter....and guess what im gonna let that vegetable daughter of yours live so the three of you can watch her suffer in the afterlife and not have the power to do a damn thing to help her

Pule was now crying

Observer: you should have found ways to help her instead of doing what you did now look at yourself mmmh you gonna leave your wife and children all because you wanted to play hero to your other family.... mxm mumu

then he got up and went to stand next to his head

Observer: and quite frankly your wife and children are better off without your cheating lying and useless ass and I hope you have life insurance policy or they starve in your absence

then he pulled him by his shirt all the way to the passage and he opened the main bedroom and dragged him inside and when Pule saw the blood all over and the two dead bodies he cried shaking with Fear

Pule: Ma...Mapula....Katlego!

he called at them

Observer: they cant hear you baby daddy....i also tried talking to them

then he chuckled

Pule: you are sick man....you are fucken sick

Observer: yeah I think im coming down with flu

***then he faked a cough and busted out with laughter and Pule looked at him with nothing but complete horror on his face ***

Observer: you know i love art and that over there is raw art don't you think so?

he asked pointing at a wall stained by Mapula and Katlego's blood

Observer: ok never mind cause I think you're not into this kind of things but I must say its beauty at its best

then he rubbed his hands together and he got on top of Pule with his face now serious

Observer: you messed with the wrong one

Pule: please man....plea.....

he didn't finish his sentence because Observer started stabbing him over and over and over until he was tired and satisfied

.

.

.

as Jabu Ray and Ruslan were sitting there waiting for Heath to call Jabu's phone rang and it was him so he looked at Ray then he answered

Jabu: Mshikaro

Heath: bros where are you?

he said with a low tone and Jabu sighed

Jabu: at my warehouse wena o vaar? (where are you?)

Heath: at the parking lot of the hospital

Jabu frowned looking at Ray

Jabu: ummm ok come to the warehouse

Heath: bros I smell of a woman's shower gel and its not Naledi's and there's also this distinct smell of blood that is stuck on my nose and its making me nauseas but I don't know where its coming from

Jabu sighed

Jabu: just come to the warehouse so we can go see that sangoma

Heath: ok

then they ended the call and Jabu rubbed his head roughly

Jabu: he needs help man

Ruslan: don't worry Ray will help him before you two go to that sa...something of yours

Jabu frowned at him.....Well after some time Heath drove in and he parked his car and got out then he walked in and was surprised to see Ray

Heath: big Ray

Ray got up and he walked to Heath then out of the blue he roughly grabbed him by his neck surprising Heath and Jabu

Jabu: Ray what the fuck are you doing man?

he asked getting up but Ruslan stopped him

Ruslan: don't get involved man.....i told you he's gonna help him now let him help him

Jabu looked at Ruslan with an angry look

Jabu: hey voetsek wena...o batlo reng entlek? (hey piss off man...what are you trying to say?)

Ruslan: I repeat....don't get involved or you'll lose a tooth don't say I didn't warn you

Heath: bros what...what are you doing?

Ray: tell him to come out and face me man to man!

he said with an angry look on his face and a hard tone

Heath: huh?

he said confused

Ray: I SAID TELL HIM TO COME OUT AND FACE ME NOW!

Heath: big Ray I don't know what...

he interrupted him

Ray: observer or whatever the fuck your name is come out and face me

Heath: Ray look I don't...

Ray interrupted him by tripping him and Heath fell on the floor with his back but not too hard with Ray's hand still on his neck and Ray put his knee on Heath's chest and he pulled out his gun from his lower back and pointed it on Heath's forehead

Ray: come out now you fucken bastard.....you had the fucken balls to threaten my brother's wife and children abi now come and face me and let me show you what I do to fuckers like you

Heath looked at his elder brother with shock and fear on his face

Ray: I said take over and face me motherfucker

then he took the gun off safety mode and shot on the floor next to Heath's face and Heath shut his eyes while Jabu jumped rushing to them but Ruslan grabbed his arm and pulled him back

Ruslan: I said stay out of it!

he said through his teeth

Ray: im waiting you bitch!

Heath blinked a few times and a creepy smile emerged on his face and he looked at Ray with dark eyes

Observer: get the fuck of me!

Ray: Observer right?

Observer: in the flesh

then Ray hit Heath or rather the Observer with his gun on his face and the Observer laughed spitting out blood

Observer: you do know this is your brother's body you're about to damage right

Ray: if you think I wont hurt Heath just to get to you for threatening our family then you clearly don't know me.....i'd rather kill him so you'll also be gone to protect Naledi and her kids

Observer's face fell

Observer: you wouldn't

Ray: Ruslan wouldn't i?

Ruslan: within a heartbeat brother

Ray: so threaten my family in any way ever again and I'll end you the same way Ezech would end me for threatening our family anyway..... you sabi?

Observer didn't say anything

Ray: if you thought you'd do as you please just because you are one of my brother's multiple personalities then you fucken got it all wrong.....now if you ever threaten any of our family members or make Ezech do shit he doesn't wanna do I'll fucken end you boy....I'll end you and mourn my

brother's death you hear me....I'll fucken end you.... now go back to whatever hole you were hiding in and stay there!

He said with a scary voice with his voice a bit deep and scary....and his eyes were darker and it was as if he was staring right into Heath's soul and Observer swallowed hard cause he could tell that Ray wasn't playing and he felt uneasy with him especially his eyes they were staring at him as if he was looking straight into his soul or rather Heath's soul which was creepy to him

Ray: NOW! BEFORE I LOSE MY COOL

He blinked a couple of times then Heath looked at his brother with horror

Heath: Bi...Big Ray

Ray: you back or is it still that piece of shit Observer

Heath swallowed hard

Heath: who...who is Observer?

then Ray got off him and helped him up and put his gun back on safety mode and he went to pour himself a drink and Jabu went to Heath

Jabu: you good?

***He nodded wiping his blood off ***

Heath: what happened and why did you point a gun at me Ray

he asked getting angry

Ray: you have another personality besides Caesar and he threatened Naledi and your kids if Jabu told me about him

Heath: wait what?

he asked confused and Jabu nodded

Jabu: and he's crazy man.....really crazy.....he said he'll kill Ike and make Naledi and the girls hate you if I told Big Ray about him

Heath's eyes popped out as he looked at Jabu

Heath: fuck....

Jabu: he said he's the one that killed that fool that send a hitman after me and it was not Caesar

Heath went to sit down feeling dizzy

Heath: that means the smell of blood that is stuck on my nostrils means he did something bad to someone

Jabu: yeah cause he said I shouldn't follow him or track him

Heath: but you can track my car right to find out where I went

then Ruslan held Heath's shoulder facing away from Jabu

Ruslan: dont move

then he started saying words in a foreign language and his eyeballs turned all white and all he could see is blood and lots of blood and dead bodies and fire.....he then blinked a couple of times and his eyeballs went back to normal

Ruslan: he definitely killed a couple of people and probably burned them too

Jabu: how do you know that?

Ruslan: I just know man so leave it at that

Ray: check your tracking app and find out where your car was Ezeh

***Heath took out his phone and he logged into the app ***

Heath: shit...shit...shit

Jabu: what?

he looked at Jabu

Heath: I went to the Moeketsi's neighborhood

Jabu: fuck

Ray: who's that?

Jabu: Lerato's home

Ray: shit....ok Jabs take him to your traditional healer and Ruslan and I will go see what's happening at the possible crime scene

Jabu: sho.....a re vaiye Mshikaro(lets go Mshikaro)

Ray: send me the address

Heath: ok

Ruslan: bros

he said to Jabu and he stopped

Ruslan: ummm later we need to talk

Jabu frowned asking himself what could they possibly talk about

Jabu: talk about what man?

Ruslan: your sister or is it cousin.....Thandi like Thandi Vilakazi and not like Thandie Newton

Jabu frowned and Ray chuckled

Ray: really Ruu

Ruslan: what? I told you she's gonna be my wife and you know when im playing and when im not man

Jabu: ok...ok...ok o re Thandi is gonna be your what?

Ray: just go Jabs we will discuss it later now Ezeh need to be cleansed man

Ruslan: remind me later and we will continue with that Thandi conversation I just need to know more about her that's all and the rest I'll take care of it

Heath: Big Ray?

Ray: he's a brother from another mother and his name is Ruslan.....he's ummm special so ignore him man he didn't drink his medication just go and don't forget to call when you are done

Ruslan: fuck you puta!

Ray chuckled and Jabu and Heath walked out still confused by Ruslan's words

Ray: really man?

***he asked with a frown ***

Ruslan: lets go

Ray: you're not gonna ignore me when im talking to you

Ruslan: fuck you....im trying to get to know my soon to be wife and you're busy telling them I didn't take my medication

Ray: you clearly don't know how protective those two are of Thandi....first of all Thandi's man paid for her dowry and they have two kids together

Ruslan: so?

Ray: so?...so? really man?

Ruslan: look man Alicia Keys stole Swizz Beatz or whatever his name is from his then wife what will stop me from taking Thandi Vilakazi from some dickhead who probably doesn't even deserve her mmmmh?

Ray raised his hand up in defeat

Ray: I give up....i fucken give up....now let's go

he walked out and Ruslan followed him

Ruslan: you better find ways to help me make her mine or I'll turn that bastard into a mad man

Ray: fuck you..... Im no gonna do that shit

Ruslan: ok then mad man it is

Ray chuckled

Ray: just so you know....that man is from Limpopo

Ruslan: so?

Ray: just saying

he got inside the car and Ruslan also got inside and they drove out

Ruslan: what is Li....whatever you said?

Ray: it's a province here in South Africa

Ruslan: ok what's so special about it

Ray chuckled

Ray: mmmmh you'll soon find out if you make James mad

Ruslan: well im only scared of God and La Parca

Ray chuckled and he briefly looked at Ruslan

Ray: trust you to say that...like for real man?

then they both laughed

.

.

.

*** Pops Jay and Snakes walked into her room and found her staring into space...they brought goodies for her ***

Pops: hey

he said kissing her forehead and she jumped a bit snapping out of it and faked a smile when she saw them but Snakes saw it

Snakes: what's wrong my princess?

Mbali: nothing

Snakes: i know you Princess and I can see something is bothering you

Jay: maybe she's worried about varsity I mean she hasn't been attending for some time now and soon exams will start

she closed her eyes for a bit cause with everything that's been going on she totally forgot about it

Pops: mmmmh and when I was mad when I found out she's pregnant im sure she thought I was overreacting and now she's about to break another promise she made to me nx

Snakes: Pops come on

Mbali: im behind with my studies because of you all and your enemies don't forget that!

she snapped at Pops and he raised an eyebrow at her and she looked away

Pops: I'll let you snapping at me slide by blaming your hormones but never make a mistake of repeating that shit again you hear me....im not the one that made you pregnant so watch how you speak to me Mbali!

he said that with a stern voice and Mbali swallowed hard with tears filling her eyes

Snakes: Pops come on just take it easy

Mbali: why do you hate Ray this much dad mmmmh? I mean all your daughter in laws are way younger than your sons and you're ok with that now why can't you be ok with Ray and i?

Jay: Mbali assomblief don't start

Mbali: no bhuti I want to know why he's being a hypocrite when it comes to Ray and i

Pops: what did you call me?

Mbali: a hypocrite!

Jay: MBALI!

Mbali: no bhuti im sick and tired of all this....i love Ray and there's nothing you can do about it

Pops chuckled

Snakes: ENOUGH MBALI MAN!

she kept quiet with tears running down her cheeks

Pops: you had the rotten nerve to call me hypocrite because of a dick....me your father a hypocrite?

Mbali: I know that he came to you to ask for my hand in marriage and your mean response to him

Pops: SO?...MMM SO THAT GIVES YOU A REASON TO DISRESPECT ME MBALENHLE?

she didn't say anything she just sobbed

Pops: IM YOUR FUCKEN FATHER.....I RAISED YOU AND TODAY YOU CALL ME A FUCKEN HYPOCRITE BECAUSE OF AN OLD DICK....UNG'JWAELA KABI WENA UFUNA INDUKU NJE (your testing me and I'll give you a beating)

Snakes: pops calm down please this is....

Pops interrupted him

Pops: I will not be disrespected by my own daughter whom I used to change nappies and wiped amafinyila akhe (her mucus)....NEVER!....now listen to me girly if you ever disrespect me like that I'll forget that you're my daughter and this time you'll wake up in ICU you hear me?

instead of crying Mbali felt anger from the pit of her stomach and she started breathing heavily

Mbali: get.... out

Jay: askies?

Mbali: you heard me I said get out

Jay and Pops chuckled

Snakes: princess look...

Mbali interrupted him

Mbali: bhuti take your father and your brother and leave my room

Pops: you're asking me your father out Mbalenhle?

Mbali: I didn't stutter did i?

Snake's eyes popped out

Pops: what did you just say?

he said going closer to the bed and that made Mbali more angry

Mbali: ngithe phumani....why are you still here....phumani! (I said leave...why are you still here...leave!)

she said shouting and Snakes eyes popped out when his mind went to what he saw in that house

Snakes: ummm I...i think we should leave

Jay: weeh Mbalenhle ungenwe yini wena mmmmh?(what's gotten into you mmmmh?) is that how you talk to us now?

he asked with an angry voice

Mbali: GET OUT....PHUMANI....JUST GET THE HELL OUT!

***she said getting out of bed ***

Snakes: princess calm down think of the baby please

Mbali: does your father think about my baby whenever he insults my baby's father...does he think about my baby when he hates on Ray and he knows very well that stresses me out

Pops: ENOUGH!

he roared and Mbali anger escalated and she grabbed the glass jug that was full of water and threw it at Pops but luckily he ducked and it fell on the floor and shattered with water spilling all over the floor

Mbali: I SAID GET OUT!

she now said with an angry deep voice and Snakes walked out immediately

Mbali: im warning you for the last time....get out of here and stay out!

she said looking from Pops to Jay and Jay swallowed hard when he saw her red eyes and veins popping on her forehead

Jay: look its...its fine we will leave just calm down please

she didn't say anything she just looked at Pops with red eyes her body especially her hands were shaking with rage

Jay: Pops lets go

he didn't move he just stared at Mbali with his jaws clenched and pain visible on his eyes then Jay pulled him towards the door and they walked out....then Mbali blinked a couple of times and she grabbed her phone with tears now running down her cheeks and she dialed Ray's numbers

Ray: my flower look I cant...

he stopped talking when he heard her sniff

Ray: Mbali whats wrong....why are you crying...who made you cry?

he said getting walked up and she just cried

Ray: baby...my love....my flower what's wrong talk to me please why are you crying....who made you cry....tell me and I'll deal with them.....wait is it the baby...shit....ok let me call your grandfather

she calmed down a bit

Mbali: it happened again Ray....i disrespected my father and brothers and i...and I even threw a jug full of water at dad....i don't know what's wrong with me Ray...i

he sighed and interrupted her

Ray: what did they say or do to you that made you do that?

she sniffed

Mbali: he hates you Ray.....he said mean things about you and that got me angry and I called him a hypocrite and he threatened me then that anger took over again

she said and cried

Ray: hey listen to me.... it was wrong disrespecting your father like that but he also provoked you....he knows you're pregnant and hormonal so he shouldn't have said anything that might make you angry

he clenched his jaws thinking that maybe Pops wants Mbali to miscarry his child on purpose that's why he got her this upset cause he told him that if it where up to him he would have forced Mbali to abort that demon child....he rubbed his head frustrated pacing up and down trying to calm himself down

Ray: my flower listen to me....you need to calm down ok remember when you are upset our son gets upset too so biko calm down

she sniffed

Mbali: o...ok

he breathed out loud

Ray: you calm?

she nodded as if he could see her

Ray: Mbali?

Mbali: ye...yes im calm

Ray: good now tell me.....why did I get a kick in the balls while you just threw a jug of water at them mmh?

she wiped her tears

Ray: it's not fair....you should have kicked their balls too

she giggled with tears in her eyes and he felt relief that she was now giggling instead of crying

Ray: especially Jay Mr loud mouth

she giggled again and Ray chuckled even though deep down he was fuming with anger then she kept quiet

Mbali: Ray

Ray: my beautiful flower

Mbali: im scared

he sighed

Ray: how can you be scared when you have me as your man and baby daddy mmmmh?

she smiled

Mbali: what...what if I have anger issues that I cant control

Ray: then we will both have anger issues we both cant control

she giggled

Mbali: Ray im serious

Ray: and im not?... look my flower we ride together and we die together and no one including your father will break us up I thought I told you that

she sighed wiping her face

Ray: now do me a favor....rest so my boy can rest too and if you feel like its hard to calm down then do that Yoga thing I once walked in on you doing.... you said it calms you down right?

Mbali: yeah

she said with a low voice

Ray: good now do it if you have to as long as it will make you and my boy calm ok

Mbali: ok

Ray: I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too

Ray: I'll call you in two hours' time to check on you and you better be calm

Mbali: ok

Ray: you promise

she sighed

Mbali: I promise

Ray: good bye for now

she sighed again

Mbali: bye for now

then they ended the call and Mbali's tears ran down her cheeks then the door opened and a nurse walked in

Ray: FUCKEN BASTARD....ASSHOLE....PUTA....FUCK HIM....FUCCK HIM!

he said kicking the left front wheel of his car repeatedly

Ruslan: what's wrong Ray?

he asked concerned

Ray: I SWEAR THAT OLD FOOL WANTS TO KILL MY SON....HE WANTS TO KILL MY SON AND I SWEAR I'LL BRING HELL TO HIM IF ANYTHING HAPPENS TO EITHER MBALI OR MY SON I SWEAR ON MY DEAD TWIN I'LL SHOW HIM HELL NX!

68

INSERT.....68

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

On their way there was silence in the car as Jabu was driving.... the radio station that they were listening to was playing old school jams and Jabu was nodding to them while Heath was quietly staring into space

Jabu: o shap Mshikaro? (are you ok)

Heath nodded and Jabu sighed

Jabu: sa wara go tlo loka mfowethu Modimo a se stlaela and ga robala (don't worry all will be well God is not a fool and he's not asleep)

Heath just clenched his jaws and silence filled the car for some time until Heath spoke

Heath: park on the side of the road im not feeling well

and Jabu didn't catch on his sudden change of tone*

Jabu: heh?...umm ok ema nyana o sa tlhatsetsa ka mo karing ya ka my bra assomblief (wait don't vomit inside my car please)

he said quickly parking on the side of the road and immediately Heath jumped on him punching him on his face

Jabu: Mshikaro wetsang mfowethu? (Mshikaro what are you doing man)

he said blocking him but it was hard cause Heath's seatbelt wasn't strapped in so it wasn't hard for him to hit Jabu especially using his elbow and fists

Jabu: Shaka what the fuck!

***he said pushing Heath away from him and he tried to undo the seatbelt but Heath tried to stop him by hitting him with an elbow on his face....the fight went on and on and Heath was now

grabbing Jabu tight with his throat trying to strangle him with one hand while the other one was busy punching him on his stomach***

Observer: you snitch ass motherfucker....im gonna show you what I do to snitches bitch!!

He said hitting him hard with Jabu trying to block him and also trying to remove his hand on his throat but he was just too strong....then Jabu saw that Observer could actually kill him so he reached for his gun under the seat and when Observer saw him reaching for something he bumped his own head on Jabu's head hard and he tried to reach for the gun himself but Jabu fought through the pain and he reached for it first and he didn't waste time he shot Heath on his thigh and as he groaned with pain he hit him with the back of his gun on the side of his head and Heath immediately passed out.....Jabu was bleeding from his nose upper lip and he had a cut on his left eyebrow that was bleeding too

Jabu: fuck!

he said undoing his seatbelt and he took off his shirt and was only left with a vest and he quickly cleaned his face and he took off his shoelaces and tied Heath.....then he took off Heath's belt and he tied Heath's bleeding thigh to minimize the bleeding and he strapped Heath with a seatbelt and he took his phone and dialed Ray

Ray: Jabs its really bad man....that fucker burned the house down bros

Jabu groaned as his head was pounding hard

Ray: Jabu what's wrong....are you ok

Jabu: Observer attacked me just now saying he's gonna show me what he does to snitches

Ray: WAIT WHAT? are you ok?

he asked with an alarmed voice

Jabu: yeah but he's not I shot him on the thigh to stop him from wasting me

Ray: shit...shit...shit...where are you?

Jabu: on the way to the sangoma....look I'll send you our gps coordinates so wena hurry and bring your first aid kit cause he's bleeding man

Ray: ok we're on our way hang in there

then they kept quiet a bit

Ray: bros you know that wasn't Ezech right

Jabu sighed

Jabu: I know big Ray.... Mshikaro would never do this to me that's why we need to find him help asap

Ray: yeah.... ok i see you when we get there

Jabu: sho

they ended the call and Jabu looked at Heath and he sighed shaking his pounding head and he started the ignition and drove away

.
. .
.

*** They arrived at the sangoma's house and Jabu send Ray his GPS coordinated and he got out of the car and went inside the yard all the way to the back and he found the sangoma busy mixing her herbs while humming a song***

Jabu: dimamzo

Mahlobola: ahhh Jabu ke neng ke eme (Jabu I have been waiting)

Jabu: jah eish askies dimamzo ke kopane le jaive nyana mo tseleng (sorry I uncouncted some trouble on the way)

Mahlobola: mmmmh o kae yena? (where is he?)

Jabu: ko karing(in the car)...nkane ka bula gate e golo so ke gone go driver in? (can I open the big gate so I can drive in?)

Mahlobola: mmmmh tsena ka mo ntlung o tseye key ka mo laiking ya bobedi after ya maswana (go inside the house and take the key inside the second drawer after the one that has cutleries in it)

Jabu nodded and he went inside her house and he came out with the keys and went to open the big gate and he drove in with the passed out Heath on the passenger seat and he got out and the sngoma went to the car and when she saw Heath passed out bleeding from his thigh the side of his head and passed out she looked at Jabu who sighed

Jabu: o tlhoka thuso dimamzo.....o fetsa go lwa le nna blaen ge re tla mo(he really needs help....he just fought me on our way here)

Mahlobola: mo ise ko store rumung (take him to the storage room)

Jabu unbuckled the seatbelt and dragged him to the store room and laid him on top of a rug he found in there and sat next to him pressing his bloodied shirt on Heath's wound to try and stop the bleeding....then the sangoma walked in

Jabu: ke kopa something for tlhogo eish ya opa blaen dimamzo (can I have something for the head its pounding hard)

she nodded and walked out and came back with a glass of water and some painkillers and Jabu drank

Mahlobola: othomile neng? (when did he start?)

Jabu: after ke fetsa go tswa ko suncity(after I came out of prison)

Mahlobola: mmmmh

she said that looking at Heath

Jabu: broer wa gae wetla otlo ntsha bullet le go stopa madi ke doctor and sa wara wa believer mo dilong tsa setso (his brother is on his way and he's gonna take out the bullet and stop the bleeding he's a doctor and don't worry he believes in traditional things)

The sangoma nodded

Mahlobola: ok e re ko felelletsa go mixer ditlhare tsa gae (let me go finish mixing his herbs)

Jabu: makhosi

he said bowing a bit and the sangoma walked out

.
. .
.

Ray parked outside next to the gate and he sighed and when he looked at Ruslan as he had a frown on his face

Ray: what's wrong?

Ruslan: im not going in there

Ray: huh? why?

Ruslan: that old bitch is just cruel and if I go in there I'll just turn her into a mad woman and release that badly treated and locked up monkey in there and burn this house down

He said with an angry voice and Ray looked at him like he's crazy

Ray: bros we are here for Ezech and not the monkey and the monkey's owner or you burning things down

he wasn't shocked of the things Ruslan saw with the naked eye anymore

Ruslan: just go in and save your brother and let me be

Ray just shook his head and he got out and opened the back door and took out his medical bag and looked at Ruslan

Ray: im coming and don't do something stupid abeg

Ruslan: piss off man and listen here whatever you hear in there make sure you calm the fuck down

Ray frowned at him

Ruslan: and you are still here....mumu just go in jorr

***Ray chuckled and he walked in the yard shaking his head....

He was now busy with Heath and after he was done with removing the bullet and bandaging him Heath stirred a bit then he opened his eyes and scanned the room and saw Jabu and Ray***

Heath: Ja...Javas what happened?

Jabu just got up and he walked out and Heath looked at Ray

Heath: big Ray what....

Ray interrupted him

Ray: SHUT UP....SHUT THE FUCK UP!

Heath tried to sit up but he felt pain on his head and thigh then he groaned

Ray: how can you let Observer attack Jabu Ezeh mmmmh? have you become so weak that you let your personalities attempt to kill your family members now....who's gonna be next Naledi Omphile Lesedi or even Ikechukwu?

Heath: w..what?

Ray: YOU HAVE BECOME WEAK EZEH....YOU HAVE LET THIS OBSERVER DICK TO DO AS HE PLEASES RIGHT NOW I DON'T THINK YOUR WIFE AND KIDS ARE SAFE WITH YOU AROUND THEM....HE MIGHT HURT THEM AND YOUR WEAK ASS MIGHT NOT EVEN DO ANYTHING TO STOP HIM.....YOU HAVE BECOME WEAK AND I DON'T THINK I CAN TRUST YOU CAUSE YOU JUST LET OBSERVER HURT JABU...HE COULD'VE KILLED HIM IF HE DIDN'T FIGHT BACK

he shouted at him

Heath: Ray I swear....

Ray interrupted him

Ray: shut up.....i don't wanna hear it....i told you he threatened to harm your wife and kids and you still let him take control and he ended up hurting your brother so I don't want you stupid excuses nx

he said untying him and he took his bag and walked out leaving Heath feeling like his world was coming to an end

Heath: how dare you....how could you hurt my brother you piece of shit on top of it you threatened my family my fucken family!

he said crying then he calmed down breathing heavily

Heath: don't forget you are nothing without me and don't think you are the alter ego Observer because there's someone better and more dangerous than you in there....the same one that made me survive that torture and once I let him out you'll cease to exist cause he doesn't like you

much so hurt my family ever again and I'll have him lock you up in there and you'll become the observer just like your stupid name says nx

he said talking to himself with a serious tone now and tears still all over his face

Heath: I know you can hear me so get this.....I created you and I can also destroy you Observer dare me again and you'll see nx

he then wiped his tears off and he took his time getting up and he limped out of the room and Jabu Ray and the sangoma were sitting next to her indumba (a sacred healing hut) and when the sangoma saw him she got up

Mahlobola: lets go in....remember to take your shoes off

she went inside her hut (her sacred healing hut)

.
. .

Mahlobola: ke bona leru le le ntsho mo wena di bati le sqetho (I see a dark cloud hanging over you bad lucks and witchcraft used on you)

Heath clenched his jaws along with his brothers then he looked at Jabu

Mahlobola: waitsi ga rate go bolela mabitso a batho ke a bolela fela ge ke tthatlhoba wena (you know I don't like saying people's names

Sponsored

ke a bolela fela ge ke tthatlhoba wena (you know I don't like saying people's names I only do that with you)

Jabu: go lokile nkane wa bolela gogo so a itse nnete gore a kgone go kereya thuso (you can say them gogo so that he knows the truth and gets the help he needs)

the sangoma then looked at Heath and Ray

Mahlobola: la dumela?

Heath: yebo gogo

Ray just nodded and the sangoma went ahead and talked to her ancestors groaning like traditional healers do when they communicate with their ancestors

Mahlobola: mme wa lona o nale pelo entsho and matsogo a gae a tletse ka madi a batho ba ba senang molato..... gape o go jisitse mo ditorong and a be a tshela sqitho mo gating ya ntlu ya

gao (your mother has an evil heart and her hands are full of blood of the innocents....and she's the one that bewitched you)

they all looked at each other....the sangoma didn't do what most traditional healers usually do when they communicate with the ancestors...she would just read the bones shaking her head and groaning then she would tell the guys what they say

Mahlobola: ga a batle mosadi wa gao and otlo etsa eng kapa eng go le tlhalansa (she doesn't like your wife and she's do anything to break you two up)

Heath swallowed hard and she groaned some more agreeing to something for some time moving his ancestral bone from one place to another turning them upside down and putting them to their original position again while agreeing to something

Mahlobola: o go tshetse sqetho gore o tlhoye mosadi wa gao (she bewitched you into hating your wife)

Jabu: heh?

she nodded

Mahlobola: gape ne go tlo fitlha nako mo ne o tlo thomang go beya mosadi wa gao letsogo e be a go tlhale (the would've come a time where you'll hit your wife and she'll end up leaving you)

Jabu: I cant believe this!

then she looked at Heath

Mahlobola: go nale nako engwe ne o ikutlwa o tenega ge o bona kana o nagana ka mosadi wa gao....dumela ge ke bolela nnete or gana ge e se nnete(there is a time when you get annoyed when you see or think of your wife....agree if im telling the truth or decline when im not)

Heath swallowed hard

Heath: ke..ke nnete(it's the truth)

***the sangoma nodded clapping her hands ***

Mahlobola: lerato le o naleng lona for mosadi wa gao ke lona le le etsitseng gore sqitho se se bereke slow (the only thing that made you not give in fully to that feeling is the love you have for her)

***she groaned and Heath clenched his jaws ***

Jabu: gogo o ka mo thusa? (gogo can you help him?)

she nodded

Mahlobola: mmmmh mara nkase kgone go mo thusa ka se seleng mo tlhaloganyong ya gae gape a gona motho o a ka kgonang go mo thusa.... yena ka bo yena ke yena a ka ithusang (mmmmh but I cant help him with what is in his head infact no one can except himself)

they nodded while Heath just looked down thinking about his mother bewitching him he was feeling extremely angry but he didn't want any of his personalities to take over so he fought them back....the sangoma then looked at Ray

Mahlobola: wa itse gore o tlisitseng mo lefatsheng le gape le di tla morago tsa teng? (you know what you brought into this world right and the consequences?)

Ray: yes

he said clenching his jaws and the sangoma sighed while Jabu looked at Ray who didn't even look his way

Heath: but...but my grandmother ke moporofita (she's a seer) yes she told me gore ke loilwe(that im bewitched) but my question is ne a sa bone gore ke ngwana gae a nketsang so? (didn't she see that its her daughter who was doing that to me?)

the sangoma shook her head

Mahlobola: o lwa ntwala ya semoya so tlhogo ya gae e kopa kopane (she's going through what I call a spiritual fight so she's not on a right state of mind)

then she raised her head and looked at Ray

Mahlobola: diphiri le makunutu di tlotswa and go tlo senyega gape ke bona le lekase

then she groaned looking down and everyone's eyes popped out

Mahlobola: hei makhosi!

she said clapping her hands then she looked at Ray again

Mahlobola: ke wena glue e e tlo tshwarang family ya lona go re e tiye....ke wena fela so gore o etsang ge diphiri tseo di tswa ke sona se se tlo tiisang family or se tlo e thubang (you are the glue that's gonna hold your family tight....you are the only person so when the secrets come out your reaction is the only thing that's gonna keep your family together or break it)

then she looked down and groaned clapping her hands

Mahlobola: makhosi

Jabu clapped his hands too then she looked at Heath

Mahlobola: ke tlo go fa setlhare and o seberikisa go kolomaka teng ka speit and se sengwe o ghaba ka sona....and se sengwe gape o tlhapa ka sona fela o sa berekisi sesepa and o se boledise se sengwe o tlo senwa everyday go fitlhella se fela and sa bo felo re tlo se tlhakantsha le Vaseline and o tlo se tshatsa ge o fetsa go tlhapa (im gonna give you a herb to help you clean your system and another one to help you vomit the muti out....and other one you'll use it to wash your body without using a soap and you should tell it what to do while you're bathing another one will be to drink every day until its finished and the last one we will mix it with Vaseline and you'll use it as a body lotion after taking your bath)

Jabu&Heath: makhosi!

Jabu: how many times should he use them in a day gogo?

Mahlobola: sa go ghaba o ghaba mo le speiti o peita mo ge a fetsa o tlhapa a be a aramele then o tsamaya le tsa go tlhapa sa go nwa le sa go tshasa and o di berekisa gabedi mo letsatsing vroeg le bosigo (he'll use the one that will clean his system here and even the one that will help him vomit out the muti here then he will bath and steam....after he's done he will leave with the one he will use to bath drink and use as a body lotion and he will use them in the morning and at night)

Jabu nodded

Mahlobola: gape ko go tlhabela gore baloi ba se tlhole ba tshamekela mo wena (I'll have to strengthen you so witches don't see you as play thing)

he said looking at Heath

Jabu&Heath: makhosi!

.
. .
.

*** she was busy with Heath in her sacred healing hut while Ray and Jabu were sitting outside...Ray went to Ruslan but he didn't find him in the car and he also tried to call him but his phone send him straight to voicemail***

Jabu: but he doesn't know anyone here so where is he?

Ray: I don't know but what I know is that he's safe so don't worry

Jabu: ai dai bra van jou o complicated and weird bros (that brother of yours is complicated and weird)

Ray chuckled

Ray: i won't argue with you on that....let's just say he's special but what I love about him is he takes loyalty very serious and if he lets you in his circle then he'll have your back no matter what but if he doesn't let you in his circle then you are fucked

Jabu: damn....anyway what did he mean by "Thandi will be his wife?"

Ray: lets just say he sees a wife in Thandi and she's the first woman ever to make him even consider marriage..... and im afraid when he's made up his mind there's no turning back man

Jabu: Thandi is practically married Big Ray you know that

Ray: you think I don't know that....but like I said when he has made up his mind there's no turning back man

Jabu shook his head then they heard sound inside the house and they looked at each other

Ray: is there someone in the house?... I thought she lived alone

Jabu: I don't know...a ke sure (im not sure)

he said getting up and Ray also got up and they went towards the door and Jabu slowly opened the door and he cursed moving back

Jabu: WHAT THE FUCK!

Ray: really Ruslan?

Ruslan was busy brushing a monkey's head smiling wide as it was eating while sitting on the table

Ruslan: he's cute right

he asked with a smile on his face

Jabu: where...how...what the fuck is a monkey doing in here!

he asked shocked

Ruslan: why don't you ask that old bitch that's been starving Miles here

Ray: Miles?

Ruslan: yeah I named him that and he likes it...right Miles

he said the last part smiling at the monkey and it made noise then it stopped and continued to eat

Mahlobola: go etsagalang mo? (what's going on here?)

she asked walking in and she froze when she saw her monkey with Ruslan and Jabu also froze not knowing what to say to her and the monkey quickly got off the table and hid behind Ruslan

Ruslan: you bitch how dare you starve your servant....how can you be this heartless....Miles serves you and does all your dirty work and you have the fucken nerve to starve him!

Jabu: wh...what?

Ray: bros abeg not now or here biko

Ruslan: then when Ray if not here....Miles here work hard to make sure she gets what she wants and she has the rotten nerve to ill-treat him

Ray sighed cause he could see that he was actually serious

Mahlobola: o mang wena and o tsene byang ka mo ntlung ya ka (who ae you and how did you get inside my house)

Ruslan: ooh and she has the nerve to talk back at me mmmh?

Ray: Ruslan calm down please!!

Ruslan: DON'T TELL ME TO CALM DOWN...WHAT DID SHE JUST SAY?...Jabs what did she just say to me?

Jabu swallowed hard

Ruslan: JABS I SAID WHAT DID SHE SAY!

Jabu: ummm she was just asking who you are and how you got inside her house

Ruslan: good cause I was ready to fuck her up

Mahlobola: ke rile o mang wena...and o kereya kae sebete sa go tsena ka mo ntlung ya ka o tshwara tshwara le dilo tsa ka? (I said who are you and where do you get the nerve to get inside my house and touch my things)

Ray: he...he's with me gogo im sorry for all this....jabs

Jabu: o tlike le rona dimamzo and sorry for go phapha ga gae(he came with us dimamzo and sorry he's too forward)

Mahlobola: hei tswa ka mo ntlung ya ka before ke o romela ka tladi nou! (hei get out of my house before I send a lightning to you)

she warned him

Ruslan: what did she just say to me?

***he asked Jabu**

Jabu: ummm she said you should get out before she sends a lightning to you

Ruslan: ooh so she's threatening me now

Ray: Ruslan abeg stop

he begged him but it fell on deaf ears

Ruslan: no Ray this old bitch is actually threatening me...me Ruslan

Ray: what the hell do you expect....you in her house uninvited feeding her.... "pat"

Ruslan: I don't give a fuck.....Jabs tell her if she wants to take me on then its fucken on

Jabu swallowed hard looking from Ruslan to the sangoma

Ruslan: im waiting Jabs...translate!

Ray sighed in defeat

Jabu: ummmm....ummmm.... dimamzo a re....eish Ruslan man just apologize and leave her house and her...things man please

Ruslan: I said translate what I said to her using her gibberish language so she understands

Mahlobola: ke tlo o bontsha gore ke mang wena....o tseba mo ntlung ya ka ebile o tshwara tshwara dilo tsaka.... ke tlo go bontsha mmao kajeno! (I show you who I am.....you get inside my house and you also touch my things....I'll show you your mother today)

she then walked out going back to her hut mumbling things

Ray: Ruslan stop man please

Ruslan: fine since you don't want to tell her then my actions will!

Ray: Ruslan!

he warned him

Ruslan: keep out of this Ray it doesn't concern you.....i need to show this old bitch what real witches and real wizards can do

Ray: you're acting crazy now Ruslan!

Ruslan: cra...did you just say crazy....fine I'll show you through her what crazy is!

Jabu: witches and wiz....ehh Big Ray o bolela kang die man? (what is this man talking about?)

he asked with a shocked and confused expression on his face but Ray ignored him

Ruslan: I need to teach this old witch how servants should be treated.....can you believe I found Miles here with a chain around his neck...a fucken chain Ray there was no bed mattress or even a sponge for him to sleep on...the room he was locked in is filthy and stinking and his plate looked like it has never been washed before....there's poop and a strong smell of urine all over..... that bitch didn't even put at least a bucket for him to help himself in it but im sure she can take her fat ass and go take a shit in a toilet

*** he said with an angry voice***

Jabu: AMEN!..... akitsi gore kere bo ke boloi or ke thomile go bona dilo le go utlwa metlholo or banloile lenna... entlek keng tsona tse? (I don't know whether I should say this is witchcraft or im starting to see and hear things or maybe im also bewitchedwhat the hell is all this?)

he said confused and also freaked out a bit

Ray: Jabu abeg go see if Heath is almost done or not so we get the hell out of here

then they heard the sangoma shouting a bit

Mahlobola: etswa ka moo ke tlo o bontsha gore ke mang mpya ke wena (get out of there so I can show you what im capable of you stupid dog)

.
. .
. .

****TO BE CONTINUED!!!!****

CONTINUATION OF INSERT 68

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Ray: Ruslan think of Ezech man what if she stops helping him

Ruslan: then I'll find someone to pick up where she left off

he said without any care in the world

Ray: im dead serious Ruslan stop all this madness!

Ruslan: man can't you see how Miles is scared and skinny that old bitch deserves what's coming to her and you wont stop me

***Ray looked at him with an angry look on his face**

Ray: you want to tell me that this monkey's life is more important than my brother's life...is that what you're telling me Ruslan?

Ruslan huffed

Ruslan: ofcourse not

Ray: then stop all this rubbish and go apologize to that woman for entering her house without her permission and for also touching her things without her permission too

Ruslan: I won't apologize to that woman Ray forget it!

he said also getting angry

Ray: don't piss me off Ruslan abeg don't...my brother's life depends on that woman helping him so you'll stop all this nonsense now!

Ruslan: mxm

***he turned to Miles who was still behind him looking scared and he crouched to his level and he started speaking to it in a language even Ray didn't understand and all along Miles was busy making monkey sounds then he got up and walked passed Ray going outside and Miles got on top of the table and continued to eat ***

Ruslan: ey stop shouting like a mad woman I haven't done anything to you yet...what the fuck is wrong with you

he said to the sangoma who stopped shouting and she opened her palm and Ruslan saw some white powder inside her hand and he immediately chanted a protection spell and it covered him

Ray: Ruu defuse this situation now!

*** and the sangoma blew the powder towards Ruslan chanting some words too as for Jabu he was standing outside the door of the storeroom where Heath was busy with his things inside shocked by what was happening..... the sangoma was busy blowing that powder towards Ruslan chanting some words then Ruslan chanted some spell in a strange language and the sangoma stopped what she was doing and she rubbed her eyes using her other hand and all she could see now was darkness***

Mahlobola: matlho a ka...matlho a ka...(my eyes....my eyes)

she said rubbing them hard but she was still seeing darkness

Ruslan: Jabu tell her to calm the fuck down

Jabu: wha...what did you do to her man...what did you do?

Ruslan: im a wizard so I did what wizards do to witches that are ungrateful to their servants...now tell her or I'll leave her like this!

Jabu swallowed hard looking from Ruslan to Mahlobola

Jabu: big...big Ray

Ray: do as he says Jabu before all hell break loose

Jabu swallowed hard again and he looked at the sangoma

Jabu: di...dimamzo a re ke go botse gore o theole moya (he says I should tell you to calm down)

Mahlobola: matlho a ka Jabu...yho matlho a ka (my eyes Jabu....my eyes)

Jabu: man what did you do to her eyes...shit what's even happening here ?

Ruslan: tell her to stop mistreating Miles...the monkey or I'll do worse to her

Jabu looked at him like "wtf"

Ruslan: translate man

Jabu wallowed hard and he looked at the sangoma

Jabu: di..dimamzo a re o treat(e) tshwene ele pila from nou or go tlo nyiwa blaen (he said you should treat the monkey good from now on or all hell will break loose)

Mahlobola: Jabu so o tlisitse dilo tse gore di tlo ntella mo motseng wa ka (Jabu so you brought this things to my house to come and disrespect me?)

she said with tears running down her cheeks as she was still rubbing her eyes

Jabu: what...hai hai dimamzo ebile die man ga ke mo jaje nna.....mmmh ditshwene le go konopana ka ditlhare a se dilo tsa ka dimamzo ebile wa ejaja dai dang and nou go setse fela gore ke ithotele ka letshogo and ompotsa dai dang (I don't even know this man....mmmh monkeys and to use witchcraft on each other is not my thing im sure you even know that and now im this close to peeing on myself because of fear and you telling me that)

Mahlobola: O TLISITSE BATHO MO MOTSENG WA KA JABU GORE BATLO NTELLA AKERE! (you brought people to my house to come and disrespect me right?)

Jabu: dimamzo no ga se vaar dai dang...nna ke tlisitse Mshikaro fela dai man ke achuz ya bra ya rona nna a ke mo jaje (not its not true...I only brought Mshikaro that man is our brother's friend and I don't even know him)

then Ruslan chanted another spell and she became mute instantlyshe tried to talk but no voice came out and Jabu gasped

Jabu: and nou? (now?)...no...no ...no bo ke boloi strait(this is witchcraft straight)

he said breathing heavily with his eyes popped out

Ruslan: repeat what I said you should say to her!

*** and Jabu did***

Ruslan: and tell her from a wizard to a witch I said if she tries any shit on either one of you or to Miles I'll show her how angry I can get and im not playing

Jabu translated

Ruslan: and also tell her my apologies for entering her house without permission

Jabu continued to translate with a shaky voice

Ruslan: ooh and tell her next time she should find out more about her opponent before she starts threatening him cause next time Ray won't be around to save her fat ass...well don't say the 'fat ass' part to her

and Jabu translated and Ruslan turned to look at Ray

Ruslan: she attacks me then she's dead

Ray just shook his head defeated and Ruslan chanted some words and both the spells got lifted off her and she started seeing and her voice even came out when she said 'yhooo'....she rubbed her eyes again and when she looked up they landed on Ruslan

Mahlobola: o...o tlo patela for nthwe o fetsang go e etsa mpya ke wena....wa itsi gore ke nna mang mmmmh... ka mma a ntsetse mxi struu otlo patela wankutlwa o tlo patela ka bophelo ba gao (you gonna pay for what you just did you dog...do you know who I am mmmmh I swear you will pay you hear me you will pay with your life)

she threatened him and Ruslan looked at Jabu for some translations and Jabu swallowed hard

Jabu: she...she said you should leave her house now

he lied to him and Ray was glad he did cause this was never gonna end well

Ruslan: fine by me I'll go wait in the car....its not like she lives in a mansion anyway

then he walked away leaving the sangoma swearing at him then she rushed inside her house still swearing at him

jabu: hai.....ditshwene...boloi ba higher grade...mxm go no shota ditlotlwane fela mos....ka mmao tonight Amo tshwanetse a nrapelle strong ke tlhoka di thapelo (monkey....advanced witchcraft.... mxm the only thing that's missing is zombies.... for real tonight Amo needs to pray for me strong I need prayers)

he said to himself and Ray sighed and went after Ruslan to make sure he doesn't go inside and kill the woman

.
. .

*** Well Heath finished up with his things and Jabu briefed him about what was happening and they went to beg the sangoma to forgive Ruslan and not get them involved in whatever is going on between Ruslan and her they told her they came here for help and nothing else so she shouldn't paint them with the same brush as him....it took some convincing from them for her to not involve them in her new beef with Ruslan and when they pain extra money she was all smiles but she told them she will still deal with Ruslan and they just nodded at her hoping that Ruslan was strong enough to protect himself from her.....after paying and Heath getting his herbs they walked out with Heath limping***

Heath: damn bros you said Ruslan did what?

Jabu kept quiet ignoring him

Heath: Javas?

Jabu: voetsek!

Heath: heh?

Jabu: ke rile voetsek! (I said piss off!)

Heath sighed

Heath: bros abeg im sorry about what Observer did to you man you know it wasn't me I would never do that to you

Jabu: voetsek Heath wankutlwa voetsek jou muur...jou fokon moeskond nx lemarete (insults)

Heath sighed and he clenched his jaws

Heath: java...

he interrupted him

Jabu: voetsek le marete wankutlwa voetsek Mshikaro and o botse le dai moekond Observer ke re marete a gae a go shoshobana(piss off you dick you hear me piss off and also tell that bastard Observer that I said his wrinkled balls)

Heath sighed cause Jabu looked angry

Jabu: and next time o tlogela dai fokon bleksem a threaten(er) any of our family member ko go thuntsha marete san (you let that fucken bastard to threaten any of our family members im going to shoot you on your balls boy)

Heath: hade bros (sorry my brother)

Jabu: hade ya masepa...wena o batla motho a go tlhabe ka screwdriver mo mareteng a kgone go tiya cause ka bona this days o behave(r) ekare o nale kuku (fuck your sorries....you just want someone to stab you with a screwdriver on your balls so that they will get strong cause I can see this days you behave like you have a pussy)

Heath decided to not swear at him back or say anything to defend himself cause he knows this is how Jabu deal with his anger besides fighting physically he knows after he's done swearing and insulting him they'll be good

Jabu: nx rena re gafa go tshwana le bana ba bangwe le na le decide(r) go gafa ka di levels le busy le create(r) digafi tse ditlang ka di upgrade tsa masepa (nx some of us our madness is normal like other people's while others decide to have madness with levels you busy creating crazy people with upgrades full of shit)

Heath smirked shaking his head....they were standing next to Jabu's car while Ray and Ruslan decided to drive away when they saw them walking to their car

Jabu: and you better call Amo and o mo chaele why ke tla gae ka mabadi and make sure she believes you lie or I swear ka Nomvula wa moloi o nnyela struu....this time ko go thuntsha marete e seng serope (and tell her why im coming home with wounds and make sure she believes you or I swear with Nomvula the witch you will shit yourself.....this time im going to shoot your balls and not your thighs)

Heath: you done?

Jabu: marete a gao (your dick)

Heath: lwena marete a gao (you too)

Jabu: voetsek tsena mo karing re vaiye o tlogele go tlhotsa e ka re segole se ba se shapile ka sfolo (piss off get in the car so we can go and stop limping like a handicapped that is bewitched)

***Heath chuckled feeling relived... "and we are back!" he thought to himself getting inside the car....well he received extreme insults from Jabu but they were all worth it to him cause he can't have him holding a grudge or being mad at him and now that he knows about his mother and that

he got help it was now 'mission fix his marriage' for him and as for his evil mother well he'll deal with her later ***

.
. .

*** well it was now late at night and Ray's father his new wife and Mj were all at Heath's house along with Heath while Jabu left for his house and Heath did call Amo after Jabu got home and he 'lied' about his injuries and he told her that they were almost hijacked and that he was even shot at but that she shouldn't worry cause the hijackers looked worse than them and they were 'arrested' but in hospital at the moment well she bought it and she's began to fuss over Jabu and Jabu even send Heath a message saying " thaa mfowethu (thanks my brother) yerrr can you believe she's even massaging my feet now and damn I didn't know how nice it is to have your feet massaged... Im even moaning like im about to have an orgasm....fucken shit die dang e monate blaen kao chaela (this thing is good im telling you) "

Anyway as for Ray and Ruslan they went to Ray's house...anyway now Ray was talking to Mbali on the phone who just told him that she'll be discharged tomorrow in the morning when Ruslan walked in and he took Ray's car keys***

Ray: my love let me call you back just now

he said looking at Ruslan who looked angry

Mbali: ooh

Ray: before you get all mad at me I just need to talk to Ruslan quick and I'll call you back I promise

Mbali: really Ray?...why are you making me seem like a hormonal monster

he chuckled

Ray: no my love I just don't want to upset you and my boy that's all

Mbali: well im not upset and your son is busy moving around in my belly as if he owns it mxm

***Ray laughed and Ruslan attempted to walk away but Ray pulled him back ***

Ray: my love let me talk to this guy and I'll call you back ok

Mbali: ok

then he dropped the call

Ray: going somewhere?

Ruslan: yeah I have business I need to attend to

Ray: business here in SA at night and alone?

Ruslan: yeah and don't wait up

Ray: wait... what's going on Ruu?

Ruslan: nothing man ...look man I have to go

Ray looked at him intensely then it clicked

Ray: no...no...no...no fucken way

Ruslan: what?

Ray: you're not going back there Ruu

Ruslan: well I am

Ray: bros that woman is helping Ezeh why can't you get that!

he snapped at him

Ruslan: well not anymore....i spoke to Mel earlier on and he's coming back this side and he doesn't mind picking up where she left off or even do a better job than her so that's taken care off

***Ray looked at him surprised ***

Ray: what?

Ruslan: yeah so now im going to rescue Miles and deal with that bitch

Ray just looked at him shocked

Ray: bros you do know that you're actually overreacting right?

Ruslan: you wouldn't understand Ray if that woman was taking good care of Miles believe me I would have even visited her and even had tea with her while we discussed our similar line of work and even exchanged numbers before I go back home but no she decided to become like all those fuckers out there who mistreat their servants..... animals also feel pain Ray just like me and you but because most people are shallow and narrow-minded they don't care.....i prefer you just kill them and get it over and done with than to have them captive and mistreat them or just let them go

then he sighed

Ruslan: look what im trying to say is I hate animal cruelty paedophiles abusers of any kind being emotional psychological and physical and not forgetting killing of innocent people and that bitch falls on animal cruelty and abusers category and I have a feeling she also bewitches and kills innocent people but that's not what is upsetting me now....so I need to deal with her cause she's an ungrateful bitch

Ray sighed deeply cause he could see Ruslan was serious about this whole Miles thing....like really serious

Ray: bro you do know that the world is a cruel place and its all about survival of the fittest...you cant save everyone and everything

Ruslan: I know but as cruel as it is im doing my bit to make it better La Parca is also doing his bit by dragging all those evil souls to hell.....now what about you and everyone else?

Ray raised his eyebrow at him

Ruslan: look I may have turned warzone corpses of people who died in a cruel manner at the hands of evil dictators to zombies back home but I damn well take good care of them more than how their families or friends took care of them when they were still alive and I give them a chance of peace and happiness and let them rest forever when I feel they have gotten enough of their peace they've been longing for even in death...I give them a second chance to a peaceful life on earth even if it's for a little while before I set them free..... well other people may see me as weird or creepy or even evil but before I set them free they always say Thank you for what I did for them and that makes everything bad that everyone may think of me irrelevant

Ray was just too shocked by Ruslan to even say anything

Ruslan: look I may be a wizard but I have a heart man and all I ever want is for a better world Thandi as my wife and having kids with her and as for my zombies I'll let all of them rest in eternal peace once and for all when Thandi agrees to be mine but I hate and I repeat I hate people who harm innocent people and animals I can't fucken stand them in fact they make my blood boil and if most of them didn't sell their souls to the devil I would have wiped them off long ago but we both know it's a war I cannot win alone and now that old bitch had the rotten nerve to beat Miles up after we left and she didn't even give him food this night and for that she's gonna pay with her life

then he walked out leaving Ray shocked at this other side of Ruslan he never knew existed

.

.

.

***he parked the car at a house before the sangoma's house well he got there using the gps coordinates Jabu send them earlier and he waited for some time to make sure its really late and that the street is clear of people.....after some time he then got out of the car and he chanted

some words in the forbidden language concentrating on the inside kitchen that he was with Miles earlier inside the sangoma's house and he disappeared and appeared there....it was dark inside so he switched the light on and he walked around the house and ended up in her bedroom and he got in.... he found bottles with white smoke inside and he knew it was trapped souls of people inside and he chuckled shaking his head then he opened all of them and commanded them to go back to their owners....all this time he knew she wasn't home she went to the witches convention and she was gonna be back in two days' time....he then heard some noise under her bed that was put on top of bricks to lift it up to make space under it***

Ruslan: come out under that bed now

more sounds were made and he pointed his palm at the bed and he chanted some worlds and he heard creepy screams under the bed

Ruslan: I said come out under that bed or I'll do what I did again and this time you'll burn

he heard mumbles

Voice: ayikweng (lets get out)

more mumbles were heard and the first one got out and the second and third fourth fifth sixth seventh eighth ninth and the tenth one also got out and it was five men and five women and they had long dirty hair that almost touched the floor and they looked dirty and smelled horrible like dried blood sweat urine poop and any other horrible smell you can think of.... they wore torn clothes with their nails on both their fingers and toes longer as for their height they were of that of dwarfs

Male: o mang weha? (who are you?)

that's what they wanted to say but since their tongues were cut off they couldn't pronounce words properly

Ruslan: you know I should've known

then he chuckled

Ruslan: but damn do ya'll even bath....fuck you smell like shit

he said closing this nose with his hand

Ruslan: how does she even sleep with all this smell...damn....now I see why many old granny's houses smell like potpourri all the time

Female: o mang weha...o bakang...o kehe byang? (who are you...what do you want...how did you get in?)

Male: why a ha habe....ha he habe? (why is isn't he running.... isn't he scared of us?)

Female: heeh maybe a he ha hoha (maybe we are no longer scary)

they were just talking amongst themselves and Ruslan was just looking at them wondering what they were talking about

female: koko o he beha ho a he mohwahe he mmofe e koko o haba (granny will beat us so lets catch him and tie him and granny will be happy)

they all nodded and they charged at Ruslan but he quickly chanted a spell and a force hit them hard and it pushed them back and they hit the bed and fell on the floor

Ruslan: you smell and look like shit but you still do your masters dirty work and still loyal to her damn

he shook his head

Ruslan: loyalty like yours is rare I tell you

then he pointed the palm of his hand at them and he started chanting words in the forbidden language with his eyes turning all white for some time commanding their souls to go to the light and have eternal peace they've been longing for and the creatures souls left the bodies and immediately the bodies turned into ashes then he stopped

Ruslan: and to think your families mourned your deaths and some of your families are still finding it hard to accept your deaths while you are here looking and smelling like shit.... at least with my zombies I find their corpses on the wilderness killed by evil dictators just for fun but this...this is just pure evil

he shook his head looking at the ashes and he walked out and he broke the door where Miles is locked in and he found him looking horrible he had blood on his head and some other parts of his body and he also looked weak....he looked up at Ruslan and made faint sounds and Ruslan felt tears filling his eyes but he fought them back and extreme anger took over his body

Ruslan: hey boy....don't worry you are safe now ok she won't hurt you anymore

then Miles made some more sounds and he broke the chains and carried him out of the room....then he set the whole house on fire and he chanted a spell and disappeared and he appeared outside the yard and he went to the car and he put Miles on the passenger seat and he buckled him and he also got in and drove away

Ruslan: don't worry she's going to pay for what she did to you

he said to miles

.
. .
.

Ray: OOH HELL NO...HELL NO RUSLAN!....ARE YOU FUCKEN CRAZY MAN....WHY DID YOU BRING IT HERE?

Ruslan: will you keep it down please

he was busy feeding Miles with Miles sitting on the table and he still looked a bit weak but clean

Ray: ON THE FUCKEN TABLE MAN....LIKE FOR FUCKEN REAL?.....BROS LIKE THIS IS NOT ON ITS NOT ON RUU FOR REAL ITS NOT

Ruslan: will you just calm down....im just nursing him back to health then I'll let him loose to the wilderness so he'll be free so relax

Ray: ON MY FUCKEN TABLE MAN...MY FUCKEN TABLE!

then Mat and Diego walked in confused about the shouting and they froze when they saw a monkey sitting on top of a table

Mat: jefe im not dreaming right

Diego: you cant be dreaming man I mean im also seeing a monkey on top of the table being fed porridge by Ruslan

Ray: I CANT DEAL WITH THIS I REALLY CANT....THIS IS JUST.....

he raised his hands with defeat and he turned to walk but then he stopped and turned back looking at Ruslan

Ray: THAT TABLE BETTER BE CLEAN....AND YOU BETTER MAKE SURE HE DOESN'T LEAVE VIRUSES OR TIC IN MY HOUSE AND IM FUCKEN SERIOUS!

he warned Ruslan and Ruslan just ignored him

Ruslan: ignore him boy he's just sex starved since madam of the house is away and now he's taking his frustrations out on us...lets just go somewhere private

he said picking him up along with his bowl and they walked out and Ray also walked out going upstairs looking pissed off

Diego: Africans are weird man....first its jefe and the La Parca thing and now its Ruslan and monkeys man

Mat: he's feeding it porridge like a fucken small child I mean he even wipes it's mouth after giving it a spoon of porridge man...this is just crazy man...

Diego: the truth is nothing shocks me anymore with this two

he said walking to the fridge in his pajamas and he took out a bottle of beer

NALEDI

***I have been going through a lot lately and my kids Thandi and shockingly James my father are the reason im soldiering on...as for my marriage I won't touch on it cause everything is just too much yes I believe Heath but at the same time seeing him on those pictures just killed something in me...even though I wish I could just leave him and start off somewhere and just concentrate on myself and my kids but I know he will never let me go no matter what....

And he seems weird most of the time he looks cold and creepy and it usually gives me the chills cause he had that "don't fuck with me" look this days even though I become rude towards him still I pray he doesn't slap the shit out of me cause lately he has that look that tells you that if you keep pushing him he might slap the shit out of you....the truth is in as much as im angry hurt and confused by the whole thing I still love him and I wish things were different between us but I guess it is what it is....

Im happy and glad Ike is growing and getting strong each day and more especially to the fact that I can now hold him in my arms and breast feed him...he's handsome and looks just like his father and I wonder how Bunke would have looked like now (sigh). Well I also wonder how koko's funeral was like and if Mamiki was telling my father the truth when she said koko said she's sorry and that im now welcomed home (sigh) everything is just a mess I mean I don't even know where Kitso is cause we are supposed to do Lesedi's ceremony and now he decided to disappear into thin air I mean he was like "Lesedi is my daughter my blood" and now he's gone just like that nx...anyway Ike now is sleeping peacefully in his cot and im bored as hell im busy scrolling down on Instagram looking at people's amazing pictures and watching videos and I must say some people are living it up while some of us are going through shit then I heard the door opening and Heath limped in using a crutch ummm ok.....he looked like he's been hit by a truck and also like he hadn't slept for days I wonder what happened to him especially to his leg aarg whatever....well Ray walked in followed by Mj their father and an older good looking woman mmmmh I think it's the second wife but I might be wrong....

Anyway Heath got to me and he quickly took my left hand and before I could pull it back he slid my wedding ring on my ring finger and he bend a bit and kissed my forehead.... ok I guess his father doesn't know about what has been happening so this is him telling me to pretend that we are good mxm....anyway they greeted and I greeted back with a smile and Mj rushed to Ike and

he picked him up slowly and he held him in his arms with a huge smile on his face then Ray's phone rang and he answered and talked for some time then he came closer to me and he kissed the top of my head and went to Mj and he kissed Ike's forehead***

Ray: well beautiful people I have to go there's a crisis on the sight im building my medi-clinic at and it needs my attention

Heath: anything I can help with?

Ray: I don't know but I'll call you if there is

Heath nodded then they fist bumped and he walked out dialing on his phone

Heath: Mj come on he's sleeping put him down

Mj: brother can you just concentrate on your wife and let me be with my son biko

I giggled cause I forgot how crazy he can be

Heath: you mean my son

Mj: abeg your sperms might have created him but he's mine

bathong this boy in front of his parents nogal

Woman: Jesus.... this boy!

Mj: what mommy....brother Ezeh's sperms and sister Star's egg created Ike here its not a secret....i would tell you the process of how Ike was conceived or how his sperms entered her but it's a discussion for another day

Amen.....if only ya'll could see the woman's face right now

Mr.masden: Mj behave please!

Mj: fine but ya'll shouldn't provoke me abeg

then he looked at Ike and his smile came back again and he moved around the room with him in his arms

Mr.Masden: my dear the sooner you stop being shocked every time he opens his mouth and vomit out rubbish the better for your health and sanity

the woman just shook her head defeated

Mr.Masden: how are you my daughter?

he asked me

Me: im getting there dad

Mr.Masden: that's good....thats good

he said nodding with a smile on his face

Mr.Masden: ummm before I forget...this is my second wife Patience and my dear this is our daughter in law Naledi but we call her Star as Naledi in English means Star

she smiled at me damn she's gorgeous....anyway she moved closer to me and she held my hand ummm ok...there was something warm and kind about her

Patience: im glad you and my grandson are ok and im also sorry about your loss of my other grandson.....always remember my dear that everything happens for a reason and that God never forgets his own

I found myself getting emotional and she cupped my face using one hand

Patience: you are not alone my dear and never forget that ok and pray my dear.... believe me when I say prayer is what you and your husband need on this difficult time

I found myself nodding and she wiped my tears off then Mj got closer to me and he bend a little and kissed the side of my head

Mj: mommy here is right sister Star you are not alone and you'll never be ok

I just nodded smiling at him and my eyes went to Heath and he was looking at me intensely and I quickly looked away....the parents took Ike from Mj who didn't want to let him go and they just fussed over him I smiled cause they genuinely love him then I felt fingers under my chin turning my face and it was Heath I swallowed hard and was ready to tell him to stop when he quickly smashed his lips on mine and I froze he sucked on my bottom lip a bit then he pulled out of the kiss and he perked my lips and stared into my eyes.....heh guys I was still frozen on the spot

Heath: never ever take off your wedding ring no matter what Obi m or me and you we will have some serious problems more serious than the ones we are facing now

I swallowed hard and he wasn't even smiling

Mj: get a room you two please

Heath moved away from me and showed him the middle finger and I just cleared my throat

Mj: dad

his father didn't even look at him cause he was busy concentrating on Ike

Mj: dad!

***he raised his voice a bit ***

Mr.Masden: mxm ooh what is it Michael?

he said with an annoyed tone

Mj: dad brother Ezeh is swearing at me

his father looked at him

Mr.Masden: then swear at him back jorr

my eyes popped out looking at him

Mj: and if I do that you'll protect me when he beats me abi?

Mr.Masden: no

Mj: huh?

Mr.Masden: Ezeh when you beat him up abeg hit him hard on his mouth area even if it takes him a day without him saying anything I'll take it biko

we laughed at Mj while he sulked

Mj: mxm where is the loyalty in this family when one needs it

we laughed again and my eyes landed on Heath and he was staring at me intensely again and I quickly looked away clearing my throat

.
. .
.

*** it was late in the afternoon and the Khumalo's were in the study having a serious discussion on their businesses and also making arrangements for transport since they were going back to their houses the following days well except for Thorsten since he already left with his wife and kids two days back due to his private contactor's job....then as they were busy the door opened and Mbali walked in she was walking in a strange way with her hair all over her face...she looked possessed or something and when she entered the study room the lights flicked vigorously a bit then they stopped and the door shut its self after she entered and locked on its own....Snake's heart started beating fast when he was looking at her and her pale arms with visible black veins all over them confirmed his fears***

Snakes: God no....

he said getting up from his seat slowly looking spooked

Baba: Mbali?

she didn't say anything or move she was just looking down with her hair hanging all over her face hiding it and her arms hanging on the sides of her body loose

Pops: wh..what's happening....what's wrong with her...Princess?

she quickly raised her head and bend it to the side a bit looking at Pops

Saint: you made her sad and cry.....you shouldn't have made her cry...you shouldn't have made her cry!

she said with a possessed voice and the rest of them got up while Snakes rushed to the door and Saint quickly turned

Saint: I wouldn't do that if I were you.....only mommy is allowed to walk out of here alive!
Snakes heart was beating so fast and his mind went back to those mummified bodies in that house and his body visibly shook

Jay: wha.....what do you mean by that?

they all now knew that the Skeletal Saint was out to play

Saint: no one makes mommy cry and lives to tell the tale... and I mean no one and you did!

he said pointing at Pops and Pops eyes popped out and he swallowed hard

Melusi: you...you have a beast in you too so it wont let you hurt any of us

she laughed like a possessed person then she got serious again

Saint: now lets see it try and stop me!

Jay: the fuck!

he said scared as hell

69

INSERT.....69

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Saint: why did you make mommy cry?

she said walking slowly towards Pops and Pops just stood there frozen with his eyes popped out

Melusi: wait listen...listen Saint you don't wanna do what you are about to do cause it will make your mother cry now when that happens will you hurt yourself too for making her cry too

she stopped walking and turned to look at Melusi

Saint: I'll be doing her a favour....i watched when he made her cry the first time and I let it go and now he did it again

then she attempted to walk towards Pops but something stopped her

Saint: stop fighting me beast!

he shouted then Melusi chanted a protection spell pointing his palm at Pops and it covered him

Melusi: Saint stop that's your grandfather you are trying to harm!

*** he said trying to get through to him then she looked up with her mouth opened and black smoke came out of her mouth***

Jay& Snakes: yhoool!

*** then they cursed and went down for cover looking shaken and she looked at Pops***

Saint: you hurt her.... you pay with your life

she tried to move towards him but the beast stopped him again

Saint: I said stop it!

*** then Baba quickly took his phone and dialed Ray's numbers and he put it on loudspeaker while

Saint was busy being stopped by the beast from reaching Pops***

Saint: fine let's see if you can stop this!

***he said to the beast ***

Voice: hello Mr Khumalo

Ray answered the call and Saint stopped what he was about to do and turned to Baba

Ray: Mr Khumalo?

Baba: you are on loud speaker and Skele what what Saint is awake and it wants to harm my son

he said with a serious tone

Ray: wait what?

Saint: you going to regret doing that old man!

***he said trying to charge at Baba but the beast stopped him and Melusi chanted the protection spell with his palm pointing at Baba and he was covered with it ***

Ray: SAINT!

*** Baba moved the phone towards Saint and Saint stopped***

Saint: ooh I repeat you gonna regret doing that old man!

Ray: እምም ሞትን ያታልላል ይህ ደግሞ ሞትን ያ (STOP WHAT YOU'RE DOING NOW)

*** he spoke using the forbidden language and Saint kept quiet a bit***

Saint: they made mommy cry

Ray: and what you're about to do wont?

Saint: I'll be doing her a favor they don't deserve her

Ray: all those people in there mean the world to her and they deserve her and guess what she can't live without them so trust me when she finds out you hurt them....

Saint interrupted him*

Saint: they made her sad and cry and they should pay!

Ray: listen Saint you are a demon so you won't understand how humans live.... Family is everything and humans do make each other mad angry and cry every now and then but that doesn't mean we kill each other when that happens cause we also make each other happy too

Saint didn't say anything as he was thinking

Ray: now stop all this or else I'll tell her you the one that hurt her family members and believe me she'll be angry with you and she will never forgive you

Saint didn't say anything

Ray: now stop all this nonsense and apologize to your elders now!

he continued to keep quiet

Ray: SAINT!

he still didn't say anything

Ray: fine your mother will hear about this!

Saint: ok

she turned to look at Pops

Saint: my apologies

Ray: he's your grandfather damn it and without him your mother won't be here so say it like you mean it and never ever try this nonsense again....you think you're special just because you are tied to my son's soul right that we can't do anything to you well guess what if ever you hurt any of her family members or mine she'll get stressed to a point that she'll miscarry and you'll go back to hell where you belong nx.....now you better follow from the beast footsteps and stop acting like you're untouchable....you know the bible in and out but you fail to follow its teachings!

*** Saint didn't say anything....it was like he was thinking hard***

Ray: im talking to you Saint!

Saint: I hear you

Ray: now apologize and go back to sleep you're straining Mbali and my son with your nonsense

Saint: my apologies grandfather I was trying to protect mommy cause you made her sad it will never happen again and im sorry for disrespecting you and please don't tell her about all this

Pops just nodded looking hurt by what was about to happen....he knew his behavior towards Mbali at the hospital was uncalled for but he was just too angry and he also felt like she disrespected him he didn't mean for all of this to happen....he wondered what would have happened if Ray didn't answer Baba's call they would probably be dead by now cause even though the beast was stopping him but it can't stop that black smoke that's hanging on the ceiling....Anyway Saint then looked at Baba Melusi and also at Jay and Snakes who were on the floor

Saint: im sorry for disrespecting all of you im just looking out for mommy

then she looked up and opening her mouth wide and that black smoke entered her mouth while they were looking at her with their eyes popped out and she looked down and sat on the cold floor and she crossed her legs and bowed her head

Ray: SAINT!

Baba: I think he went back to sleep

Ray: ooh ok

Baba: and Sambulo you need to come here so we can discuss this Saint character thoroughly cause it looks like there's a lot we don't know

Ray: I'll do just that Mr Khumalo

Baba: good

then he ended the call and Melusi limped towards Mbali and he saw that her skin was now back to normal and her wet hair now looked dry

Melusi: let's take her back to her bedroom

He said looking at Jay and Snakes who were now on their feet

Snakes: ungangibheki! (don't look at me!)

Pops just went to her and he picked her up bridal style without saying anything and Melusi opened the door for him and he walked out with her in his arms...then out of the blue Snakes kicked Melusi on his butt

Melusi: kuyini manje? (what is it now?)

Snakes: what did you do when you pointed at Pops and Baba speaking gibberish?

Melusi: I was covering them with a protective spell

Snakes: oho...oho so what about mina no Jay (me and Jay)

Melusi looked at him with a frown

Melusi: haw you didn't need the protection spell at that time

Snakes kicked him on his thigh but not too hard

Snakes: that lunatic demon almost killed us and wena uthi I didn't need the protection spell at that time

Melusi just shook his head defeated

Baba: Nhlaka!

then Snakes looked at Melusi

Snakes: this is not over Mr. Gibberish

he said pointing at him

Melusi: you know I can just go upstairs and whisper to Mbali's belly and tell Saint that you once slapped his mother and have him deal with you

Snakes eyes popped out and Melusi chuckled

Snakes: uyangisongela manje Dlamini?(you're threatening me now Dlamini)

limping out

Melusi: you started first...you know I cant use a gun or fight like you and that im younger than you so Saint will be my defense

Baba chuckled and Snakes went after Melusi

Snakes: ooh is that how things will be mmmmh I threaten you and you go running to a demon for help

Melusi smirked

Melusi: yeah...you have your guns and knives and I have Saint

then he laughed

Snakes: masimbakho Melusi (you cunt)

Melusi: nawe nhlaka (you too)

Snakes: uzonya Melusi(you'll shit yourself Melusi)

Melusi: SAINT!

he shouted his name and Snakes stopped walking and Melusi laughed

Melusi: finally Saint waze wangilamulela bo (finally Saint has come through for me)

he said laughing and he slowly climbed the stairs

Snakes: ngizokthola golo (I'll get you)

Melusi laughed

Melusi: nawe golo lakho msunu

Snakes rushed to him on the stairs

Melusi: MA!.... SAINT!

he shouted laughing and Snakes slapped him at the back of his head

Ma: yini Melusi...ukuphi?(what's wrong Melusi....where are you?)

Melusi: uNhlaka uyangi... (Nhlaka is...)

Snakes covered Melusi's mouth

Snakes: voetsek Melusi man

Melusi chuckled then Snakes let him go

Ma: WEH MELUSI UKUPHI? (Melusi where are you)

she shouted after him

Snakes: im going to get you back for this mama's boy

then he hit him at the back of his head again and he rushed up the stairs leaving Melusi laughing then Ma emerged and she rushed towards Melusi

Ma: are you ok?...is it painful when you climb the stairs?

Melusi nodded and Ma rubbed his back

Ma: ooh mfana wami kuzolunga yezwa(ooh my boy all will be well you hear me)

Melusi: yebo ma

Ma: ok let me help you up the stairs

***she helped him up the stairs ***

^

^

^

The following morning Ray found Ruslan busy reading a book sitting at the back in the pool house with Miles sleeping peacefully on top of a pillow that Ruslan put on the floor on top of a mat

Ray: can we talk

Ruslan: don't worry I bathed him so he's clean of ticks and viruses

Ray sighed

Ray: that's good so can we...talk

Ruslan: I don't know are you here to tell me to get rid of Miles?

Ray sighed and he sat next to him

Ray: what's going on with you Ruu...why are you attached to this monkey?

Ruslan: why not...just because it's a monkey so I shouldn't be attached to it

Ray sighed

Ray: im not here to fight Ruu I just wanna understand what's going on

Ruslan: I have zombies in my house back home and you worried about me taking care of Miles?

Ray sighed

Ray: fine enough about Miles so what did you do to the woman

Ruslan: she's coming back today well that's if she already knows her evil creatures are dead for real this time and that Miles is gone and not to mention that her house is burned to the ground

Ray: damn! wait you said evil creatures

Ruslan: yeah I found some evil things under her bed they looked like some evil dwarfs with a horrible smell

Ray: what?

Ruslan: yeah....she killed people around her neighborhood and turned them into those things and she used them to do evil and torment people and that's the same person that ya'll wanted help from

Ray sighed

Ray: we didn't know man

Ruslan: well its all good Miles is gonna be fine and she's gonna die so its all good

Ray: im sorry for my reaction earlier man I just...its a monkey man

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: I know you and pets don't mix but that doesn't mean you should watch them suffer where else you could do something about it

Ray: you should've been white you know...i mean white people are the ones that care about animal cruelty and shit while many black people don't.... I mean others even see black cats as evil while white people see them as cute pets

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: true man even back home people don't want to see a black cat near them but what they don't know is they are not born evil humans are the ones using them for evil purposes

Ray: mmmmh true...anyway what you gonna do about this Thandi issue cause it wont be easy man

Ruslan smiled widely

Ruslan: I know and what I know too is that I want her

Ray just shook his head with a smirk

Ray: did I mention that she's one crazy woman

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: my kind of woman

they both laughed

Ruslan: you crazy man and I wish you all the best cause I wasn't playing when I said her man is from Limpopo

Ruslan: and im from Guinea Bissau and I have zombies rooming around inside my house and yard

Ray laughed shaking his head

Ray: you need God in your life man

Ruslan: don't associate the big man's name with me or he might strike you down dead now.... im sure he hates my guts for trying to copy his son

Ray laughed hard

Ruslan: well not necessarily copy him cause I only zombify those spirits that haven't crossed over yet but you get what im saying but much respect to him and his son though...much respect

he said the last part hitting his chest with the side of his fist and he did the peace sign with his two fingers pointing up in the sky and Ray laughed harder

Ray: you and Jabu are just cut from the same rod I don't know how cause ya'll aren't related but you are

Ruslan chuckled and Ray stopped laughing

Ray: Saint woke up last night and he nearly showed the Khumalos hell on earth

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: I know and I watched the whole thing on my crystal ball

Ray: man and you didn't do anything...what if he hurt them or killed them

Ruslan: and I'll say good ridded to bad rubbish especially to your father in law

Ray: come on man don't say that...Mbali loves her father

Ruslan: mmmmh and she doesn't know that he wants her unborn baby dead

Ray sighed

Ruslan: look I get that he's shocked and confused and mad about the whole Saint La Parca shit but that baby inside his daughter's womb is innocent in all this he didn't ask to be conceive hell he didn't even ask to have a demon spirit attached to his soul so why want him dead...that old fool is just a hypocrite

Ray: well he's being a father Ruu

Ruslan: well im a father and my other son is gay and he's married to another man in Switzerland but you don't see me wanting him dead

Ray sighed

Ruslan: I know he's your father in law to be but I don't like him....i mean they have beasts and those shitty things are ugly as fuck and smell like wet fur and it's not a nice smell trust me hell he didn't even ask to have a demon spirit attached to his soul so why want him dead...that old fool is just a hypocrite

Ray: well he's being a father Ruu

Ruslan: well im a father and my other son is gay and he's married to another man in Switzerland but you don't see me wanting him dead

Ray sighed

Ruslan: I know he's your father in law to be but I don't like him....i mean they have beasts and those shitty things are ugly as fuck and smell like wet fur and it's not a nice smell trust me with their 'peppermint needing' mouth that smells like a rotting dead animal but you don't see us judging them

Ray chuckled

Ruslan: but I like killer he's grounded and never acts irrational I think he's one of those man that think before acting and I respect those kinda man they make great leaders

Ray nodded

Ray: mmmh and can you believe he calls me by my Zulu name which sounds weird cause no one calls me that...well except for Deshaun even though he call me 'Sam Bull' instead of Sambulo

Ruslan chuckled nervously and they kept quiet

Ray: you do know you gonna have to tell me whatever it is you're hiding from me one of this days right

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: yeah

then Miles woke up and Ruslan sighed with relief that Miles waking up was gonna stop this uncomfortable topic Ray just raised

Ruslan: hey boy you are awake?...come here and let me check your wounds

Ray got up

Ray: let me leave you and your new son...i wonder if Thandi will be able to handle all this maybe I should start calling her mother of monkeys and zombies

Ruslan: your mama...in fact your entire past present and future generation...mxm thunder fire that your dirty mouth

*** he said with a Nigerian accent and Ray laughed loud while walking away**

Ruslan: i wonder too if Mbali will be able to handle La Parca and Saint bloody mumu!

he shouted looking at Ray who was walking away

Ray: well she has no choice!

he shouted back

Ruslan: well Thandi has no choice too mumu!

he also shouted back

Ray: I repeat...her man is from Limpopo bros!

he shouted laughing and Ruslan chuckled while shaking his head

Ray: your uncle Ray is too forward and full of shit sometimes right buddy

he said looking at Miles who was now sitting on his lap busy making monkey sounds

^

^

^

*** Naledi was now in the bathroom taking a shower...she had mixed emotions with what the doctor said to her well he said he was discharging her the following day but Ike was gonna remain in the hospital until he's satisfied with him... on the other hand she was happy that she's finally going home and she's gonna be with Lesedi and Omphile while on the other hand she was sad that she was going to leave Ike behind....she was lost in thoughts while standing in the shower with warm water

pouring over her when the door opened and she quickly covered her breast and pussy and she remembered that she forgot to lock the door***

Naledi: who is it?

*** she asked but no one answered then Heath walked in naked and her eyes popped out***

Naledi: what...what are you doing here....naked....ohh my God what are you doing?

she asked him as he closed and locked the door and he limped towards the shower and he got in and switched off the tab and Naledi moved away to the corner and she swallowed hard when her eyes landed on his dick that was growing hard

Heath: why are you acting like you haven't sucked on it before

he said with a smirk and Naledi closed her eyes and looked away swallowing hard

Naledi: what are you doing here Heath?

Heath: taking a shower with my wife

Naledi: ple...please leave Heath I need to shower alone

she said feeling a bit off firstly because those naked pictures of him and that girl washed over her mind and secondly because of her body that wasn't what it used to be anymore her belly wasn't flat anymore and it was worse cause she couldn't do anything about it like to use a waist trainer because of the stab wound and also the C-section wound she needed to heal completely first... she then felt his hands on her back and she froze

Naledi: He...Heath ple...please go I need to shower

Heath: I love you Obi m

she swallowed hard when his hand travelled down

Heath: thank you for making me a father again to a bouncing baby boy and not forgetting my other boy that is now an angel

she swallowed hard as tears filled her eyes

Heath: I messed up and made you cry Obi m and im sorry about that I swear on Bunke I will make it all up to you even if it's the last thing I do

she didn't say anything and he squeezed her butt and she jumped a bit

Naledi: Heath please stop I need to shower in peace

*** she said trying to sound firm and he got closer to her and she felt his erect dick poking her and her heart started beating fast***

Heath: fine I'll leave you to shower in peace after doing this

***he quickly turned her face and smashed his lips on hers and she froze....he turned her around and pinned her on the wall with his lips still on hers making sure he doesn't press himself on her wounds and he sucked on her bottom lip....she didn't kiss him back for some time but eventually she

gave in and Heath moved his hands and he touched her nana and he body stiffened she tried to push him away but she froze when he started rubbing her clit and an uncontrollable moan escaped her mouth and Heath stopped kissing her and he smirked***

Naledi: Heath pleaseee stoop

she said breathing heavily

Heath: make me Obi m

he said kissing her neck with his fingers rubbing on her clit in circular motion

Heath: you are mine Naledi and there's nothing and no one that's gonna change that including you

she moaned loud and he increased his pace she wanted to stop him but she couldn't cause she knew he had her where he wants her

Naledi: Heath we cant...i cant...please

***she whispered to him and she immediately gasped when his finger went in and she grabbed him tight on his arms ***

Heath: I love you so damn much to a point that even muti failed to make me hate you

he said fingering her in slow motion and she bit her bottom lip as she accepted the feeling of ecstasy he was giving her

Heath: do you still love me Obi m?

he asked her and she didn't say anything she just moaned with her eyes closed and he increased his pace and she moaned out loud

Heath: I asked you a question Mrs Owoh-Masden

Naledi: i...gosh Heath...we...i

and he entered another finger and started off with a fast pace with his face closer to hers

Heath: answer me Obi m

*** he was now breathing closer to her face and she didn't say anything she was concentrating on the feeling she was getting as he finger fucked her with a fast pace***

Heath: I'll stop if you don't answer me

Naledi: don't.... ooh gosh im close Heath faster...faster

Heath: answer me or I'll stop

he was also aroused and his dick was rock hard and painful

Heath: answer me or I'll stop Naledi

he went faster and her body stiffened and she groaned holding him tight and she came on his hand and he stopped and looked at her

Heath: now answer me or I'll fuck you until you do even though we know we can't

she breathed heavily and swallowed

Heath: im not kidding Naledi

he grabbed her hand and made her hold his dick and she gasped

Heath: can you feel how hard I am so believe me when I say I'll rip your nana apart if you don't answer me

she swallowed hard as she could see he was serious she wanted to say the three words but it was hard for her

Naledi: I...I still lo...love you

he smiled feeling relieved

Heath: say...say that again

he said moving her hand up and down his rock hard dick looking intensely at her and Naledi swallowed hard

Naledi: I still love you but...but I don't think I trust you with my heart anymore

he perked her lips

Heath: as long as you still love me it's enough Obi m and as for your trust I'll earn it back

then he moved his face and he whispered to her

Heath: turn around

Naledi: huh?

Heath: turn around I need to release before I bust

her eyes popped out as she thought that he was about to do anal sex with her

Naledi: ummm Heath I think you should go now I need to...ummm to shower

Heath: I said turn around Naledi

she swallowed hard feeling scared and she slowly turned around and she felt his hand on her appetizing butt and he caressed it first then he grabbed it and squeezed and he groaned from deep down his throat....she stood there waiting to be penetrated but all he did was tighten his grip on her butt while groaning then she heard the sound "well ya'll know which sound im talking about" and she realized that he was self-servicing himself he went for some time caressing grabbing and squeezing her butt with his other hand....his grip got tighter and tighter and he groaned out loud and he came on her ass and loosened the grip

Heath: listen here Obi m from here onwards its forward we go and not backward I know I messed up and failed you big time and im willing to do anything possible to fix us and our marriage and I won't rest until I do....now take a quick shower and come join me and lke we have serious things we need to discuss that I think I should've told you when we met

***he kissed her cheek and he open the tab water and he washed his dick briefly and his hands then he walked out and Naledi turned and she sighed.....she wondered what is it that he wanted to

discuss with her that sounded serious she hoped it's not a "im sorry but i once cheated on you" kind of discussion cause he heart is still recovering from those pictures so another heart break will surely break her some more***

70

INSERT.....70

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Naledi came out of the bathroom all dressed and she put her toiletry bag inside the drawer and she sat on top of the bed and Heath got up with his son in his arms and he went to put him inside his cot as he was sleeping again and he went back to the single couch he was sitting on and he looked down playing with his fingers with Naledi looking at him with her heart beating fast

Heath: i...I have multiple personality disorder

he just blurted it out just like that and he took a deep breath while Naledi frowned

Naledi: what?

He breathed it and out loudly and he raised his eyes and looked at her and she had a frown on her face

Heath: I...I have multiple personality disorder

he repeated what he said

Heath: its...its also called Dissociative identity disorder (DID)

He sighed

Heath: well treatment helps but it can't be cured and it's a lifelong thing

Naledi looked at him with extreme shock on her face*

Heath: ummm it started when I was kidnapped years ago by some Nigerians who wanted my father to do something illegal for them and to encourage him to be fast.....they...

he stopped talking as he got emotional and angry at the same time

Heath: they tortured me doing unspeakable things to me so to survive the torture I decided to create Caesar and The Observe to survive

***Naledi's eyes filled with tears and she just let them fall with her bottom lip trembling ***

Heath: Caesar is the cool guy who can go psycho at any given moment but what I like about him is whoever is close to my heart they automatically matter to him too then there's The Observer...

He sighed still looking down

Heath: well he's a psychotic bastard and dangerous cause he doesn't give a damn about anyone but himself and he destroys everything that might be standing on his way...he also attacked Jabu to a point that Jabu ended up shooting me on my thigh to stop me from hurting him some more
he couldn't say "kill him" as he didn't want to traumatize her more than she already is

Heath: ummm after I was released after my dad did what they wanted him to do I created MAD DOG to cope with what I went through and well he suffers from PTSD (post-traumatic stress disorder) and...and...

Naledi put her hand on her mouth shocked

Heath: well he doesn't talk at all and he has trouble sleeping and likes to keep to himself more than anything and he's the most dangerous personality I have more dangerous than The Observer but what I like about him is his purpose is to protect me and avenge for me and not harm my loved ones but still he's dangerous and deadly.....then there are more personalities that I use when im on "the job"...there's the tech guy Slick Chase the bilingual one and other small ones

Naledi just sat there shocked to the core with her eyes popped out

Heath: but you've only met Caesar I think twice since you've been hospitalized and I know you probably remember

Naledi: ooh...my...God!

she whispered

Heath: look...i know this...this is too much for you but...but I did get help Obi m and they only came out now cause I couldn't handle everything that was happening...Lerato stabbing you then Bunke's death and Ike looking so pale and tiny in that incubator then I started feeling resentment towards you only to find out that my own mother is bewitching me so I hate you and end up abusing you and you also end up leaving me then that whole scene of me being drugged and...

he kept quiet and he clenched his jaws

Heath: I love you Naledi more than I love myself and I live for you Obi m for you and our children and I just cant lose you

he said with a breaking voice and a sob escaped his mouth

Heath: please Naledi I cant even picture my life without you in it...I just cant so please take me as I am Obi m abeg please accept me with all my flaws

***hearing him say all this made her cry and he quickly got up and went to sit next to her and he pulled her to him and held her as she cried until she calmed down and they stayed in complete

silence for some time with her sniffing every now and then while she rested her head on his firm chest***

Naledi: where...where you telling the truth when you said you don't remember what happened after you passed out

***Heath sighed**

Heath: yeah I swear on all my children Obi m I just woke up to what I found and...

she interrupted him

Naledi: shhh that's all I want to know

he kept quiet

Naledi: your mom?

he sighed

Heath: yeah

Naledi: so you didn't mean what you said about Lerato

Heath: yeah it wasn't me Obi m the muti was starting to kick in

she sighed and kept quiet

Naledi: im scared Heath....what if...what if you hurt us unwillingly....what if what happened to Jabu happens to me and I can't fight you off or that Observer personality

***he held her tight ***

Heath: I swear I'd rather kill myself than hurt you or our children Obi m please believe me

Naledi.....i could've just kept quiet about this but since im fixing our marriage I wanted to be honest with you about this since its part of me....please don't leave me

Naledi: shhh its ok

***she said that and just remained in his arms but her head was all over the place and she couldn't believe that her Heath has multiple personality disorder it was just hard especially about finding out why he created them in the first place....she couldn't believe that Heath went through all that trauma and he smiles and laughs everyday as if his life had been perfect while she still can't get over growing up the way she did with Mamiki always reminding her about her albinism and her 'useless father' Kitso abandoning her while she was pregnant her late uncle Thabo who wanted to rape her every chance he got not forgetting people in the neighborhood especially kids at school who refused to play with her cause their parents warned them and told them that she's an abomination and a curse so they should stay away from her and not even touch herthen there's koko.....but her husband still smiled laughed and always made sure that she's happy all the time well excluding his recent shortcomings but she admitted that he's been there for her no

matter what and maybe she should return the favor too by looking passed the multiple personality thingy***

^

^

^

***She was dancing with some guy at a tavern in Hebron (Pretoria) she came to visit her aunt that lived there...well more like she was running away from her abusive boyfriend who decided to blame her for what that guy that came to 'ask' for directions in her house back in KZN did to him and she decided that enough is enough so she called her aunt and told her she's coming to visit her and now she's at some tavern with her cousin Phumi and her cousin's friends enjoying herself...well more like drowning her sorrows with alcohol and dancing it was Sunday at night around 10 and there was a stokvel they called 'skeem sam' around the hood and her Phumi's boyfriend was the host this time around.....

Well besides the fact that she was running from her boyfriend she was also enjoying herself and the new environment every guy wanted her cause she's new around and that built her confidence a bit since it was low because of the abuse she suffered....on the other hand some women were hating on her cause she was a yellow bone with a curvaceous body and tiny waist slightly Chinese eyes and a black and caramel afro and pouty lips....she didn't like her curvaceous body cause men approached her because of her ass and curves and to just tap it and pass and not because she's smart and kind....she has never been with a man who loved her for her and not for her ass and that has always been her painshe knew she's worth more than being men's play thing or a sex object but it was like she had bad luck hanging over her as all the men that approached her wanted one thing from her which is SEX....

When she met her boyfriend he seemed different from all those other men at first and that's why she fell hard for him but after hitting it he changed he started being possessive and controlling in a bad way and also started cheating on her until she had enough and when she wanted to end things with him he would beat her up and threatened that if she leaves him he would kill her and himself so she stayed with him unwillingly.....and guess what he never stopped cheating so she slowly fell out of love with him but stayed with him cause she didn't want to be part of the statistics of women killed by their spouses... well even though he changed but he had never laid

a hand on her before that incident where Menzi punched him and she knew if she hanged around he was surely gonna kill her cause after he woke up from passing out he beat her up so hard that she was bedridden for a couple of days until the pain subsided and became bearable so when she recovered fully she ran and came this side***

Guy: are vaye re ye ko dladleng laka for two rounds nyana re tla bowa baby girl (lets go to my house for two rounds and we will come back baby girl)

the guy she was dancing with whispered to her and she shook her head no

Guy: ok ok fine then a re ye ko karing yaka ge (lets go to my car then)

Kazi turned and gave the guy a disgusted look

Kazi: uma ungibheka wena ubona intombazane eshibhile?(when you look at me do you see a cheap girl?)

she said with an attitude

Guy: ok bona ge lets go have fun nyana and ko gofa mavuso a thousand nyana (look lets go have fun and I'll give you R1000 in the morning)

Kazi: askies?

she asked clearly offended by what the guy was saying to her

Guy: ok ge 1 point 5 (R1500)

he said with his eyes going from her curves to her chest and to her face and she felt anger brewing inside of her

Kazi: ngibheke kahle wena slima (look at me very well you fool) im not a prostitute mina so keep your useless money and go buy a toothpaste and brush for those yellow teeth
nx.....hlukana nam phantsi (leave me alone) before I embarrass you mgodoyi nx!

she hates it when men did this to her...she hated people judging her because of her body she hated being viewed as a sex toy...she knows she's more than that but men fail to see it.....anyway she turned with the aim of walking away but the guy grabbed her ass squeezing it and she turned with a hot slap and it landed across his face and people gasped with shock cause they knew who she just slapped

Kazi: ucabanga ukuthi wenzani wena slima!(what do you think you are doing you fool!)

she said with an angry voice

Guy: o shapa nna ka mpama wena sfebe?(you slapped me you bitch?)

the guy said with an angry look on his face and that didn't shake Kazi

Kazi: and gizo k'shapa nge mpama futhi (I'll slap you again) or better yet kick your useless balls if you try that shit with me again msunu nx

***she turned to walk away but then he grabbed her by her right arm and roughly turned her around and slapped her so hard across her face and people gasped while others screamed which caught her cousin's attention and she got up and rushed to them ***

Guy: o shapa nna ka mpama wena sfebe wa itsi gore ke mang (you slapped me you bitch do you know who I am)

Kazi was just covering her face with her left arm for just in case he slapped her again but she was brewing with anger inside

Phumi: Jojo please motlogele (please let her go)

Jojo: o betha nna ka mpama (you slapped me)

***he said that still not believing that a woman slapped him)

Phimi: askies bathong Jojo ke le newbie so gaitsi gore dilo di tsamaya byang around le gore o mang askies motlogele assomblief Jojo (sorry Jojo she's a newbie so she doesn't know how things are around here and she doesn't even know who you are so please let her go Jojo)

she pleaded for Kazi and Jojo clicked his tongue and let her go

Jojo: you owe me sfebe ke wena next time ke tlo bontsa mmao nx in fact o patella ka kuku eo o ganang ka yona ekare e etsitswe ka gold nx (you owe me you bitch next time I'll show you flames in fact you'll pay with that pussy that you're busy being stingy with as if it's made of gold)

then he walked away and Kazi clicked her tongue looking at him walking away

Jojo: voetsek! ao bone o mo tseng nx (piss off! can't you see you're on my way nx)

He said shouting at some girl and he roughly pushed her out of his way and he went outside

Phumi: o shap? (are you ok?)

Kazi nodded

Phumi: mxm etswa mo mpyeng ele yao befa bile e tshwere ke Aids.....a re ye ro nwa and enjoy ourselves

she said pulling her to their spot and they sat down and she gave Kazi and bottle of savanna

^

^

^

****the following day Kazi woke up with a heavy head and she got out of bed and took her phone that was on top of the side drawer and she walked to the door like a zombie with hangover showing her flames (her and her cousin Phumi were sharing the backroom)...she opened the door and she found Phumi sitting outside smoking and when Phumi heard some movement and someone groaning she turned and laughed as she saw the state Kazi was in****

Phumi: yhuu kae respect(a) babalaz shem (yhuu I respect a hangover shame)

she said laughing

Kazi: tjerrrr no man siphuze uhlobo luni lwebhiya? (what kind of beer did we drink?)

Phumi laughed

Phumi: Sabanna lovie or ukhohliwe (Savanna or you forgot).....

then she laughed

Phumi: shame you look like shit mtase

Kazi groaned and she sat down

Phumi: whuu hai shem uyaphuza mtwana ka Joy (shame you can drink Joy's child)

Kazi: kungani ungangivumi (why didn't you stop me)

Phumi: bewu dinga ukuphuza ukuze ukhululeke ngoba ubusathukuthele shem (you needed to get drunk to loosen up cause you were still angry)

Kazi sighed and she took Phumi's bottle of water and drank from it

Kazi: so who was that piece of shit?

Phumi: some neighborhood thug and guess what..... he's dead

Kazi frowned at her

Kazi: what?... kwenzakaleni? (what happened) I remember seeing him when we left even though I was fucked up drunk

Phumi shrugged her shoulders

Phumi: apparently he was found in the morning with his face cut multiple times by something sharp and shot more than 10 times

Kazi: ooh my gosh... what?

she said covering her mouth with her hand shocked

Phumi: mmmmh bona I know ne ele motete wa motho(look I know he was a piece of shit) but he didn't deserve to die like that shem

Kazi: yho

she clapped her hands shocked by what she was hearing

Kazi: so abantu bathini around(what are people saying around)....did they see anything?

Phumi: others say vroeg ka bo 4 so (others say in the early hours of the morning around 4 or so)they saw some buffed up guy punching him and he was put in the boot of a black car and it drove off

Kazi: yho mhlawumbe yizitha zakhe khumbula ukuthi usho ukuthi uyisikhumba (maybe its his enemies remember you said he's a thug)

Phumi: mmmmh maybe...ai mara bambulele kabhlungu shem (they killed him a painful way)...its like they tortured him first before killing him

Kazi: yho ai asazi anyway where is aunty?

Phumi: her boyfriend came to pick her up.... a re o boya tomorrow (she said she's coming back tomorrow)

Kazi giggled

Kazi: aunty is living it up bakhithi

Phumi: living it up ya masepa she's old her age mates ba loya (are witches) yena she's busy riding dicks mxm

Kazi laughed and she held her head as it became painful when she did

Kazi: leave aunty alone wena don't be a cock blocker please...she's happy so that should make you happy too I mean she buys food buys electricity and gives you money whenever you beg her for it and she's busy renovating this house unlike my mother who's doing a vat and sat with another woman's husband...im sure udlisile indoda yomuntu uJoy (im sure she bewitched the guy Joy)

Phumi laughed

Phumi: hai your mom is just....yah

Kazi: Joy is stupid Phumi Im sure she's not even saving up from the money he gives her....all she does is spend his money on clothes and weaves....mxm I even think she's not my biological mother cause udom that aunt of yours

Phumi laughed

Phumi: ooh please you look like her so she's your mother mara hai aunty is an old side dish ya stlaela shem (she's a foolish old side dish)

Kazi: old side dish?

Phumi nodded and they laughed

Kazi: and as for your mom just let her be I mean the guy is not married and she hasn't forgotten you as she takes care of you unlike me the last time I saw Joy it was three years ago that time I was involved in a car accident and the last time I talked to her was 7 months ago when I called

her and told her I was hospitalized nge appendix and she didn't even come to see me so let your mom be and be grateful ukuthi she still takes care of you as old as you are

Phumi: askies mtase

she said rubbing her arm

Kazi: aaah im used to it I've always been alone ever since my dad passed away and im glad I went to school and so I managed to use my RAF money (road accident fund) wisely when they paid me after the accident and now I have my own place and I invested some so I don't go hungry in the long run and plus my salon back in KZN is doing well so wearing this hearing aid for my affected ear for the rest of my life is not a bad thing anymore I mean even some scars are fading away slowly and they aren't that bad too

Phumi: courtesy of a tissue oil mixed with castor oil olive oil coconut oil and glycerin

Kazi: mmmmh you know us blacks we just mix things and izinto zenzeka (and things happen)

*** they laughed then her phone rang and it was one of her friends back home so she answered***

Kazi: my bish

the friend laughed

Lele: aow my bish unjani? (how are you?)

Kazi laughed

Kazi: ngiright my bish and wena? (im alright my bish and you?)

Lele: ahhh nam ngiright my bish ngik'khumbulile nje (im also ok my bish I just miss you)

Kazi: aow nami ngik'khubule shem(I miss you too)

Lele: so ubuya nini? (when are you coming back?)

Kazi: ai angazi Lele(I don't know Lele)

Lele: hai Kazi usho ukuthini awazi?(what do you mean you don't know)

Kazi: im having fun here but don't worry I'll come back I promise

Lele: yho ok....anyway I can tell you haven't heard the sad news

Kazi: what sad news?

she asked frowning

Lele: Phila was found dead inside his car by the bush yesterday

Kazi: wait what?

she asked not believing what she was hearing

Lele: mmh and they said he's been dead for a few days

Kazi froze with her hand on her mouth and tears filled her eyes...even though she despised Phila for what he did to her but she still loved and cared for him in a way

Phumi: Kazi what's wrong?

Lele: hello.....hello...mngani? (friend?)

she spoke on the phone but Kazi was just too shocked

Kazi: what...how...how did he die?

she asked with a breaking voice as tears were now falling down her cheeks

Lele: the police are waiting for amaautopsy result cause he was burned along with his car

Kazi: ooh God.....ummm how sure are you that its him?

Lele: cause they found his wallet house keys and car keys still intact not far from the car

Kazi sniffed as more tears came out

Kazi: ooh my God

she said as a sob escaped her mouth and she quickly dropped the call and she cried....Phumi went closer to her and comforted her

Phumi: who died?

she asked her concerned cause it seemed like she was close to whoever died

Kazi: its...its Phila... my... my ex

Phumi: the same Phila that abused you?

she nodded slowly

Kazi: i...i still loved him Phumi

Phumi: mmmmh

she said with a bored tone she didn't understand how she can cry like this for a man that made her run away from her house cause he was abusive and also threatened to kill her

Phumi: a robale ka khotso shem (may he rest in peace shame)

she said rolling her eyes and luckily Kazi didn't see her

71

INSERT.....71

.

.

.

NARRATED

.

.

.

***** THREE MONTHS LATER*****

*** it's been three months and a lot has happened Ike was discharged from hospital and Naledi and Heath couldn't be happier well things between them have been slowly but surely getting better even though Naledi still doesn't fully trust him but he's been good and proving to Naledi that he's still the same Heath she fell in love with and they even decided to go see a marriage counselor and their sessions with her are going well. They even celebrated Naledi's birthday and when Heath handed Naledi papers stating that she's the owner and founder of a registered non-profit organization that deals and also helps people living with albinism and that the will also be bursaries and scholarships funded by Ray Heath Jabu and even Mr Owoh-Masden senior's company in the country for the youth living with albinism as her birthday present she couldn't believe it she cried so much that Thandi Mbali Amo Patience (mother in law) Mj and Omphile joined her she couldn't believe Heath did that for her so she was grateful to him and his brothers and father in law too....Well now she also want to open an orphanage for abandoned babies and mostly for babies born with albinism and she's busy with Thandi coming up with a campaign that will encourage women who gives birth to babies born with albinism and don't want them to take them to a nearby church she'll be working with and leave them there and the baby will be picked up from there and taken to the orphanage instead of killing them or selling them to witchdoctors for their body parts so she's a busy woman tackling being a wife mother and now a business woman/philanthropist..... and at least Heath helped her out by getting her a few people to help her with the whole thing....

As for Mbali well the following day after that whole Saint scene she could feel the tension and awkward vibes her father and brothers gave her and she wondered if it's because of what happened at the hospital when she "lashed" out at them but what she didn't know is if it wasn't for Ray she would've been an orphan..... as for things between her and Ray well they have been good even though her hormones are showing Ray flames but since he knew what was really going on with her he just soldiered on and took it like a man....Ray even brought his elders to the Khumalo household and Baba convinced Pops to accept Ray's damages money and lobola money for the sake of their grandchild inside Mbali's womb and even though she could see that her father wasn't ecstatic about the whole thing but she was grateful he agreed and that he even sat in on the negotiations.....now she lives with Ray in his house and Mateo moved out to an apartment and it was his choice after Mbali showed him flames one time when she went to him and asked him where are her kfc hot wings she asked him to go buy for her (and FYI she didn't

ask him for them) so after that encounter he told Ray he would like to move out to an apartment nearby to “give” them privacy but Ray saw right through him and he laughed at him so much that he even called Diego who went back to Cuba and told him about what happened to Mateo.

Well with Kazi she moved on from Phila’s death and she went back home but still visits her cousin and aunt and Phumi also visits her and their relationship has grown stronger since.... another thing weird things have been happening around her.... firstly she met a guy she liked and they hit it off the first week and out of the blue the guy just dumped her using the “ it’s not you it’s me ” line on her and just like that he was gone and since then three more guys have dumped her using the same line and she just decided to stop dating for a while cause she couldn’t understand what’s wrong with her so she’s been concentrating on her salon and leaving everything else to God****

.
. .

Nomvula: umuthi wakho awuzange usebenze nhlobo.... umthombo wami wangitshela ukuthi basashadile futhi bahlala ndawonye (hai makhosi your muti didn’t work at all..... my source told me that they are still married and living together)

she said to her witchdoctor looking angry

Witchdoctor: umuthi wami uyasebenza so ungafiki lapha kuzongitshela udoti uyangizwa (hei my muti works so don’t come here and tell me nonsense you hear me)

Nomvula: heh ngibusy ngikutshela ukuthi indodana yami isashadile naleyo nto and wena ubusy ungitshela imfucuza (im busy telling you my son is still married to that thing and you’re busy telling me rubbish)

Witchdoctor: hei wena ungakhohlwa ukuthi ukhuluma nobani angzange ngikutshela ukuthi kuyoba nzima ukubahlukanisa ngenxa yothando ababelana ngalo...angzange yini? (hei wena don’t forget who you’re talking to... didn’t I tell you that it will be difficult to separate them because of the love they share.... didn’t i?)

*** the witchdoctor said with a pissed off tone and Nomvula looked away***

Nomvula: kodwa nokho ngenza konke owkusho ukuthi kufanele ngikwenze.... ngiyeke ngisho ne-tikoloshi yakho ilale nami futhi namanje isalala nami kodwa indodana yami isenayo leyo nto (but still I did everything you said I should do.... I even let your tikoloshi sleep with me and it’s still sleeping with me even now but my son is still with that thing)

she said looking angry and the witchdoctor sighed

Witchdoctor: Nomvula ngicabanga ukuthi indodana yakho ithole usizo futhi uyazi (Nomvula I think your son got help and he knows)

Nomvula frowned

Nomvula: knows what?

Witchdoctor: that you bewitched him

Nomvula: wait what?

she asked with her eyes popped out

Witchdoctor: look I've been having weird dreams and I always wake up panting and sweating from them and when I consult with my ancestors they show me a black cloud and blood rain with you standing in the middle of the road with blood coming out of your forehead... iyisixwayiso
Nomvula futhi ngicabanga ukuthi indodana yakho iyazi (it's a warning Nomvula and I think your son knows)

Nomvula swallowed hard

Witchdoctor: look I called you here to tell you that danger is coming and blood will be spilled and that's all I see when I try and talk to my ancestors that's all they show memmmh I can't even help other people because every time I throw my bones that's all I see and nothing else

Nomvula laughed all of a sudden

Nomvula: wow...wow so uzama ukufihla ukungakwazi kwakho ngokungitshela konke lodoti (wow...wow so you're trying to hide your incompetence by telling me all this rubbish)

the witchdoctor looked up at Nomvula with an angry look on his face

Witchdoctor: yeka ukungithuka mfazi or else.... (stop insulting me woman or else...)

she interrupted him while standing up

Nomvula: or else what?

the witchdoctor looked at her and he chuckled

Witchdoctor: you know what....hamba Nomvula! (you know what leave Nomvula!)

Nomvula looked at him with an angry look on her face

Nomvula: so you chowed my money and had your evil thing have its way with me and now obusy ungitshela amasimba (you're busy telling me shit)

Witchdoctor: ngithe hamba la! (I said leave!)

he warned her

Nomvula: mxm I should have known you are weak nx....anyway chow my money with that fat and ugly wife of yours in fact buy her herbex and a bleaching cream and also take her to a dentist

while you at it nx.... rubbish...as educated as you are do you think me Nomvula will fall for that nonsense you are telling me nx

Witchdoctor: NGITHE HAMBAMFAZI NDINI! (I said leave woman)

he roared

Nomvula: well fuck... you!

she said showing him the middle finger then she walked out furious and the witchdoctor sat there looking angry then he sighed

Witchdoctor: if I didn't see her death I would surely deal with her nx...bitch.....

he said that and got up still looking angry

.
. .

*** Ray and Mbali were sitting in the lounge with Ray busy massaging her swollen feet her bump was huge and she looked like she's ready to pop any minute... As for Ray it's been one heck of a road for him but he soldiered on and now they are almost at the finishing line well at least Saint behaved ever since Ray warned him and only the beast was the one showing Ray and everyone around Mbali flames. Ray even had to hide his guns and sharp objects around the house for safety precautions cause she once almost stabbed Ray when he didn't come back the day he promised he would come back on when he went on business trip a fight started and she ended up chasing Ray with a knife around the house and for the first time ever he was scared of her cause the way the beast's anger came out through her was scary and something he's never seen before especially in a woman ***

Ray: stop moaning like that my flower or I might just have you right here and now

she giggled and Ray chuckled

Mbali: but you know you have magic hands hau

then she moaned and Ray chuckled

Ray: im serious my flower if you don't stop I'll have you here...already the big man down there is hard

she tightened her inner thighs when she pictured him hard and bit her lower lip and Ray chuckled

Ray: wow really?

***he said amused and Mbali giggled ***

Mbali: what...you know im addicted to the big man so don't look at me like that hau
Ray chuckled then they heard the door bell ring and Ray go up putting her feet where he was sitting and she giggled when she saw his hard member printed on the sweatpants he was wearing and Ray chuckled fixing himself and he went to the door and his dick became flaccid immediately when he saw who was on the door

Ray: beast

Thorsten: La Parca

he said with his deep scary voice and a straight look on his face he was wearing all black with brown timberland boots with his military chain hanging on his neck and his hands inside his pockets he looked HOT anyway Ray made way for him and he walked in

Ray: your sister is this way

Thorsten: I came here for you specifically but let me go say hi then we should go somewhere private and...talk

Ray frowned at him and Thorsten walked toward the lounge and a smile emerged on his face when his eyes landed on Mbali and Mbali smiled too and she attempted

Thorsten: don't bother yourself my princess

he got to her and kissed her forehead and sat next to her

Thorsten: how are you?

Mbali: tired and huge

Thorsten chuckled

Thorsten: you remind me of your aunt when she was pregnant with SJ

(Sj = Smiso junior)..... and Mbali giggled

Thorsten: how's the little ninja

he said brushing her belly and Saint kicked

Mbali: jeez this child... that hard kick was unnecessary hau

Thorsten chuckled while Mbali frowned rubbing her belly

Thorsten: he knows uncle Thor is here

Mbali smiled

Mbali: I missed you bhuti

Thorsten: I missed you too my princess and I can't wait for you to pop this little nigga out so I can hold him

she smiled wide with tears in her eyes

Mbali: and im sure he cant wait to officially meet his uncle that makes him kick me as if he's kicking a ball

Thorsten chuckled while Mbali laughed then Ray walked in with a bowl full of a fruit salad and ultramel and he gave it to Mbali

Mbali: mmmmh thanks love

Ray: ummm my flower excuse us for a moment I need to discuss some business with your brother

she nodded without even looking at him he looked HOT anyway Ray made way for him and he walked in

Ray: your sister is this way

Thorsten: I came here for you specifically but let me go say hi then we should go somewhere private and....talk

Ray frowned at him and Thorsten walked toward the lounge and a smile emerged on his face when his eyes landed on Mbali and Mbali smiled too and she attempted

Thorsten: don't bother yourself my princess

he got to her and kissed her forehead and sat next to her

Thorsten: how are you?

Mbali: tired and huge

Thorsten chuckled

Thorsten: you remind me of your aunt when she was pregnant with SJ

(Sj = Smiso junior)..... and Mbali giggled

Thorsten: how's the little ninja

he said brushing her belly and Saint kicked

Mbali: jeez this child... that hard kick was unnecessary hau

Thorsten chuckled while Mbali frowned rubbing her belly

Thorsten: he knows uncle Thor is here

Mbali smiled

Mbali: I missed you bhuti

Thorsten: I missed you too my princess and I can't wait for you to pop this little nigga out so I can hold him

she smiled wide with tears in her eyes

Mbali: and im sure he cant wait to officially meet his uncle that makes him kick me as if he's kicking a ball

Thorsten chuckled while Mbali laughed then Ray walked in with a bowl full of a fruit salad and ultramel and he gave it to Mbali

Mbali: mmmmh thanks love

Ray: ummm my flower excuse us for a moment I need to discuss some business with your brother

she nodded without even looking at him she was concentrating on the bowl full of a delicious fruit salad and ultramel she was already eating.....then Ray kissed her forehead and he went to his study with Thorsten behind him they got in and Thorsten went to pour himself some whiskey and he sat down

Ray: why are you really here beast?

Thorsten: to kill you

*** he said with a serious tone and Ray frowned and they stayed in total silent for a minute or so with Thorsten taking sips of the whiskey***

Ray: if you're here to kill me then why am I still alive?

Thorsten: well that is a good question

he said gulping down the rest of the drink

Ray: Mbali?

Thor nodded and he put the glass down and sat back on the chair facing Ray who was also sitting on the chair on the other side of the table

Thorsten: Interpol wants your head and they approached me as a private contractor to bring your head detached from your body to them or him

Ray sighed and he got up and went to pour himself a glass of whiskey too

Thorsten: well they don't know im a grandson to one of the most ruthless mafia man in the world and that my younger sister is "La Parca's" woman so they approached me

Ray: so what are you gonna do now

Thorsten: turn down the offer even though it's tempting as hell

Ray breathed out loud and he sat down*

Thorsten: you better make sure Mbali is safe man or I'll kill you myself even if I have to go through La Parca to do that

then he got up

Thorsten: you have three days to come up with a plan to save yourself Mateo and Diego cause they are also targets cause once I turn them down they'll approach their plan B

Ray: why are they after me?

Thorsten: Cuba... the men you and Diego killed that were trying to take over your territory worked for one of the bosses in Interpol and now he's using his job's resources to take you out

Ray chuckled

Ray: mmmmh I guess I owe you now

Thorsten: mmmmh im glad we on the same page

Ray chuckled

Thorsten: deal with this shit quietly for Mbali and your son's sake

then he walked out and Ray took out his phone and called Ruslan

.
. .

After his call with Ray Ruslan went upstairs to pack then his phone rang again and he answered it

Ruslan: yeah

Man: why are you answering your calls as if you're taking a shit in the toilet?

Ruslan: you better be someone I respect for me to let the shit you just said slide and if you're not then fuck you

Man: i hope im one of the man you respect and if not fuck you too

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: I think I respect you Mr Khumalo so I'll let it slide....so to what do I owe this surprising call?

Baba: its time he knows the truth his father has suddenly become restless he's been searching for Sambulo in the land of the dead all along and now he's troubling me in my dreams busy saying I should help him find his son as he can't find him

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: look now it's not the right time to tell him

Baba: there will never be the right time Ruslan he needs to know the truth cause his father is not resting in peace

Ruslan: I know ok I know but right now some corrupt dickhead in Interpol is after him so he needs to focus

Baba: wait what?

Ruslan: yeah he just called me now

Baba: shit....ok what's his name?

Ruslan: well he doesn't know but apparently he's the boss to some dead bastards that tried to evade Ray's territory back in Cuba and now the fool is using his Interpol resources to take La Parca the gangster and not the demon down

Baba: its fine I'll find out who he is and deal with him and after that we tell him the fucken truth once and for all

*** then Baba dropped the call and Ruslan sighed shaking his head.... well before Ruslan left South Africa he found Miles an animal shelter and he paid them handsomely for them to give Miles "special" treatment and he calls every now and then to check if he's ok...he even threatened the owner telling him that if anything bad happens to Miles he'll wipe out his entire generation so Miles is living it up in that animal shelter he eats specific food they bath him two times a day and his room (yes his room and not a cage) has a bed and play area on the far corner and a television mounted on the wall and the person assigned to care for Miles is even teaching him to use the bathroom on his own so yeah Miles is living it up people***

.
. .

Jabu: hai man Amo come on a re vaye tuu....ke neng o te phoshonka mo spiling (Amo lets go you've been busy on that mirror applying makeup for a while now)

Amo: Vilakazi I want to look good bathong?

Jabu: hai hai no man....i wonder ke moloi wa ko kae a obuditseng ka masepa a bareng ke make up cause ne o sa tshase dichila tse bona noumotho o busy o tshasa crayon mo dinching ge a fetsa wa e phumula then oetshasa gape no man ke masepa dai dang (I wonder who is the witch that told you about make up cause you didn't put it on your face now look....you're busy applying crayon on you eyebrows after that you wipe it off and apply it again no man that this is bullshit)

he said annoyed and Amo stopped what she was doing and she looked at Jabu with teary eyes

Amo: so you don't even appreciate gore im looking this good for you

Jabu: I told you gore I prefer you without make up mara o busy wa te memeya ka diretse le mmu le di crayon mo sefatlhegong (but you are busy applying mud soil and crayons on your face)

Amo: mmmmh you want me to be a "plain Jane" akere so that other men don't look at me but wena you admire and stare at women with makeup and even undress them with your eyes akere

she said with an angry tone

Jabu: wait askies?

Amo: you heard me.....and you know what you can go to that stupid dinner o le one (alone) im no longer going nx

***she said getting up and she went to the bathroom and Jabu sighed and sat at the edge of the bed regretting opening his big mouth.....well things have been good between them to a point that they even found out that she's pregnant....Amo was scared while Jabu was more than happy they even went to fetch Jabu's son from his mother's house and he now lives with them and his relationship with Amo is getting stronger each day cause he has always wished to live with his father and to experience a mother's love and affection and that's what Amo has been giving him even though she wasn't aware that she was mothering him cause she told herself that she won't force herself to him that she will just be there for him whenever he needs her but in actual fact she's been doing more than that and the boy doesn't mind...

Anyway After some time Amo came out of the bathroom and she had her face washed and her eyes were puffy***

Jabu: look im sorry for being insensitive rato laka(my love) so please get ready so we can leave remember I booked for 8h00

Amo: I said im no longer going Jabu so leave me alone tuu

***she said wearing her pjs and Jabu clenched his jaws.... he's planning on proposing to her tonight and he has everything planned out at her favorite restaurant and now he just realized that he might have jeopardized the whole thing with his impatience and sharp tongue...he didn't mean to say all he said he's just nervous about the planned night and proposing to her ***

Jabu: rato laka bona im sorry lets....

***she interrupted him ***

Amo: kgaogana lenna Jabu please (leave me alone Jabu please)....you think I don't see how you look at other women with make up whenever we pass one when we are together you even turn to check out their asses and pretend like you didn't and when I get mad you turn the whole thing into a trust issue thing and now when I want to look like your "type" of women ompotsa dichila (you tell me nonsense)

Jabu: Amo come on

she walked out and he sighed and went after her....when she got to the kitchen she found Sbu busy making a smoothie he loved smoothies so much

Sbu: can I make you some too before you leave ma

she just shook her head and she opened the fridge and Sbu could see she's upset.... then his father walked in

Jabu: Sbu excuse us

Amo: its ok just finish what you're doing baby

she took out bottle water and closed the fridge and she walked out and Jabu went after her

Jabu: rato laka lets talk about this please

Amo: leave me alone!

Jabu: this is not how we should resolve things Amogelang I know I was insensitive and im sorry

he said genuinely

Amo: you are always insensitive Jabu and im tired of being scared to voice out my concerns because I fear you might raise taba ya trust issues....im tired of keeping quiet and looking the other way and im tired of pretending that im happy where else im not and no this is not my hormones acting up

she said with tears in her eyes and Jabu swallowed hard

Jabu: wait...did you just say you...you are not happy and that you...you've been pretending all along?

he asked her not believing that she just said that and she didn't say anything she just went to sit down and concentrated on the TV that was playing

Jabu: Amogelang!

he said breathing heavily

Amo: kgaogana lenna Jabulani (leave me alone Jabulani)

he looked at her with a frown on his face and even though she could feel his eyes on her but she concentrated on the TV.....then Sbu walked in with two glasses of smoothies and she gave one to Amo

Sbu: I know o rile o shap (I know you said you are ok) but this is me feeding my little sister

Amo faked a smiled

Amo: thanks baby

he nodded and looked at his father

Sbu: thaima o shap? (dad are you ok?)

he clenched his jaws and he rubbed his eyes and he nodded then he turned and walked away and he took out his phone and called to cancel his reservations then he turned and went back to the lounge to tell Sbu to order pizza in since they are no longer leaving and he stopped on his track when he heard them talking

Sbu: Ma

Amo: mmmmh?

Sbu: ummm please don't....don't leave us.... I mean don't leave dad

Amo quickly turned to look at him confused

Sbu: um I overheard you and dad arguing and I swear I wasn't eavesdropping on you two its just your voice was high

he said with a low tone and Amo sighed

Amo: baby listen to me ok I don't want...

Jabu interrupted her walking in

Jabu: your mother is not going anywhere and don't ever eavesdrop on us ever again you hear me

***Sbu swallowed hard and he nodded.... well he's scared of his father Jabu once beat the hell out of him when he found out he was hanging out with the wrong crowd and also smoking ***

Jabu: good now order in some pizza

then he bend a bit and lifted Amo's chin with his index finger and he perked her lips and forehead and Amo let him for Sbu's sake and they stared at each other his eyes were now red and he had veins popping on his forehead

Jabu: kao rata Amogelang and no matter how angry pissed off sad or hurt you may feel always remember kao rata and blaen

she swallowed hard and blinked fast fighting back her tears then he stood up straight and looked at Sbu

Jabu: luister hier.... your mother will never leave us and o latlhe go utlwella taba tsa batho ba ba golo cause o tlo tswara dikhupi and ebe rona renna shap the following day and wena o sala makeng wankutlwa? (listen here.... your mother will never leave us and never eavesdrop on old peoples conversations cause you'll end up holding a grudge and the following day you'll see us all good and you'll end up looking like a fool you hear me?)

he nodded

Jabu: old people argue and also make up all the time so don't get involved ok

he nodded and Jabu brushed his head and he walked away

Jabu: order pizza eo and call me when its delivered!

he shouted walking towards the passage that's going to his study

Amo: he's right baby don't ever eavesdrop even though it was not your intension and for confirmation from me know that I will never leave you ok

he nodded and Amo took his smoothie and drank it since hers was finished and Sbu laughed shaking his head and he took his phone

.

.

.

Heath: Javas tell me she said yes

Jabu sighed

Jabu: I didn't propose Mshikaro

Heath: huh? why....dont tell me you chickened out man

Jabu: she....she said she's not happy and she's tired of pretending....i swear mfowethu I didn't mean to disrespect her or make her feel inferior

Heath: what are you talking about Jabu....what's going on?

Jabu: ka jaja gore (I know that) I can be insensitive sometimes and I also like checking out dicheri mara (women but) I'll never cheat on her Mshikaro...I love Amo mfowethu and I can't believe I've been making her miserable all along and I wasn't aware Mshikaro..... eish sometimes I forget that im not dating the likes of Sbu's mother....i was aware of her recent change of attitude she's been more quiet lately and I thought maybe ke bane but....(it's the pregnancy)

Heath interrupted him

Heath: ok now im worried....where are you now....you know what I'll find you

Jabu: ke shap Mshikaro I just need to....

Heath interrupted him again

Heath: im on my way!

***then he ended the call and Jabu sighed....("you are always insensitive Jabu and im tired of being scared to voice out my concerns because I fear you might raise taba ya trust issues....im tired of keeping quiet and looking the other way and im tired of pretending that im happy where else im not and no this is not my hormones acting up") Amo's words rang in his head and he clenched his jaws shaking his head ***

72

INSERT.....72

.

.

.

NARRATED

*** Jabu couldn't sleep the whole night he tossed and turned until around four in the morning then he got out of bed and went to his study and smoked almost the whole packet of cigarettes thinking hard last night's talk with Heath when he came to his house made him think hard.....he made him realize that he's been behaving like mjava around Amo and not like her man he swears around her and become insensitive forgetting that she's a church girl and totally different from all the woman he's been with....

Anyway after some time he decided to get up from the couch he was laying on in his study and he walked out going to the kitchen it was around 7 in the morning he found Amo eating and she was still wearing her pjs***

Jabu: hey

***he said kissing her cheek ***

Amo: hi

she said without even looking at him and she continued to eat....he just made himself some coffee then he sat next to her on the barstool and he sighed

Jabu: im sorry

she just drank her tea

Jabu: im sorry I have been insensitive and for also disrespecting you Amogelang....i acknowledge my mistakes and im sorry rato laka (my love)

she sighed

Amo: I just....

she sighed again

Amo: I know you love me believe me I know but I don't think im your type Jabu I always see you checking other women out when you with me and I've been keeping quiet ever since you shouted at me that time and used that trust issue card on me I would just go to the bathroom and cry it out....

Jabu clenched his jaws feeling like shit

Jabu: im sorry Amo....i love you too much to lose you I don't think I will survive it

they kept quiet a bit with Jabu swallowing hard feeling like shit

Amo: ummm my...my brother send me a message last night and he said he would like for us to meet and talk

*** she said without looking at him and Jabu frowned looking at her***

Jabu: talk about what?

***she shrugged ***

Jabu: well you're not going

she frowned and looked at him

Amo: no matter what he's still my only brother Jabu

Jabu: ompotsa masepa nou (you telling me bullshit)...wasn't he your brother when he sat there and watched your father insult and embarrass you

Amo just shook her head and got up then she put her dishes in the dishwasher and Jabu sighed

Jabu: look im sorry but I don't trust your brother Amogelang and now its not just about you only....you're pregnant and I don't want anything that might upset you rato laka

she chuckled

Amo: you are a hypocrite Jabu....so its fine for you to stress me but it's a huge sin if anyone else do....you know you could've just said he can come and meet me here with you present but no not Jabu right cause Amogelang's feelings mean nothing to him mxm

Jabu: o re ke eng ? (what did you just call me)

she swallowed hard then she attempted to walk away but Jabu grabbed her arm tightly squeezing it

Jabu: don't walk out on me when we still talking Amogelang!

*** he said with a serious tone and her eyes filled with tears and Jabu sighed and he quickly let go of her and he brushed his head roughly***

Jabu: im sorry I just....

she interrupted him

Amo: can I leave please

he sighed

Jabu: Amo....

he said with a low tone

Amo: I need to use the bathroom Jabu..... PLEASE can I leave?

he swallowed hard and nodded and she quickly walked out and he sat down and put his forehead on the counter with his hands on his head

Jabu: shit!

.
. .
. .

Mbali: are you ok?

she said looking at him as he wasn't eating his breakfast and he cleared his throat

Ray: yeah

he said without even looking at her

Mbali: sthandwa sam I don't wanna be a nag but I can see something is bothering you so please talk to me

he sighed

Ray: like I said its nothing so just let it go....please

she sighed and pushed her chair back a bit and she got up slowly

Ray: where are you going now

she sighed

Mbali: to pee

then Ray sighed

Ray: baby...

she interrupted him

Mbali: excuse me

she walked away slowly while brushing her belly and Ray also stood up and followed her he stood by the door waiting for her to finish peeing....after she was done Ray helped her up and he flushed while she washed her hands and before she could walk out he stopped her

Ray: you mad at me?

Mbali: why should I...I mean im not that important to you for you to share your troubles with

Ray frowned

Ray: how can you say that Mbali

Mbali: Ray when something is bothering me you make sure I talk to you about it but when something is bothering you you just shut me out like I don't matter

Ray shook his head looking up then he looked at her

Ray: so we are going to fight because I don't want to stress you out and my son with something I know I can handle?

she didn't say anything and Ray sighed

Ray: look you know about my other life my flower and shit happens there shit I can't discuss with you for obvious reasons

she swallowed hard

Mbali: but...but you worry me when something is troubling you and you're not sharing it with me

she said sulking and he got closer to her and kissed her forehead

Ray: and I love you more for caring but don't worry yourself my flower ok I got this

she nodded and he kissed her again

Mbali: im tired of standing lets go sit down please

he smiled at her and brushed her belly

Ray: this little guy in here needs to come out now he's tiring my wife

she smiled and they went back to the dining area and sat down

Mbali: babe

Ray: my flower

Mbali: you'd tell me if our lives are in danger right?

he sighed

Ray: no cause your safety is my first priority and I won't let it get to that point

Mbali: but....

he interrupted her

Ray: no buts my flower I don't want you involved with my other life at all you grew up in a mafia family and I know they tried to give you a normal life and I want to continue with that....your father and grandfather made it clear to me that I should protect you from my other life at all costs cause its one dangerous life and I would die if anything were to happen to you or our son

she sighed

Mbali: ok I hear you

he raised his eyebrows and smirked

Ray: just like that my flower?

***she laughed a bit ***

Mbali: you make me sound like a stubborn crazy woman

Ray chuckled

Ray: what?.... you crazy?...nah

they both laughed

Mbali: mxm don't start with me Sambulo

he frowned and she laughed cause she knows he doesn't like to be called by that name

Ray: I'll get you for that

she continued to laugh and Ray smiled looking at her with his love for her getting deeper and deeper

Ray: so are you gonna go shopping for an outfit for that get together thing at Heath's house or you good?

she nodded with her mouth full...she chewed and swallowed

Mbali: after servicing me we are going shopping

Ray: but my flower I told you last night that Ruslan is coming today

Mbali: Ruu is not a guest here Ray and he knows that I mean he even gives the cook a day off mostly when he's here and cooks his traditional delicious food so don't use him as a scape goat cause you are coming with me Mr

he sulked and she giggled

Mbali: but baby remember Baba said I might give birth on the eighth months since I have the khumalo blood running through my veins and boys in our family are born on the eighth months so what if I go into labor when im in the mall

***he sighed...well Baba told Mbali that for her not to be stressed or fearful when she gives birth on the eighth month because of the beast thing but he told Ray the truth and they all agreed to tell her the truth after she gives birth ***

Ray: fine and just so you know I hate shopping

she laughed

Mbali: and i love you too

he sulked and she blew him kisses...well he loved how she suddenly matured over the months and also loves the fact that she knows about him being a 'gangster in a suit ' but he hates it when the beast shows its anger through her cause he's the one that is at the receiving end but he loves her nonetheless and he wouldn't trade her for anything

.
. .
.

*** Well Ruslan did arrive and he checked into a hotel and his reason is he cant deal with a pregnant woman who's unborn baby has a beast that lets out its anger through her ever since Ray told him she once chased him with a knife and she also almost showed Mat hell he told himself he'll be careful around her....he can handle the Saint cause Mbali isn't aware of what's happening at that exact time and she wont remember anything when he takes over even if he used his spells to stop him but with the beast she's fully aware cause she just gets extremely angry and all hell breaks loose when she is so he can't even use his magic to calm the beast down moreover because she doesn't know he's a wizard.

Anyway Baba called him again and told him to stall Ray while he deals with the Interpol boss and he thought about it and it was a good idea cause he knew Ray would unleash La Parca on him and he just found out from his research that now that Mbali's unborn baby is fully grown in her womb and she's even ready to pop him out he can react when La Parca is out to play and his research with ancient forbidden books like the 'devils bible' he found out that if Saint took over Mbali's body now he could actually kill her just like a woman in the ancient times carrying a child who's soul was attached to a demon died...even though the stories aren't exactly the same about how and why their unborn babies souls are attached to a demon but when the woman was in the final month of her pregnancy and the demon took over when she was hurt and angry cause she found out her sister was killed the baby ripped himself out of her womb killing her in the process so he doesn't want La Parca to come out cause he fears The Saint might sense him and also come out.

So he's gonna stall Ray until Baba takes care of the Interpol boss cause he knows even though he tells Ray about La Parca Saint and Baba he will be mad cause he always cleans up his own mess so the Khumalo's cleaning after him might strike his ego.....Anyway he arrived on Thursday and today its Saturday and the men are all in Heath's house at the back busy with the meat while the women are inside the house***

Ray: what's with you today Jabs...you cant stop staring at the door and you've been holding that can of beer since

Heath: Amo is what's wrong with her

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: hormones already showing you flames man?

they laughed but Jabu didn't

Jabu: well she said she's not happy anymore

they stopped laughing

Ray: what?

Heath: well he forgot that she's not like all those hood rats he used to fuck that's why

Ruslan: ooh I see

Jabu: that's not it man its just...eish this is me gents...its who I am and well Amo is a good church girl so we are more like water and oil

Heath: you mean water and oil that mix well abi

they laughed

Jabu: I love her more than anything and the thought of her leaving me scares the shit out of me

Ray: well bro you're not the only one

Heath: mmmmh the thought of losing your mamiwota is the most scariest shit ever...trust me I know

James: mamiwota?

they laughed but Ruslan didn't

Heath: it means mermaid man

James: oohh...yah I get it

he chuckled

Heath: don't worry stick with us and you'll learn new things ma brotha

they laughed and Ruslan clenched his jaws then Ray whispered to him

Ray: easy tiger

Ruslan: permettez-moi de le transformer en un home fou maintenant.... provoquer sa vue me degoute
(allow me to turn him into a mad man now...cause his sight disgusts me)

he whispered back in French

Ray: Ruu allez mec (Ruu come on man)

he whispered back

Ruslan: il ne merite pas son home (he doesn't deserve her man)

*** he said with a pissed off tone and Ray sighed***

Ray: Ruu....

he interrupted him

Ruslan: excuse me I need to use the bathroom

*** then he walked away***

James: is he ok?

Ray took a sip of his drink

Ray: mmmmh

Jabu gave Ray the look and Ray shrugged his shoulders and Jabu sighed shaking his head

Jabu: sa wara ka yena o tshwenya ke badimo (don't worry about him he has an ancestral calling/
his ancestors are troubling him)

Heath just busted out with laughter and Ray joined him then Jabu chuckled

Jabu: keng le lagang? (why are you laughing?)

Heath: really Javas?

Ray: don't let him hear you say that bros

Jabu laughed

Jabu: assomblief o sa mo chaela big Ray o otlo mpontsha masepa (please don't tell him big Ray or
he'll deal with me)

Ray laughed and James chuckled

James: so he's that crazy?

Ray raised an eyebrow

Ray: he can go banana's if he wants so mind yourself around him

Jabu: yah mfowethu dlalla vir from yena assomblief (yeah bro play as far as you can away from him please)

Heath frowned

Heath: come on Ruslan is a gentle soul

Ray: mmh he is Ezech but he should keep away from him ooo

then he took a sip of his drink again and Jabu chuckled while Heath and James frowned looking confused as to why James should play away from Ruslan

.
. .
.

inside the house Ruslan came out of the toilet and he bumped into Thandi and a smile plastered across his face

Ruslan: mon amour (my love)

Thandi: ummm hi and im not Amo im Thandi

he chuckled

Ruslan: amour means love and I know you are Thandi Vilakazi and not Thandie newton

she smiled blushing and he chuckled then he got serious

Ruslan: if I may ask amour....why are you still with him?

she quickly looked up at him frowningwell he was tall and dark with a nicely trimmed beard on his face and he was fit but not with big muscles like Thorsten all in all he was one handsome man

Thandi: askies?

Ruslan: we both know that baby is his and he doesn't even have the decency to admit it

her eyes popped out

Thandi: how did you....ummm I don't know what you're talking about

*** she attempted to walk past him but he blocked her ***

Ruslan: let's say im kind of "gifted" spiritually and ummm I see things

she looked at him shocked

Ruslan: you deserve better amour and don't continue to stay with him thinking no other man will not want you cause you have two kids.... cause this man does and he'll wait patiently until you realize your worth and come to me where you belong

Thandi looked at him shocked to the core

Thandi: umm I should.....ummm go

Ruslan: ok but just so you know firstly your brothers know about my intentions well except for Heath and secondly im sure your friend Star will support you wholeheartedly cause she knows you deserve to be happy too and thirdly don't worry about your mother she loves money so the fact that I'll pay thousands and thousands of money for your bride price will shut her up and as for your kids well I'll love and treat them as my own.....look you're a mother amour and you shouldn't teach your sons that its ok to tolerate nonsense and settle for less even though they deserve the best in life cause amour life is a cruel place and there are "female James" out there

Thandi: st....stop please

she said in a whisper

Ruslan: you are not a weak and vulnerable woman Thandi

Thandi: you don't know me so tell me shit ok

*** she said with an angry tone and he smiled***

Ruslan: im gonna wife you and you won't even believe it when it happens

*** then he kissed her forehead ***

Voice: what the fuck do you think you are doing!

they looked behind Ruslan and James was standing there looking angry

Ruslan: wow I didn't know you are blind

Thandi quickly moved away from Ruslan and she swallowed hard

Thandi: its not what you think baby

Ruslan: yeah its not what you think 'baby' and just so we clear.... 'baby'..... she's not a cheating dickhead like you and ooh believe me I'll know if you lay a hand on her and I swear on Miles if you do that I'll fucken kill you and have the angel of death send your useless soul to hell for me so dare me man please just dare me and you'll see

Ruslan said with a serious tone with a look of intimidation on his face which unsettled Thandi

James: you fucken bastard....

then he chuckled bitterly

James:i knew you wanted her...the way you were looking at her when you got here and your stinking attitude towards me....i knew it.....well if you think you gonna get a citizenship using her well

you failed jou moer...this is my country and I'll show you how we deal with makwerekwere in South Africa

he said getting angrier looking at Ruslan ready for a fight

Ruslan: wow and this is what you settled for amour

he said looking at Thandi

Ruslan: well my boy...I can see you're looking for a fight and guess what.... a gentleman like me never fights peasants especially in front of a beautiful lady

James: who are you calling a peasant jou moerskond

he said taking a step closer to them

Thandi: guys please stop....

he interrupted her

James: shut up wena....obusy ontellisa ka makwerekwere.... keng o tsene ke bofebe nou Thandi (you're busy letting foreigners/aliens belittle me....you're whoring around now Thandi)

he said pointing at Thandi and Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: go on amour cause I swear if this useless thing shouts at you one more time I'll make him eat his own dick

Thandi swallowed hard with her eyes popped out

James: what did you just say msunu?

Ruslan: amour I said go on!

he said through his teeth not even looking at her and she felt a cold chill running down her spine and she quickly walked away she was going to call the guys to come and stop whatever is about to happen

Ruslan: and tell Ray to bring his first aid kit so he can clean this motherfucker up that's if he won't find him dead!

he shouted

73

INSERT.....73

.
. .
.

NARRATED

Ruslan rushed to James and he grabbed him by his throat pushing backwards and he bumped him with his back against the wall hard and he looked straight into his eyes with James trying to fight him off

Ruslan: you know the same feeling you have when a white person calls you a kaffir is the same feeling I felt when you called me a makwerekwere right and just like Vicky Momberg went to jail for it I can send you to hell for it you bastard

he said to him with an angry tone

James: get your fucken hands off me msunu!

he still tried to push his off but Ruslan was just too strong

Ruslan: you know I should squeeze the life out of you for cheating on Thandi and getting that bitch pregnant and having the fucken nerve to even deny it to her face

James: I said get your fucken hands off me!

he said grabbing Ruslan with his shirt using his one hand while the other was trying to pull away Ruslan's hand off his neck

Ruslan: make me bitch

James kept on trying to fight him off and Ruslan kneed him on his privates and James groaned as pain ran from his balls straight to his heart and he bend a bit with his face showing his in pain but Ruslan made him stand up straight

Ruslan: call me a makwerekwere (an alien) again.... I dare you!

he warned him but James didn't say anything as he was in pain

Ruslan: im waiting you bastard!

Voice: Ruu stop!

***it was Ray but Ruslan didn't ***

Ruslan: I SAID CALL ME A MAKWEREKWERE AGAIN!

he shouted at James and James tried to fight him off but Ruslan was still holding him tight

Ray: Ruu let him go man Thandi is watching damn it!

***he quickly looked at Ray and he saw Thandi standing next to him with Jabu and Heath and he let go of James ***

Heath: really guys... so you gonna fight in my house during my wife's get together?

he said with a serious tone

James: I found this thing kissing my wife!

he said holding his painful balls with pain all over his face

Ruslan: on the fucken forehead and she's not your fucken wife.....im sure even the court wont recognize your "customary marriage" cause you didn't complete all the necessary marriage rights for her..... and call me a thing again and you'll see what I'll fucken do to you

Thandi: Ru...Ruslan stop please.... James is my husband and I love him

Heath looked at Thandi

Heath: Tee what's going on here?

Jabu: ah yaya.... yaqala inkathazo madoda (here comes trouble)

he said shaking his head

Ruslan: this bastard cheated on you and impregnated his bitch and you still defend and declare your love to him?

Thandi: I love him ok!

she said with an emotional tone

Ray: whooh what did you just say Ruu?

James swallowed hard and Ruslan walked to Thandi

Ruslan: I thought you my kind of woman.....a woman who knows her worth and who wont let a boy like this play her but I guess I was wrong....you've become weak and I don't do weak...stay with your unfaithful bastard and wait for the day he'll impregnate another woman or better yet infect you with deceases

Thandi swallowed hard with tears in her eyes

Thandi: well he's my unfaithful bastard and don't ever call me weak cause you don't know me

*** she said with an angry tone and with tears running down her cheeks and Ruslan chuckled shaking his head then he walked past her going to the front door with Ray behind him calling after him and Thandi swallowed hard***

Jabu: a re o etsitseng? (what did he say you did)

he asked James and James just clenched his jaws not even looking at Jabu

Thandi: Jabu...

he interrupted her

Jabu: hey hey hey brika net daar wena(hey hey hey you stop right there)

Thandi: Jabu please this is between me and James ok it got nothing to do with you

Jabu: oreng wena (what did you say?).... it has nothing to do with me.....mpya e found you matswele a gao a sa eme o le letjiti and then awisa ka go go imisa gae two ka mo antse ao febela....for mengwaga o le busy o lwa le difebe tsa gae ka mo o godisa di ncosi tsa gae and o nale sebeta nou sa go febela gape a be a imise sefebe sa gae (this dog found you still a virgin and he impregnated you twice while he was cheating on you.....he's been cheating on you for years and

you kept on fighting his whores at the other hand you were busy raising his kids and he has the never to cheat on you again now and also impregnate his bitch)

he said looking angry

Naledi: hai guys what's all this noise?

she walked in on them along with Amo and Mbali who were also curious as to what was going on

Heath: did you know Naledi?

she frowned

Naledi: know what?

Jabu: that ramarete oo ke sfebe ebile o imisitse kontle (that this dick is a man-whore and he impregnated someone else)

she swallowed hard with her eyes popped out wondering who told them

Naledi: this has got nothing to do with us....its between James and Thandi

Jabu: o reng? (what did you say?)

Naledi: yes Jabu....you don't see us meddling on matters involving you and Amo and Heath let me not even start with us so please stop....and Thandi will come to ya'll if she needs your help so please don't meddle in their business until then

Heath: that's bull and you know it!

he shouted at her and she frowned

Naledi: bull?... really Heath?

he kept quiet and he looked away from her

James: Thandi lets leave I've had enough of all this insults nx

Jabu: o reng wena jou moerskond (what did you just say you bastard)

then Ray walked to them looking angry and Mbali blocked him shaking her head

Mbali: baby please don't

she pleaded with him

Ray: Mbali get out of my way!

Mbali: no cause first of all ya'll are embarrassing Thandi and secondly you're ruining Naledi's get together so stop....all of you please

Amo just walked away and Jabu followed her

Jabu: Amo!

she stopped and turned

Amo: as long as you now gore you're not perfect yourself stop judging another person as if you're a saint....o busy o roga ngwana batho mara wena a gona o a go rogang (you're busy insulting

someone's child but there's no one insulting you) for hurting me and again Thandi is married to James and she asked us not to get involved so why can't ya'll respect that marriage is between three people... the bride groom and God so let Thandi deal with his marital problems her way until she asks for help..... tlogelang didouble standards Jabu (stop with your double standards Jabu) ***then she walked away leaving Jabu with his jaws clenched***

.
. .
.

*** Well Thandi and James left Heath's house without their boys cause Naledi told them they should come pick them up tomorrow.....as for Ruslan he left that time he walked out and never came back and now Thandi and James just arrived in their house and she went straight to their bedroom and locked herself in there and James just called his brother worried cause the Thandi he knows would have started a fight and not just any fight but a physical one so the fact that she just locked herself in their bedroom without saying anything to him worried him....well the phone rang and his brother answered***

Joe: Jay

James: eish I messed up man

Joe: hi yini manjene (what is it now)

James: Thandi wa tiva yi Portia and na vo buti va yehe va tiva Joe (Thandi knows about Portia and even her brothers know too Joe)

he said that and sighed

Joe: what? but I thought o mo byerile side chic ko re a abort(a) (I thought you told your side chic to abort)

James: wo ala Joe and now ku na mbyana yi ngwane yi busy yi lava nkati-wa-mehe nx I swear ne ta ku xedlayene xelo le xeya na ko byela....Thandi o re mehe and I wont let her leave me never! (she refused Joe and now there's some dog that want my wife nx I swear im going to kill him im telling you....Thandi is mine and I wont let her leave me never)

Joe: yi mani mbyana leyo (who's that dog)

James: rekwerekwere ri ngwana.... yi chomi ya vo buti vayehe (some alien that is friends with her brothers)

Joe: wativa yi yini ya na kaya vokokwane (you know what go back home granny) will help you keep her and she will deal with that bastard that wants her mara na wehe James....when will you grow up man Thandi has been tolerating your nonsense for years and you still hurt her hai man

James brushed his head roughly

James: I swear on Ma's grave this is the last time broer ndza murhandza Thandi and ngopfu (I lover Thandi and too much) I cant lose her man ndza tiva ko re I have been taking her for granted but ndza murhandza Joe (I love her)

he said with an emotional tone and Joe sighed

James: I know I should be angry about rekwerekwere le reya (that alien) but im scared cause she's not shouting at me or fighting me she just went to the bedroom and locked herself in there and that's not the Thandi I know broer (brother) what if...what if she had enough and she leaves me

Joe: well I wouldn't blame her

James sighed

James: I don't need your I told you so Joe....ndzi lava a solution (I want a solution)

Joe: wena famba oya kaya and o bolabola na vokokwane (just go back home and talk to granny)

James sighed

James: ok but eish kokwane na yehe what if o lava kore ndzi jesa Thandi kore anga ndzi siyi (eish what if granny wants me to give Thandi a love potion so that she doesn't leave me)...i don't care about rekwerekwere le riya (that alien) she can kill him for all I care

Joe: then you do as she says or do you want to lose her?

James: no eish mara o right I'll do anything to keep her and I definitely can't lose her to rekwerekwere le riya (to that alien)

Joe: good....so what about your side chick kane yi mani vito ra yehe? (what's her name)

James: mxm Portia

Joe: ooh yah so what about nyimba ya yehe? (her pregnancy)

James: im gonna make sure she loses it....Portia wa penga broer (Portia is crazy bro)she's gonna be a baby mama from hell and I cant have that I don't love her all I wanted was the pussy that's all

Joe: eish na wehe James man...anyway I get were you coming from I'll also do anything possible to make sure manana wa Nkateko doesn't leave me if I were to mess up so now try to talk to Thandi once she's calm and onga lwe na yehe (don't fight with her) or you might just push her to that man arms.....anyway shap le me attend to Nkateko she just woke up

James: shap

then they ended the call and James clenched his jaws thinking about that humiliating encounter he had with Ruslan and he vowed to himself to deal with him accordingly

.
.
.
*****IN KZN*****

Baba: im glad you were able to take a detour from your trip to Cape Town

Thor: family come first Baba

he said taking a sip of his drink...they were inside Baba's study

Thor: so what's going on Baba...you sounded serious

Baba sighed

Baba: I don't know if you know but someone is after Raymond

Thor: ooh yeah they wanted me to do the job

Baba frowned

Baba: what?...i hope you turned them down

Thor: ofcourse.... I did it for my princess and my nephew

Baba: good

then he sighed

Baba: well there's something you should know about Raymond....he's my late friend's son the one we thought was dead

Thor frowned

Thor: Bab'Dlamini?

Baba: no....Kedi's father

Thor: wait what?

he asked shocked

Baba: yeah and no one knows except for me you your father and Melusi....that's why your father agreed for the lobola negotiations to go on and that he also sat in on them

Thor: damn!

Baba: so I can't let some American bastard hurt him or Mbali and their unborn child

Thorsten kept quiet letting all he just learned about Ray sink in

Baba: so I want your help in taking out the American bastard

Thor: umm what about the guys don't you think they also deserve to know especially Jay

Baba: I need to deal with this first then everyone will be told about Raymond and Kedi

Thor sighed

Thor: you do know he can handle this himself right

Baba: I had a talk with his wizard friend and he said if La Parca gets out then Saint will sense him now and he might rip himself out of Mbali's womb and kill her unintentionally cause he no longer need to come out through her since the baby is fully developed

Thor: shit!

he said that with a worried look on his face

Baba: yah so we need to deal with this before he does

Thor: ok...ok

then his face became serious

Thor: well I know who it is so I'll let my boys know about this mission and I'll take him out on Monday and I'll find out who is their back up plan and you'll deal with him Baba

Baba: yah

then he sighed looking at Thor feeling proud

Baba: im glad I found you Smiso and im also glad your parents are now resting in peace

Thor: oh no...please ooo don't get all emotional on me Baba that will traumatize me

he said that and he chuckled and baba chuckled too

Baba: voetsek!

Thor got up laughing and he called his IT boy while Baba was shaking his head with a smile on his face

.
. .
.

the following day early in the morning Jabu was busy making breakfast for Amo who was still asleep last night he begged and apologized until she gave in and they made love like nobody's business....he knew an amazing love making and apologizing with his mouth alone wasn't enough so he needed to prove to her that he values her and respects her fully through his actions but all in all he was glad they talked without either of them throwing tantrums or walking away.....Anyway he was busy with preparing breakfast when he heard an intercom going off and he switched off the stove and he went to answer it*

Jabu: yah

Voice: Jabs its Ruslan.....I need your help man

Jabu frowned

Jabu: heh?...how did you know where I live?

Ruslan: Ray gave me your address

Jabu sighed and he opened the gate for him and he went to the door and watched him drive in....Ruslan parked the Range Rover and he got out with a bag on his hand and he walked to him

Ruslan: sorry to come unannounced like this but it was either this way or you would have found me inside your house waiting for you to wake up

Jabu: huh?

he said confused

Ruslan: never mind...ummm I need your help with translation

Jabu: what translation?

he asked him with a frown on his face

Ruslan: can we just go somewhere private I really need your help

Jabu sighed

Jabu: ummm ok follow me

they went inside to his study and Jabu went to the window to open the blinds but Ruslan stopped him

Ruslan: don't...just switch on the lamps and switch off the main light

Jabu: why?

he asked frowning and Ruslan rolled his eyes

Ruslan: Ray would kill me if I harm you so relax im really here for your help man

Jabu sighed and he did as Ruslan asked and stood next to him

Ruslan: don't freak out ok

Jabu: wait I hope you won't do your wizard thing here man

Ruslan just opened his bag and took out a magical crystal ball and he put it on the table

Jabu: and then?

Ruslan: I need you to translate what the bastard is saying here please I need to know

he said looking at Jabu with a serious look and Jabu swallowed then he nodded and Ruslan chanted some spell with his palms covering the crystal ball and it lit up and Jabu's eyes popped out then they saw James talking on the phone while sitting on the couch

Jabu: what the....

he said with his eyes popped out and his heart beating fast

Ruslan: listen carefully and translate

Jabu: how....how did you do that man

Ruslan: please man

then Jabu took a deep breath and he listened carefully swallowing hard.....well Ruslan can only “spy” on someone using his crystal ball only if he had touched that person physically before or he has something that belongs to the exact person at hand so on this instant he touched James so now he can see what he’s up to for a few minutes (five minutes to be exact then it goes blank) and that’s why he knows about James cheating on Thandi cause ever since he touched Thandi’s hand at the hospital that time Naledi was admitted he’s been spying on her and that’s how he knew about James’ cheating ways

74

INSERT..... 74

.
. .
.

NARRATED

*** After Jabu tried his best to translate what James was saying even though he wasn’t good with Xitsonga Ruslan began cursing at James looking angry as hell and as for Jabu he was busy swearing at James in his tsotsitaal also looking angry***

Jabu: im going to kill him and Thandi will have to deal with it... I swear ko mo bodisa dai moerskond (im going to kill that bastard)

Ruslan sat down and clenched his jaws rubbing his beard

Ruslan: ooh so his grandmother is a witch and he thinks she can take me on

he said to himself then he chuckled shaking his head

Ruslan: ohh im gonna make him pay....he’s gonna fucken pay

then he chuckled again

Jabu: Thandi le yena o busy o attracter baloi left right and center nx (Thandi is busy attracting wizards left right and center)

then Ruslan saw Jabu taking out his phone from his pocket and he got up

Ruslan: Jabu wait before you make that call

Jabu stopped and he looked at him with a frown on his face

Ruslan: I need a favor from you please

Jabu: what favor?

Ruslan: allow me to take care of James my way

Jabu shook his head continuously looking down

Jabu: not happening man....Thandi is my sister and it's my job to protect her

Ruslan: I know that but I need to do this and to make sure that Thandi is safe along with her boys

Jabu frowned hard looking at Ruslan

Jabu: antlek o nyako reng jo (what are you trying to say man)....are you trying to say I can't protect my sister and nephews?

he said taking a step closer to Ruslan and Ruu sighed shaking his head

Ruslan: that not what I meant man so chill the fuck down!....what im trying to say is you hurt or kill James then you'll have to deal with his witch of a grandmother

Jabu: then I'll kill the grandmother too

Ruslan: and you think the grandmother's children won't go out there to find out what or who killer her and her grandson?...look man this shit is not as easy as you think it is cause there's Thandi and her sons involved

Jabu: I don't get what you're trying to say Ruslan....that bastard deserves death and im gonna give it to him on a silver platter....he's gone too far now

Ruslan sighed shaking his head disappointed that Jabu doesn't get him or understand him

Ruslan: death is too easy for him man and it might bring problems to Thandi man why cant you see that...just calm down and think for a second

Jabu shook his head with his jaws clenched and he went to sit down

Jabu: that moerskond deserves a painful death!

he said with an angry tone

Ruslan: and you think they won't suspect Thandi first cause the brother now knows that she knows about James' cheating ways....or better yet they might say she asked ya'll to kill him for hurting her.... and even if you help her out of that shit another thing is her eldest son what if they use him to break her even more by telling him that her mother is the one responsible for his father's death and he grows up resenting her mother?

Jabu sighed looking at Ruslan

Ruslan: Jabu when your loved ones are involved you thread carefully and think things through you don't act irrational man

Jabu: then what do you suggest I do heh? sit and do nothing

Ruslan: I asked you to let me deal with him my way

Jabu: look I know you have some silly crush on maThaa but....

Ruslan interrupted him

Ruslan: really a silly crush?

he said looking offended

Jabu: yeah...in case you haven't noticed man Thandi is big Ray's cousin our mothers are siblings

Ruslan wanted to say Ray is not related to all of you but he stopped himself

Ruslan: so?

Jabu: so?...what about a bro code

Ruslan: what bro code... look here that shit is for small boys and Ray and I aren't ones

Jabu chuckled and not in an amused way

Jabu: well you don't deserve her too

Ruslan: you're a fine one to talk Jabu....you also doesn't deserve Amo but you don't see us saying it to your face!

Jabu clenched his jaws looking at Ruslan

Jabu: leave Amo out of this!

Ruslan: why mmmmh I mean you're an ex-con and instead of repenting you decided to because a gangster in suit and now you're dating a church girl so you no better than me

Jabu got up

Jabu: say whatever you wanna say about me but the fact remains you also don't deserve Thandi period

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: and lets me guess its because im a wizard right

Jabu: you said it not me.... I mean what if you also use your witchcraft on her in fact how do I know you wont

Ruslan: just so you know "JABU" i know much about witchcraft in fact about anything paranormal cause I was fascinated about it to a point that I ended up attaining a master's degree in psychology and that's when i earned a Ph.D. in Parapsychology at Franklin Pierce University in Rindge New Hampshire in USA..... and for you info Parapsychology is a study of paranormal and psychic phenomena including telepathy precognition clairvoyance psychokinesis near- death experiences synchronicity reincarnation apparitional experiences and other paranormal claims so I didn't wake up one day and I sacrificed a human being to a cult or a witchdoctor and got my "powers"

Jabu swallowed hard stunned and embarrassed a bit

Ruslan: im fascinated with witchcraft spells magic of all form and anything paranormal including learning more about the dark world and all the forbidden books just like you are fascinated by guns knives stealing diamonds and world class paintings gun smugglings and other crime related shit

then they both kept quiet for a bit

Ruslan: look I love Thandi man and I wanna make her mine and love his boys as my own....i know in your eyes im not the ideal man for her but one thing you should know is I know life real life that is and not this sheltered life most humans live by cause they are blinded by science that always say there's no such thing as a God demons satan and anything paranormal... and that anything you can't touch physically is not real.... and also blinded by this new testament of the bible that nowadays Christians read and preach about that is a lighter version of the first original old testament copy of a bible that is the real deal with complete info and not this edited and translated versions roaming around and it's called the Codex Vaticanus held in a Vatican Library which dates from the 10th century CE and its written in Hebrew and Aramaic dates

then he sat down

Ruslan: well let me school you since you seem to judge me just because you once saw me using my magic to fight for "God's" creature Miles..... you see Jabu there are books that I think every human being should read cause I believe in fact I know that when the times comes we all gonna need them to survive like the Codex Gigas which is three feet long and has 620 pages and it's also called the devils book cause it was written by someone who sold his soul to the devil and later regretted it so he was spilling the devil's secrets on how to defeat his army it contains everything from a complete copy of the original bible to instructions on how to perform an exorcism in fact it contains all human knowledge and it have been written by a single scribe....and it's called the devil's book due to the giant drawing of the devil contained inside Jabu: and how do you know that

Ruslan smirked

Ruslan: cause I once got a chance to read it....you see Jabu Heaven and Hell are real and so are angels and the angel of death and demons and the devil and I know someone close to me who can testify on that....it just that most humans are ignorant and in denial even though sometimes shit happens around them that its clear proof that the world is not as it seems and I believe we gonna need book to fight off demons and shit to survive once the layers of abyss all break down and a portal is opened from our world to the supernatural world

Jabu swallowed hard

Ruslan: anyway then there's also the PICATRIX a book that contains recipes of mixing human and animal blood brains urine and other bodily fluids with opium and other dangerous substances to achieve various magical results and this one is for bad witches and wizards

Jabu swallowed hard again

Ruslan: another one is the GRAND GRIMOIRE also known as THE RED DRAGON and it still practiced by some voodoo practitioners in Haiti and it teaches you how to summon and control demons

well he also uses it to summon La Parca

Jabu: wait....what?

Ruslan: there's also the satanic bible which explains itself and then there's also THE MYSTERIOUS BOOK OF SOYGA and im still trying to figure out its mysteries

Jabu: fuck!

Ruslan: then my favorite one THE MUNICH MANUAL that is focused entirely on black magic..... and many other "forbidden books"..... so you see the world is not as black and white as everyone think it is Jabu cause in my world you are a saint with all criminal shit....ive seen disturbing things that might make you question your sanity and your entire existence man so im not fascinated about skimpy women and changing women like im changing an underwear and money also doesn't move me cause I know what matters more in life

Jabu sighed thinking hard about all Ruslan said

Ruslan: I love your sister and I see a wife in her and im willing to fight for her so I need you to let me deal with that bastard my way

Jabu cleared his throat standing up

Jabu: you better keep me updated and if you fail I don't care if it will hurt Thandi or not cause im going to fucken kill him

Ruslan nodded and he put his crystal ball inside the bag and he followed Jabu out

.
. .
. .

in their bedroom Amo was having breakfast in bed and she could see that Jabu's mind wasn't there

Amo: baby

Jabu: mmmh

Amo: are you ok you seem lost in thoughts

he sighed

Jabu: i...i think from now on I'll go to church with you

her eyes popped out

Amo: ummm ok.....but baby why now if I may ask

he cleared his throat

Jabu: hell is real rato laka and as much as im a gangster and I can handle many things but I don't think I can handle it.....demons and all that shit

***he sighed and got up and bends a bit and kissed her lips ***

Jabu: let me go take a shower and wena feed my princess....i love you ok

Amo: ummm.....I love... you too

*** he kissed her forehead and walked to the bathroom taking off his clothes leaving her confused and worried ***

.
. .

****AT THANDI AND JAMES' HOUSE****

James was sleeping in the guest bedroom he did check on Thandi before he went to sleep and she simply told him to "fuck off" and that's when he knew she's ok and that she didn't hurt herself cause ever since she locked herself inside their bedroom she hadn't come out....he woke up when he felt that where he was sleeping was wet and he was also pressed so he needed to use the bathroom so he switched on the light and quickly got the covers off him and that's when he realized that where he was laying was wet and so was his boxers

James: the fuck!

he touched where it was wet and he sniffed it and he could tell it was urine

James: nooo this cant be....how?

then he got out of the bed and rushed to the door going to the separate bathroom that was on the hall way then out of the blue he peed on himself....he couldn't hold it in which is something that has never happened to him before even when he was drunk

James: shit... God what's all this...

*** he said and he suddenly felt his stomach turn and he quickly opened the door rushing to the bathroom but he didn't even make it to the door cause he shit on himself ...he stood there devastated as he saw his watery shit and more urine running down his legs and he felt his stomach turn again and he opened the door only to shit on himself again***

.
. .

It's Sunday around 8 at night and Kazi was getting ready to go to the "skeem sam" social stokvel she was back in Hebron to visit Phumi and her aunt.... well Phumi was already done with getting dressed and she was waiting outside their backroom with her boyfriend...Kazi was busy applying lipstick when the door opened and Phumi got in smiling suspiciously

Kazi: yini? (what)

Phumi: ummm some handsome man who looks rich is looking for you

she frowned

Kazi: ok so what's his name....wait is it that guy from last night?

Phumi: nope a re his name ke Mazwi....yho mntase his voice....Jesus....

she said fanning her face using her hand

Kazi: Mazwi....nope I don't know anyone by that name Phumi

Phumi: well he's looking for you and you shouldn't keep such handsome man waiting...a reye(let's go)

***she said pulling her outside and they got outside and found Phumi's boyfriend and Mazwi laughing and Phumi cleared her throat and they stopped and looked at her then Mazwi frowned when he saw Kazi's attire and Kazi remembered him immediately when she saw him cause he once occupied her mind but then a time came when she decided to stop thinking about him ***

Kazi: umm hi....ummm how did you know im here

Mazwi: I have my ways....going somewhere?

he said raising his eyebrow

Kazi: ummm yeah to a social stokvel

she said and cleared her throat....his gaze was making her uncomfortable

Mazwi: Phumi right?

she nodded

Mazwi: look Kazi and I have a lot to catch up on so I was hoping if its fine if I drop her off at the stokvel after out talk

Phumi: ummm mntase?

Kazi looked at her

Kazi: ummm it's ok

Phumi: o sure?

she nodded but she was pissed off that he asked Phumi for permission instead of her as if Phumi is her mother or something and she was also pissed off cause she's supposed to see the guy she met yesterday at some club in town the guy was handsome and he said he's from Garankuwa and he knew about skeem sam's and he promised he'll see her there

Phumi: ok then e re re tsamaye and call me ge o fitlha so that ke tlo go tseya (ok let us go and call me when you get there so I will come get you)

Kazi: ok

they hugged

Phumi: do you trust him?

she whispered to her and Kazi nodded

Kazi: but take his number plates for just in case

***she whispered back and Kazi nodded.... Well Phumi and her boyfriend finally left and Kazi stood there waiting for Mazwi to tell her why he's here ***

Mazwi: aren't you gonna invite me in?

he asked with a raised eyebrow and Mbali swallowed

Kazi: ummm we can talk out here

she said looking down

Mazwi: I swear I don't bite

she looked up at him and he walked closer

Mazwi: let go in nana ngiyacela sthandwa sam (please my love)

she breathed out cause besides the fact that he looked hot his perfume was intoxicating her and his voice was doing things to her

Kazi: umm ok

she said whispering and they went inside and as soon as he got in he closed the door and turned the key to lock the door and rushed to her and he smashed his lips on hers

.
. .
. .

*** he kissed her deepening it and a moan escaped her lips then his hands went to her ass and he grabbed it and picked her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist and he went to the bed still kissing her hard..... then he put her down slowly and he got up from the bed and he took off his shirt and his jeans followed and Kazi swallowed hard when she saw his hard dick print on his briefs it looked thick and long and she felt her clit tingle.....she wanted to tell him to stop what he's about to do but the way her clit was tingling and the way she was wet words failed to come out***

Mazwi: I see you love wearing revealing clothes mmmmh

he said raising his eyebrow and she swallowed hard then the nikka got in bed but instead of continuing with what he started he just laid next to her looking up with his hands under the back of his head and she frowned

Mazwi: I asked you a question nana

she cleared her throat she didn't understand why he stopped.... she started thinking maybe he's hot that's why he took off his clothes or maybe he has a girlfriend so he felt guilty cheating on her*

Kazi: ummm yeah

Mazwi: why

Kazi: huh?

Mazwi: why do you like wearing such revealing clothes?

she quickly glances at his hard dick print and she bit her lower lip squeezing her thighs together hard she wished he could just fuck her senselessly instead of asking her stupid questions

Kazi: I don't know I just love wearing them....ummm Mazwi why are you half naked in my bed?

she decided to just ask him

Mazwi: its hot hau

she shook her head chuckling then she got off the bed

Mazwi: uyaphi manje? (where are you going now?)

Kazi: ah ah you said you'd drop me off at the stokvel

Mazwi: but we haven't talked yet

Kazi: talk then so I can leave jeez

she said annoyed and he smirked looking at her

Mazwi: ok sit so we can talk

she closed her eyes briefly and she opened them and looked at him annoyed some more.....she just wanted him to fuck her or leave the room so she can clean herself up and change her underwear...anyway she sat down

Mazwi: you look annoyed yini?

she breathed out

Kazi: can you just say why you are here please I really need to go

he chuckled and sat up

Mazwi: you think men only are interested in your pussy but you can't even tell me to stop when I kissed you and now you are mad cause I don't wanna fuck you....entlek ufunani Kazi (what is it

that you want Kazi) is it to be loved for who you are or to be fucked cause you can't hold yourself?

she swallowed hard feeling embarrassed and she looked away

Kazi: I don't know what you're talking about

Mazwi: I know you Kazi and I've been keeping an eye on you and I must say im not impressed cause you make it hard for me to see beyond your body and beauty

Kazi: heh nayi ingulube iyang'onela(I can't believe this) so you came here to insult me heh?

she said raising her voice looking at Mazwi with an angry look on her face and Mazwi chuckled

Mazwi: ingulube ngunyoko uyangizwa (a pig is your mother you hear me) and don't ever rise your voice at me or else you'll pick your teeth on the floor one by one!

he said with a firm voice and she swallowed hard looking a bit scared then she got up and laughed bitterly

Kazi: you should leave bhuti

she said going to the door and Mazwi just lay on his back with his hands under the back of his head

Mazwi: the truth hurt sthandwa sam angithi?(my love right?)

Kazi: ngithe hamba Mazwi! (I said leave Mazwi)

Mazwi: why are you angry manje sthandwa sam?

she looked at him with an angry look and he smirked

Mazwi: damn you look cute when you're angry and even my dick is reacting

her eyes went to his dick print and it way hard and she swallowed hard and Mazwi chuckled

Mazwi: heh you know you are so predictable sthandwa sam and I'm asking myself if you'll be able to be faithful to me cause once I eat that cookie you are mine and I don't share and if you give it to someone else or even kiss another person I swear I'll kill you and bury you at my back yard and start a garden on top of your grave

she swallowed hard looking scared with her eyes popped out

Mazwi: and don't think im bluffing cause I've killed before sthandwa sam and believe me I even sleep soundly at night

her heart pounded hard as she looked at him

Kazi: I..I think you should leave Mazwi

she said with almost a whisper and he got out of bed and walked to her and he stood in front of her

Mazwi: im a bad man who wants you so bad and I don't mean sexually even though I would give anything just to fuck you senselessly right now so what do you say you become mine now and you stop opening your legs for other men or I leave and once I leave sthandwa sam trust me you would cease to exist in my life

she looked at him shocked

Mazwi: so are you mine Ntandokazi....do you vow to allow this dick....

***he said pulling her hand and he made her touch his hard dick ***

Mazwi: ... to be the only dick that enters your nana

***she swallowed hard as she felt her knees weaken....his dick felt rock hard and she wondered how it will feel inside of her....she felt her underwear get wetter ***

Kazi: Mazwi pl..please stop

she said whispering

Mazwi: stop what sthandwa sam?

he said squeezing her hand on his hard shaft and he groaned ...she swallowed hard with her heart beating fast

Mazwi: im waiting Kazi wam

Kazi: i...oooh God.... Mazwi

she quickly stood on her toes and smashed her lips on his and they kissed with Kazi putting her hand inside his briefs and he groaned and she held his hard shaft

Kazi: please fuck me Mazwi...please

Mazwi: not until you give me what I want sthandwa sam

he said now sucking on her neck

Kazi: fine... im...im yours now fuck me please

Mazwi: good girl

he then pinned her on the door and kissed her hard grabbing her breasts

.

.

.

***they were now both naked on the bed and Mazwi pushed himself in her and she moaned out loud while he groaned ***

Mazwi: I hope you know that there's no going back from now sthandwa sam

Kazi: gosh.... yes.... now please move

he smirked

Mazwi: your wish is my command

***then he started to move slowly and she moaned out loud ***

Kazi: ooh gosh

***she said that and bit her lower lip then Mazwi bent down and they started kissing passionately as he moved slowly.....they went on and on like that for some time with Mazwi moving in and out of her slowly while they exchanged spit (kissed) until Mazwi pulled out of the kiss and he started increasing his pace going in and out of her fast and hard and she held on to his arms with her eyes closed and her legs opened wide while screaming out his name ***

Mazwi: open your eyes sthandwa sam I wanna see you

she did and her eyes were teary with her face pink

Kazi: Ma...Mazwi....

he was busy fucking her hard while looking down at her

Mazwi: yes sthandwa sam

Kazi: ooh gosh

tears were now falling down from both sides of her face then Mazwi pulled her right leg up and he increased his pace some more going in and out of her and going deeper and he hit her g-spot and an unexpected orgasm hit her hard and she screamed out loud with her body shaking..... and guess what Mazwi fucked her throughout the orgasm

Mazwi: fuck don't do that Kazi

he warned her....she decided to clinch her inner pussy walls around his dick tight after she got her strength back after that hard orgasm

Mazwi: Kazi I said...FUCKKKKKK!

*** then after four thrusts he unexpectedly came....he slammed into her roughly and he released inside the condom groaning***

Mazwi: FUCCKKKEN SHIIITKAZI MAN....

he cursed and he looked down on Kazi with sweat dripping down to her with a serious look on his face

Mazwi: you gonna pay dearly for doing that Ntandokazi...by the time im done with you believe me you won't walk for days

she swallowed hard looking at him...."ooh my gosh" is what she thought cause he seems serious

Mazwi: damn.... you just made me weak and I hate feeling like that Kazi

he said pulling out and he got out of bed and reached for a toilet paper that was on top of the drawer and he took off the used condom and wrapped it around with that tissue and he turned and looked at Kazi

Mazwi: get dressed I need to fuck you in a more private place where neighbors won't call the cops thinking you are being beaten to death because of your screams

he eyes popped out

Kazi: Ma...Mazwi....

he interrupted her

Mazwi: shhhh

she swallowed hard looking at him getting dressed*

Mazwi: I said get dress Ntandokazi!

75

INSERT.....75

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

****AT MENZI'S OTHER HOUSE****

*** Well Kazi and Menzi finally arrived at his other house and he parked the car and got out he then went to the passenger side and opened the door for the nervous Kazi and she got out he closed the door and opened the back door and took out her overnight bag closed the door and he locked the car then they went the main door...he then opened the door walked in and switched on the lights***

Menzi: come on in

she walked in and her eyes wondered around the room...she was taken by the captivating interior design

Menzi: this way...

he said walking to a passage and Kazi swallowed hard following him with her heart beating fast...she got in the main bedroom and she found him undressing and she stood there shocked cause it was clear to her that Menzi wasn't playing when he said he's gonna make her scream

Menzi: hau don't just stand there take off your clothes Ntandokazi

she swallowed hard when she saw him jerking his machine up and down slowly as he went to sit on the edge of the bed.... anyway she took off her clothes

Menzi: come here

she walked to him slowly and his hands went to her curves and he brushed them looking up at her with his head slightly bend to the left

Menzi: since when are you shy Ntandokazi?

she took a deep breath

Kazi: im not shy Menzi

he smirked

Menzi: really?

she nodded and he grabbed her ass and squeezed it pushing her closer

Menzi: ok madam we shall see....anyway when last did you test for hiv?

Kazi: why?

she asked frowning

Menzi: answer my question Ntandokazi

he said with a straight face

Kazi: after the death of an ex months back

Menzi: since then have you slept with any man?

Kazi: ummm n..no

Menzi: good

then he pulled her closer until she sat on him and he lifted her a bit and she sank down on his hard member....she clenched her jaws cause she felt some pain since she was sore down there from their earlier on session while Menzi groaned

Menzi: damn I love how your walls clench around my dick

then he grabbed her ass

Menzi: shit.... move for me sthandwa sam

he said kissing her neck and she started to move back and forth as he sucked on her neck...then she pushed him back and he fell on the bed with his back and she rode him while moaning

Menzi: fuck Kazi....

he said squeezing her yellow thighs hard and he bit his lower lip.....she then stopped moving and she leaned forward and balanced herself with her forearms on Menzi's chest and she started twerking on his dick which drove Menzi crazy....she moved up and down moaning with her ass bouncing up and down shaking too and as for Menzi he was busy groaning loud....she went on and on until Menzi stopped her

Menzi: turn around and face the other way

she got off him and he went to the middle of the bed and she climbed back on the bed and she sank down on his hard member with the reverse cowgirl style and she leaned forward holding on to his legs

Menzi: shit.... move for me baby

he said staring at her ass biting his bottom lip and Kazi obliged and she started twerking on his dick as he watched going crazy....he felt himself getting more excited as he watched her appetizing ass bouncing up and down shaking too he then closed his eyes a bit and he opened them again and they were red with complete lust....he was groaning hard while Kazi was busy moaning out loud too....she increased her pace as she felt that she was getting nearer to her finishing line even her grip on his legs was getting tighter and the pleasure she felt as she twerked on his dick was out of this world

Kazi: fuck.... Menzi im...im cuming baby...oooh fuck....yess.... im...im cumming

then out of the blue Menzi stopped her from moving as he held her tight in one place

Menzi: not yet sthandwa sam.... now get up

she got up from him sulking with tears in her eyes

Kazi: how can you do that to me Menzi....i was close

*** she said laying on the bed panting hard on the verge of tears and Menzi got out the bed and he went to the en-suite and he came back with a towel and he threw it on top of the bed***

Menzi: come here!

she did slowly while still sulking with her clit painful...she just wanted to release but the nikka refused for her to have her happy ending.... anyway he made her lay at the edge of the bed with her upper front body and her legs hanging off and Menzi positioned himself between her legs and he lifted her hips and thighs then he entered her as she supported herself with her elbows on the edge of the bed.... well the sex position is called THE PLOUGH and the position requires a great deal of strength and flexibility so luckily Menzi is fit and Kazi is flexible

Menzi: FUCKKKK....

he said looking up with his eyes closed as he pushed all off his thick and veined dick in

Kazi: OHH GOSHHH.....

*** she said grabbing tight the bed covers and he started moving slowly in and out of her and she moaned out loud with her tiny hands still grasping the bed covers tight....he was doing her good and she was busy moaning out loud***

Menzi: ooh yes....fuck yeah....

he said all that with his mainly voice sounding deeper than normal..... its all he said as he went in and out of her with a neutral pace....he then began increasing his pace going harder and deeper and she started screaming out loud calling his name while grasping tighter on the bed covers*

Menzi: you like what daddy is doing to you sthandwa sam?

she didn't say anything to him she just continued to scream as he fucked her hard....his muscles all over his body was tightened hard as he fucked her hard

Kazi: ooh gosh.....MENZI!!!..... SHIIITTT..... *#@!^&#!

she screamed louder mumbling some gibberish at the end as an orgasm hit her hard and her body shook....she came all over his dick and he pulled out and put her down gently then she slid down to the floor as her legs failed her and she laid flat on the floor holding her pussy as she tightened her inner thighs together moaning with her other hand squeezing her right breast while biting her bottom lip....then Menzi crouched next to her with a towel on his hand

Menzi: open up so I can clean you up

*** he said with a smirk on his face and she didn't say anything she was afraid her voice might betray her so she just opened her legs wide and he cleaned her up then he threw the towel on top of the bed after cleaning himself too***

Menzi: im coming ok

*** she just nodded and he got up and walked out of the bedroom and after a few seconds he came back drinking an energy drink.... then one of his phones rang and he handed Kazi the energy drink***

Menzi: thatha sthandwa sam (take my love)

she took it and he went to answer his phone while jerking his dick slowly but when he saw who was calling him he stopped

Menzi: aow Gabadiya mphathi wami (my boss)

Baba: Mapholoba unjani? (Mapholoba how are you?)

Menzi: ngiyaphila Gabadiya wena? (im good boss and you?)

Baba: hai nginumber one mina (im good)..... bheka la ndoda nginomsebenzi for wena (look here man I have a job for you)

Menzi: ngilalele Gabadiya (im listening boss)

he said walking out of the bedroom

Baba: I'll send you his name and his flight schedule then I want you to take him out before he leaves the airport he's a dangerous man Mapholoba so take him out before he gets a chance to fight you.... you'll only have 5 minutes to do the job starting from when he enters the parking lot and ooh he has someone who'll pick him up so take care of him too

Menzi: ok Gabadiya consider it done

Baba: ngifuna umsebenzi ohlanzekile Mapholoba (I want a clean job Mapholoba)

Menzi: ofcourse Gabadiya

Baba: good

then he dropped the call and seconds later he heard footsteps outside then a knock on the door...he quickly went to the bedroom and he found Kazi sleeping on top of the bed now then he wore a pair of shorts and he went to the lounge and he took out a gun behind a painting that is on the wall and he went to the door

Menzi: state your name and your reason for trespassing!

Voice: Gabadiya send me to give you an envelope Mapholoba

he sighed and slowly opened his door and he found out that it was one of Baba's personal bodyguards

Menzi: eitha (hi)

the bodyguard nodded and he handed him the envelope

Guy: he's a well-trained hitman be careful mfowethu

Menzi: sure

***then the bodyguard walked away and Menzi closed the door and he went to put the gun where it was then he opened the envelope.....it was different pictures of the target and there was a little note inside too and it read:

“he's after La Parca and that puts my granddaughter and her unborn child at risk so take care of him permanently ”

He then put everything back in the envelope and he also put it behind the painting then he went back to the bedroom...he took off his shorts and he jerked himself up and down while staring at Kazi's ass and his member got hard then he grabbed Kazi by her leg and Kazi quickly opened her eyes***

Kazi: mmmmh Menzi

***he pulled her to the edge of the bed ***

Menzi: stand up

***he said with an aroused look on his face he even had a popping vein on his forehead..... she got off the bed and he instructed her on what he wants her to do and even though she was nervous about the new sex position he's introducing to her now that is called the STANDING WHEEL BARROW she was also aroused by the hardness of his dick and the lust look on his face..... she

got on the floor on her fours and he got between her legs then he lifted her waist up and he ordered her to wrap her legs around his waist she then moaned out loud when he slowly entered her honeypot....he started to move at a fast pace cause he knew she will get tired fast with the way she was positioned on the floor she was busy screaming from the top of her lungs as he fucked her hard deep and fast with his big hands holding her tight....she could feel his dick was deep inside of her and it was a bit painful cause she felt as if it was poking her uterus...

After a few thrusts she screamed louder as an unexpected orgasm hit her and the nikka didn't stop.... he went harder on her like a possessed person and she kept on screaming like a mad woman.... well after some time with him fucking her hard she decided to no longer concentrate on the pleasure but on the pain she felt on her lower abdomen and the tiredness of her arms he was buried deeper inside of her and even though it was a tiny mixture of pain and pleasure but the pain was overshadowing the pleasure slowly cause it was too much for her it was the first time a man was fucking her like this and it was just too much.....

As for Menzi he was busy fucking her hard without making noise his jaws were clenched and sweat was all over his body dripping down on the floor and some on Kazi's back....the only thing you could hear was Mbali's loud crazy screams....her arms unfortunately failed her and she ended up balancing herself on the floor with her forearms but nikka didn't stop even when he felt that she was tired he kept on fucking her hard going faster like a possessed man at least he was keeping her in place and holding her tight so she doesn't fall and hurt herself...he was chasing his own orgasm and the way he was going in and out of her made her scream loud like she was being beaten to death....

He went harder as he was now nearer and after four thrusts he slammed into her and pushed in deeper and a loud deep groan escaped his mouth and he cursed....his body was stiff as he offloaded inside of her then his body shook and he gasped for air for some time....after catching his breath he pulled out and he put her down gently with his legs shaking...he stumbled back a bit and he decided to just sit down before his legs fail him and he did while panting then he decided to lay on his back on the cold floor just like Kazi***

Menzi: fuck....ufuna ukungibulala Ntandokazi? (do you want to kill me Ntandokazi?)

Kazi: shit.... I think you tore my vagina up Menzi

she said with her eyes closed panting and he chuckled panting too

Menzi: I aim to please sthandwa sam

Kazi: mxm I swear im never having sex with you

Menzi: uyahlanya (you are mad)...that honeypot is mine Ntandokazi and I'll eat from it anytime and anywhere I want you're also welcomed to do as you please with Fuze omhkhulu (his dick) here since he belongs to you

Kazi: angisamfuna mina uFuze Menzi (I do not want Fuze anymore Menzi) he tore my nana apart ***she said sulking and he laughed and got up he reached for the towel and he cleaned himself up and cleaned her too since she said her arms were shaking and also feeling wobbly...he then picked her up and put her on top of the bed and laid next to her then she rested her head on his chest and he held her tight kissing her forehead***

Menzi: ngikshovile kamnandi neh sthandwa sam? (I fucked you pretty good right my love?)

he asked with a smirk on his face and she pinched him

Menzi: ouch

Kazi: like I said angisamfuni uFuze mina shem(I don't want your dick anymore)

Menzi: uMenzi ushove uNtandokazi kamnadi..... (Menzi fucked Ntandokazi)

he said singing out of tune and she laughed.....well they chatted some more up until Kazi passed out and he gently place her head on a pillow and he took his phone and made a call

Voice: bozza

Menzi: we have a mission gather all the guys and lets meet at the warehouse in two hours' time

Voice: yebele (ok)

then they ended the call and he looked at the sleeping Kazi for some time then he bend a bit and he kissed her cheek he then covered her with a brown thick fluffy throw and he went to the ensuite

.
. .

****AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE****

*** around 6 in the morning Ray brushed Mbali's naked thigh a couple of times breathing heavily close to her ear then he lifted her thigh up exposing her nana and he entered her from behind and she moaned softly***

Mbali: R..Ray

he started moving slowly

Ray: shhh go back to sleep I got this

he whispered in her ear then he groaned and bit her shoulder as her warmth was sending tingles from his dick to the rest of his body.....he moved back and forth while still rising Mbali's thigh high as for Mbali she was moaning with her eyes closed she was still tired from their crazy love making session the previous night....he increased his pace going in and out of her for some time with his grip on her thigh getting tighter with Mbali moaning louder as she held on tight to the bed sheets he then stopped moving and he pulled out and knelt on the bed and turned Mbali to lay on her back then Ray put a pillow under her ass and he got between her legs opening her legs wide and she slightly bend them he then held onto her ankles and he entered her slowly well the sex position is called the EAGLE and it's a relatively easy and deep penetration position.... Anyway they both groaned and Ray started to move and Mbali bit her lower lip feeling lots and lots of pleasure

Mbali: ooh.... gosh Ray... yess

is all she managed to say

Ray: fuck my flower....shit I love how warm and tight you are...

he said increasing his pace and she held on to the bed sheet tight...the pleasure he was feeling was out of this world....he increased his pace some more and after a few thrusts Mbali reached her orgasm and Ray wasn't far too so he fucked her throughout her orgasm and after a few thrusts he slammed into her releasing inside of her while groaning loud...he then looked down at her with a smile on his face while panting a bit

Ray: you good?

*** she nodded***

Ray: Chineke m (my God)..... ah ah nwa(baby) don't tell me you just went mute ooo!

he made a shocked face and Mbali laughed

Mbali: mxm mute is your cute tight ass Sambulo!

then she laughed and Ray looked at her with his eyebrow raise

Mbali: what? your name is Sambulo hau so don't give me that look abeg

she said laughing

Ray: you're lucky you're heavily pregnant and that I just had a juicy morning glory or else hmmm....

she giggled and Ray pulled out slowly and he took a towel they used last night and he wiped the both of them and he laid next to her and pulled her closer so she rests her head on his chest

Ray: happy birthday nwa m ihunanya m na ihe m niile (my baby my love and my everything)

she blushed even though she only understood what "nwa m and ihunanya m" mean

Mbali: since this is the second time you're wishing me a happy birth day this morning does it mean I wont hear the end of it?

Ray chuckled

Ray: yeah and a bunch of flowers will be delivered to you every two hours so brace yourself
ihunanya

she looked up at him and he perked her lips and smiled then he whispered to her

Ray: and by the time im done sexing you today and you don't end up being in labor later on then I'll
know that our little Saint is strong shem

Mbali laughed and Ray joined her

Ray: I love you ok

Mbali: I love you too nwa(baby)

***they chatted a bit until she fell back to sleep and Ray's phone rang he reached for it then he
answered ***

Ray: Mateo

Mat: jefe is it safe to come in the house?

Ray chuckled

Ray: really bros?

Mat chuckled

Mat: what? I don't wanna walk in on the madam half naked in the kitchen

***Ray chuckled ***

Ray: she's still sleeping so you can come in and ask MaDorcas to start with breakfast

Mat: ok

***they dropped the call and Ray gently put Mbali back on her pillow and he covered here with the
covers***

Mbali: Ray....

she said in her sleep and he kissed her cheek

Ray: shhhh go back to sleep my flower

Mbali: mh

he kissed her again and he went to the en-suite

.

.

.

they were now inside his study drinking coffee as they wait for breakfast to be served

Ray: you look offish Mat what's wrong?

Mat sighed

Mat: the iceman is dead jefe

Ray: which iceman?

he asked him not believing that he heard him right and Mat sighed

Mat: the American hitman jefe....he was found stabbed in the parking lot at OR Tambo airport

Ray: shit?... Mat you were supposed to keep an eye on him from the time he arrives in the country up until we strike....and wait dying like that is way too easy for a man like iceman Mat

Mat: I know jefe I was monitoring him through cctv footage at the airport and when he got to the underground parking lot someone locked me out of the system I fought to get back in for about 5 minutes or so and when I finally did he was laying on the floor bleeding

Ray got up

Ray: who killed him I mean we both know he was here for me so who....is there another enemy I don't know off....but....wait.....

he stopped and chuckled shaking his head

Mat: what?

Ray: beast

Mat: beast as in beast your brother in law

Ray: yeah...SHIT!

he said that hitting the table hard with the side of his fist then Mat's phone rang and he answered

Mat: yeah

Voice: that Interpol guy is dead man

Mat: what?

he said getting up

Voice: look man I watched him being hit by a bullet on his forehead 15 minutes ago..... everything happened too fast one minute he was coming out of his car and the next thing he was down on the ground dead.... I was tailing him like you told me I should and as usual he meets his side bitch for breakfast every Monday Wednesday and Friday morning so as soon as he got out of his car outside the restaurant it was over for him....he even died on the scene man and it looks like he was assassinated

Mat brushed his head looking at Ray

Mat: ok thanks for the heads up man I'll wire you your balance by the end of the day

Voice: ok... peace!

they ended the call

Mat: the bastard is also dead....my contact in the US said he just been assassinated

Ray: im sure its beast that fucker is good with a sniper gun....the big question is why Mat?

Mat: I think they know your flower is about to give birth so they want you around when that happens cause as mightier as they may think they are but im sure Saint that day made them want to repent jefe...im sure they think he might show them flames during birth

then he chuckled but Ray kept a straight face

Ray: I hope that's the case Mateo cause I don't wanna owe them favors man

Mat: mmmh I hope so too

Ray: anyway how are the Cubans doing?

he said changing the topic and Mat chuckled

Mat: they are busy showing those Cape Town filthy gangs how we Cuban Marielitos operate and business is doing great too even the 28s are worried

Ray: good...that's good....we should bring in more boys from Cuba to help them cause the twenty-sevens (27s) and the twenty-eights (28s) are one of the top dangerous gangs in South Africa more especially in Cape Town

Mat nodded

Mat: and we want their turf

Ray: and we want their turf

then they both chuckled

.
. .
.

THANDI AND JAMES'S HOUSE

*** Thandi woke up in the morning and she went to the en-suit bathroom and she did her business then she decided to also take a shower...after showering she got dressed in a simple summer dress and she tied her braids into a messy bun and she didn't put on any make up then she did the bed and as she walked out a strong smell of bleach on the hall way caught her nostrils and she frowned making a facewell the whole of Sunday she spend it in bed and she only went out when she went to the kitchen cause she was hungry and she was glad she didn't bump into James at all cause she was still angry with his cheating ways and also impregnating his side dish..... but she was impressed when she smelled bleach all over the house cause she thought James decided to clean the house and when she saw a bed cover and a duvet hanging on the washing line she was impressed again thinking he also decided to do some laundry but now on a Monday morning she woke up to that

strong smell of bleach again on the passage and this time she wasn't impressed cause the smell was strong***

Thandi: and nou...heh banna kgante monna o ga itsi gore wa kgona le go koropa ka tile cleaner?(and now....jeez doesn't this man know that you can even mop the floor using a tile cleaner?)

she said going to the kitchen and all the windows and curtains were opened again like they were on Sunday morning and so was the main door and the kitchen door but the security bars were still locked

Thandi: heh banna since when does James clean the house two days in a row?...yah neh metlholo ga e fele shem (wonders shall never end shame)

she said to herself clapping her hands together once and she went to the kitchen and her eyes landed outside the window showing the backyard and she saw the same duvet and a bed cover hung on the washing line

Thandi: modimo wa kgotso why a tlhatswitse duvet ele le bed cover gape (God of mercy why did he wash the duvet and the bed cover again?)

she asked herself and a thought filled her mind

Thandi: wait what if o rotetse dikobo?(what if he peed on the blankets) mmmh maybe he drank too much and peed on them and o di anegile gore di ome (and he decide to put them on the washing line to dry).....let me go check....something is not right here a ka se tlhatswe (he cant wash) the same things two days in row

she took her keys and opened the security bars and she walked out she got closer to them and the strong smell of fabric softener caught her nostrils

Thandi: yep... o rotetse dikobo o mxm.... the way a tlopetseng staysoft ka teng ge a di tlhatswa o di rotetse (yep...he peed on them mxm the way he poured too much fabric softener when he washed them shows he peed on them) but wait did he pee on them two nights in a row? yah neh i rest alcohol shame

she then shook her head and she went back inside and her phone rangit was Naledi

Thandi: mntase

Naledi: i hope you are not still sleeping the boys need their school uniform Thandi

Thandi: no man im already on my way there bathong

Naledi laughed a bit

Naledi: ga se nna ke maninja a gao....ba busy bampotsisa every 2 minutes gore o tlella kae (its not me its your ninjas...they are busy asking me every 2 minutes if you are closer or what)

Thandi: mxm oho ba botse ke etla ba tlogele gonna dramatic(mxm just tell them im coming and that they must stop being dramatic)

***Naledi laughed ***

Naledi: ok shap

Thandi: shap

they ended the call and she went to take their school uniform then she called out for James and he didn't answer....then she locked up and she opened the garage and found only her car in there which meant James left early in the morning and she didn't even hear him drive out

Thandi: mara why did he clean the house cause I think I understand the washing of the duvet and bed covers part....ai go nna lechakane ke mathata shem (being a tsonga is difficult shame)

***she thought to herself and she shook her head....she then sighed and got inside her car and drove out.... anyway she finally arrived at the Owoh-Masden residence and she parked her car inside the yard then her phone beeped indicating she received a message well she thought it was James but nope it was from an unsaved number and the message read:

“when the time comes and we finally get married know that in our marriage we will talk like best friends play like children argue like husband and wife protect each other like brother and sister and never cheat on each other. I love you amour and I'll wait for you to realize your worth and come to me where you belong then I'll wife you instantlyFrom your future husband Ruslan.....enjoy your day amour”

She swallowed hard and she reread the message again she then sighed and took out the boys' uniform and she went inside the house ***

76

INSERT.....76

.
. .
.

NARRATED

AT THANDI AND JAMES' HOUSE

*** Four days later..... Thandi just got back home from work and she was making something to eat for her boys when her phone rang.....it was James so she took a deep breath and answered***

Thandi: James

James: hey ummm how are you and the boys

she chuckled bitterly

Thandi: ooh so you suddenly care mmmmh?

she said with an angry tone and James sighed

James: ofcourse I care how can you say that Thandi

Thandi: if you care you wouldn't disappear for four days...four days even though you know gore you have a family James and ka mo your boys ba busy ba mpotsisa ka wena gore o kae! (and your boys are here asking about your whereabouts)

James sighed

Thandi: or keng o nale baby mama ya gao? (are you with your baby mama) is that it?

James: ofcourse not

Thandi: then where the hell are you....so this is how it's gonna be like heh James you fuck up then wa tshaba (then you run away)

James: Thandi can you please calm down

Thandi: don't tell me to calm down don't wankutlwa (you hear me)....how can you do this to me

James what have I done to deserve this....haven't I been a good wife to you

she said with a breaking voice and tears ran down her cheeks

James: Thandi please don't do this to yourself...please

Thandi: you know what its fine

she said wiping her tears off

James: my love im not with no baby mama im actually in Limpopo

Thandi: so you decided to go home without telling me and I have been here worried and concluding things in my mind

James: im not ok Thandi so I needed koko's help

she chuckled bitterly

Thandi: entlek what am I to you James....why ontreater ekare ke girlfriend ya gao (why are you treating me like im your girlfriend) wasn't I worthy to be told gore ga o shap the moment you felt gore ga o shap James....wasn't I worthy to be told gore you feel like your grandmother is the

only one you feel can help you heh you decided to call me four days later and you expect me to understand right?

James sighed

James: my love please im sorry....i love you Thandi and everything was happening so fast and...

Thandi interrupted him

Thandi: whatever motho wa modimo....anyway bolela le your boys (talk to your boys) cause as for me I have nothing to say to you

*** James sighed and Thandi called her sons and gave them the phone and she switched off the stove and went to her bedroom and cried it out....after some time she went to the bathroom and she cleaned herself then she went back to the kitchen as for her boys they were still talking to their father looking happy....after some time her eldest son came to the kitchen holding her phone***

Mpendulo: mama take... papa says he loves you and he's coming back on Sunday

he said with a smile on his face

Thandi: ok baby

***she took the phone and almost immediately she received a message and the message read;

“ remember you're not alone and you'll never be just know your worth and find the courage to walk away and believe me that's when you'll find your way home home to my heart where you belong and where you'll be cherished till the end of time. I love you amour “

She smiled reading the message then she took a deep breath and she continued to make something to eat for her boys***

.
. .

****AT RAY AND MBALI'S HOUSE****

Ray: you did what?

he asked Ruslan with his eyes popped out and Mat just laughed his butt off...well it was four days later in the afternoon and Ray Ruslan and Mateo were sitting in his lounge chilling while Mbali was resting upstairs

Ruslan: he's peeing and also shitting on himself

Mat laughed

Mat: ooh fuck that is the cruelest thing you can do to a man Russ

he said still laughing and Ray laughed

Ray: wow that is embarrassment at its best Ruu

he said shaking his head

Ruslan: serves him right.... no one and I mean no one will hurt my Thandi and gets away with it he's lucky he has kids with her or else he'd be dead by now

Mat: and I believe you but damn you mean to tell me wherever he is he's wearing an adult diaper that is constantly full of his shit and pee like a new born baby?

he said laughing and Ruslan looked at him with a smile on his face then he shook his head chuckling

Ruslan: I can already see that you not gonna stop talking about it any time soon

Mat nodded and Ruslan laughed

Mat: I can already see him with a diaper full of his shit and the weight of the shit in it busy pulling down the diaper on his ass like babies when they did a boo boo

they all busted out with laughed then Mbali walked down the stairs looking mad-angry and they kept quiet

Ray: my flower are you ok?

she ignored him and walked to the kitchen and Ray frowned while Ruslan and Mat looked at him

Mat: hormones?

Ray: I doubt it she looks angry....let me go check on her

they nodded and he went after her and found her talking things out of the fridge and putting them on top of the counter huffing

Ray: nwa are you ok?

she ignored him again and he got closer

Ray: Mbali im talking to you

Mbali: as if you care nx

she clicked her tongue and he frowned

Ray: what?

Mbali: I SAID AS IF YOU CARE!

she said it out loud with her chest moving up and down with an angry look on her face and Ray sighed looking at her

Ray: are you gonna tell me or what?

***she didn't say anything she just put all the things she took out of the fridge back inside with Ray looking at her suspiciously ***

Ray: MBALI!

she stopped with her back facing Ray

Mbali: who is Devonia?

Ray frowned

Ray: what?

Mbali: you heard me don't act like you didn't hear me.....who the hell is she?

she said turning to look at him and he had a surprised look on his face

Ray: umm why are you asking me about her?

Mbali: mmmmh so you know her right.... mmmmh so she's the bitch that you are cheating on me with?

Ray: chea....wait....what?

he asked her shocked and she chuckled

Mbali: I knew you would act like this..... You know i just can't believe I actually thought you would remain faithful to me Raymond....i can't believe I've been stupid all along

she said with tears in her eyes

Ray: ok that's enough... first of all im NOT cheating on you and secondly Devonia was my business associate and you know her remember....

she interrupted him

Mbali: STOP LYING TO ME RAYMOND OK IM NOT SOME NAÏVE GIRL YOU CAN FOOL WITH YOUR STUPID LIES!

Ray: don't raise your fucken voice at me Mbali and stop all this nonsense!

he said pointing at her and she chuckled

Mbali: so now im talking nonsense huh? me Mbali talking nonsense.....ok fine

she moved walking passed him leaving the fridge wide opened and he grabbed her arm

Ray: what's going on with you mmmmh...what's all this.....why are you angry and why are you asking me about Devonia?

Mbali: YOU ARE FUCKING HER THAT'S WHY NOW GET YOUR FUCKEN HAND OFF ME BEFORE I DO SOMETHING THAT WILL LAND YOU IN HOSPITAL RAYMOND!

***he looked at her and he could see she was dead serious and he wondered what's going on with her cause the only Devonia he knows is dead ***

Mbali: I said let go Ray!

he looked at her for some time then he let her go and she walked out of the kitchen going to the lounge and she stood in front of Ruslan and Mateo and Mat swallowed hard cause he could see she was livid

Mbali: did both of you know?

she asked breathing heavily and Mat and Ruslan looked at each other confused

Ruslan: know what his flower?

Mbali: don't play dumb with me Ruslan im not in the mood now im gonna ask you for the last time....DID YOU KNOW?

Ray: Mbali stop it!

Mbali: wena don't even say a word to me.... one more word from you and you'll curse the day you met me.... dare me!

she said giving him a death stare and he just sighed cause he could see she wasn't herself

Ruslan: Ray what's going on?

Ray: she says im cheating on her with Devonia

Mat: which Devonia jefe?

Ray: Dee Mat

*** Mat's eyes popped out and she chuckled***

Mbali: ooh she's even Dee mmmmh

Mat: ummm but jefe she's dead how are you cheating with a dead person?

Mbali: unamanga Mat (you are lying Mat) she's not dead how can a dead person call me and tell me to stay away from Ray mmmmh?

they looked at each other

Ray: call you?

she turned to Ray

Mbali: what did I say about saying another word Raymond...what did I say?

they looked at her with total shock on their faces

Ruslan: Mbali calm down please think about your unborn son

Mbali: unborn son? didn't you tell your friend to think about his unborn son when he decided to cheat on me

Ray just shook his head confused he was also worried about her instead of being angry that she's disrespecting him like this in front of his friends

Ruslan: Ray loves you Mbali and he wouldn't do you like that

Mbali: well his bitch called and warned me Mbali to stay away from HER man

Mateo: ok then give me your phone and let me trace her numbers and I'll personally bring her here to explain why she's busy threatening you to stay away from your husband....how about that?

she was even breathing heavily with her face red with anger....Ruslan looked at Ray with total horror on his face and Ray looked back at him and they spoke with their eyes and Ruslan nodded then Ray brushed his head looking down....Mbali gave Mat her phone and the last number received was from her grandmother in the morning then he looked at Ray

Mat: ummm Mbali did you perhaps delete her numbers?

Mbali: why would I do that...im not stupid Mateo and im not fucken lying!

she snatched her phone from Mat and she turned the screen back to him

Mbali: here is her numbers

she said showing him her grandmother's numbers

Mat: ummm...

he looked at Ray and Ray got closer and when he saw the numbers he looked back at Mbali

Mbali: it's her numbers right....that's why you two look like you've seen a ghost

Mat: jefe

Ray looked at Ruslan

Ray: let's talk in private man and Mat tra....trace ummm that number

Mat cleared his throat

Mat: ok

Mbali then went to sit down on one of the couches waiting for Mat to "trace" the numbers....she was even sweating

.

.

.

Ray: what the hell is going on man?

he asked with a worried tone

Ruslan: its time bros

Ray: shit....then why is she seeing things that are not there

Ruslan: it's the Saint he wants to come out bros....its time that baby needs to come out as in now before he rips himself out of her

Ray: fuck!

he said brushing his head roughly

Ruslan: call her brothers to come its time

Ray quickly took out his phone and called Muzi

.
. .
.

****AT MENZI'S OTHER HOUSE****

Kazi: baby I really have to go back home

he pulled her closer and kissed her cheek and she melted.....they were sitting in his lounge naked they just made love and this time around he was gentle which surprised Kazi cause she thought he like it rough but now he just made sweet love to her

Menzi: you can leave on Monday but on Wednesday or Thursday I want you back

she turned completely and looked at him

Kazi: are you asking me or telling me bhuti?

he chuckled then he perked her lips

Menzi: whichever way you take it sthandwa sam but what I want is you back here on Thursday the latest

Kazi: wow

she said moving away from him and he raised an eyebrow

Menzi: yini manje? (what is it now?)

Kazi: you won't die if you ask me nicely you know Menzi

he chuckled

Menzi: this is me Kazi and the sooner you accept me the way I am the better for the both of us

Kazi: so you want me to accept you the way you are but you fail to accept me the way I am....double standards Menzi

his face became serious

Menzi: so you want to parade around showing abomalambane my things heh? (showing thirsty fools my things)

he asked her with a frown on his face

Kazi: I don't parade around naked Menzi

Menzi: this conversation is over

Kazi: mxm

she said getting up then Menzi grabbed her hand and pulled her to sit back down

Menzi: wenzani? (What are you doing?)

Kazi: im going to shower

he looked at her for some time

Menzi: unenkani neh? (you're cheeky I see)

he said raising his eyebrow at her and she gave him a blank look then he chuckled

Menzi: just so you know I've dealt with women worse than you so angeke ungihlule mina

Ntandokazi uyangizwa? (you won't fail me Ntandokazi you hear me?)

Kazi: im not some toy you can control Menzi...I was once that girl that would let a man control her but not anymore.....remember bhuti that relationships are not by force so continue with this "whatever I say goes" attitude you have going on and by the time you realize that im not like all those girls you used to date you'll remain holding my feathers while I the PHOENIX will be gone

Menzi looked at her amused

Menzi: well ngenile ngenile Ntandokazi (there's no leaving me Ntandokazi) so you can threaten to leave me all you like but just know that ngenile ngenile

***she swallowed hard and he grabbed her waist lifting her up and he made her sit on top of him and he lifted her up a bit and directed his hard shaft on her pussy entrance and pulled her down and his hard as a rock dick slid in and she moaned while he groaned ***

Menzi: fuck.....now move for me Kazi wam!

he said looking straight into her eyes and she bit her lower lip and started moving

.
. .
.

****BACK AT MBALI AND RAY'S HOUSE****

Mbali: you have been tracing that phone number for eternity now Mateo!

she shouted at him and he cleared his throat

Mat: umm the phone number is off Mbali so im still waiting for her to switch on the phone then I'll get her location

***she shook her head continuously ***

Mbali: ucabanga ukuthi ngislima neh (you think im stupid neh)

Mat: huh?

he said not understanding what she just said

Mbali: find that bitch Mat....don't piss me off ok!

Ray: nwa please calm down biko

Mbali: calm down yamasimba.... all this is your fault wena if you kept you dick in your pants like you were supposed to none of this shit would be happening

Ray just clenched his jaws....she was busy wiping off sweat on her face and as for Saint he was busy moving and kicking inside her belly abnormally right then the intercom went off and Ray went to open the gate cause he knew it was the Khumalo brothers without Thorsten he was away on some secret mission trip somewhere in Europewell soon the door opened and they walked in and when Mbali's eyes landed on them she frowned getting more angry

Mbali: nifunani la? (what are you doing here?)

they looked at her surprised

Snakes: princess...

she interrupted him

Mbali: hei hei musa (don't)

she said raising her hand indicating he shouldn't say another word....the brothers looked at each other then they looked at Ray who looked drained

Mbali: you have the nerve to come to Ray's house after you beat him up and even shot him twice

Jay: heh?

Mbali: nginibuzile ukuthi nifunani la! (I asked you what you doing here)

Ray: nwa...

Mbali: don't Ray biko don't try me....let me tell them what I think of them.....they have the nerve to show their faces here after what they did to you!

Ray went closer to the Khumalos and he whispered to them

Ray: it's Saint so play along please

then he cleared his throat looking at Mbali

Ray: ummm my flower I forgot to tell you....they came and apologized to me so we are cool now...right?

***he said the last part looking at the khumalos and they cleared their throats ***

Them: ummm yeah

Mbali: oooh?

Ray: yeah they even ummm bought me my favorite whiskey as a peace offering

Mbali: then why didn't you tell me?

Ray: I was still gonna tell you later before we sleep

Mbali: oh ok

then she moaned loud holding her belly and Ray and Muzi rushed to her and when they got closer to her they could see the baby's hand pushing up and visibly showing on top of the fabric of her shirt and they looked at each other

Ray: fuck

Muzi: what do we do now?

then out of the blue she screamed out loud and Ray put his hand on her belly

Ray: breathe baby breathe

as for Saint he was moving vigorously in her belly and the pain she was feeling now was intense you could even see it on her face

Ray: Mat take Muzi to the white room to prepare!

Mat quickly got up and Muzi kissed Mbali's forehead

Muzi: hang in there sis

then he followed Mat

Ray: look at me my flower

she did with tears running down her cheeks

Ray: do you trust me?

she nodded fast then she screamed again

Ray: say it!

Mbali: i...oooh God...I...i trust you

she said that and did her breath in and out

Ray: good now from now on you must do as I say ok

she nodded

Mbali: it hurts Ray...is it supposed to hurt like this

*** She screamed again then Muzi walked back in***

Muzi: let's take her to the white room

Jay and Jase helped Ray to help her stand up then a black liquid ran down her legs and she saw it and her eyes popped out

Mbali: ohh my God ooh my God what's happening to my baby

then Ray whispered on her ear

Ray: trust me my flower....nothing will happen to you or our son ok

she nodded crying then Jay's phone ran and so did Jase's phone....Jase gave his phone to Snakes to answer while Jay answered his as Ray ad Jase moved slowly holding Mbali who was screaming her lungs out

Snakes: Kedi

Kedi: Nhlaka its Mngqobi and Thula....their eyes have suddenly turned all white and they are not moving its like they are frozen or something

she said with a panicking voice

Snakes: shit.... look I think it's Mbali's unborn baby ngoba she's in labor manje as sikhuluma (now as we speak)

Kedi: ooh my God ok...ummm so what should I do now Nhlaka im scared

Snakes: keep an eye on them I think once he's born they'll be fine

Kedi: ok

Snakes: but if something else happens call us ok

Kedi: ok

then they ended the call

Snakes: shit!

****MEANWHILE WITH JAY****

Jay: ok can you hear what he's saying

Nomhle: no but he's busy mumbling things I don't understand

Jay: ok im coming manje themba lam

Nomhle: ok hurry Jay....they are just sitting on the floor looking ahead with their eyes all white with their legs crossed and im scared Jay....im scared

she said crying

Jay: im coming Themba lam

Nomhle: ok

they ended the call

Jay: I need to go back home Lwazi and Lwandile....

Snakes interrupted him

Snakes: so are Mngqobi and Thula

Jay: shit let me go tell Jase so we can go

Snakes: don't forget to call Melusi

*** Jay nodded and Snaked gave him Jase's phone and Jay rushed towards the passage where everyone went and Snakes sat down and he rubbed his head roughly then Jay and Jase rushed out and Mat came to the lounge holding a candle and he put it on the table along with a lighter***

Snakes: shit I should have left with Jay and Jase!

Mat just chuckled looking at him

77

INSERT.....77

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Mbali: TAKE HIM OUT RAY...TAKE HIM OUT!

she screamed at him then she cried out loud too and he just continued to brush her wet hair while holding her hand....well Ruslan put lit candles around the bed and he also drew a circle around the bed too and now he was sitting on the far corner of the room on the floor with his crystal ball in front of him busy mumbling something in a forbidden language with the crystal ball showing him images

Muzi: are you doing this or should i?

Ray: I'll do it

Mbali screamed again as the baby was moving roughly inside of her she felt as if he was ripping her apart inside her womb and that black liquid was still coming out of her nana....anyway Ray and Muzi switched places and Muzi kept on checking on her BP

Ruslan: he's starting to tear off the amniotic sac and soon he's gonna tear her uterus apart.... take him out now!

Muzi: we are not prepared for a C-section man

Ruslan: DO WHAT YOU HAVE TO DO OR ELSE HE'LL RIP HIMSELF OUT OF HER AND KILL HER IN THE PROCESS!

Muzi: shit!

then out of the blue Mbali pushed

Muzi: sis don't push please

she screamed ignoring him and she pushed again while screaming

Ray: Mbali don't....

she interrupted him

Mbali: HE'S FUCKEN COMING OUT

then thick blood gushed out of her nana and she screamed again as the baby was still moving vigorously and kicking hard

Mbali: TAKE HIM OUT RAY...FUCKEN TAKE HIM OUT!

she screamed out loud then she pushed again

Ray: baby wait for me to tell you to push!

Mbali: HE'S FUCKEN COMING DAMN IT!

***then she felt the urge to push again and she did hard this time ***

Ray: fuck I can feel the head...ok give me one more push

Muzi: you can do it sis...you can do it

*** he encouraged her and she just held her breath a bit then she pushed hard then she stopped and cried then Ray took a scalpel and cut her a bit to make it a bit easy for the baby to come out ***

Mbali: i...i...can't do...it anymore

she said feeling drained

Ray: no no no no....you can do it baby and you will cause if you don't our son might not make it

Mbali: i...i cant Ray im sorry

Muzi: you are a Khumalo Mbali....unguMbulazi omuhle and we don't give up....we never give up!

Ray: do it for our son my flower please give me one more long push

she held on with her left hand on the bed and she squeezed hard her right hand on Muzi's hand and she pushed hard

Ray: good you did good...I can see the head now I need you to give me one last hard push

she was just lying there holding on with a last bar but then she told herself that if it happens that she doesn't make it she's gonna give it her all to make sure her son at least does cause the pain she was feeling felt like she was dying...then the lights flicked a bit then suddenly they went off and Ruslan quickly got up and switched on the emergency lights on and Mbali pushed hard until she heard a deep cry of a baby.....she smiled weakly then she passed out

Ray: ooh no!

Muzi: shit she passed out

he said checking out her vital signs and her heart beat was low so he put an oxygen mask on her face while Ray stood there with his crying son who looked like something from a horror movie

Ray: Ru...Ruu

*** he said with a shaky voice and Ruslan quickly got up and rushed to Ray then he cursed when he saw the state the baby was in***

Ruslan: cut his umbilical cord and clean him up Ray so Doc here can clean his sister up

***Ray swallowed and cut the umbilical cord then they moved the baby to a table on the left side to clean him up and Muzi cleaned and stitched Mbali up and he even put in a blood transfusion IV drip on her other hand while the other one still had the saline drip..... as for the bed it was drenched with blood and that black liquid... Anyway Muzi picked Mbali up bridal style and Ruslan changed the sheets and he put her back on top of the bed....

Well the baby was now wrapped with a blue blanket and they were looking at him as he was on top of the table***

Muzi: what....how....what are we gonna do

he asked with a shaky voice and Ray sighed

Ruslan: I have no idea but one thing I now is Mbali can't see her son like this

the baby's skin was red in color and he had tiny horns on top of his head and his head was bald with a long string of hair on the back of his head....his eyes were all black in color and his lips and the inside of his mouth including his tongue was all black he looked scary

Ray: what...what am I gonna tell Mbali....how will I explain this to her and how am i....

Ruslan interrupted him

Ruslan: this can't be it...we will find a way

Muzi: shit...shit...

he said sitting on the cold floor while Ray and Ruslan stood there looking at the baby

.
. .
. .

Snakes: do you think everything went well inside?

he asked Mat and Mat sighed

Mat: I don't know man

they were sitting outside..... Immediately when the lights went off Snakes rushed out and Mat also followed him.....they were sitting on the front porch even though it was heavily raining with thunderstorms.... Anyway Snakes' phone rang and it was Jay

Snakes: bafo

Jay: foza the boys are ok now so does that mean the baby is born?

Snakes: eish angazi bafo (eish I don't know bro) the lights went off and we went outside and it started to rain with thunderstorms and even now the lights haven't come back on

Jay: manje nisahlaleni ngaphandle (why are you still outside) why don't you go in and check if she gave birth successfully or not....why uso Nhlaka mara heh? (why are you like this Nhlaka?)

Snakes: ungazongidakelwa mina Nkosenye (don't piss me off Nkosenye)i just told you that its dark inside and its still raining outside with thunderstorms everywhere and we both know why and wena ufuna ukuthi ngi ngene endlini emnyama (you want me to go inside a dark house) where a half demon half beast and half human child is being born.... hai suka

Jay laughed

Jay: hai shem your phobia of anything supernatural is on steroids bafo....what if they need your help?

Snakes: ahhh even Mat ran outside so im not the only one with that phobia so stop making me feel bad slima (fool)

Jay laughed again

Jay: anyway I talked to Jase and Mngqobi and Thula are also ok now so siyeza lapho (we are coming back)

Snakes: ok sheshisani (hurry) Ya'll have beasts so you'll protect us when demons come out of nowhere

Jay laughed and dropped the call

Mat: pussy!

Snakes: voetsek... nawe pussy!

***Mat chuckled then a loud thunderstorm hit hard and they both jumped ***

Snakes: fucken shit....

Mat laughed

Snakes: I hope this child wont refuse when I send him on errands the time he'll be old enough to move around cause he owes me for turning me into this traumatized big baby

Mat laughed

Mat: you are not the only one man....even Ruslan stays at a hotel whenever he comes to visit cause he's scared of him too

Snakes: nx and I blame Ray for all this

Mat: don't start man....lets not talk about jefe please

Snakes: mxm

.

.
.
****BACK INSIDE THE WHITE ROOM****

Ruslan: shit.... come and see!

he said excited....he was standing next to the baby's cot where the baby was sleeping chanting some spells cause he could feel that this wasn't the baby's original form....in his visions he saw a boy in a human form and not in a demon form....anyway Ray and Muzi quickly got up as they were sitting on the cold floor and they went to the cot and the baby's skin was slowly turning to that of a normal human being and the horns were also disappearing slowly so did the black lips and tongue....he was starting to look like a complete human child

Muzi: ooh thank God.....shit am I allowed to say the Big man's name here?

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: others are gonna call him "Preach" for his love of the bible so relax

then he looked at Ray who looked relieved

Ruslan: I told you that couldn't be it

Ray just hugged Ruslan for some time then they broke the hug

Ray: yeah you did....damn I was shit scared im not even gonna lie....i was busy finding ways of how I was gonna explain to Mbali why our son looks like a demon

Muzi: but you do know you need to tell her about all that at some time

Ray sighed

Ray: yeah but not now man....imagine waking up and you're given a child which looks like hell boy on steroids

they chuckled then Ray took the baby out of the cot and he looked at him with a smile on his face....his hair was now visible he was no longer bald but that long strand of hair was still there and his eyes were still all black in color but other than that he looked cute and adorable

Ray: damn did you have to take mommy's skin color my boy?

the baby made some baby sound with his big voice and they chuckled

Muzi: damn.... listen to this ninja's voice

they chuckled

Ruslan: he's gonna have that Vin Diesel or Barry white voice

they laughed

Ray: I already feel sorry for all the girls during his teenage years

they chuckled then the lights came back on and Ruslan went to switch off the emergency lights

.
. .
. .

***The following day everyone woke up to a call that Mbali gave birth to a bouncing baby boy then Naledi and Thandi decided to go shopping for presents for him since they couldn't throw her a baby shower when she was still pregnant Well they were now at a baby boutique in Sandton city mallthey were busy looking around for what they can buy for Saint Kalu Owoh-Masden (Kalu means God of thunder)....Ray named him Kalu because when he was born Mat told him it was raining heavily with thunderstorms and also Thorsten and Mbali were really close during her pregnancy and he had this tight bond with Saint that made Saint to kick and move more whenever he was around so the second name was befitting for Saint.....

Anyway Ruslan was walking past the baby boutique then he looked to his right and he spotted Naledi inside the boutique and he decided to go say hi to her so he went inside then he saw that she wasn't alone she was with Thandi and Ike and his heart skipped a beat***

Ruslan: ladies

they turned and saw him then Thandi suddenly had Goosebumps all over her skin and her stomach suddenly filled with butterflies.....she just looked down feeling weird inside

Them: hi

Naledi hugged him and he kissed a sleeping Ike's forehead inside his Jeep baby stroller

Ruslan: damn its like he's growing each day

they laughed

Ruslan: you good?

Naledi nodded

Ruslan: so you came to buy the little guy some clothes huh?

he said looking at Ike

Naledi: nope we're here to buy the new edition in the family some clothes and other things Mbali will need

Ruslan: ooh that's nice...

***then he looked at Thandi who was keeping herself busy with checking out some baby clothes and

Naledi cleared her throat***

Naledi: ummm it was nice seeing you Ruu...ummm I'll give you two some privacy

she whispered to him and he chuckled then he kissed her cheek

Naledi: Mntase you'll find us on that other side neh

Thandi wanted to protest but Naledi pushed the baby stroller smiling leaving them and Thandi's heart started beating faster and Ruslan moved closer to her

Ruslan: you good amour?

Thandi: ye...yeah

Ruslan: you sure?

he whispered and she nodded

Ruslan: im still waiting amour....your place in here....

he said beating his left side of his chest

Ruslan: is getting colder and colder each passing day

she swallowed hard then she cleared her throat

Thandi: ummm Ruslan im married

Ruslan: until he finishes all the marriage rights or you two go to magistrate office to sign then you are his fiancée not his wife

her mouth dried instantly

Ruslan: and that means I can do this if I want....

he grabbed her face with both hands and he smashed his lips on hers..... they kissed for some time until she pulled out and she looked down with her heart beating fast... she couldn't believe she just did that with another man

Thandi: i...i can't do this....i still love James im sorry

he smirked

Ruslan: as much as it stings in my heart when you say you love him but the sting is not that painful cause your eyes says another thing

she swallowed hard trying to move away from him but he held her hand and pulled it to his mouth and kissed her palm

Ruslan: you know I heard a song in the radio on my way to this mall actually I've heard it a couple of times since I've been in the country....it's by some chick named ummm Shekhinah featuring the mighty Black Coffee and some lyrics caught my attention and they say "your eyes change colour when you lie I can see it "your eyes change colour when you lie I can see it im not blind"

he chuckled looking at her

Ruslan: and the lyrics also say "your eyes they sparkle in the light but in the dark I see the true colours of your heart"

she looked up at him touched and he smiled looking down at her...he smelled good and he looked handsome which made her knees weak

Ruslan: you are loved by me amour and im gonna continue waiting like I said im a very patient man and even though my heart may freeze completely I know you'll melt it when you come to me where you belong

he perked her lips and her forehead

Ruslan: I'll see you at the hospital

he said caressing her soft cheek staring in her eyes

Ruslan: damn you drive me crazy woman

he said that and sighed shaking his head then he kissed her forehead again and he turned and walked away leaving Thandi frozen on the spot

.
. .
. . .

****AT THE HOSPITAL****

Mbali was breastfeeding Saint with Ray sitting there and admiring the bonding moment between mother and son

Ray: thank you for this precious gift my flower

she smiled looking down at Saint who was sucking for dear life

Mbali: how long will you keep on thanking me?

Ray chuckled

Ray: until it sinks in that im someone's father

she laughed

Mbali: you know im captivated by his sapphire eyes but is it me or do his eyes change color to grey when he cries?

he swallowed hard

Ray: ummm I haven't noticed my flower

Mbali: mmmmh maybe it's just me

Ray: yeah....is he done sucking on my breast?

she laughed

Mbali: your breast?

Ray: yeah don't forget I've been sucking on those nipples since we started getting intimate so they are mine

she laughed shaking her head

Mbali: can you hear daddy busy saying this breasts belongs to him mommy's handsome Kalu... God I can't wait for your uncle Smiso to hear what Kalu means when he comes back from his business trip

Ray laughed and he got up and came and perked Mbali's lips

Ray: I love you baby

she blushed

Mbali: I love you too daddy

he smile at her

Ray: you were so brave and im proud of you

she looked down

Mbali: you said I should trust you and I did that

Ray: mmmh you see what happens when you trust daddy

she laughed

Mbali: mxm I always trust you Ray hau

***he chuckled shaking his head.....he was thinking about that scene about Devonia that happened before she went into labor ***

.
. .
.

****IN KZN KAZI'S HOUSE****

Kazi: im telling you Lele that guy is a beast in bed shem he knows his stuff...yho the things he did to me....ooh nkosi yam (ooh my God)

Lele: heh I wonder mngani heh I mean you are even tightening your thighs together...yah neh

Kazi laughed

Kazi: mxm anyway enough about him....what about you and your lover boy

Lele: oho mxm

Kazi: what did he do now?

Lele: can you believe that skinny bitch he said is his cousin he's actually fucking her

Kazi: nooo mngani

Lele: mmh...the way I beat that bitch when I found them at Dave's pub heh I even expected police to come arrest me the following day but dololo

***Kazi laughed**

Kazi: shame mngani (friend) and so what did Willie say?

Lele: aah the usual

Kazi: and you forgave him as usual

Lele sighed

Lele: you know I love him Kazi

Kazi sighed

Kazi: im not judging you mngani remember I was once where you are now so chill I know the time will come and you'll meet Mr Right then you'll leave Willie's sorry ass like I did with Phila

Lele didn't say anything

Kazi: chilex mngani I'll never judge you cause I know uyamthanda uWillie (you love Willie) and that's not a sin

Lele: enough about uWillie and his ungrateful cheating ass so ngibonise (show me) "uMr beast in bed" so that I can play far away from him if I ever see him in a pub or anywhere else or else we might share a dick unknowingly

they laughed

Kazi: mmmmh so that even if you see him with another woman being all cozy you'll beat the shit of that bitch for me

they laughed again and Kazi took her phone and showed her Menzi's photo and Lele's mouth went dry instantly

Kazi: Lele what is it....ooh my God don't tell me you once hooked up with him

she said with her heart beating fast

Lele: of course not....ummm mngani that is Buhle's husband

Kazi: whi...which Buhle?

Lele sighed

Lele: Buhle that cousin of mine that has a rich baby daddy who bought her a house in Umhlanga rocks

Kazi: nooo Lele ummm maybe you didn't see him properly

Lele: Menzi Ngcobo....I've seen him a couple of times I was there when they tied the knot Kazi I was even there last month when he threw a huge surprise birthday party for Buhle...remember you couldn't make it cause you had flue

Kazi's tears rolled down her cheeks with her body shaking and Lele hugged her

Lele: askies mngani (friend)

Kazi: why...why would he do this to me Lele...what have I done to deserve this

Lele: men are trash babe even uWillie is also trash...they don't care if they hurt us as long as they get what they want from which is our pussy.....i mean he's been married to Buhle for as long as I can remember but look now

Kazi just cried and Lele brushed her back until she calmed down

.
. .
.

she was sitting in her lounge with the Tv playing...she wasn't even watching she kept asking herself what was really wrong with her....why can't she finds a single man that loves her and wants to build something solid with her....then her phone rang for the umpteenth time and she just ignored it for the umpteenth time too.....it rang again and she furiously answered it

Kazi: WHAT?

Menzi: WHEEH NTANDOKAZI IS THAT HOW YOU ANSWER YOUR DAMN PHONE AND WHY THE HELL AREN'T YOU ANSWERING MY FUCKEN CALLS!

Kazi: why are you calling me Menzi mmmh you should be calling your wife Buhle and leave me the hell alone!

he kept quiet a bit with his eyes popped out and his heart beating fast

Kazi: ooh cat caught your tongue?

he sighed

Menzi: look it's not what you think Ntandokazi....yes Buhle is my wife but...but....

she interrupted him

Kazi: FUCK YOU MENZI UYANGIZWA (you hear me) FUCK YOU YOU FUCKEN TRASH AND I HATE YOU!

then she dropped the call and switched off her phone and cried her eyes out

.
. .
.

****BACK IN PTA****

Menzi: Druza hold the fort for me until I get back

he said giving up after trying to call Kazi for the fourth time

Druza: where are you off to bozza?

Menzi: KZN

Druza: heh....dincosi di grand? (are your kids ok?)

Menzi: yeah its Kazi she knows about Buhle

Druza: damn but I hate to tell you this bozza but I told you so

Menzi: I don't want your "I told you so" Druza I want you to look after things until I come back!

Druza sighed

Druza: sure.... you know I got this

then Menzi brushed his head roughly worried

Menzi: I wonder who told her about Buhle....shit it could be that lastag (forward) friend of hers sometimes I forget that women like sharing details and showing pictures of their new man and that bitch just couldn't keep her mouth shut when she saw she was talking about me nx.... and I wonder what more she told her or if she told Buhle too?....shit Kazi was supposed to fall deep for me first before I tell her im married and that I want her to be my second wife

he said throwing a glass to the wall and it hit it hard and shattered to pieces

Druza: well the cat is out of the bag now bozza yami so try to....ba re "to neutralize" yeah...try to neutralize the situation and pray that your Kazi at least understands your situation

Menzi sighed and he went online and booked a morning flight to KZN

78

INSERT.....78

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Thandi: how could you James....you promised your sons that you'll come back on Sunday and now it's Tuesday

he sighed

James: i...my sickness started again immediately as I left Limpopo but as soon as I got back home it stopped....banloya Thandi(someone is bewitching me Thandi)

she laughed

Thandi: I see you think im a fool neh James

James: im telling you the truth Thandi

she shook her head not believing what she was hearing

Thandi: keng bolwetse ba gao then (what is your sickness then) since im the last person to know about it even though im your wife

James: umm I can't say

Thandi: what you are trying to say is you can't tell me...your wife?

he kept quiet

Thandi: James what am I to you entlek

James: what sort of a question is that Thandi...you are my wife

Thandi: now answer me this....o tshwere keng? (whats wrong with you)

he kept quiet and she shook her head hurt by his behavior

Thandi: let me guess.... your family yona ya itsi gore whats wrong with you right (your family know whats wrong with you right?)

he sighed

James: Thandi please understand

Tears ran down her cheeks

Thandi: why did you ask me to marry you in the first place James mmmmh....i mean you moved on with that girl and I was fine then wa tla mo nna (you came to me) and you told me ka sangoma gore e re im your soul mate and what not...why did you lie to me and why did you sell me dreams

James: I didn't sell you any dreams Thandi...i love you so much and I appreciate you you are my soul mate I just....i gave in to temptation and almost ruined our marriage I don't even love that woman I love you and I'll do anything to fix us

***she just cried she was heartbroken cause she loves James to a point that she chose to be submissive to him so their marriage could have peace ***

Thandi: then come back home

he sighed

James: look ive been talking to my family and I want us to move this side....we will buy a house and also find a private school for our boys and you can either stay as a housewife or find a job this side...it can be our fresh start

Thandi: askies?

she said wiping off her tears

James: we can make it work my love and I'll be closer to bokoko and my niece and nephew and our boys will start learning of their roots and culture

she chuckled

Thandi: so let me get this right you discuss things that you were supposed to discuss with me your wife with your family?

James: don't take it like that Thandi please...you know they are the reason im the man I am today so they have my best interest at heart and this move is the best advice they have ever given to me cause it will strengthen our marriage and also teach our sons of where they come from and their origin

she laughed not believing what she was hearing

Thandi: are you even listening to yourself James? o nagana gore o somang James(who the hell do you think you are)...just because ive been submissive o nagana gore ke wele mapanta (you think im weak) or im desperate to stay married to you

James: Thandi!

he warned her

Thandi: voetsek wankutlwa James voetsek (piss off James you hear me piss off)ontlwela blaen wena James I see o nagana gore ke tlhaga diplaseng (don't piss me off James I see you think I come from a village)...ke ngwanyana wa Atteridgeville nna nx a move ya masepa (im from Atteridgeville....nx a shit move)... bona since your family is more important than me your wife then me and my sons will be fine....i can see gore you think you are the only man in the world who has a huge dick nx

James: is that how you talk to me now Thandi im your fucken husband damn it!

he said with an angry voice

Thandi: o naganang wena(what do you think?)...bona mo James kao rata mara a ke stlaela sa gao or sa family yako geno(look here I love you James but im neither your fool nor your family's fool)...if ne o njesa ditlhare o ipotsa gore dia bereka (if you were feeding me love potions and you thought they are working) cause I was submissive then im sorry to disappoint you shem cause I chose to be submissive cause I can "unchoose it" anytime and don't think gore all those years ge ne ke lwa lwena(I used to fight with you) to support your kids it was because I needed your money to survive....i just wanted you to be a responsible father and for you to take care of your boys.....i can live without you James so don't confuse my love for you le desperation nx

***then she dropped the call and screamed out loud....she was fuming...she couldn't believe James was treating her like this after all the sacrifices she did for him.....she couldn't believe he

just made decisions that concerns their marriage with his family then expects her to understand and do as he says***

.
. .

****AT KAZI'S HOUSE****

*** She woke up around 9 in the morning with a pounding headache from all the crying she did last night. she got out of bed and she walked out of the bedroom going to the bathroom then she heard the tv playing she remembered switching it off last night so her heart started beating fast and she tip toed to the lounge and she peeped and even though she could see the back of his head as he sat on the couch watching tv she knew it was him***

Menzi: go freshen up and comeback so we can talk

Kazi: how....how did you get in?

he turned his head and frowned when he saw her swollen eyes and pink face then he got up

Kazi: how did you get in here Menzi!

he clenched his jaws looking at her face seeing her like that broke something inside of him

Menzi: go and freshen up Ntandokazi and come back so we can talk

Kazi: talk?...talk? first of all ngikubuzile ukuthi ungene njani (I asked you how did you get in)

Menzi: with my key

Kazi: askies? angizwanga?..... did you just say your key?

she asked him fuming with anger

Menzi: sthandwa sam....

she interrupted him

Kazi: hei hei hei ungaze ulinge uyangizwa Menzi Ngcobo (don't even try it you hear me Menzi Ngcobo)...im not your love

she said with an angry voice then he sighed

Menzi: look I know ukuthi uthukuthele sthandwa sam(I know you are angry my love) but please let me explain

he said calmly and she chuckled

Kazi: let me guess.... you are sorry for hurting me and leading me on while you knew that you are married with kids

he sighed

Menzi: I did not lead you on Ntandokazi I actually really love you from the bottom of my heart

she laughed

Kazi: phuma Menzi! (get out Menzi)

she said showing him the door but he didn't move

Kazi: NGITHE PHUMA MAN! (I said leave!)

she shouted at him

Menzi: don't raise your voice at me Ntandokazi!

he said with a firm tone

Kazi: or what you bastard....or what mmmh?.....you'll beat me up?.....fuck me until I pass out or what you'll kill me?

he chuckled and went to sit down

Menzi: you need to calm the fuck down then we will talk

Kazi: talk ya masimba.....get the fuck out of my house before I call the cops on you!

she said raising her voice at him and he breathed out

Menzi: im gonna say this for the fucken last time....dont raise your fucken voice at me

Ntandokazi!

he said with a serious tone and she clicked her tongue and she went back to her bedroom and locked herself inside fuming with anger....she then took her phone and called her friend Lele

Lele: hi

Kazi frowned cause Lele always answers with "mgani" whenever she calls her and now she just said hi and in a cold way

Kazi: hi ummm....are you ok mngani?

Lele: yeah what can I do for you Kazi?

she swallowed hard

Kazi: Lele what's going on you sound..... cold

Lele: why did you tell your blesser that im the one that told you that he's married to my cousin

Kazi: askies?

she said confused

Lele: don't play dumb with me Kazi why would Menzi come to my home to threaten me and said I'll pay for telling you about his marital status if you leave him

Kazi: heh madoda...he said that?

she said shocked

Lele: don't act dumb Kazi I know you told him!

she said shouting and Kazi frowned

Kazi: I can't believe you Lele I've been ignoring Menzi's calls since yesterday and now im calling you for advice cause the stupid nigga is in my house refusing to leave and you're busy accusing me of shit?

she said hurt and Lele chuckled

Lele: you have no shame Kazi

Kazi: askies?

Lele: that man is married to my cousin and you're there riding him.....so yesterday you faked all that heartbreak so I'll see you as a victim also kodwa qa uKazi ubusy ushovana ne ndoda yomunye umfazi sis nx (but no Kazi is busy fucking another woman's husband)

Kazi chuckled not believing what she was hearing from her friend

Kazi: Lele....

she interrupted her

Lele: Buhle is my cousin and she's the reason I went to college and working now so if you still want us to remain as friends you'll stop fucking her husband Kazi.....i can't believe you right now nywe nywe nywe I don't fuck with married man but now you're busy harboring another woman's husband.....i guess you took after your mother after all and I don't trust you anymore around me and my man

then she dropped the call leaving Kazi shocked to the core and also hurt.....tears ran down her cheek and she just put her face and the pillow and cried.... She woke up to someone shaking her and she quickly opened her eyes ready to scream but she stopped herself cause she saw that it was Menzi.....she frowned looking at him

Kazi: the door was locked so how did you get in here

he sighed looking at her cause her eyes were swollen and red big time

Menzi: I have my ways....now go shower so you can eat

Kazi: didn't I tell you to leave Menzi

she said with a serious look on her face

Menzi: im not going anywhere until we talk properly now go shower you stink

he said getting up and he went out leaving Kazi embarrassed cause her breath did stink....Anyway she went to do her hygiene process

.

.

.
Kazi was busy getting dressed in her bedroom when she heard her front door being banged viciously and she walked out of the bedroom and found Menzi with a tall caramel woman....she was the model type and her beauty was just perfect she looked like a perfectly crafter doll and she could tell she's the wife cause Menzi was shocked to see her.... she also wondered who actually carried Menzi's children cause her body was just goals and you wouldn't believe that she's actually a mother of two.....she remembers Lele telling her that she has two kids

Buhle: a yellow bone Menzi...really? since when are you into yellow bones?

she said scanning Kazi up and down with a disgusted look on her face and Kazi swallowed hard cause she could already feel intimidated by her...the clothes she was wearing looked expensive including her long weave

Menzi: what are you doing here Buhlebendalo?

*** then he chuckled***

Menzi: its that bitch you call your cousin right?

Buhle: can we just go Menzi you have already embarrassed me enough by sleeping with this peasant and I hope you used a condom cause im sure she's harboring deceases i can even smell them standing here

she said looking at Kazi with that disgusted look on her face again and Menzi grabbed her by her upper arm

Menzi: say one more shit about her and see what I'll do to her.....i fucken dare you!

he said through his teeth and she flinched

Menzi: now leave

Buhle: im not leaving here without you....how can you embarrass me like this Menzi

***she said with tears in her eyes and Kazi swallowed and she turned and walked back to her bedroom ***

Menzi: Ntandokazi!

he called after her but she ignored him and locked herself in her bedroom and she just let it all out

.
. .

*** Menzi dragged Buhle outside all the way to her car outside the yard and he let her go***

Menzi: what the hell do you think you're doing Buhle?

he asked her with an angry voice and tears fell from her eyes

Buhle: how can you embarrass me like this Menzi....my cousin's whore friend?

Menzi: take that back!

he warned her

Buhle: no she's a fucken whore and Lele told me how she can't say no to a man....all she does is open her legs to every dick and tom she meets

he raised his hand attempting to slap her but he stopped himself and he shook his head chuckling

Menzi: at least she didn't cheat on me with my fucken father....if she's a whore then you are the biggest of them all

her face fell and she swallowed with tears running down her cheeks

Buhle: is that why you're doing all this Menzi....if you're trying to hurt me by fucking the biggest whore around well guess what its working

he chuckled

Menzi: look at a farm pig calling a wild boar dirty....im sure if I didn't find out about your affair with father dearest and he didn't commit suicide out of guilt and shame you'd still be fucking him....now leave Buhle before I make you!

she just cried

Buhle: it's been two years Menzi and I have been apologizing.....you even ended up forgiving me and told me that we're cool.... now why are you doing this Menzi if you don't want me then let me go cause I can't take this anymore....I've been quiet and turning a blind eye to your cheating ways for the past two years but now you have gone too far

he sighed running his tongue on his lower pink lip

Menzi: she's different Buhle....i actually love her too and I want to take her as my second wife

she swallowed hard with her bottom lip trembling

Menzi: I didn't want you to find out like this especially here but that's what I want

Buhle: then let me go

he shook his head

Menzi: you know I can't do that Buhle....i love you as much as I love her and I won't break up a warm home for my kids just because you're selfish to allow me to take a second wife

she shook her head with tears running down her cheeks

Buhle: I know you once shared me with your father because I was stupid and I listened to bad friends but I can't share you Menzi.....its either her or me and your kids

Menzi: don't even try it Buhle ok don't....you owe me this much after you broke me and made me hate my father

Buhle: then let me go

Menzi: I said it's not fucken happening.....you're not leaving me you hear me.....we gonna raise our kids and grow old together with Ntandokazi as your sister wife

Buhle: NEVER!

Menzi: don't piss me off Buhlebendalo!

Buhle: its either you divorce me and marry her or you end things with her and we start afresh and fix our marriage Menzi.....remember my kids and I are a package so are you willing to lose us or her

Menzi clenched his jaws and she kissed his cheek and got inside her car then she started the car

Buhle: since you were supposed to come home next weekend I wanted to surprise you but since our marriage is holding by a thread now I guess I should just spill the beans.....im pregnant 9 weeks

his eyes popped out then she drove away

Menzi: shit...shit...shit...

***he rubbed his head roughly ***

Menzi: fuck!

.
. .

Kazi opened her eyes slowly and she sat up but she got startled seeing Menzi sitting on a chair looking at her

Kazi: why are you still here....didn't I say leave Menzi

Menzi: ngiyakuthanda Ntandokazi (I love you Ntandokazi)

Kazi: hamba Menzi please (leave Menzi please)

he shook his head

Menzi: I cant

Kazi: you are married Menzi....

he interrupted her

Menzi: I love you and I cant let you go

Kazi: fine then I'll get a restraining order against you

he chuckled

Menzi: and you think that will stop me?

Kazi: I know a police captain who wants me.....i can just agree to be his so he makes sure you stay away from me

his face changed to deadly

Menzi: don't dare me Ntandokazi uyangizwa or I'll cut that fucken captain's throat while you fucken watch!

she swallowed hard looking scared

Kazi: leave Menzi please its over I cant date a married man

Menzi: that's why I want you to be my second wife

she frowned at him and sat up

Kazi: askies?

Menzi: please be my second wife Ntandokazi

Kazi chuckled bitterly shaking her head while looking down then she looked at him

Kazi: when...when you look at me Menzi do you see a fool....do you see a desperate bitch

Menzi clenched his jaws

Kazi: listen to me and listen good.....I will NEVER be anyone's second best Menzi uyangizwa and I feel insulted right now with what you just said

Menzi: Kazi please....

he begged her but she got off the bed and she went to the door

Kazi: no....i'll never be your second wife or side chick Menzi so please hamba(go)

he walked to her and she moved back then he sighed

Menzi: im not prepared to lose you Ntandokazi.....i love you and the sooner you accept that the better for the both of us

Kazi: leave Menzi....go to your wife please

he clenched his jaws looking at her

Kazi: hamba Menzi!

Menzi: fine but know this if I cant have you then no one will

he said with a serious tone and he forcefully kissed her lips and he walked out leaving her scared

.
. .
.

****Mbali****

I felt uneasy as if someone was next to me and I quickly opened my eyes and my heart started beating fast cause where I was didn't look like my hospital room it was a bit dark. I thought about that scene with the snake and I started trembling this can't happen again it can't.....tears started coming out as I tried to look around but I couldn't see anything

Voice: relax I wont hurt you mommy

i froze cause the voice sounded scary.....i could feel the figure move around me then i felt a touch and i jumped screaming

Voice: shhhh I said I won't hurt you so you don't have to scream mommy

it whispered next to my right ear and i froze

Voice: I can never hurt you mommy and I will never let anyone hurt you so relax I just wanted to meet you in spirit and to touch you and see your beautiful face

Me: who...who are you and what...what do you want from me

I said with a trembling voice

Voice: im your son since your human son's soul is attached to me and I just wanted to finally see the woman that nurtured us and took care of my carrier until I became free

Me: wha...what?

i said confused

Voice: daddy has all the answers mommy.....look you need to go back but we will meet again

****NARRATED****

then she woke up panting and sweating with Ray next to her looking scared cause he's been trying to wake her up but to no avail.....she was just mumbling things he couldn't understand and her body would tense up and she would shake and then lay still

Ray: you ok my flower....fuck you scared me....are you ok?

he said holding her tight with his heart pounding hard and she just cried cause even though that voice said it won't harm her but she was scared and that dream felt real like that time she saw that snake

Mbali: it...it had started again Ray....the dreams are starting again Ray

he held her tight

Ray: shhh im here my love....its ok...its ok

***he said and he swallowed hard....after sometime she calmed down and Ray wiped her tears off and perked her lips ***

Ray: what did you dream about?

she swallowed hard

Mbali: I woke up to a dark place and I could feel that I wasn't alone...then....then I heard a voice

she breathed out

Mbali: it said its my son and that my son's soul is attached with it and that it will never hurt me or let anyone hurt me

Ray's eyes popped out

79

INSERT.....79

.

.

.

NARRATED

Ray: wha...what?

she nodded and told him the rest of the things the voice said and did and Ray sat there worried to the core

Ray: it...it was just a bad dream my flower please don't stress about it

***she shook her head ***

Mbali: it...it felt real Ray....just like with that huge snake

she said with tears in her eyes and Ray swallowed hard cause he knew that voice belonged to the Skeletal Saint but the big question is why....why did the Saint do that especially to Mbali

Ray: its ok my love I'll call Melusi and we will find a way ok

He said kissing her lips and she nodded

Ray: do me one favour

Mbali: im listening

he sighed

Ray: don't tell your family about this until I talk to umm....Melusi ok

she nodded and he kissed her lips again

Ray: I love you ok....and a lot my flower

she blushed

Mbali: I love you too

he smiled looking at her feeling proud of himself for making her his

Ray: do you remember how we used to date secretly because of your family

she laughed lightly

Mbali: mmmmh damn....and my brothers when they found out about us...yho

Mbali laughed while Ray chuckled

Ray: and I remember telling you that your family will accept us one day

Mbali: mmh you did and to tell you the truth I didn't believe you

she said and giggled

Ray: you better start believing me when I tell you things Mrs Owoh-Masden

she blushed and he chuckled cause she looked cute then Kalu started crying and Ray took him out of his cot and gave him to Mbali then she wiped her nipple with a wet wipe and she fed him.....after sometime Mbali's grandmother came to visit with the Khumalo wives and Ray excused himself after they exchanged greetings and he walked out dialing Ruslan's number

Ruslan: bros

Ray sighed

Ray: we have a problem man

Ruslan: im listening

Ray: skeletal saint visited Mbali in her dreams or better yet Mbali's spirit met with him

Ruslan: mmm go on

Ray: he or should I say it promised never to hurt her but said something about me holding all the answers it even called her mommy

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: and you know what to do

Ray: no no no...not now Ruu not now please

he said shaking his head

Ruslan: Ray you....

he interrupted him

Ray: I cant...not now man....im not ready to see her facial expression when I tell her I mean she doesn't even know that her brothers grandfather and father including her nephews have the beast thing and even though I think she suspect they do but im sure they lied to her about what she thinks she saw or suspect seeing or they sugar coated things so imagine me telling her im.....no no I cant.....not now.....im not ready to lose her

Ruslan sighed and parked on the side of the road

Ruslan: saint won't stop until she acknowledges him and there's nothing we can do about it unless we want him to hurt Kalu from the inside to make us talk...remember he's out now and his journey has begun and the beast in Kalu can do so much to protect Kalu until he's off age to control Saint

Ray: why....why did I let greed take over my life and why did I chose the devil to help me out...look at me now man I have everything a man can ask for and I might lose the love of my life because of my past mistakes

Ruslan: Ray don't do this man please

he pleaded with him

Ray: I cant lose her Ruslan I swear I'd go crazy...if I tell her what I am she will remember her encounter with La Parca and what she saw will make her leave me and then there's our sons who are cursed to have demons inside of them....no no no....i cant man Saint has to understand that's it's too soon man

Ruslan sighed again

Ray: look bros we both know you'll never be ready to tell your flower the truth and feeling regret after doing something bad shows you're not a monster after all and if given a chance you would undo it but you can't but we can find a way around the whole "your sons being born with a demon attached to their little souls" cause I know the devil is not that smart so I'll do my research and call in favors for information but you need to tell your flower about saint man cause he won't stop meeting her like that cause believe it or not but he cares soo much about her

Ray sighed feeling defeated

Ruslan: she might not even leave you man so stop concluding shit in your head about how she might take the news and tell her cause we both know even if she decides to leave you you'll never let her go

Ray sighed deeply

Ray: let me think about it

Ruslan: you do that and fast man

Ray: yeah....talk later

Ruslan: ok

they ended the call

.
. .
. .

***Ruslan continued to drive with his mind all over....he was worried about Ray and again about Thandi he woke up from his short nap when he heard Thandi's voice screaming in his head....he thought she was in danger or something and when he checked his crystal ball he saw that she was just angry frustrated sad and hurt so he decided to go to her before she does something stupid.....he knew he didn't know how to be there for her without showing the romantic love he has for her but right now he didn't care she need him and fuck that she's "married" but he's gonna be there for her....he didn't even want to know what that phone call was about all he cares about is her wellbeing and safety...

Anyway he parked the car and got out locked it and he went to the small gate and he got in then he went to the main door and knockedhe knocked for some time still there was no answer then he looked from side to side to check if neighbors are there but there was no one then he appeared from outside the door and appeared inside....even though he didn't know the inside of the house but he chose to appear on the other side of the door so he doesn't land on things inside.....He checked the inside of the house out and he proceeded to the passage and he opened all the doors slowly checking for her and when he opened the main door he found her sleeping on the bed with a bottle of drosty hof wine on the bedside drawer he shook his head and he sat on a chair and got busy on his phone waiting for her to wake up.....an hour later Thandi stirred she was pressed so she sat up and yawned and she moved to the edge of the bed and sat there for a second and when she raised her head she screamed a bit and even peed a little on herself then she stopped and held her chest and tried to calm down as her heart was beating fast as for Ruslan he didn't move from his seat.....after calming down a bit she looked at Ruslan breathing heavily***

Thandi: ARE YOU CRAZY...DO YOU WANT TO GIVE ME A FUCKEN HEART ATTACK?

she shouted at him

Ruslan: no

he said not bothered by her shouting

Thandi: how could....how did you....ooh Gosh.....you know what fuck you and get out of my house you fucken creep nx

then she got up and went to the en-suite bathroom and locked herself in there and did her business then Ruslan got up and went to the door with his hands in his pockets

Ruslan: just so you know you gonna pay for calling me a creep and raising your voice at me

Thandi: wanyela (fuck you) you come into my house uninvited and you tell me rubbish

Ruslan: three strikes only amour.... now continue talking rubbish

he said with a serious tone and she kept quiet a bit

Thandi: get out of my house Ruslan

Ruslan: not a chance now finish up in there so we can go

she frowned

Thandi: im not going anywhere with you now get out of my house or I'll call cops on you

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: continue threatening me and I'll come in there just like I did inside YOUR house and fuck you until you pass out....now finish up in there so we go before your boys comes home from school and not find you here

she swallowed hard and he heard the shower running and he smirked shaking his head

.
. .
.

****HEATH****

To say im happy in my marriage is an understatement things between Obi m and I are great and my kids are happy and growing so im a happy man I just hope this is it for us that there won't be anything that will come between us cause I know how it's like to see your wife distancing herself from you because of your shit and how scary it is to realize that she might leave you and never look back so I don't want anything that might come between me and my wife or that might threaten my family's happiness at this moment.....anyway im busy with some paper work in my office then my phone rings a smile plastered on my face thinking it's my wife but that smile disappeared on my face immediately when I recognize who the number belonged to

Me: what do you want?

Tsholo: Heath hi

Me: I asked you want is it you want

she sighed

Tsholo: ummm how is Omphile

I chuckled not believing that this bitch is actually asking me this

Me: you have her numbers why don't you call her and ask her how she is

she sighed

Tsholo: fine look I need your help

I shook my head and chuckled

Me: help you say?

Tsholo: yes....um im in dire need of money and you're my last hope

wOW

Me: and what makes you think I'd help you

Tsholo: please Heath....i'll do anything you need me to do as long as you help me

she pleaded with me sounding desperate.... nx fucken bitch

Me: well guess what....i will never help you even if you were the last human being on earth

Tsholo: bathong Heath....

i interrupted her

Me: remember you once chose a dick over Omphile

I heard her sniff and that made me angry

Me: no no no....dont even think that fake cry will move me....you chose a dick over your own daughter a daughter you carried for nine months and you abandoned her.....you called her a liar when she said your useless husband touched her inappropriately

Tsholo: it was the devil Heath please im sorry

I laughed

Me: well the same devil that made you do all those things go back to him and ask him for help

Tsholo: Heath im literally on my knees begging.....i need some assistance with money please

Me: you know you are a despicable woman Tsholo.....do you even care about Omphile?

she kept quiet a bit

Tsholo: of...ofcourse so are you gonna help me

wow....just wow.....i cant believe this

Me: well I'd rather give my money to nyaope boys than to give it to a cold hearted bitch like you....dont ever call me again nx

then I dropped the call and blocked her numbers.....i wonder what I even once saw in her nx.....now im thankful to God for bringing Naledi into my life I cant even imagine how my life would've been like without her in it how Omphile would've been like if she wasn't in her life....i just cant so I need to continue to appreciate her and make her happy cause she truly is God send I mean even my businesses are beaming and growing strong

.
. .
. .

****NARRATED****

Her.mom: areng? (what did he say)

***she just shook her head ***

Her.mom: Tsholo?

Tsholo: I don't know what I was thinking ma cause deep down I knew he wont help me and its all because of that daughter of his nx.....waitsi I should have aborted Omphile when I had the chance ever since she was born its been all about her....what about me mmmmh

she said feeling angry*

Her.mom: Tsholo don't say things like that man Omphile is your daughter....

she interrupted her

Tsholo: ma Omphile has always stolen my shine it's always about her even John wanted her....what about me ma....Heath always spoiled her and we had food in this house because of herits always about her....Omphile this Omphile that and now Heath cant help me because of her.....i hate her and I wish I aborted her when I had the chance nx

Her.mom: HAI TSHOLOFELO....TAKE THAT BACK

she warned her

Tsholo: I hate that girl....she tried to take John from me he lusted over her while married to me mama.....i bleached my skin and even went to get butt and curves enlargement for him and he still lusted over her stupid dark skin and skinny body

her mother just cried shaking her head

Her.mom: Tsholo....

Tsholo: no mama....i gave birth to that girl and she took my shine and I hate her for that and now Heath hates me because of her...again he's choosing her over me so I hate her....i hate her

she said walking away and her mother just cried

Her.mom: ohh modimo waka (my God) have mercy on my daughter please....have mercy on her tormented soul

.
. .

They were now inside the car and Thandi was looking outside the window as Ruslan was the one driving and he would steal glances of her every now and then

Ruslan: you also look beautiful without make up amour

Thandi: mmmmh thanks

she wasn't wearing any make up or weave she was rocking her natural short hair and she looked younger and more beautiful without the make up or the weave

Thandi: where are we going?

Ruslan: to talk

then silence filled the car..... soon he parked the car and he got out she looked around and they were a park and she rolled her eyes annoyed...then her door got opened from outside and Ruslan helped her out of the car and she saw a picnic basket on the ground a throw blanket two pillows and a shopping bag

Ruslan: help me carry these things

she swallowed and they carried the things and found a spot and Ruslan laid the throw blanket on the lawn under the tree and he put the two pillows on top of it and the picnic basket and shopping bag then he sat down

Ruslan: sit amour

she sighed and sat down

Ruslan: I bought everything I thought you might like so lets indulge

she looked at him and bit her lower lips then she looked down and that turned Ruslan on instantly

Ruslan: don't do that

***she looked at him

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: don't bite your lower lip like that cause you are waking a sleeping dog and believe me you cant handle him

he eyes popped out and she cleared her throat looking away and he chuckled

Ruslan: you know I love how you can switch from being this sweet and innocent woman to being a no nonsense woman...its just amazing

Thandi: why are we really here Ruslan

he laid on his back with his head on the pillow.....his one hand under the back of his head and his other hand resting on his stomach and he looked at her

Ruslan: he made you cry didn't he?

she looked away

Thandi: Ruslan I thought I told you to butt out of my marriage business

Ruslan: and im sure you're smart enough to know I wont

he said with a serious tone and she shook her head annoyed

Thandi: maybe I should just go

Ruslan: move and you'll regret it

she looked at him with a frown

Thandi: askies?

Ruslan: we just got here and we're just talking and now just because I touched a sensitive topic you want to leave just like that...first of all you are not a little girl amour but a grown ass woman who can make sensible decisions and a strong woman that can stand for herself so this sensitive woman you created needs to go

Thandi: you don't know me ok

he chuckled

Ruslan: believe me I do

she just looked at him and he licked his bottom lips when his eyes landed on her lips....she had kissable lips and they drove him insane

Thandi: what do you want from me mmmmh.....im married for God's sake

Ruslan: you got "married" to the wrong one and you need to fix that

Thandi: askies?...look here Ruslan James and I have been through hell and back together and you have no right to judge us

Ruslan: ok but point of correction.....you have been through hell and back because of him not with him

she swallowed hard

Thandi: can you just stop please

she said with almost a whisper and he sighed shaking his head a bit then her phone rang and she frowned when she saw who the caller is but she answered anyway

Thandi: Joe

Joe: makoti hi.....onjani? (how are you)

Thandi: ke shap wena? (im fine and you?)

Joe: bona I called you so we can meet up and talk

she frowned

Thandi: talk?.....talk about what?

Joe: about what James told you

Thandi: askies?

Joe: bona Thandi James is your husband and he's the head of your house so you shouldn't question his decisions like that and on top of it insult him like you did....yeah he told me gore o mo rugile (you insulted him)

Thandi chuckled

Thandi: Joe a reska tlwaelana blaen assomblief.....kgopela o ska e tshunyatshunya mo lenyalong laka please (Joe don't bullshit me please....please don't stick your nose where it doesn't belong)

Joe: o bolela le nna byang Thandi (is this how you talk to me Thandi?)

Thandi: bona mo ke busy ka something so shap (look im busy with something)

Joe: you know I once warned James not to date a thing like you but ka gore banyana ba Gauteng le rata dingaka then wa mo jesa and.... (but because Gauteng woman like visiting witchdoctors then you gave him a love potion)

she interrupted him

Thandi: well its not too late motho wa modimo..... I already told him its over so mo nyakele mosadi wa ko Giyani o a sa loyeng (so find him a woman from Giyani who isn't a witch)

Joe: keng e kare wa lebala gore o bolela le mang (don't forget who you are talking to)

he warned her

Thandi: o Jeso by any chance? (are you Jesus by any chance)

she said annoyed and Joe on the other side was furious

Joe: wadelela nnyao (you are disrespectful "insults")

Thandi: bona tell your brother that the day he decides to become man and not hide behind your aunt and grandmother's khiba (dress) then he'll find me waiting for him at home.....a ke tlhage di plaseng nna Joe (im not a village girl Joe) so I wont sit back and let ya'll dictate my life and my children's life as you please

Joe: o reng wena sfebe (what did you just say you bitch)

Thandi: sfebe ke skobo sele o reng ke mosadi le go rathela bana ekare ke katse ya sfebe nx (a bitch is that ugly wife of yours that is busy giving birth every now and then as if she's a whore-cat nx)

then she dropped the call fuming and she got up

Thandi: please take me home

Ruslan: come

he indicated that she should come lay down with him

Thandi: Ruslan I wanna leave!

***he raised his eyebrow at her in an intimidating way when she raised her voice a bit ***

Ruslan: I said come!

she stood there looking at him and she felt a bit uncomfortable with the way he was looking at her so she swallowed and sat down then he sighed

Ruslan: come closer amour

she looked at him

Ruslan: please!

she sighed and went closer to him and he made her lay down with her head on his chest and he pulled her thigh and rested it between his thighs and kissed her forehead while holding her in a protective manner.....she tensed cause this was wrong in so many ways

Ruslan: relax I don't bite.....i just want you to relax ok

she nodded and relaxed....she breathed in inhaling his expensive perfume and breathed out and he kissed her forehead again

Ruslan: who called?

Thandi: brother in law

Ruslan: what did he say that made you that angry

she sighed emotionally

Thandi: he was insulting me

Ruslan: and let me guess....yu threw in some punches too

he said with an amused tone and she raised her head to look at his face and she found him smirking

Thandi: he asked for them

he laughed a beautiful laugh and she smiled and rested her head back on his chest

Ruslan: now im curious to know what you said to him

she just smiled and she kept quiet

Ruslan: what made you drink like that this wonderful morning amour?

Thandi: I don't wanna talk about it Ruslan and I wasn't drunk

he sighed

Ruslan: what did he do or say that made you turn to a bottle so early in the morning

Thandi: Ruu please!

she said getting annoyed and she attempted to get off him but he tightened the grip

Ruslan: im waiting amour

she kept quiet

Ruslan: Thandi!

Thandi: Ruslan please I don't wanna talk about my marital affairs

Ruslan: ok so should I call him and ask him myself

she frowned

Thandi: huh?

Ruslan: should i?

she raised her head to look at him and she could see he was serious

Thandi: you crazy you know that

Ruslan: I know now answer me

she sighed and rested her head back on his chest

Thandi: he wants us.....no he told me we are moving to Limpopo permanently

Ruslan's body tensed

Ruslan: what?

she nodded and sighed deeply

80

INSERT.....80

.

.

.

NARRATED

Ruslan: what?

she nodded

Thandi: and the worst part is he made that decision with his family and called to inform me "his so called wife" of their decision that concerns me and my boys.... I don't feel important in his life I don't even feel like his wife....can you believe this is the first im out in a park like this for a picnic I always come here with Naledi and Amo and the last time Mbali came with us too but I have never with my own husband he ever takes me out or make an effort to make me happy let alone to even buy me a gift....i feel like he thinks I'll never leave him and even if I do I'll always go back to him so he doesn't have to fight for me or live without me cause I always went back

she sniffed and he kissed her forehead

Thandi: and I blame myself for that cause I was an enabler I enabled him to see me that way cause I didn't know my worth cause I put him first before anything just because he was my first and that he's the father of my boys.....i enabled him Ruslan

she said with a breaking voice

Ruslan: shhh its ok.....believe me I understand and I know you didn't enable him cause you are dump and stupid or that you are naïve.....it happens even to the best of us....

he sighed

Ruslan: he knew you love him and he took advantage of that and used it to his own advantage instead of loving you back like he should have and it's not your fault amour....if loving someone is a

sin then we are all sinners you gave him your all and he chose to play and misuse your love for him for reasons known to him only so its all on him.....you are beautiful amour and I wish you could see yourself through my eyes and believe me you'd fall in love with yourself so there's nothing wrong with you you just fell in love the wrong guy that's all

she just continued to cry and he comforted her

.
. .
. .

*****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION*****

Woman: she's beautiful

she said and coughed then he helped her drink some water

Man: I don't care about her beauty I just want what I want from her and you should stop admiring her beauty cause we both know where she will end up

she sighed

Woman: Castiel....

he just kept quiet

Woman: you may want what you want from her but she's a woman that will bear you a child it may be without her consent but she's gonna be the mother of your child and you know what that baby will do to her she might not even make it

she said with a tired voice

Castiel: it is what it is Juana

***he said without any care ***

Juana: wow

he sighed

Castiel: ok im sorry my love

he said holding her frail hand and he kissed it

Juana: look her mother may have chosen a man over her safety and even settled her man's debt using her but that doesn't mean she's worthless....and you can find a lifetime partner in her if only you could....

he interrupted her

Castiel: don't even go there Juana please!

he said getting angry

Juana: im dying Castiel and I thought we're on the same page

he got up

Castiel: you should've let me change you Juana and now you're forcing me to live without you

Juana: Castiel...

Castiel: no....you made a decision of not wanting me to change you and I respected it now let me plan my life without you in it the way I see fit....if I chose not to care about this bitch Ntandokazi's life then so be it....if my baby kills her then poor her and if she makes it then she's gonna be one lucky bitch

then he walked out leaving Juana looking sad....she slowly picked Kazi's picture and she sighed

Juana: my spirit tells me you are the one....when he told me he found another girl to carry his toxic seed for the first time I didn't feel jealous that he's gonna have to sleep with you too that he will touch you and make you scream out loud in pure pleasure that you will be able to carry his child something I failed to do because of circumstances surrounding him....i felt peace and content for the first time....im just sad I wont be here to protect and be there for you cause your mother just threw you in the lion's den and you might come out as a corpse....

she wiped her tears

Castiel: you know I don't wanna see you unhappy Juana....im sorry for lashing out

she nodded...she didn't see or even feel him walk in

Juana: just don't...don't let her suffer too much like the last girl when the baby starts killing her from the inside

he sighed and nodded

Castiel: now its time for your medication madam

Juana: what's the use of drinking all these Cass....im dying

he gave her a death stare and she rolled her eyes at him

Juana: you know you don't scare me right Night Rider

Castiel: voetsek who are you calling a Night Rider

she laughed a bit and started coughing and she coughed out blood then Castiel cleaned her up then help her drink the potion then he looked at her with a pained look

Castiel: im not ready Juana

Juana: I know baby....but I am.....this pain....this pain is too much my love....i cant live with the fact that you chose me over our unborn baby....i love you but you should've let me die instead but I understand cause I think I would've also chosen me too I mean did you see how beautiful I was

he sighed

Castiel: you still are beautiful baby

she laughed a bit and rolled her eyes

Juana: im 60 years old baby

Castiel: and im 105 years old...your point your highness?

she pushed him a bit and he laughed

Juana: you stopped aging when you turned 33 so please nigga

he laughed then he stopped and looked at her

Castiel: and you would have also stopped aging if you let me change you

she shook her head no

Juana: im ready to meet my maker baby.... me and him we have a lot to talk about

she said smiling and he chuckled

Castiel: and I wonder about what

Juana: you don't wanna know....but its gonna be one heck of a discussion

Castiel laughed

Juana: baby

he looked at her

Juana: thank you for respecting my decision and for sticking with me all these years....you are the best thing that has ever happened to me Castiel and im gonna die a happy woman

he swallowed hard

Castiel: but I still wish you let me change you

Juana: I know my love believe me I know but im still sticking with my decision

he just kissed her frail hand and sighed

.

.

.

she was sitting alone in a restaurant having lunch before she went back to her salon when someone sat on an empty chair next to her and she frowned when she saw who it was

Kazi: what do you think you're doing Menzi

Menzi: we need to talk Ntandokazi

she shook her head no

Kazi: Menzi please tog....stop ok....ushadile for God's sake now ngiyeke tuu(you are married for God's sake now leave me alone)

he sighed

Menzi: what about my feelings Kazi mmmh

she sighed

Kazi: just direct those feelings to your Naomi Campbell wife and let peace rein please

he chuckled

Menzi: Naomi Campbell wife....wow that was funny

she tried to hide her smile but she failed and he smiled wider

Menzi: im with her cause she knows a lot of my hidden skeletons her staying my wife means she could never testify against me if shit hit the fan and she's the mother of my kids but the truth of the matter is I don't love her anymore Kazi I just still care that's it but with you.....

he shook his head smiling

Menzi: the love I feel for you....the happiness and peace I feel inside when im with you is just....i never thought I'd ever feel like that for another woman ever again

she swallowed hard

Menzi: this is not about me wanting to make you my second wife or second best as you put it....its me loving you and wanting to spend the rest of my life with you....ngiyakuthanda Ntandokazi please baby just give me a chance to prove my love for you to prove to you that im not only with you for the delicious pussy and your beauty and hot body but for the amazing person you are and the fact that you have been through shit but you're still standing and you don't even depend on a man

she swallowed looking down and he held her hand

Menzi: please....just let me prove myself to you sthandwa sam

she pulled her hand off his grip

Kazi: I cannot share my man Menzi its as simple as that....i love you but I cant share you

Menzi: Ntando please

she shook her head no

Kazi: im not my mother Menzi and I refuse to be like her its as simple as that....i love you but I cant share you

Menzi: Ntando please

she shook her head no

Kazi: im not my mother Menzi and I refuse to be like her im sorry but you are married and that means you are off limits

he got angry looking at

Menzi: I just told you why Im still with her I don't love her Ntandokazi ngithanda wena! (I love you)

Kazi: stop shouting at me!

she warned him

Menzi: then stop acting ngcwele ngcwele (holy holy) here.....

Kazi: wow!

she attempted to get up but he stopped her

Menzi: ngiyaxolisa....im sorry don't go please

she sighed and sat back down and she saw that the two men sitting on the far corner table where still looking at her and the other one was now on the phone looking at her too and she frowned

Kazi: are those guys with you?

Menzi frowned and turned to look

Menzi: which guys?

*** then those two guys quickly got up and walked to the door***

Kazi: those ones that are leaving...they have been staring at this table for some time now even before you came here

Menzi: shit.....stay here and don't move!

***he got up and went after them he saw them walking to the parking lot and he walked slowly behind them then he whistled and they turned ***

Menzi: ehh madoda.....do you have a message for me or my woman

they looked at each other

Guy1: no mfowethu

he said looking alarmed

Menzi: nisure? (are you sure)

Guy2: yah.....asambe mfo (lets go man)

he said to his parner

Menzi: anginikholwa (I don't believe you) so lets try this one more time

***he said taking out his gun and out of the blue they started running using the cars as covers and

Menzi just stood there surprised cause he thought a gun battle with happen cause he saw their guns on their waists***

Menzi: really ka njalo nje? (really just like that?)

he shook his head and put his gun back where it was and he went back to the restaurant and found Kazi anxiously waiting

Kazi: who are they?

Menzi: let's go

he said taking out a stack of cash and he put it on the table and he took her hand bag and they walked out

****INSIDE MENZI'S CAR****

Kazi: who were they?

Menzi: I don't know but they were carrying guns but they looked like amateurs cause they ran instead of taking me on

she bit her lower lip scared and he held her hand

Menzi: don't worry I won't let anything happen to you

Kazi: what if you didn't come and they....oooh God.... I saw them looking at me before you came....what if you didn't come and....

she said that and hugged her body feeling scared

Menzi: im glad I came.....look I think they are into human trafficking or shit like that so they wont be back

she didn't say anything she just swallowed hard fighting back her tears

Menzi: them running when I took out my gun showed that they are those useless traffickers that abduct defenseless women and sell them to the highest bidder

she turned and looked at him with her eyes popped out

Kazi: you have a gun?

he looked at her briefly and he chuckled when he saw the look on her face

Menzi: I own a security company for high profile individuals and a couple of clubs and panel beaters so yah

Kazi: ooh

she said frowning

Menzi: yeah so I need a gun for protection sthandwa sam

she frowned at him

Kazi: don't call me that Menzi

he sighed

Menzi: uyisthandwa sam Kazi (you are my love Kazi) and nothing will change that

she rolled her eyes and looked out of the window thinking about those two guys and what would have become of her if they abducted her.....well Menzi was worried about those two guys too and he kept wondering what they wanted from her or if they were really human traffickers....he told himself he won't let it go just like that he wanted to know who they are and who send them and what they wanted from Kazi but all in all he was glad in a way that this happened cause look now he's with her in his car and she trusts that he's gonna keep her safe

Kazi: just so you know you playing my superman don't change anything between us

he gave her a bored look

Kazi: im just saying

Menzi: you just know how to ruin a good mood neh

Kazi: I just don't want you to get the wrong impression

Menzi chuckled

Menzi: ungowami wena Ntandokazi even okhokho bavumile (you are mine Ntandokazi even the ancestors have agreed)

Kazi gave him a death stare and he laughed

.

.

.

*****BACK AT THE PARK*****

they were now eating holding a simple conversation when Ruslan's phone rang

Ruslan: let me take this ok

Thandi nodded and Ruslan answered

Ruslan: yeah

Baba: is that how you answer your phone?

he could tell it was the mighty Killer

Ruslan: it's my phone so I can answer it the way I want

Baba: cocky much

Ruslan chuckled

Ruslan: what can I do for you Khumalo?

Baba: tomorrow is the day

he knew what he was talking about and he sighed

Ruslan: isn't it too early man for that

Baba: no so I want you to go be with Kalu and Mbali for just in case La Parca reacts

Ruslan: you won't tell me what to do Khumalo im not one of your boys

he said with an annoyed voice

Baba: right now I don't give a fuck about your ego wizard Sambulo is finding out tomorrow and if you care about him Kalu and Mbali you would do as I say and stop fighting me

***Thandi saw Ruslan clench his jaws in a scary way ***

Ruslan: this should be the last time you tell me what to do instead of asking me Khumalo im not a small boy who won't understand if you make me see reason

baba sighed

Baba: fair enough

Ruslan: good im glad we understand each other

Baba: be on standby just in case La Parca decides to come out and play

Ruslan: go it

then they ended the call and Ruslan clenched his jaws and he sighed deeply

Thandi: you ok?

he just got closer to her and he smashed his lips on hers catching her off guard....she tried to fight it but eventually gave in and they kissed after sometime they broke the kiss to catch their breath and he put his forehead on hers and they breathed heavily with their eyes closed.....he then perked her lips the tip of her nose and her forehead

Ruslan: now im ok

*** he said now looking into her eyes and she looked down blushing then his phone rang again and it was Ray he sighed got up and answered walking away a bit***

Ruslan: bros

Ray: I just got a call from Killer he said I should come with Jabu and Heath to some warehouse for a meeting

Ruslan sighed

Ruslan: yeah he called me too

Ray: whats the meeting about

Ruslan kept quiet a bit

Ray: it's the secret you've been keeping from me right

he said with a firm tone

Ruslan: it's not a secret per say cause I only found out about it that time your flower was being tormented by Zambo

Ray: then what the fuck is going Ruu

Ruslan: you remember Castiel

Ray kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: the same reason you couldn't tell me about his disappearance is the same reason I cant tell you what I know

Ray: you cant compare those two man

Ruslan: I cant tell you cause it's not my place man and plus I don't really have the answers I only know what I know.....but at least tomorrow you gonna find out the truth where else I don't know where Castiel is even today...you knew he was the one that betrayed me but you kept the truth from me for my own protection so understand my situation now

Ray sighed

Ray: fuck!....fine I hear you man

Ruslan: so all I know is that it's about your mother and that she's harboring a dark secret about your paternity and Killer seems to know something

Ray: wait what?

Ruslan: yeah that's all I know man

Ray: how does Nomvula know Killer

Ruslan: I guess you'll find out tomorrow....look man im with Thandi now so we will talk later

Ray: wait....did you just say Thandi..... my cousin Thandi?

Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: bye man

he dropped the call and stood there looking at Thandi and he smiled...she looked up at him and found him staring and she frowned

Thandi: what?

Ruslan: you're beautiful amour

she looked away blushing

Ruslan: Some men are just blatantly stupid and blind to see a rare treasure staring them in the face

he shook his head and went to join her

.
. .
.

AT AN UNKNOWN LOCATION

Castiel: what did you say happened?

Guy1: a hitman that works for the Khumalo family came and had lunch with her...he's a bad motherfucker and good at what he does

Castiel: ok then how did he spot you cause you said you are also good?

he said walking back and forth slowly

Guy2: the...the girl did

he stopped walking

Castiel: what?.....didn't you say you are good at what you do?

he said looking at them now

Guy1: we are nkalakatha (boss) we don't even know how she spotted us

Castiel chuckled

Castiel: you know I hate incompetent fools and liars

Guy1: boss give us one last chance and we will get you her daily routine

Castiel shook his head and he went to guy number 1 and he held him by his collar and turned to guy number 2

Castiel: watch what I do to incompetent fools

*** he then opened his mouth wide and his fangs got longer and sharp on its edges and he bit him on his neck sucking in his blood with the guy trying to fight him off until he gave up and when he was satisfied he let him go and he fell on the floor dead then Castiel turned and looked at the second guy with blood all over his mouth and the area around his mouth and chinas for the remaining guy he just peed on himself he looked terrified and visibly shaking***

Castiel: do you see what I do to people who are incompetent?

the guy nodded continuously with tears and mucus all over his face

Guy: pl....please boss don't.....dont kill me don't....

Castiel interrupted him

Castiel: shhhhh

****he said walking closer to him***

Castiel: I want all I said you should gather for me about her ok..... and tomorrow you'll meet your new partner since your old one is dead and do not fuck up ok

the guy nodded continuously shaking

Castiel: good now get the fuck out of here I need to let my babies feed

the guy ran out of that huge room as if he's being chased by a ghost and Castiel's fangs went back to normal and he took a towel and cleaned himself off the blood and he went to the huge cage his two bulldogs were and he opened the cage and they got out and sat next to his feet

Castiel: the meat is not fresh I mean even the blood tasted like a badly made beer and it stank badly too but I know you are hungry so indulge

****he crouched in front of them and looked at them in their deadly eyes with a serious look on his face***

Castiel: ESSEN! (eat)

*** then the dogs got up and ran to the body of the guy and started ripping it apart and feeding of his flesh***

Castiel: good boys

81

INSERT.....81

.
. .
. .

NARRATED

Jabu: I don't like this one bit man

Heath: me too what if it's an ambush man

Mat: come on im sure they are not that stupid

Heath: I just don't like this one bit....i have a bad feeling about it

Ray: it's not an ambush but I have a feeling that it won't be a get together meeting

Heath: what aren't you telling us big Ray?

Ray sighed

Ray: nothing I just think we are about to find out something we won't like one bit

they all kept quiet a bit

Heath: well whatever it is those Khumalo fuckers better not try their shit with us

Jabu: mo chaele Mshikaro (tell him Mshikaro)

Ray: calm down will you

Jabu: and why matwetwe yena a satla le rena (why didn't the wizard come with us)

Heath: matwetwe?

he said confused

Jabu: heeh mfowethu ke bone ka be ka utlwa motlholo....dai man ke founder ya baloi....ke ra gore moloi wa Phd Mshikaro.....e seng o le wa go belegwa today and tomorrow bamo tshasa ditlhare and bamo latlhela mo leboteng and if wa kgomarella mo leboteng ka matsogo le maoto then o joiner boloi ba ka mo gae but if not bamo etsa hethe (heeh my brother I saw and I heard unbelievable things.....that man is the founder of witchcraft.....i mean a wizard that holds a Phd Mshikaro.....not that one that is born today and tomorrow they smear him with muthi and they throw him to the wall and if he sticks to the wall with his hands and feet then he joins the witches

and wizards in the family but if not then they turn him into a dumb/or mentality disturbed person)

Heath laughed

Heath: o reng? (what did you just say)

Jabu: kao chaela Mshikaro mara sa wara ke tla o chaela pila pila re le two (im telling you Mshikaro but don't worry I'll tell you everything when its just the two of us)

Heath just shook his head chuckling

Ray: continue talking about Ruslan and he might just show up inside this car right now

Jabu looked next to him quickly and they all laughed

Heath: wait is Jabu serious when he says Ruslan is a wizard...like he uses juju or shit

Mat: when Ruu gets here jefe please tell him I didn't say anything

Ray laughed and Mat joined him

Jabu: mara le wena big Ray wa phapha why o chomana le tweebenare mara (but Big Ray you are too forward why would you befriend a wizard)

Ray: he's not just a friend Jabu but a brother from another mother and without him I wouldn't be here so he means a lot to me

Jabu: neh man yes ka utlwa mara no man big Ray dai man o dangerous (no man yes I understand but no man big Ray that man is dangerous)

Mat chuckled

Mat: oye hermano (hey bro) you don't know what dangerous isbelieve me you aint seen dangerous before trust me

Ray chuckled

Heath: what do you mean by that

Mat: do you know about the angel of death mmmh.... el angel de la muerte (the angel of death)

Ray: Mateo don't...

Mat chuckled shaking his head whilst Heath and Jabu looked confused a bit

Jabu: well ke jaja mmalepona le mmamulaudzi and ba dangerous (well I know mmalepona and mmamolaudzi 'witchdoctors/witches' and they are dangerous)

Heath and Ray laughed while Mat chuckled shaking his head

.
. .
.

****Meanwhile the Khumalo's were all at the warehouse waiting for Ray and his brothers and they all were restless except for Baba Pops and Thorsten cause they knew what was about to happen****

Snakes: khanti ziphi izinkawu (where are the monkeys?)

****Jay Jase and Muzi laughed****

Baba: NHLAKA!

****he warned him and Snakes huffed and he went to the woman tied to the chair with a black sack covering her head and face****

Nhlaka: i wonder wenzeni engaka to have Killer the dragon slayer give you this kind of attention
mmmmh

****the woman tried to talk but her mouth was taped ****

Snakes: shame aram skepsel nc nc nc (shame poor thing)

****he said shaking his head****

Pops: Nhlaka khaume tuu (stop please)

Snakes: but Pops im bored that's why im talking to her

Thor: he forgot to take his medicine Pops so leave him

Snakes: uyanya Smiso

****Thorsten got up from his chair and Snakes went closer to Baba and they all laughed****

Thor: pussy!

Snakes: fsek

Baba: Nhlaka Smiso is your elder brother so you need to respect him man or uzokphula amazinyo (he'll pull your teeth) one by one with his bare hands

Snakes: angimsabi mina (im not scared of him).....let him come at me without his beast and ngizomenza ahlangabezane nokhokho bakhe (I'll make him meet his ancestors)

****they all laughed****

Thor: you know what im just gonna have to tell Ntombi about you flirting with that nurse at the hospital back in KZN

****they laughed at Snakes as he frowned****

Snakes: uya bona manje se uya off-rampers Smiso (you see now you are not playing fair)....why bring my wife into our brotherly argument

****Thorsten chuckled****

Thor: you said you gonna make me meet my ancestors right but right after you cause we both know she's gonna murder you

they laughed

Snakes: mxm

Pops: it's funny how all of ya'll are afraid of your wives

Baba: cause we can't live without them

Them: you said it baba

Pops: haw even you Baba?

they laughed

Baba: mfana wam ikhekhe lomfazi wam limnadi so ngiyeke tuu (son my wife's cake is delicious so let me be)

they all made vomiting sounds while making faces and as for Thorsten he just laughed shaking his head

Pops: Baba man eish!

he said making a face

Baba: what? its fine for you to come out of my wife's vagina but its not fine for me to talk about how delicious it is....double standards Bongani

Thorsten laughed

Jay: let me go outside before I vomit for real

he said walking to the door and Thorsten laughed some more

Jase: really Baba?...that's our grandmother you talking about

he went after his twin shaking his head

Pops: ngiyotshela uMa (im going to tell Ma)

Thorsten was busy laughing and Muzi just shook his head chuckling as for Snakes he was just looking at Baba not believing he was the one who said all that

Baba: and nou wena?

he said looking at Snakes

Snakes: vele vele usayishaya induku ku Ma baba?...ngisho ukuthi nisayingena Inkonzo ebusuku e kameleni yenu mfundisi Khumalo? (so you want to tell me you still have sex with Ma....i mean do you still hold a sermon at night in your bedroom pastor Khumalo?)

Pops: voetsek Nhlakanipho!

he warned him

Snakes: ah ah mos ngiyazibuzela nje Pops (im just asking Pops)

Thorsten and Muzi were laughing out loud

Pops: uzonya Nhlaka

Snakes just laughed as for Baba he just shook his head chuckling

Thor: when I said he forgot to drink his pills I was insulted

Snakes just showed him the middle finger and Thorsten took a step towards him and Snakes moved to the door then the twins walked in

Jase: they have arrived

then they all got serious and the woman started moving making sound and trying to untie herself but to no avail

.

.

.

Ray and his brothers walked in and they found a woman in the middle of the room tied to a chair with her head covered

Ray: what's going on here...why are we here?

Baba: to force the truth out of this heartless bitch

Heath: what?

Jabu: Big Ray?

Ray took a step forward

Ray: Nomvula?

the woman made some noise trying to untie herself

Heath: wait what? Nomvula as in mom?

the woman made more noise and Baba took off the black sack and Heath and Jabu took out their guns and pointed them at the Khumalos and Jay Jase Snakes and Muzi took out their guns too and pointed them at Ray and his brothers

Thor: ok I don't have time for all this shit I promised my wife I'll come back home early now can we hear what she has to say so we can get the fuck out of here

***he said annoyed**

Ray: what's going on Khumalo

he asked Baba

Baba: she's not your real mother.... now she's here to tell us who she stole you from and why and what did she do to your biological mother

Ray looked at Baba with a shocked expression and so did Jabu and Heath

Heath: what did you just say man?

he said with a frown on his face and Baba took off the tape on her mouth and she cried

Nomvula: my sons thanks God you're here....they kidnapped me and...and.... please help mejust kill all of them and lets go home

Pops: hai thula sfebe (shut up bitch)

Heath: DON'T FUCKEN CALL HER THAT YOU PIECE OF SHIT

he said moving closer to Pops and Ray stopped him

Ray: don't Ezeh!

he said with a calm voice

Heath: he just called mom a bitch!

Ray: the same mom you are here trying to take on Nighthawk for almost killed you wife and kids....you would've buried Naledi and both your twins by now and she killed our sibling in cold blood then she buried her in some shallow grave in the middle of fucken nowhere

Heath swallowed hard and moved back putting his gun back and so did Jabu and the khumalo brothers also put their guns away

Ray: what do you mean she's not my biological mother

Nomvula: he's lying baby....dnt listen to him he's lying

Baba: well if im lying then we can do a DNA test how's that

she swallowed hard looking scared and Heath shook his head repeatedly

Heath: no no no.... mom....he's...he's not lying is he?

Nomvula: baby...Heath....im your mother you can't let these people treat me like this.....i gave birth to you...don't let them hurt me

Heath looked at his mother like he was seeing a ghost as for Jabu he was busy brushing his head pacing back and forth

Muzi: this is some fucked up shit im telling ya'll...damn

Baba: ooh no ntombazana we the Khumalo's won't hurt you but he will

he pointed at an angry Ray

Nomvula: Ray look baby he's lying im your mother he doesn't know what he's talking about....he's lying

Ray's hands were shaking as he looked at Nomvula and Mat saw what was about to happen

Mat: ooh shit....ooh shit...

he said moving back then the lights started to flick vigorously

Mat: jefe calm down please

he pleaded with him

Snakes: no no no....angihlaleli la masimba mina (im not staying for this shit)....i know what's about to happen

Pops: stop being a coward man Nhlaka!

Snakes: call me a coward all you want Pops kodwa you know mina ne supernatural shit a sizwane (we don't mix)

Heath: what the fuck is going on.....big Ray?

Mat: jefe please don't let him out please

he pleaded with him and immediately the room got filled with strong wind and Snakes rushed to the door but some strong wind pushed him back hard and he fell on his back then he quickly took out his gun and pointed it at La Parca shaking....he wasn't fully out but his skin was pale with black veins visible and his eyes were black in colour with a black liquid dripping down from his mouth

Baba: Nhlaka put that gun away...uyahlanya yini ufuna ukufa? (are you crazy do you want to die)

La Parca turned his head and he looked at Snakes on the floor pointing a gun at him shaking and Snakes quickly put his gun down on the floor and he raised his hands up

Thorsten: easy grim reaper he's just scared he means no harm

he said moving towards Snakes with his hands up then La Parca turned his attention back to Nomvula as he knows its not the first time Snakes tried to run away whenever he's out

Jabu: oooh Modimo...oooh Jehova....what's going on here....big Ray.....Mat...

he said moving back slowly with his heart beating fast....all this felt like a dream to him in fact the chilling feeling he was feeling on his spine was enough for him to know that he's before something that is out of this world

.
. .

Ruslan was sitting in the lounge when he suddenly saw lights flicking and he quickly got up then he heard Mbali screaming out loud upstairs and he rushed there and he found Kalu on the bed with his eyes all back in colour and he had black visible veins all over his body with his tiny mouth also black in colour

Ruslan: shit....

he said rushing to Kalu but a great force stopped him and he stepped back a bit

Mbali: what...what's happening to...to my baby Ruslan

she said looking spooked

Ruslan: he....he's gonna be ok he's....shit look he's gonna be ok

Mbali: WHAT'S HAPPENING TO HIM?

she said shouting

Ruslan: ጊዜው ገና አይደለም

Sponsored

do you want to die)

La Parca turned his head and he looked at Snakes on the floor pointing a gun at him shaking and Snakes quickly put his gun down on the floor and he raised his hands up

Thorsten: easy grim reaper he's just scared he means no harm

he said moving towards Snakes with his hands up then La Parca turned his attention back to Nomvula as he knows its not the first time Snakes tried to run away whenever he's out

Jabu: oooh Modimo...oooh Jehova...what's going on here...big Ray....Mat...

he said moving back slowly with his heart beating fast...all this felt like a dream to him in fact the chilling feeling he was feeling on his spine was enough for him to know that he's before something that is out of this world

.
. .

Ruslan was sitting in the lounge when he suddenly saw lights flicking and he quickly got up then he heard Mbali screaming out loud upstairs and he rushed there and he found Kalu on the bed with his eyes all back in colour and he had black visible veins all over his body with his tiny mouth also black in colour

Ruslan: shit...

he said rushing to Kalu but a great force stopped him and he stepped back a bit

Mbali: what...what's happening to...to my baby Ruslan

she said looking spooked

Ruslan: he...he's gonna be ok he's...shit look he's gonna be ok

Mbali: WHAT'S HAPPENING TO HIM?

she said shouting

Ruslan: ጊዜው ገና አይደለም እነሱ በዝርዝር ላይ አይደሉም (Saint you need to calm down you're scaring your mother)

he pleaded with the Saint in the forbidden language.....as for the baby he was busy making weird and creepy baby sounds which freaked Mbali out and he was busy kicking and moving his tiny hands and legs

Mbali: ooh God...ooh God what's happening to my son

she said with tears all over her face and with her hands on top of her head

Ruslan: በጣም ጥሩ የሆ ሙሰብሰ (calm down Saint)

then out of the blue he stopped making sounds and he just lay there quiet

Ruslan: የእሱ ምርጫ ሳይሆን የአባቱ ነው እናም እሱ ተጠያቂው..... እሱ ነውብሰ (look at you mother Saint he's freaking out...stop it now)

then Mbali rushed to her phone then out of the blue a force pushed her back and she almost fell but she managed to balance herself

Mbali: RUU WHAT'S HAPPENING...OOH MY GOD THIS HOUSE IS HAUNTED...WE NEED TO GET OUT OF HERE

she said panicking *

Ruslan: Mbali calm down!

Mbali: DON'T TELL ME TO CALM DOWN...MY SON LOOKS LIKE SOME POSSESSED CHILD AND...AND SOMETHING STOPPED ME FROM REACHING FOR MY PHONE!

Ruslan: he's not possessed he was born with it!

Mbali: THIS HOUSE IS HAUNTED IM TELLING YOU AND WHERE THE FUCK IS RAY...HOW CAN HE....

she stopped as what Ruslan said just clicked in her mind

Mbali: he...he was born with it...what...what do you mean by that

Ruslan swallowed hard cause Ray was the one who was supposed to tell her

Ruslan: wait for Ray to....

she interrupted him

Mbali: DON'T TELL ME ABOUT RAY YOU ARE HERE RIGHT...NOW TALK!

Ruslan: look I can't Ray will explain everything to you

Mbali: ooh God...ooh God....he says he was born with it... he says he was born with it

she said moving back and forth with her hands on top of her head and tears gushing out

Ruslan: Mbali calm down he's gonna be fine

she stopped and tried to go closer to Kalu but a force stopped her pushing her back and she cried out loud

Mbali: My son Ruslan....what's stopping me from touching him....what is it that he was born with

she said going closer to Ruslan and holding his shirt tight crying

Mbali: what's wrong with my son Ruslan...what's wrong with him

then they heard a voice

Voice: mommy don't cry I won't hurt you

***she jumped in fright holding on to Ruslan for dear life ***

Mbali: who...who said that

Ruslan: SHIT..... SAINT DIDN'T I SAY YOU'RE SCARING HER! FUCK MAN

then he chanted the spell of protection and it covered both him and Mbali

.
. .

****BACK AT THE WAREHOUSE****

*** Nomvula was busy screaming***

La Parca: confess woman!

he said with a voice that sounded scary and bone chilling

Heath: bi...what...ooh God

he said looking terrified as for Jabu he just stood there frozen

Snakes: fuck I think the fall broke my tail bone

he said getting up and rubbing his back

Jase: wena wawuya kuphi? (where were you going)

Snakes: tsek

he said limping to where Pops was standing

Baba: khuluma mfazi! (talk woman)

Nomvula: ooh Baba wethu osezulwini maliphathwe ngobungwele igama lakho umbuso wakho mawufike intando yakho mayenziwe emhlabeni njengasezulwini..... (Our father who art in heaven hallowed be thy name: thy kingdom come thy will be done on earth as it is in heaven.....)

she prayed with her eyes shut

La Parca: QUIET!

***he warned her and his voice startled her and she just cried then La Parca moved like the wind from where he was standing and he went closer to Nomvula.....and when Jabu saw him moving

like that he felt dizzy...his mind was processing everything his eyes were seeing and it was just too much and luckily Mat saw him and he held him***

La Parca: look at me!

he ordered her and she just shut her eyes tighter while shaking and crying

La Parca: mmmh

he said that and his voice vibrated sounding deeper and more scarier then he put his index finger on her forehead and she screamed out loud opening her eyes wide like he just saw a ghost and when she saw his face up close she faintedthen he turned to Baba

La Parca: wake her up!

Thorsten went to pick the bucket that had water in it and he gave it to Baba and Baba poured the whole bucket on Nomvula and she woke up gasping for air....after some time she calmed down and started shaking looking extremely terrified

Nomvula: please im sorry...please don't send me there

she begged him shaking visibly

La Parca: confess or I'll make you perish in this world and you saw where I'll send your useless soul!

***she nodded over and over ***

Nomvula: ok ok I'll confess

Heath swallowed hard

Nomvula: i...the day you...Raymond was born i...I also gave birth to twins a boy and a girl....ooh God

she said and cried and Ray moved back a bit and La Parca went back to sleep and Ray's face eyes and skin changed back to normal and the lights stopped flicking so did the strong wind

Jabu: did...did you see that Mat...he...he changed back....tell me im dreaming man this can't be real

Mat just sighed trying to keep it together cause he doesn't like being around La Parca cause he knows he's a sinner and La Parca collects sinners soul

Baba: go on!

Nomvula: the...the twins were albinos and....and I couldn't understand why would God punish me by giving me such things as children

Heath shook his head pacing up and down breathing heavily.....as for the Khumalo's they had frowns on their faces not believing what Nomvula was saying

Nomvula: there was another woman at the clinic who gave birth to a normal baby boy her bed was next to mine so i...I had a plan I heard the nurses say her BP was high and she had a drip on and even though she would wake up every now and then to check on her baby but she was weak...since it was only the two of us who gave birth that morning I decided to wait for when the shifts changes and I suffocated the boy I gave birth to with a pillow and I went and suffocated the woman with a pillow too and since she was weak I had the upper hand and she finally gave up and died then i...I switched the babies....oooh God

she said crying and Ray's whole body started shaking as he looked at Nomvula with nothing but pure hate and for Heath tears ran down his cheeks as he looked at his mother and well as for Jabu he just sat down on the cold floor and he buried his head between his thighs after he heard what Nomvula said

Baba: continue!

Nomvula: soon other nurses came to check on us as they started their shifts and found her dead along with the baby and soon I was discharged and I went to some bush and I cut the remaining twin with a scissor I stole at the clinic and I buried her there

Snakes: uyinja mfazi...fuck you are evil....a fucken she-devil

he said looking angry

Jay: I thought I have heard it all then I hear all this

he said shaking his head

Ray: you....you killed my mother

Nomvula: im...im sorry Raymond...Ii was just tying up loose ends

Ray slapped her so hard she fell back along with the chair she was tied on and he jumped on her and he punched her repeatedly on the face until Thorsten and Pops pulled him back...her face was covered with blood... as for Heath he was busy pacing up and down mumbling things alone with tears all over his face

Ray: LET ME GO....LET ME KILL THIS EVIL BITCH....WHY DID YOU KILL HER....IN FACT WHY DID YOU KILL THEM

Pops: Ray calm down!

he said holding him

Ray: DON'T TELL ME TO FUCKEN CALM DOWN....SHE KILLED MY MOTHER...

then tears started running down his cheeks

Ray: she killed my mother....she killed her....she should've let her live....she was weak im sure she didn't even see her switching the babies but she chose to kill her

***he said crying and Baba clenched his jaws trying to keep himself as calm as possible ***

INSERT.....82

.
.
.

NARRATED

Jabu: Nomvula why....why unje (why are you like this)....why would you do something so horrible like this....im sure ugogo no mkhulu adopted you cause you are way too evil to be their child....o nale pelo ya maboya in fact o nale pelo empe ya go phala le ya moloi (you are heartless in fact you have in fact your evil heart is worse than that of a witch)

he said with an emotional tone

Muzi: why didn't you give the kids up for adoption instead of killing them

he said looking at Nomvula with an angry look on his face

Nomvula: they...they were cursed....God made a mistake I shouldn't have given birth to those things so they had to die

she said struggling to talk with blood all over her face and some coming out of her mouth with her front teeth missing

Jase: wow...just wow...I can't believe she just said that...what kind of a woman is this

he said shaking his head

Snake: La Parca should just come out manje and deal with this old bitch nx

he said looking angry

Thor: you calm?

***he asked Ray and Ray nodded then Him and Pops let him go and he wiped his tears off ***

Ray: I should've let Heath kill you that night you tried to kill his wife....and im glad dad married a second wife so even if you die it wont make any difference....you wont be missed one bit

he said looking at Nomvula with nothing but pure hate

Nomvula: dad?....dad? he's not your father....you should be thankful that I took you your mother was coloured so you are probably an addict's child so I saved you

Ray: STOLE...STOLE....YOU STOLE ME... SAY IT YOU FUCKEN STOLE ME YOU WITCH!

*** Ray said slapping her over and over and she cried then Baba laughed and they looked at him***

Baba: for own information mthakathi (witch) his mother was a beautiful coloured woman who comes from a well off family and they might have disowned her because she fell in love with a black man and became pregnant by him but she was raised well and the only reason she gave birth in a public clinic and instead of a private hospital or even a government hospital is because we were keeping a low profile cause her father and brothers gave her an ultimatum that they will only allow her back if she aborts and when she refused they wanted to get rid of her pregnancy by making her miscarry forcefully so me and my friend took her into hiding

everyone looked at Baba surprised

Jay: which friend Baba?

Baba: shakes

their eyes popped out except for Thorsten and Pops

Jase: Kedi's father?

Baba nodded and he looked at Ray

Baba: your father was my brother from another mother he was my best friend my other half

Ray frowned looking at Baba

Jase: wait what?....his father?....bra Shakes is or was Kedi's father.....ooh shit....

he said looking at Ray with his eyes popped out

Baba: your mother was shakes fiancée before he met Kedi's mother..... after you and your mother's supposed "death" he went into depression I tried everything to help him but failed...he became an alcoholic and became reckless until he met Kedi's mother and she helped him out of that dark hole he was in...then Kedi happened

Ray swallowed hard and he sat down on the cold floor and he buried his head between his thighs and tears gushed out

Baba: we buried your mother with the wrong child and your father has been troubling me in my dreams lately busy saying he's looking for you in the land of the dead but he can't find you he asked me to help him look for you....then the first time we met when Mbali was possessed I saw him in you.... the way you walk your stinking attitude and personality and bravery....you have his eyes and lips and his jawline looks just like his I knew it then that you are his even if you aren't Mary-Ann's child but I knew you were his but the texture of your skin and your curly hair shows that you are Mary-Ann's boy

Jase: this can't be happening

Baba took out the DNA test results he did on Kedi and Ray without their knowledge and he gave it to Jase then he read it and gave it to Menzi and they passed it around until it ended on Mat

Mat: jefe

Ray didn't even raise his head to look at him

Mat: its true she's your sister

Ray: so you lied about my father being Portuguese....you gave me a name and surname and I went to look for him....i hated him for abandoning you when you were pregnant with me.....i could've killed him....I COULD'VE KILLED AN INNOCENT MAN ALONG WITH HIS FAMILY BECAUSE OF YOUR LIES NOMVULA....WHY....WHY DIDN'T YOU SAY HE DIED BEFORE I WAS BORN....I HATED THE POOR MAN MY WHOLE LIFE AND HE DID NOTHING WRONG....THE POOR MAN DOESN'T EVEN KNOW YOU EXIST....

he said with an angry voice

Jabu: ompalletse Nomvula....wena o no ba sefebe sa sathane stru (I give up with you Nomvula....you are satan's bitch I swear)

the next thing Heath walked to her with a blank face....he walked different....his walk was like that of soldiers in a camp....his face was emotionless but deadly....the next thing he pulled out his gun and pointed it to Nomvula

Jabu: Mshikaro o sa e chu....

the gun went off and he emptied all the bullets on Nomvula leaving everyone shocked to the core.... then he spat on her and he kicked the chair and her body and the chair fell back on the floor then he turned like soldiers do and he put the gun away and he walked to the door with "that walk"

Jabu: ooh shit...ohh shit....ooh fuck!

he said with his hands on top of his head

Pops: damn!

Ray: go with him Jabu and make sure he's safe

Jabu swallowed hard he wanted to protest cause it was clear that it was one of Heath's multiple personalities and he didn't know how dangerous this " soldier guy" is but he didn't want to seem like a pussy so he nodded and he got up and went after him

Thorsten: what just happened?

Ray: he has a multiple personality's disorder

Thorsten: damn...

***then he thought of Ben and he sighed shaking his head ***

Jay: shit....

Snakes: I give up....manje there's someone with abomultiple personality disorder....hai I swear this world is coming to an end he wanted to protest cause it was clear that it was one of Heath's

multiple personalities and he didn't know how dangerous this "soldier guy" is but he didn't want to seem like a pussy so he nodded and he got up and went after him***

Thorsten: what just happened?

Ray: he has a multiple personality's disorder

Thorsten: damn...

then he thought of Ben and he sighed shaking his head

Jay: shit....

Snakes: I give up....manje there's someone with abomultiple personality disorder....hai I swear this world is coming to an end ujesu uya buya stru (Jesus is coming back im telling you) the end is near.....

then he looked at Mateo

Snakes: what about you Spanish guy...what do you have

Mat: im a ghost

then he smirked at him and Snakes frowned

Snakes: heh?

****then Ray's phone rang and he answered cause it was Ruslan***

Ray: Ruu

he said with a scratchy low voice

Ruslan: you need to come back Ray

Ray frowned looking at Mat

Ray: why...what's wrong?

he said getting up

Ruslan: Saint happened and your flower saw everything...she's freaking out but i managed to sedate her

Ray: shit!

he said scratching his head roughly

Ray: im on my way

Ruslan: ok

he dropped the call and he looked at Baba

Ray: I have to go

Baba: we got this...go

Ray: my father and little brother along with my grandparents and her siblings need to bury her

Baba: it will be done

***Ray nodded and he walked out and Mat followed him

.
. .
. .
****AT THE HOTEL****

Kazi just finished showering and she was upset with herself because she failed to resist Menzi last night.... Menzi suggested that she spend the night at a hotel for safety reasons and she agreed cause she was still spooked by what almost happened at the restaurant but the nikka didn't want to leave she tried to make him leave but he just wouldn't budge so she let him be and in the middle of the night she woke up to him eating her pussy up....and after she came he entered her before she could even say anything....they went at it for the whole night and when she woke up in the early morning she was mad at herself in fact she still is and she's even giving him the silent treatment

Menzi: how long are you gonna give me the silent treatment

Kazi: until you leave me the fuck alone

Menzi: well that's not happening Kazi and you know it

he said getting annoyed

Kazi: relationships are not by force Menzi....i don't wanna be your second best or your second anything....now why can't you get that through your thick skull

Menzi: sooner or later you gonna accept that we belong together

Kazi: mxm

***she finished getting dressed and as she was grabbing her purse they heard a knock on the door and it wasn't a pleasant one then Menzi took out his gun and he asked who it was ***

Buhle: open this fucken door Menzi....open it and face me you cheating bastard!

*** he put his gun away and he turned to look at Kazi and he opened the door and Buhle pushed him to the side and she went in***

Buhle: you man-snatching whore...you stupid bitch today im gonna show you who I am....ungijwaela kabi golo lakho... sfebe so mgodoyi (insults)

Kazi moved back breathing heavily then Menzi got between them

Menzi: wenzani? are you fucken crazy?

he said with an angry voice

Buhle: how could you Menzi....i told you that im pregnant and you still go to her....what's so special about her heh?

Kazi swallowed hard and her eyes got filled with tears when she heard that she's pregnant

Menzi: hamba Buhle before I do something that I'll regret and this should be the last time you do something like this!

he said still angry

Buhle: wow

she said wiping her tears off with the back of her hand

Buhle: fine....just so you know im taking my kids and im leaving since you made your decision

Menzi: you are not going anywhere uyangizwa...dare me and you'll see what im capable of....dare me Buhle!

he said looking deadly

Buhle: what huh? you gonna kill me just like you killed your own damn father

***a slap landed on her cheek and she looked at Menzi with her eyes popped out cause he has never laid a hand on her before even when he found out she was fucking his father and tears ran down her cheeks while Kazi just froze for a second then she ran to the door and opened it and ran out going to the elevator with Menzi calling after her....she pressed on the elevator button fast and it opened and she quickly got in and pressed for it to close repeatedly as Menzi was rushing to her with Buhle behind him busy shouting and luckily it closed as he was closer to getting in and she cried with her hands covering her face then she heard the elevator opening and she quickly wiped her tears off and she stood there with her red and puffy eyes trying to swallow the growing lump on her throat....then a tall and handsome caramel man walked in and his eyes popped out when he saw her but he quickly regained his composure and he kept a straight face and turned facing the door with his jaws clenched....

The elevator closed and they remained silent in there until they reached the ground floor and Kazi rushed to go out but she tripped and almost fell but luckily the guy caught her and his hand landed on her stomach while the other was around her shoulders and he quickly let her go with his eyes popped out and he moved back a bit looking a bit spooked then he frowned a deadly frown looking at her which send chills down her spine***

Kazi: umm thanks for....for...

***the guy quickly got out and he walked out leaving Kazi surprised she wondered why his hands were that ice cold and why he reacted that way.....Anyway the guy took out his phone and

dialed a number walking passed the reception area and Kazi just got out and she quickly dialed an uber ***

.
. .

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION****

Castiel was busy pacing up and down and Juana was looking at him wondering what was wrong

Juana: are you gonna tell me what's wrong

his phone rang and he quickly answered it

Castiel: ARE YOU PURPOSELY AVOIDING MY CALLS MTHEMBU

Mthembu: ofcourse not I just didn't hear it ring man

Castiel: nx where is that stupid wife of yours

Mthembu sighed

Mthembu: she's here with me

Castiel: put me on loudspeaker now!

Mthembu did

Mthembu: she's listening

Castiel: your fucken daughter is pregnant meaning our deal is off so I want my fucken money

Joy: WHAT?...how...how do you know that

Castiel: Voetsek....don't fucken ask me that stupid question I want my money from the both of you or all hell will break loose

Mthembu: wait...look man we can work something out

Castiel: fuck you.....you have three days to pay me back or im coming after you and your other family....you'll bury those stupid children of yours every weekend Mthembu

he said with an angry and deadly voice

Mthembu: wait...wait man....look I'll do anything you want just leave my kids alone man

Castiel: fine I want that things inside her dead and you have three days to do that or pay me back my money or you'll bury your kids one by one

then he dropped the call and he saw Juana crying

Castiel: my love

he said rushing to her and when he tried to touch her she flinched

Juana: don't...don't touch me

Castiel: what?

Juana: you are a monster Castiel...how could you...i cant believe those words came out of your mouth

he frowned at her

Castiel: stay out of this Juana

Juana: i...

then she coughed hard and he helped her drink some water

Juana: get your hands off me

she said with tears all over her face and that broke his cold heart

Castiel: Juana...

Juana: if anything happen to her pregnancy I swear I will never forgive you even in my death I wont Castiel

he shook his head

Castiel: you don't mean that

Juana: dare me Castiel....dare me and don't think I wont find out cause I will and don't ask me how....

Castiel just clenched his jaws looking at her

Castiel: what I do shouldn't concern you Juana you chose to leave me so let me do whatever the fuck I want

he said with an angry voice

Juana: say whatever you want but just know that my dying wish is to leave that pregnancy alone

then she turned slowly and she looked the other way with tears gushing out and Castiel clicked his tongue and he walked out looking angry then he came back in

Castiel: you are a selfish person Juana...you chose to die instead of living forever with me and I respected that as much as I hate it and now im making my fucken own decisions and you're giving me conditions and death-wishes....im gonna be left all alone and all you fucken care about is some bitch and a bastard she's carrying

Juana: haven't you wondered that maybe...just maybe I chose to die so I can go be with my son the son you let dieyou chose to save me instead of him now tell me weren't you selfish then

Castiel chuckled and he walked out looking furious

INSERT.....83

.
. .
. .

NARRATE D

He walked in their bedroom and he found her sleeping peacefully on the bed and he brushed his head roughly swallowing hard....he didn't know where to even start with explaining things....his head was all over the place he was keeping it together after the Nomvula saga cause to him it was the least of his problems now he was scared that Mbali's rejection might set him off....he knew he couldn't handle her leaving him his heart was pounding hard against his chest as he went to Kalu's cot and he picked him up he was sleeping and he sat on the chair and sighed looking at his innocent looking face

Ray: why didn't you wait until I was ready to tell her the truth mmmmh.... why can't you listen Saint well let me tell you this you won't survive in this world if you do as you please cause humans will burn both you and Kalu alive if they even find out that he's possessed with you so tread carefully remember what you went through in that church when they found out the man was possessed by you so tread carefully....

Kalu woke up and he yawned looking at his father with his beautiful eyes and Ray found himself smiling looking at his cute son

Ray: I hope you heard me

then Kalu started making baby sounds and Ray smiled wide

Ray: let's hope your mom doesn't leave me because that will kill me my boy I don't think I will survive it

then he sighed and looked over at Mbali and he swallowed hard

Ray: let's go look for your milk and feed you my boy

he got up with Kalu in his arms and he went downstairs and as he was coming down the stairs the intercom rang and Ruslan went to answer it then he sighed and opened the gate for the car then he turned and looked at Ray

Ruslan: it's her grandmother

Ray swallowed hard and he looked back at his son who was busy doing baby sounds and he smiled weakly.... well they waited for her until they heard the doorbell ring and Ruslan opened

Ruslan: Mrs K please do come in

Ma walked in

Ma: Ruslan right?

Ruslan: that's right

Ma: nice to see you again

Ruslan: same here mam

*** he said bowing a bit and she smiled and she looked at Ray who looked like his world is about to come to an end and she sighed and walked closer to him and Kalu***

Ma: is that why you refused for a nanny to help her with him?

Ray swallowed hard and nodded

Ma: well relax my boy.... I won't judge you cause you know what my husband son and grandchildren and great grandchildren have but all I can say is don't give up on her

Ray was surprised by her take on this

Ray: ummm yes Ma

Ma: good cause she can be stubborn I mean she's her father's daughter after all

she said putting her bag down on top of the table

Ma: let me

she said extending her arms to take Kalu and he handed him to her and she smiled looking at him

Ma: they say you have a demon in you mfana ka gogo mmmmh (granny's boy) ask them if they have seen a handsome demon like you mmmmh ask them Nkanyezi ka gogo mmmmh ask them

She said looking at Kalu and he smiled showing his gums with his sapphire eyes sparkling and Ma laughed and Ray smiled tearfully while Ruslan admired Ma's kindness and level of understanding

Ma: did she pump milk for him

Ray: ummm yes it's in the fridge

Ma: ok let me go warm it for him....angithi ulambile wena Nkanyezi ya gogo wakhe...angithi? (I can see you are hungry right granny's star?)

she said the last part looking at the smiling Kalu then she looked at Ray

Ma: tell the driver to bring in my bags and go explain things to your wife

Ray swallowed and nodded then Ma went to the kitchen with Kalu in her arms

Ruslan: I wish I had her as a mother

Ray: me too bros

Ruslan: im sorry about what you found out about your paternity

Ray swallowed and nodded

Ray: Heath...he

Ruslan interrupted him

Ruslan: I know lets hope he doesn't remember what he did cause it will haunt him for life

Ray: yeah

then he brushed his head roughly

Ray: I've never been this scared Ruu...i cant loose her

Ruslan sighed feeling Ray's pain...you didn't even have to ask him how he's taking everything cause all the pain was visible on his face

Ruslan: I know bros but even if she says otherwise but she's not going anywhere....we wont let her go...we will beg her until she understands cause I know how much she means to you

Ray sighed

Ray: thanks for choosing to stay here with her imagine if she was alone

Ruslan: don't thank me bros....we are brothers for life remember

they bro-hugged and went outside to get Ma's bags

.
. .
. .

she woke up and she sat up rubbing her eyes and immediately she thought of her son and she looked besides her and it was empty then her heart started beating fast and she moved to the edge of the bed ready to get off the bed to go check inside his cot

Ray: he's with your grandmother

she got startled and when her eyes landed on Ray everything that happened earlier came flooding in her mind and her chest started visibly moving up and down fast....she got up and went to the door

Ray: its locked....Kalu is fine now sit so we can talk about what happened

she swallowed hard with tears threatening to come out....he was looking down all this time

Mbali: Ruu said he...he was born with it

Ray nodded and tears ran down her cheeks

Mbali: is it because of me....that time I was possessed and saw that snake....is it me?

he raised his head and looked at her and she was mess in fact they were both a mess

Ray: no....please sit and let me explain

she wiped her tears off with the back of her hand and she came and sat on the couch that is in the bedroom next to Ray but not close then he sighed and rubbed his hands together...he then sat up and leaned back on the couch and he brushed his beard

Ray: he has the demon because of me

Mbali: wha...what?

she asked with her heart pounding hard against her chest

Ray: i...i did something stupid years back because of greed and i...i made a deal with the devil he made me rich and in return he owned my soul

Mbali: ooh my God...ooh my God...

she said with her eyes popped out and her right hand on her chest

Ray: I became his toy his stupid errand boy....he made me do bone chilling things and I saw things that might make you question your sanity.... he turned me into a heartless monster...I tried killing myself many times but I always didn't succeed cause he owned my soul so I would only die when he wants me to....i died a million times inside Mbali I was his puppet and there was nothing I could do....i remember I found out about some powerful prophet who also did exorcisms and I didn't waste time I drove there and on my way there I got involved in a terrible accident....i opened my eyes and I found myself in hell and in front of me was standing the devil himself he told me how much he owned my soul and if I even think of betraying him again he will kill all my family members one by one as I watch and then he will bring me to hell with him and personally torture me for eternity....i was so frightened that I begged him to forgive me he said he doesn't give second chances but because im still a valuable asset to him he send me back

he sighed he was looking at his fingers all this time afraid to look at her face.... but he could see her hands that were on top of her thighs shaking

Ray: I remember waking up and the doctors said I was in a coma for three weeks they said they were even thinking of switching off the machines cause all my internal organs were deteriorating fast and shutting down...they called me 'the blessed one' but the truth of the matter was i wasn't blessed I was just lucifer's toy

he swallowed hard getting emotional

Ray: then...then I met Ruslan at some ancient artifacts auction I was send by the devil to buy the Spear of Destiny....the same spear that is believed to have been used to stab Jesus when he was on the cross it is believe to possess immense powers as it was anointed by the real blood of Jesus

he looked at Mbali and her face was covered by tears and her bottom lip was trembling....he looked back down and clenched his jaws feeling emotional

Ray: he came up with a plan to mislead the devil and beat him at his own game he told me the devil is not that smart so he has a plan to help me get my soul back and I had nothing to lose so I agreed...the plan worked and I did have my soul back but everyone knows that the devil never ever keeps to his word he's a sneaky motherfucker and a dishonest bastard so he cursed me with La

Parca the angel of death...he attached him to my soul and cursed all my male children to be born with demons attached to their souls...he said that way I will always be connected to him even if I have my soul back

he swallowed hard and so did Mbali

Mbali: ooh my God...ooh Je.....

she whispered and she cried

Ray: im...Im sorry my flower....i wish I can undo everything but I can't....i should've stayed away from you after I saved you but I couldn't....i tried but I just couldn't....even the day we met I had a feeling that told me to take another route from the one that was taking me straight where I was going the angel of death...he attached him to my soul and cursed all my male children to be born with demons attached to their souls...he said that way I will always be connected to him even if I have my soul back

he swallowed hard and so did Mbali

Mbali: ooh my God...ooh Je.....

she whispered and she cried

Ray: im...Im sorry my flower....i wish I can undo everything but I can't....i should've stayed away from you after I saved you but I couldn't....i tried but I just couldn't....even the day we met I had a feeling that told me to take another route from the one that was taking me straight where I was going even Mat and Diego were confused as to why I was taking that route cause I wasn't familiar with it but I had no answer I just knew I had to take it then we met

he swallowed hard

Ray: i...i have never loved a woman before....i have never been in a relationship before....i didn't even know how to treat a woman right all I did was sleep with different woman and give them money I didn't care about their feelings and I was never loyal or honest with them until I met you....i love you Mbali so please my love don't leave me because of these im begging you....i'll do anything but please don't leave me because of my past mistakes im begging you my flower

*** he said with tears running down his cheeks and she didn't say anything she just cried....after some time she calmed down***

Mbali: Kalu he...he looked possessed....will...will he have a normal life? what if that demon thing possess him when he's at school or when we're at the mall....what if...

he interrupted her

Ray: I'll make sure that doesn't happen....Ruslan is finding ways to make sure our son lives a normal life

she kept quiet

Mbali: who else knows besides Ruu

he sighed

Ray: your family being your brothers father and grandfather found out that time you were possessed
...I had to use La Parca to fight that evil wizard that captured your soul

she swallowed hard

Ray: and my brothers Jabu and Heath found out today during the meeting I went to....and your
grandfather told your grandmother I think today or yesterday im not sure and as for Mateo and Diego
they have known for years now

she shook her head crying then she stopped and frowned looking at Ray

Mbali: I once saw or dreamed of something scary it was wearing your clothes and.....ohh my
God....it...it was....

Ray: baby please

Mbali: it was the demon right?

she asked with a whisper and he nodded swallowing hard and she got up

Ray: my flower please don't....

she interrupted him

Mbali: it...why did it come after me

Ray: it didn't come after you it...I was angry that you were entertaining that boy and I also found out
about what Nomvula did and he just came to warn you...I didn't send him he just.....please my
flower I would never hurt you you are my life Mbali you and our son are my life

**** he said getting up and she shook her head crying***

Mbali: leave Ray

he shook his head with his heart beating fast

Ray: no im not going anywhere and neither are you

Mbali: please leave Ray....i cant do this....i cant im sorry ngicela uhambe... please leave

Ray: please my flower please don't do this....I'll do anything...if it were possible for me I would go
see an exorcist so he can remove La Parca but that would kill me

he begged her and she just cried shaking her head

Mbali: HAMBANDA RAYMOND PLEASE!

he went down on his knees pleading with her

Ray: please Mbali I won't survive it if you leave me.....im begging you don't leave me

they both cried

Mbali: if you love me Ray you will leave now....you would give me some space to digest all this

he got up and wiped his tears and he looked at her

Ray: I love you Mbali and whatever you decide let it not be you leaving me cause my heart won't survive it

he got closer and kissed her forehead and walked to the door and he unlocked it and walked out while Mbali sat on the couch and cried.....when Ray got downstairs Mat and Ruslan got up and when they saw his teary red and swollen eyes they swallowed emotionally

Mat: jefe

Ruslan: bros

Ray: look after them I need some air

he said that and grabbed his car keys on top of the table and he walked to the door

Mat: jefe let me drive you wherever you want to go please

he shook his head and headed out and they sighed brushing their heads

Mat: do you think...

Ruslan: I don't know man....i don't know

.
. .
. .

Ruslan found Mbali in the kitchen drinking pain medication cause she had a pounding headache from all the crying and thinking too much

Ruslan: I hope you ate something first

she shook her head no...she looked horrible her face was red I don't even want to mention her eyes and nose

Ruslan: he loves you Mbali

she didn't say anything

Ruslan: can you believe today he found out that the woman that raised him isn't his biological mother she killed his biological mother and stole him

she looked up at him with her eyes popped out

Ruslan: he found out that Heath Mj and Yvonne aren't his siblings and Jabu isn't his cousin biologically....that the grandparents he loves dearly aren't related to him biologically too....he hated a man Nomvula said is his father for years only to find out today that....that man doesn't even know Nomvula exists...he cried like a small child when he found out I swear ever since I've known him I have never seen him that broken or seen him cry like that

tears ran down Mbali's cheeks with her hand covering her mouth

Ruslan: but even learning the truth about his true paternity he was scared of you leaving him when you learned about him and La Parca and your son....he doesn't even know where his real parents are buried all he cares about now is you not leaving him that's all

he sighed

Ruslan: im not trying to make you feel bad but that guy lives for you Mbali and leaving him will kill him and before you judge him for his past choices just think about what you saw your brother turn into that time you were kidnapped with your sisters in law nieces and nephews

Mbali: wha...what?

Ruslan: every family has its own secrets Mbali including your own but Ray doesn't care he accepted them the way they are cause he loves you....he even let go what your brother's did to him when they found out he was dating you because he loves you so before you make your decision think of your life without him in it

then he walked out leaving Mbali shocked and confused some more....she just sat down on the barstool and she rested her forehead on top of her lower arms that were on top of the counter and she cried

.
. .

he was sitting in a bar drinking while lost in thoughts everything that happened was playing in his head...he was worried about the possibility of Mbali leaving him and on the other hand he was worried about Heath if he will remember what he did and how it affect him....then there's him having to explain what Jabu and Heath saw and on the other hand he was also worried about how his grandparents will take Nomvula's death especially his grandmother....he sighed and gulped down his drink.... then his mind went to Kedi and how she will take it to having him as an elder brother then he also thought of Mj how all this will affect him then he went back to Mbali leaving him and he clenched his jaws then he heard someone clearing their throat and he looked next to him and a beautiful caramel woman was smiling at him

Woman: mind if I join you

he ignored her and he called the barman to refill his drink

Woman: women problems?

she asked raising her eyebrow at him

Ray: can you just go trouble someone else and leave me the fuck alone

he said with an annoyed voice

Woman: relax will you I just came here to release some stress I don't mean to annoy you jeez

Ray: then keep quiet and enjoy your drink in peace and let me enjoy mine in peace too

she sighed

Woman: you do know that a problem half shared is a problem half solved right

he turned and looked at her properly

Ray: I see you dont listen when people say piss off mmmmh

she chuckled

Woman: not really

she said sipping her drink

Ray: what exactly do you want from me?

Woman: haw just to talk.... you know....im a good listener

Ray: I don't want to talk so?

she smiled seductively and Ray shook his head and chuckled

Woman: we can just go book into a hotel and have fun so you will forget about your problems for a few hours

Ray: do you know what I see when I look at you

Woman: what?

she said smiling seductively

Ray: a prostitute that comes to a bar to target vulnerable drunk men

he smile faded

Woman: askies?

she asked with a frown on her face and he chuckled

Ray: I've dealt with sluts like you....i used to train them back in Cuba to seduce men and I must add they joined my agency willingly but yerrr with you I must say you suck at this well your seduction may work on other useless men out there but it doesn't on me

Woman: how dare you call me a prostitute you bastard!

she said looking angry

Ray: well you look like one....yes you are beautiful but you also smell like one

Woman: fuck you you hear me....fuck you msunu

she poured him with her drink and he laughed

Ray: well this dick only fucks my wife bitch so bounce with your fake ass

she clicked her tongue and walked away looking furious and he continued to laughed

Barman: don't tell me you just let a fine woman like that go man...she's been rejecting men who approached her since she got here and she offers you some fresh free pussy and you call her a prostitute

Ray chuckled

Ray: how do you know her pussy is fresh....im sure it's a widely opened cave between her legs

the barman laughed out loud shaking his head

Ray: well my wife is more beautiful than her and she has a body to die for so she's not all that...plus I've fucked whores like her before so she's not all that

the barman laughed

Barman: damn you cruel man

Ray chuckled and took out a pile of hundred Rands

Ray: believe me when I say no pussy in this world is worth me losing my wife

Barman: wow...respect man

he said beating his chest with the side of his fist and Ray chuckled

Ray: see you around man

Barman: you should call an uber man is not good to drink and drive

Ray: nah don't worry I got this

Barman: ok

Ray walked away

.
. .
.

*** well it was in the evening and Mbali was sitting in the kitchen with an untouched plate of food in front of her...she was lost in thoughts...she was just staring into space when she heard someone clear their throat and she snapped out of it and Ray was standing there looking a bit tipsy...he looked horrible too and you couldn't miss the strong smell of alcohol coming from him even from a distance***

Mbali: you drove drunk Ray?

she asked him with a frown on her face and he smiled that at least she still cares about him

Mbali: why are you smiling?

Ray: cause you still care

Mbali: mxm

she looked down on her plate and she moved her food around on her plate with a fork

Ray: im sorry My flower...please don't leave me

he begged and she swallowed hard

Mbali: Ruu told me about the meeting...im sorry I don't know how I would feel or react if I were in your shoes

he just looked at her emotionless cause that was the least of his worries now and she sighed

Mbali: I cant live without you too Ray but im scared....i....

she sighed and he swallowed hard cause he didn't expect this

Mbali: will it hurt me....i mean your demon

Ray: no

it came out as a whisper

Mbali: the voice....the one that called me mommy and it said it won't hurt me and I should ask you about him...was that it.... was that...

Ray: its called Skeletal Saint

Mbali: S...Saint?

he nodded

Ray: yes he's dangerous but he loves you dearly and he would do anything to protect you....he bonded with you when Kalu was still inside your womb so he also sees you as his mother

she swallowed

Ray: he...he likes church and the bible and he's gonna make Kalu a peaceful child he hates violence but when provoked even hell will freeze.... he also like reading so we gonna have a genius as a son and we all gonna start going to church soon when he's off age

she sighed

Mbali: all this is too much Ray

he walked to her

Ray: I know my flower but he's our handsome boy

she sighed

Mbali: I know....

she sighed again

Mbali: i...I still love him and i still love you.....why am I not scared of both of you....why do I still see him as my Kalu and not some demon child.....why do I also see you as my Ray and not as some scary monster

he turned her and cupped her face and tears ran down her cheeks and he kissed her lips then he looked deep into her teary eyes not believe that she wasn't leaving him

Ray: I love you Mbali....i live for you my love....I've had La Parca before I even met you so nothing changes between us my love....im still the same old Ray and our son well beside having Saint inside of him he also gonna be an awesome child and believe me when I say he's gonna get along with your grandmother because he's gonna love the bible church and reading

she sighed and he wiped her tears and perked her lips

Ray: we got this my flower believe me when I say we do

she nodded slowly then she pushed him off her slowly

Mbali: you stink go and shower

he smiled wide

Ray: yes mam

then she frowned

Mbali: why is your shirt wet?

Ray: some slut poured me with her drink in a bar cause she was busy making moves on me and I called her a prostitute and told her to fuck off

she smiled a bit shaking her head and his heart jumped with joy

Mbali: just go and bath so you can eat.... then we need to talk about everything

he nodded and kissed her forehead

Ray: I love you my flower

she sighed

Mbali: I love you too

he smiled wide

Ray: say it again

Mbali: I love you too now go and shower Ray you really stink of alcohol man

he laughed and walked to the door

Ray: im coming back ok

she sighed and nodded and she went to warm her food while Ray went upstairs still not believing that things turned out this way....he knew he needed to thank Ruslan for his talk with her cause it helped big time

.
. .
.

****AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION****

Castiel walked inside their bedroom after an hour of calming himself down...he felt bad for talking to his wife like that so he needed to apologize because every second with her now is valuable to him cause any time is tea time for her if you catch my drift....anyway he walked to her and he sat on the chair that is next to the bed and looked down sighing....she looked like she was sleeping

Castiel: im sorry my love...i didn't mean to lash out like that...i just...

*** he held her hand and he felt that something was wrong and he got up***

Castiel: Juana...my love?

he said brushing her lower arm and he started breathing heavily when she didn't respond and he didn't feel any pulse on her

Castiel: JUANA...BABY....PLEASE DON'T PLAY LIKE THIS

he said concentrating trying to hear her heartbeat by putting his hand on her chest and he didn't feel anything

Castiel: no no no...Juana please don't do this to me im begging you....im sorry I was hard baby I swear I won't let them kill those babies I swear so please wake up baby please wake

he turned her face and she had her eyes closed as if she was sleeping but she was gone

Castiel: baby wake up please....you can't leave like this....we still need to make up....im not ready baby...please wake up

he said shaking her but she was gone...he felt her pulse again and there was no pulse

Castiel: NOOOOOO

he screamed out loud then he started throwing things to the wall like an angry beast screaming loud....by the time he stopped the whole bedroom was in shambles....the only thing that was still in its place and unmoved was the bed Juana's body was laying on

Castiel: baby please wake up....im sorry for shouting I promise I won't have those kids killed I'll even make sure her death is not painful when my baby starts hurting her from the inside so please wake up....wake up Juana....you can't do this to me

he said crying this time but he knew she was gone deep down he knew she was gone....he begged her to wake up until he gave up and he sat down on the floor and wept like a baby

84

INSERT.....84

.
. .
.

NARRATED

Heath: you ready?

he asked Naledi his wife it was a few days after Nomvula's death and they were parking outside Kitso's home ready to go in. They brought Lesedi here to be introduced to her father's ancestors....They communicated with Kitso over the phone few days back and he was happy that finally he's going to have a relationship with his daughter and speaking about him well he can now talk but he's still paralyzed from waist down but he wasn't giving up as he was also seeing a physician and he was hopeful that one day he will walk again....Well he still doesn't remember what happened to him but he was glad he was alive and also happy that Heath and Naledi finally gave him a second chance of having a relationship with his daughter*

Naledi: yeah let's get this over and done with

Heath nodded and he kissed the back of her hand

Heath: I love you ok

she smiled at him

Naledi: I love you too baby

Well they got out of the car and Heath was holding Ike while Omphile was holding Lesedi's hand and Naledi was holding Ike's baby bag and they walked inside.....they knocked on the door and Kitso's mother opened the door and she gasped when her eyes landed on Lesedi*

Mma-Kitso: ooh modimo wa khotso (ooh God of peace)...ooh Jehovah

she said crying and Heath rolled his eyes while Naledi looked down....anyway Kitso's sister came and told them to come in and they sat down and greeted everyone as for Kitso he was also in the living room on his wheelchair facing down with tears streaming down his face

Mma-Kitso: ooh setlogolo saka (ooh my granddaughter)...Kitso how could you abandon your photocopy like that....what did that evil girl feed you mara that made you do such a cruel thing

she said still crying then she got up and when down on her knees

Mma-Kitso: Naledi ngwanaaka (my child) please forgive us forgive me....i shouldn't have supported him when he refused to take responsibility of Lesedi as a parent I should have reached out to you and I should've advised him well but...but I let the devil use me ngwanaaka please forgive me....forgive us Naledi as we have wronged you temper justice with mercy my daughter and find it in your heart to forgive us

she pleaded crying..... and Naledi was now crying too and that pissed Heath off cause he doesn't want to see his Obi m crying except for tears of joy....Anyway Naledi got up and she help Mma-Kitso up

Naledi: mama I have long forgiven you and I hold no grudge the fact that you regret your actions and you are asking for forgiveness makes all the anger resentment and hurt I was harboring in my heart to melt away.... and never kneel for me mama you should only kneel for God or keng (what) you want God to punish me

she said the last part smiling at her and mma Kitso hugged her crying....Heath instantly felt proud to have Naledi as his wife and right now he wished he could shout for everyone to hear that she's his he was really proud of her and her forgiving heart

Mma-Kitso: ooh Modimo waka(my God) continue to bless this kind hearted child may she never lack anything in life and may her marriage blossom beautifully and let no evil come between her and her husband

then she broke the hug and wiped Naledi's tears off and she helped her sit down and Heath kissed her cheek and whispered that he loves her and mma Kitso also wiped her own off and she sat down then Kitso's uncle cleared his throat

Uncle: Naledi thank you and your husband for forgiving my nephew and for allowing Lesedi to know his father's side and to be introduced to her ancestors we know after what my nephew put you through it wasn't easy to just forgive and forget so thank you my daughter for having the kind of heart you have...a forgiving heart

then he looked at Heath

Uncle: ntate thank you for allowing this to happen cause Kitso told us you have been there for Lesedi even before you married Naledi....men like you are rare ntate and we say thank you for taking care of her and for showing her the love a father should show to her daughter

Heath nodded clearing his throat

Kitso: im...im sorry Naledi im sorry for every bad thing I did to you i...I lost a rare gem while chasing after rusted glitter

Heath clenched his jaws getting angry and Naledi squeezed his hand cause she knows how jealous her husband can be

Kitso: and Heath thank you for.... taking care of Lesedi when I failed to accept her and also rejected her and for giving Naledi the love she deserves

Heath just looked at Kitso with a blank face

Kitso: im...im also sorry for kid....for kidnapping Naledi that time

Mma-Kitso: heh?

Uncle: you did what?

Heath: yeah your son kidnapped my wife when she was still pregnant with my sons and injected her with some sleeping drug

he said with a pissed off look on his face

Mma-Kitso: ooh Jeovah

she said crying

Kitso's sister: Jesus bathong Kitso!

she said holding her chest

Naledi: can we not talk about that in front of my daughter Omphile she's old enough to understand sensitive things so please

she said holding Omphile's hand

Uncle: KITSO KENG WA GAFA BAOLOILE HEH? NE O TSENE KENG? (Kitso are you crazy....are you bewitched heh? what came over you?)

he shouted at Kitso

Kitso: im...im sorry malome

the uncle looked at Kitso's mother

Uncle: I warned you Mmathoto....i warned you about spoiling this boy....i warned you about always ignoring his mistakes....i warned you about letting Tsheko turn this boy into his own version....you always said it's his way of bonding with him look now he's on a wheelchair and he rejected his own photocopy for a useless abortion queen and now Tsheko is dead leaving you with mathata (problems)

*** he said looking angry and Naledi got up and she pulled Omphile up and they walked out***

Lesedi: SESI MPHILE!

she said wanting to cry and Omphile walked back in and picked her up and they walked out

Omphile: mama did he...he kidnap you like he said he did

Naledi sighed and she nodded

Naledi: but at least he didn't hurt me he just wanted to talk about Lesedi and let's say he went about it the wrong way

Omphile: so will he take Lesedi away

Naledi quickly cupped her face

Naledi: that will never happen baby....do you think your father will let him? and plus I have joined self-defense classes so nka mo thuba dinko ka feishi nna (so I will break his nose with a fist)

Omphile laughed and Naledi joined her and so did Lesedi

.

.

****INSIDE THE HOUSE****

Kitso: im sorry man....i just realized what I lost and I let jealousy and regret take over....i sorry for putting your child's life in danger im sorry man

Heath just looked at Kitso with an angry facial expression but then he calmed himself down cause this wasn't about him and the hate he has for Kitso but it was for his baby girl Lesedi

Heath: it's all good the truth is I will forever despise you for what you put me and my wife through but im willing to let bygones be bygones for Lesedi's sake

Mma-Kitso: thank you my son...thank you

she said wiping her tears off...they then asked to see Lesedi and Naledi and the girls walked in and they were all fussing over Lesedi who was glued to Omphile and when she finally let Kitso to hold her he cried not believing that he was actually holding her in his arms but that feeling didn't last long as she went back to her sesi Mphile

Naledi: ummm there's another thing.....well Lesedi is using my husband's surname and my husband also adopted her legally so you may have a relationship with her but she can never use your last name....i will never disrespect my husband like that and plus he has every right to her as I do and she's his little girl

the room went quiet

Mma-Kitso: how can you say that.... she's our granddaughter she's a....

Kitso interrupted her

Kitso: don't start something you may not finish ma

*** he said with a firm tone then he looked at Naledi***

Kitso: its ok and I understand fully as long as I have a relationship with her then im good

Naledi nodded while Kitso's mother frowned looking at Kitso and the uncle shook his head while Heath was looking at Kitso's mother with a pissed off look on his face

Uncle: you see wena Mmathoto o two-faced and im glad Kitso has grown a solid backbone and he can think for himself and make right decisions all on his own now....you have the guts to want to challenge Naledi and her husband even after they did you and your son a favour by allowing your son to have a relationship with Lesedi you were busy crying and asking for forgiveness and o no changer nou and o ntsha your true colors mxm (you just change now showing your true colors mxm)

then he turned to Kitso

Uncle: im happy about your new attitude motlogolo (nephew) and im proud of you.... from now on put your daughter first in everything you do and respect Naledi and her husband and their marriage....never let anyone miss lead you ever again motlogolo o inaganele(think for yourself) and if you are not sure about your decision of how you handled things or about to handle them then pray about it and ask God for guidance.....you are a father Kitso and just because you are on a wheelchair it doesn't mean o stlaela or domkop (you are a fool or stupid) you are a father and now start acting like one and o tlogele go nna mama's boy (and stop being a mamas boy)...nkebe o se mama's boy(if you weren't a mama's boy) you wouldn't be in this predicament....inaganele Kitso and o tlogele go tlogela mmagao a go naganele.... wankutlwa? (think for yourself and stop letting your mother to make decisions for you....you hear me?)

Kitso: eeh Malome

Mma-Kitso: o nyako reng Moketemo pele ga baeng o no distlhompholla so (what are you trying to say Mokete....in front of visitors you just disrespect me like this)

Uncle Mokete got up and looked at Heath

Mokete: ntate lets go introduce her to the ancestors im sure you have places to be

he said ignoring his sister and they all got up and Kitso's sister pushed Kitso out of the house

.
. .

*** they got out of the car and Naledi breathed out loud and Heath perked her lips***

Omphile: ewww

Heath: can you just leave my wife and I alone please

Naledi and Omphile laughed

Lesedi: dadi kish me too (daddy kiss me too)

she said pouting her lips and Heath laughed and he perked her lips and she laughed clapping her hands

Lesedi: sesi Mphile kish me (sister Mphile kiss me)

Omphile kissed her cheek

Omphile: im not gonna kiss your lips I don't know where they have been... yho

Naledi laughed and Heath frowned

Heath: mxm a go slap that your mouth jare....busy cho cho cho cho (busy making hand gestures of someone talking)....what do you know about where lips have been Omphile I na-esusu onu umu okorobia?(Omphile are you kissing boys?)

Omphile hid behind Naledi and Naledi laughed

Naledi: abeg leave my daughter alone Heath

Omphile: tell him mommy

Heath: mxm m ga-emeso gi mgbe e mesiri (I'll deal with you later)

he said pointing at her

Omphile: ma gini ka m mere? (but what did I do dad?)

she said pouting

Heath: I ga-ama ihe I mere (you'll know what you did)

Naledi: can you just stop please....for your info I do have the talk with her and she knows what's at stake if she entertains boys and like really baby do you think she would even think about dating knowing how her dad and uncles are?

*** well she did once confide in Naledi that some guy kissed her at school and Naledi had the 'talk' with her and she promised she would concentrate on her books and not on boys and Naledi promised she won't tell Heath about what happened and she intends on keeping the promise cause she knows how Heath is the next thing he will call Jabu and Ray and they will go and threaten the poor boy***

Heath: then how does she know about "where your lips have been"

Naledi: bathong Heath she watches movies and those teen series.....don't act as if you never learned how to hold a gun the gangster way and doing spinning kicks tsa bo van damme le drunken master tsa bo Jackie china by watching their movies

Omphile held her laughter looking at Heath and deep down she was glad and happy that Naledi was her mother she also felt happy being her daughter especially now that she's having her back like this

Heath: but still....

she interrupted him

Naledi: no my love please trust your princess you raised her well and she knows how to deal with situations and she also knows im there for her always.....i love how protective you are to your girls baby and that's one of the reasons im madly in love with you and Phile also knows her dad would move mountains for her so trust in her baby

he sighed

Naledi: and you two won't argue here imagine nje outside Mamiki's place....hell no

Heath: fine im sorry

Naledi: good now kiss and make up already so we can get this over and done with

Omphile and her dad hugged tightly and he kissed her forehead

Heath: im sorry baby im just being protective that's all

Omphile: I know daddy but like mom said you raised me well so please trust me

he kissed her forehead again

Heath: ok baby I'll make it up to you ok

she smiled and nodded

Omphile: an added hundred bucks on my allowance will do

Heath let her go

Heath: mxm thaaa..... shut up my friend

***they all laughed.....Meanwhile Mamiki was watching them by peeping on her

window.....she couldn't believe how beautiful Naledi looked and how grown Lesedi is and not to mention their big car and how handsome and well build her husband is....she sighed and stepped back and she went to sit next to her friend***

Friend: who were you looking at?

Mamiki: Na...Naledi and her family

the friend frowned

Friend: which Naledi?

Mamiki: eish my daughter man Sonto

Sonto: heh? Naledi is here

she quickly got up and went to peep on the window too and she saw them walking in and she gasped cause they looked like one of those rich people we see on tv....there was a knock and she quickly went to open the door

Mamiki: mxm wa phapha wena Sonto nx (you are too forward Sonto nx)

Sonto: ooh my gosh Naledi I can't believe this is you....you look good....ooh Modimo

waka....come in come in bathong

she made way for them and they walked in and when Naledi's eyes met Mamiki's Mamiki looked down....they sat down and exchanged greetings

Sonto: tjo bathong Naledi you look good bathong I swear its like you bath with milk

Naledi faked a laugh while Heath kept a straight face

Mamiki: can you excuse us Sonto I'll come to your house later

Sonto: o sa batlo mbora Miki assomblief (don't bore me Miki please)

Mamiki: Sonto man!

she said with a firm tone

Sonto: mxm wa bora (you are a bore)

she said getting up

Sonto: it was nice seeing you again lekgowa la Miki (Miki's white child)

Naledi faked a smile and Sonto walked to the door

Sonto: and otle ko na later (and you better come to my house later)

she said to Mamiki

Mamiki: yah I will shap

then Sonto walked out...then silence filled the room

Mamiki: you look good

she said looking at Naledi and Naledi just looked at her

Naledi: this is my husband Heath Owoh-Masden and my daughter Omphile

Mamiki frowned a bit

Mamiki: so o godisa another woman's child?

she said frowning some more and Heath frowned too a deadly frown

Heath: so?

Mamiki: yho I was just asking

Heath: just keep your stupid questions to yourself

Naledi: love mh mh

she stopped him then she looked at Mamiki

Naledi: point of correction Ma...mi...ki.... Omphile is my daughter legally and Lesedi is his daughter legally and I don't appreciate you saying such rubbish in front of my daughter

Mamiki: you will not come to my house and sp....

Naledi interrupted her

Naledi: your house? ooh please this is koko's house.....wena where is your big house ko Nkwe estate and your fancy cars....o sa batlo mbora Mamiki please (don't bore me Mamiki)

Heath: Obi m

he indicated that she should calm down and she did

Naledi: well I came here to tell you gore I forgive you for everything bad thing you did and said to me..... and don't get me wrong I don't want you to start playing mother to me im just forgiving you for me and my family and to rid of all the pain hurt and anger I have been harboring in my heart all these past years

Mamiki chuckled

Mamiki: is that all?

she said with an attitude and Heath chuckled shaking his head

Naledi: no and I wish you nothing but the best in life and I hope life goes on more than it has now (doesn't mess you up more than it already has)

then she got up and looked at Heath

Naledi: let's go baby this woman is not worth it and she will never change and I don't have space in my life for such people

Mamiki: o nale sebetengwanyana ke wena o bolela lena so Naledi...chelete ke yona e gofang makoko so (you have the nerve little girl is this how you talk to me Naledi...is it money that is giving you this much confidence)

Naledi: no I just found my voice Mamiki and im no longer a push over and its all thanks to my lovely husband....so wena nna le bopelo mpe ba gao while (stay with your evil heart while) I live it up and live happily with my husband kids and my father....mmmh yes you heard right I said my father

Mamiki: voets....

Heath interrupted her

Heath: I dare you to insult her in front of me....i dare you woman!

he warned her looking deadly and she kept quiet looking angry

Mamiki: get out of my house!

Naledi: with pleasure! just make sure you repent before you die cause di heleng ke mo o yang (you are going to hell)

then she walked out and Omphile got up and picked Lesedi up and she clicked her tongue looking at Mamiki and she went after her mother and Heath also got up and he chuckled

Heath: I wonder why you are still alive since your dead witch of a mother is gone or what... you still need to care for her tikeloshis that's why you are still alive?

Mamiki: o reng wena? (what did you just say?)

she said getting up

Heath: your death is gonna be worse than that of your mother and the worst part is you won't have anyone to care for you you will rot and die in this house well unless your tikeloshis will be the ones to care for you....instead of apologizing and acknowledging your mistakes you insult my wife and for that thunder is gonna fire your useless self and that your rotten mouth

***then he walked out leaving Mamiki fuming with anger....15 minutes after they left she started having chest pains from all the anger she was feeling inside....she was busy pacing up and down thinking of ways to deal with Naledi and her husband and a thought of bewitching them filled her mind then a powerful sangoma's name popped in her head and she smiled an evil

smile and as she was walking to take her phone on top of the table that's when she felt a sharp pain on her chest and she bend down holding her chest***

Mamiki: ahhhhh

***the sharp pain got worse and she fell on the floor still holding her chest tight with her right hand and she immediately felt her right hand side tensing and becoming stiff....she tried to fight through the pain to reach her phone but she couldn't move her right hand from her chest it was as if it was glued to her chest and it was numb....she tried to scream out for help but she also couldn't move her lips it was as if her mouth was frozen and it was also numb.....

She laid there with tears gushing out unable to move or to call out for help..... few hours later Sonto decided to come to Mamiki's house cause she could see she wasn't coming she wanted to know what Naledi left for her cause she seemed like she was rolling in moola....she knocked on the door and Mamiki opened her eyes and she tried to talk but only moaning sounds came out....he mouth was slightly opened and frozen she couldn't close it or even move her jaws....Sonto then decided to let herself in and what she found shocked her....she screamed with her hands on top of her head then she ran to Mamiki busy asking her what's wrong and who did this to her but when she saw that she couldn't talk or move she took out her phone and called an ambulance cause it was clear that a stroke just hit Mamiki...***

.
. .

Heath and his family got home and Jabu called his phone

Heath: bros

***he whispered taking the baby monitor with him and slowly walking out so he doesn't wake a sleeping Ike ***

Jabu: heban....why are you whispering nou

Heath chuckled

Heath: I didn't wanna wake Ike up

Jabu: oho ok....bona dai moerskond le ntwana ya gae ba ko warehouse and ke ya daar nou (look that bastard and his son are at the warehouse and im on my way there now)

Heath: ok I'll meet you there

Jabu: shap

***they ended the call and Heath went to the kitchen and told Naledi he's meeting up with Jabu and he'll be back within three hours tops and she didn't have a problem....they kissed and he walked out.... Well that day after Jabu went after Heath he found him crouching down with a hand on his head groaning in pain and when he called his name he answered and told him he has a pounding headache so Jabu just went back inside and asked for a car and baba gave him his car keys....he went back and took Heath to the car and drove out....he took him to his workshop and when his headache died down and Heath asked him what happened he was stunned it was clear to him that he didn't remember what he did and he contemplated on whether to tell him the truth or not anyway he decided to tell him the truth cause they don't keep secrets from each other no matter how bad they are.....

Anyway he told him the truth and Heath couldn't believe it....he tried to remember what he did and he just couldn't remember anything about the shooting even the guilt wasn't there but he did remember Nomvula's confession. Well Jabu gave him the pep talk and made sure he doesn't slip into depression or have guilt eat him up he made him realize that the new personality that took over is to be blamed and not him. He made him realize that the fact that the new personality doesn't want him to remember what happened is reason enough that he shouldn't blame himself....well it ate him up until Ray came to see him and they talked like brothers and he also made him realize exactly what Jabu made him realize....he also promised him that the truth about his paternity doesn't change anything between them but it just made their bond stronger and they also spoke about what they saw and he explained everything to them and let them digest what he told them.... well two days later Nomvula's burned body was found in a badly burned car.... and in the boot there were traces of a burned rope and a burned glass bottle that had petrol inside and a bottle of brandy on the front passenger side....the police were still investigating but the officers handling the case are on the Khumalo payroll so ya'll know what that means ***

Heath: have you gone inside

Jabu shook his head and he threw the cigarette bud on the ground and stepped on it

Jabu: I was waiting for you

Heath: ok so o ready?

Jabu: like I've never been ready before

Heath chuckled and they went inside and found the two men tied to chairs and his mind went to his mother Nomvula when she was tied to a chair and he sighed and shook his head shaking off that picture in his mind

Jabu: o grand? (are you ok?)

Heath sighed

Heath: yeah I just thought of Nomvula

Jabu's eyes popped out

Jabu: wait...you remember?

Heath chuckled

Heath: no man I don't remember and I still don't feel any form of guilt which is strange....it's like I didn't do it at all

Jabu sighed with relief

Jabu: well like big Ray and I said....you didn't do it but...what's his name....Mad Dog did and from what you told us about him you will never remember since he's a soldier that suffers from PTSD....well im glad he's not a psycho like Observer and Caesar I mean the dude doesn't even talk man he does what he needs to do and walk away then he goes back to his hiding place....ka mo npanywa dai achuze ke ntja yaka dai mpya ya letlhanya (I like that dude he's my guy that Mad Dog)

Heath laughed

Heath: can we just deal with this stupid Pastor before your mpya ya letlhanya (Mad Dog) comes out to hang out with you

Jabu: e re wa dlala Mshikaro (say you are playing)

Heath laughed

Heath: ka dlala now can we deal with these two

Jabu: mxm fosek le marete

Heath laughed

Heath: you too le marete

Jabu showed him the middle finger and they went closer to the two guys with Heath laughing....Well Jabu took off the dark brown sack that was covering their faces and their eyes popped out when they saw him

Pastor: you....i should have known....i knew gore you are a good for nothing thug!

Jabu chuckled

Jabu: wow at least a ke stabane....a ke je marago a banna ba bangwe nna ke ja kuku ya Amo le marago a gae fela (at least im not gay....i don't fuck other men's asses I only fuck Amo's pussy and ass only)

Heath laughed while Modise was just scared to his pants cause he remembered that time Jabu pulled out a gun on him and now he wondered if he will kill himhe thought of his wife and children and he swallowed hard looking scared...but then what Jabu said clicked in his mind

Modise: wa...wareng? (what did you say)

Pastor: wena shut up!

he said to Modise and Jabu slapped the Pastor hard on his face and the Pastor chuckled

Pastor: well the bible says when...

****Heath interrupted him****

Heath: ooh shut up or your son wife and congregation will know about your double life

the pastor's eyes popped out cause he knew what they were talking about

Modise: his...his double life?

Heath: yeah...you father likes some ass man

then he laughed

Modise: huh?

*** he asked confused***

Heath: he's gay or bisexual one of the two...ask him and he will confirm which one is it

***Modise frowned looking at his father and his father swallowed hard and looked away and

Modise's eyes popped out***

Modise: pa?

Pastor: what do you want tell me and I'll do it

he said ignoring his son and Jabu smiled

Jabu: to accept Amo back home and to also accept my lobola for her

The Pastor swallowed hard

Pastor: consider it done!

Modise: ooh my God...ooh my God....ooh my God

he said looking at his father with a shocked look on his face

Jabu: but before we talk about dates and what nots I need you to see the kind of father you have

Pastor: wait I said...

Jabu played the video for Modise and his father and the Pastor quickly closed his eyes with tears running down his cheeks and Modise quickly turned his head and he vomited on the floor when he saw his father fucking another man from behind while moaning out loud

Heath: sies man

he said with a disgusted look on his face

Jabu: and it was taken three weeks ago at some hotel he meets his other male sex partner

then he chuckled angrily looking at Amo's father

Jabu: wa bona wena....your likes are the ones that make "thugs" like us to think twice before we decide to repent....you are busy judging and looking down on other people ka mo thoko le busy

le ja marago a banna ba bangwe and kamo le nyetse basadi....you are ruining things for other good man of God out there who are true Pastors....who teach or preach the true gospel of God...now how are we gonna differentiate the real ones from the fake one when you are busy pretending this good in front of us

Heath: well we got him so he's not that good of a pretender bro

Jabu: nx wa bona wena o no nyaka fela re no go bapola mo sefapanong like Jesu once...o no swela di kano tsa other fake pastors out there....o tletse ka masepa and on top of that you called Amo a whore while wena o le the biggest sefebe sa go jewa marago jou muur.... o masepa a motho wena nkare nkago tlhaba ka mpama gape jou fokon bleksem.... ekare Jesu a kao betha ka legadima wa no swa mpya ke wena.....you are just a waste of sperm nx I wonder why your parents ba sa berekisa a condom wa no felella mo yona and jou thaima a yo e latlhela ko toilet ya mokoti and ba re savela masepa a.... (we should just put you on a cross like they did with Jesus....so you die for the sins of all the fake Pastors out there....you are full of shit and on top of that you called Amo a whore while you are the one that's a whore that is being fucked on the ass you cunt....you are a shitty person I feel like slapping you again you fucken bastard....i wish Jesus can strike you with a lightning and you die you stupid dog....you are just a waste of sperm nx I wonder why your parents didn't use a condom so you end up inside it and your father end up throwing it inside a pit toilet to save us this shit)

he said pointing at him

Jabu: im sure I would've met Amo from different parents eseng megwete ya go tshwana le wena and jou vrou nx (not assholes like you and your wife)

Heath was busy laughing the whole time cause he knew once Jabu started swearing when he's angry he won't stop*

85 { part 1 }

INSERT.....85.... {PART 1}

.

.

.

NARRATED

****TWO DAYS LATER****

***Mr. Owoh-Masden his second wife and Mj arrived in the morning while Yvonne was gonna arrive the following day...well when they arrived they went straight to Atteridgeville (to gogo and mkhulu's house) and Heath's father agreed for Nomvula to be buried here after gogo and mkhulu pleaded with him to let them bury her.... The Vilakazi's were glad that the Owoh-Masden's understand their plea and as for Mj he cried so much inside gogo's arms and she kept on telling him to let it all out and he did shame. As for heath he couldn't even look at Mj or his father he felt bad cause he's the cause of their heart break and tears even though he still can't remember anything or feel any sort of guilt concerning her death and that killed him where else for Jabu and Ray it was a blessing in disguise.....

Anyway now they are at Ray's house and Patience is with Mbali and Ma while the guys are inside Ray's study***

Mj-senior: what really happened boys...the police said it looks like she was drunk and the things found inside the car indicate she wanted to commit suicide and another theory they are giving me is that maybe she wanted to burn herself inside that car

Heath was looking down all the time with his jaws clenched

Ray: well a lot has happened dad that you and Mj should know about

they looked at him

Mj: what happened brother Ray

Mj-senior: im listening son

Ray sighed and he brushed his beard

Ray: ummm Mbali's grandfather kidnapped Nomvula and he invited us to the meeting

Mj: WHAT?

he said getting up and Ray frowned at him

Ray: sit!....first of all if you want us to include you in our meetings you'll have to think before you act....im not even done talking and you're here acting like a mad man

he said looking at Mj with an annoyed look and Mj swallowed and he slowly sat down

Mj: but...but you just said mom was kidnapped

Ray: yes and the same mom you were ready to go crazy for almost killed Naledi and your nephews so stop acting like you are a mama's boy cause we all know you are not

Mj looked down

Ray: as I was saying....Killer said I looked like his late friend and since he was dreaming of him begging him to look for his son since he can't find him in the land of the dead he thought of me....he said his gut feeling told him I might be the long lost son

Mr-Masden sighed and he brushed his bold head a bit

Mj-senior: so his friend was your father....meaning Rain lied that you father was some Portuguese man

Ray nodded and Mr-Masden shook his head not believing what he was hearing

Mj: so did he kill mom

he asked with an angry tone and Jabu hit him on the back of his head

Jabu: fosek san...why o le so Mj why don't you let big Ray finish talking before o pepereza masepa (you start talking shit)

Mj: but im just asking

Jabu: then why o botsisa o kwatile(then why do you ask looking angry)

Mj kept quiet

Jabu: hey ova since o nale molomo o motelle (hey talk since you think you know it all) now answer me

Mj: ok fine im sorry brother Ray

he said with a low tone and Ray just shook his head*

Jabu: wa phapha wena san mxm (you are too forward boy)

***he said to Mj ***

Ray: anyway we went there and Killer forced Nomvula to confess cause he said he once did a DNA test of me and that of his late friend's daughter and it came out positive

Mr-Masden just continued to shake his head looking down

Ray: then Nomvula confessed....

he sighed

Ray: she said she stole me from some woman in the clinic where she also gave birth to her twins

Mj-senior: WHAT?

Mj: wait what?

Ray: yeah she said she suffocated her baby boy with a pillow and she also suffocated my....my biological mother with the pillow too and since she was weak she died and then she switched me with her dead son

Mj just got up with his hands on top of his head while Mr. Masden just closed his eyes while shaking his head

Ray: he did all that because the twins she gave birth to had albinism then we know how she killed the other twin and then she went about her life as if she didn't just commit triple murders in one day

Mj: ooh God...ooh God

he said pacing up and down

Heath: i...i should...

*** he said looking down ready to spill the beans cause even though he doesn't remember shooting Nomvula but the truth of the matter is he did even though technically Mad Dog is the one that did that but he's the one that created him***

Ray: well Heath slapped her and told her she's dead to him

He interrupted Heath

Ray: then we let her go cause no matter how much I hate her but killing her was gonna hurt a lot of people...you dad Mj gogo and Mkhulu along with her siblings so as hard as it was we let her go but we told her she's dead to us and you and Mj would know about her evil deeds

Heath raised his head to look at Ray with red eyes and an emotional look on his face and Jabu cleared his throat

Jabu: I was also gonna tell Gogo and mkhulu about what she did so gogo's dreams could stop tormenting her then we got a call about a body burned inside a car and the car belonged to her

Mj sat down and he buried his face in his hands and he sobbed painfully while Mr. Masden just swallowed a painful lump that was stuck on his throat and silence filled the room only Mj's sobbed were heard and Jabu squeezed his shoulder

Mj-senior: i...I can't believe she did that

Jabu: you see uncle....if someone told me about what she did and I didn't hear it myself I wouldn't believe them....i sat there and saw Big Ray cry for the first time....i was just astonished cause she didn't even show any remorse to killing her twins and she just said big Ray's mother was just some damage control

Ray swallowed hard getting angry and he got up and went to stand next to the window with his hands in his pockets

Jabu: Big Ray o grand? (are you ok?)

Ray cleared his throat

Ray: yeah

Mj: how...how could mom do such and evil act....dad are you even sure she's our biological mother
he asked his father with tears all over his face

Mj-senior: I was there when she gave birth to you Ezeh and Yvonne so yah she's your biological mother Mj

Mj: then why would God allow such an evil woman to give birth to angels like us

*** he said wiping his tears off and Jabu laughed and Heath chuckled while Ray just smiled shaking his head***

Jabu: wena wa sika stru Mj...imagine fela are ke an angel (you are crazy Mj im telling you...imagine him saying he's an angel)

he said laughing

Ray: well Mj like I told Ezeh and Jabu....finding out that Nomvula isn't my biological mother doesn't change anything or shake our brotherly love and relationship instead it just made our bond stronger

Mj swallowed hard and he got up and he went to hug Ray

Mj: I know bros and im glad..... so is your sister hot

Ray: mxm

he pushed him away and everyone laughed

Heath: trust Mj to say that

he said shaking his head

Mj: well big Ray is she?

Ray: she's married to Mbalì's brother

Mj: ah ah ah Jesus....so ya'll married each other's sisters...damn....so how do you feel about him shagging your sister bros

they laughed and Ray showed Mj a fist smiling

Ray: well im also shagging his sister so....

they laughed again

Mj-senior: so have you met her...your sister?

Ray shook his head

Ray: lets bury Nomvula first then everything else will follow

Mr- Masden nodded then he asked himself why Ray isn't angry like he's supposed to why he still wants to help bury an evil woman that killed his biological mother and stole him....he had so many why's in his head and he sighed loudly

Ray: dad you raised me well and I know a parent's love through you and im only helping with her burial because of you and my brothers and Yvonne but that doesn't mean im over what she did....in fact I hate her....i hate her for what she did....she didn't have to kill them she should've just stole me and left the twins and my biological mother alone

Mr. Masden swallowed hard looking down

Jabu: you know every time I see Naledi Nomvula's words of how she killed the twins ring in my head...I just can't believe im related to such an evil woman

Heath: she's evil...she nearly killed my wife and sons that time and....and now I have to live with the fact that i....

Jabu stopped him

Jabu: Mshikaro sae chuna dai dang (don't do that)

Heath: I hate her Jabu....look what she made me do....look at the pain she's causing us.....did you see gogo and how weak she is....Nomvula is evil and I hope she burns in hell!

Mj-senior: Ezeh...

Heath: Yvonne never came home to visit because of her....she almost killed my pregnant wife and now we just found out she killed our siblings and an innocent woman in cold blood...I hate her I fucken hate her in fact I should've stabbed her while looking straight into her evil eyes until she took her last breath....i should've stabbed her on her throat and twisted it unt....

he said with an angry voice with his hands shaking

Ray: HEATH!

He warned him and a creepy smile plastered on Heath's face and Jabu got up moving away from him

Jabu: Mshikaro?

Heath: im back....

then he laughed and Mj and his father looked at Heath with their eyes popped out

Jabu: shit...Big Ray

Ray: let me guess Observer

Observer: yeah...aren't you happy to see me big Ray?

***Ray rushed to Heath and he grabbed him by his neck and he tightened his grip ***

Mj-senior: AKUNNA WHAT ARE YOU DOING!

Mj: bro...brother Ray stop!

Ray: what did I say to you Observer....didn't I warn you to know your fucken place....didn't I fucken warn you

Mj looked at them with a scared look on his face and he looked from Jabu to Ray and Heath confused

Observer: let go of me you bastard

Ray: you wanna test me boy....you wanna see what im capable of huh....im sure you saw what happened in that meeting so dont fuck with me boy I'll fucken take you to hell just for a day and turn you to another Mad Dog so go back to whatever hole you crawled out of and stay there!

Observer: fu...fuck you!

he said struggling to breathe properly

Ray: fuck you too now fuck off or you want me to go La Parca on you?

Observer: mxm you are no fun

then Heath's facial expression changed and his eyes popped out as he held Ray's arm

Heath: bi...big Ray

then Ray let go of him and Heath coughed holding his neck

Ray: DIDN'T I SAY CONTROL YOUR PERSONALITIES EZEH....DIDNT I?

***he shouted at him**

Heath: my...my...ooh shit

he said sitting down

Heath: who was it?

Ray: that piece of shit Observer

Heath: shit!

Mj: per...personalities....Big Ray what's going on

Ray sighed and he poured himself a drink and gulped it down and as for Mr. Masden he sat down with an emotional look on his face....he blamed himself for Heath's personalities cause Heath created them when he was kidnapped and torture because of him

Ray: he has multiple personality disorder and Observer is one of them....he's one creepy mother fucker and he likes smiling a creepy smile and he's sick in the head

he told Mj

Mj: ooh my God

he said sitting down feeling defeated

Heath: dad don't do that

he pleaded with his father cause he saw by the look on his face he was blaming himself

Mj-senior: its my fault son

Heath: no its not...the people responsible are dead and I promise I'll find a way to control them some how

Ray: we will find a way dad so don't worry

Mj: wha...what happened

Ray: that time Ezeh was kidnapped he created them to cope with the torture

Mj: shit

Then he looked at his father

Mj: sorry for swearing dad

Jabu: wa bona this Observer wa masepa o thoma go ntlatsa phinya....wa phapha ebile ga a na timing nx....antlek nyammae man (you see this shitty Observer is starting to get on my last nerve....he's forward and he doesn't even have a good timing.....you know what..... " some extreme swear words I cant translate")

then he walked out

.
. .
*** Well Nomvula was laid to rest the following weekend on Saturday and people asked themselves why not even one of his children cried for her....well since then gogo's "gift" stopped working I fucken hate her in fact I should've stabbed her while looking straight into her evil eyes until she took her last breath....i should've stabbed her on her throat and twisted it unt....

he said with an angry voice with his hands shaking

Ray: HEATH!

He warned him and a creepy smile plastered on Heath's face and Jabu got up moving away from him

Jabu: Mshikaro?

Heath: im back....

then he laughed and Mj and his father looked at Heath with their eyes popped out

Jabu: shit...Big Ray

Ray: let me guess Observer

Observer: yeah...aren't you happy to see me big Ray?

***Ray rushed to Heath and he grabbed him by his neck and he tightened his grip ***

Mj-senior: AKUNNA WHAT ARE YOU DOING!

Mj: bro...brother Ray stop!

Ray: what did I say to you Observer....didn't I warn you to know your fucken place....didn't I fucken warn you

Mj looked at them with a scared look on his face and he looked from Jabu to Ray and Heath confused

Observer: let go of me you bastard

Ray: you wanna test me boy....you wanna see what im capable of huh....im sure you saw what happened in that meeting so dont fuck with me boy I'll fucken take you to hell just for a day and turn you to another Mad Dog so go back to whatever hole you crawled out of and stay there!

Observer: fu...fuck you!

he said struggling to breathe properly

Ray: fuck you too now fuck off or you want me to go La Parca on you?

Observer: mxm you are no fun

then Heath's facial expression changed and his eyes popped out as he held Ray's arm

Heath: bi...big Ray

then Ray let go of him and Heath coughed holding his neck

Ray: DIDN'T I SAY CONTROL YOUR PERSONALITIES EZEH....DIDNT I?

***he shouted at him**

Heath: my...my...ooh shit

he said sitting down

Heath: who was it?

Ray: that piece of shit Observer

Heath: shit!

Mj: per...personalities....Big Ray what's going on

Ray sighed and he poured himself a drink and gulped it down and as for Mr. Masden he sat down with an emotional look on his face....he blamed himself for Heath's personalities cause Heath created them when he was kidnapped and torture because of him

Ray: he has multiple personality disorder and Observer is one of them....he's one creepy mother fucker and he likes smiling a creepy smile and he's sick in the head

he told Mj

Mj: ooh my God

he said sitting down feeling defeated

Heath: dad don't do that

he pleaded with his father cause he saw by the look on his face he was blaming himself

Mj-senior: its my fault son

Heath: no its not...the people responsible are dead and I promise I'll find a way to control them some how

Ray: we will find a way dad so don't worry

Mj: wha...what happened

Ray: that time Ezeh was kidnapped he created them to cope with the torture

Mj: shit

Then he looked at his father

Mj: sorry for swearing dad

Jabu: wa bona this Observer wa masepa o thoma go ntlatsa phinya....wa phapha ebile ga a na timing nx....antlek nyammae man (you see this shitty Observer is starting to get on my last nerve....he's forward and he doesn't even have a good timing.....you know what..... " some extreme swear words I cant translate")

then he walked out

.
. .
*** Well Nomvula was laid to rest the following weekend on Saturday and people asked themselves why not even one of his children cried for her....well since then gogo's "gift" stopped working it's like Nomvula's death switched it off completely and in a way she was glad cause now she feels like its time she enjoyed a piece of mind and enjoy the remainder of her days on earth with her husband without getting visions or seeing ghosts and falling ill because of it..

Another thing Nomvula's case was closed and everyone went about their business....On other news the Pastor contacted Amo and he apologized for his 'behavior' and he told her she's also welcomed back home and that he's even willing to accept Jabu....well she was skeptical about his sudden change of heart but eased up when Jabu lied to her by saying that her father also called him and apologized to him.....well the pastor's relationship with his son died the day he saw that video and he wants nothing to do with him....he couldn't get over the fact that his father was gay secretly and on top of that he treated him and Amo badly he was always hard on him and made him feel like less of a man where else he was the one who is 'lesser' of a man.....

Well a month later Jabu send his uncles and the lobola was paid in full and all the necessary traditional rights were done from both families even though the Pastor wasn't a traditional man but since Jabu had the upper hand he forced him to do right by Amo and he did....then Modise came to see Jabu and he asked for that video cause he hates the fact that his father is still preaching in front of the congregation where else in secret he's sleeping with other men he held too much anger towards his father cause he felt like after the whole video thing he should've stepped down as a pastor from the church peacefully but no instead he's still pretending as if he's this holly man in front of everyone and it made Modise sick cause on top of that his mother was still in the dark anyway Jabu did send him the video and he deleted it immediately on his phone and let Modise do what he things is right cause he knew how he was gonna handle the whole thing if he was in his shoes if the pastor was his father and he was doing that to his lovely mother....

Well Modise showed his mother the video and as we speak his parent are on a process of divorce and Amo and her mother are in a process of fixing their mother-daughter relationship more especially now that Amo gave birth to a bouncing baby girl..... and well the pastor decided to commit

suicide with the fear that his son might post that video on social media and he was given a proper burial cause their mother decided to keep his sexuality a secret and she managed to convince her son to not say anything too.....

Well two months later everything is looking up for everyone and Naledi heard about her mother's sickness and from the goodness of her heart she decided to take Mamiki to an old age home where she will be properly taken care of and she's the one paying for her stay there.... With Lerato due to stress and her sinking into depression she suffered a heart attack and died and James buried her cause even though she's not his biologically and even though she killed his grandson but he raised her and Naledi didn't have a problem with it because she knew Lerato had no one besides James....

As for Kitso he has kept to his word and him and his mother's relationship is no longer the same cause he now makes his own decisions and he doesn't take his mother's bad advice anymore and as for his relationship with Lesedi well its getting there slowly but surely....On other news Omphile's mother slept with every dick and tom for money and she ended up contracting HIV and since her pride won't let her go to the clinic to queue for ARVs her health is deteriorating and her mother is worried sick about her.... as for Mj well he took the gut-wrenching news about his mother like a man and he's glad that the truth about Ray's paternity didn't change anything about their relationship***

.
. .
.

**** AT THANDI'S HOUSE****

***it was 5 in the afternoon on Wednesday and Thandi just got off Skype with Ruslan and she was smiling cause he always manages to put a smile on her face he was back in Guinea Bissau and he was checking on her and he told her he was coming back in two days' time to see her and the boys and to take them out like he promised....he also got along with Mpendulo and Mpilo and that made her happy cause they like him too much more especially because of his "magic stunts".....Mpilo can't stop talking about him and even though she's happy with him but she was also scared that they might get too attached to him and forget about their father James....Well about him the thing is he hasn't come home even today and he stopped talking to Thandi that day she insulted him....he just

send Mpilo and Mpendulo a cellphone by a carrier so he doesn't call Thandi every time he wants to talk to his boys....well he calls but not every day and even when he calls he just greets them and ask how school is and if they are good boys then he tells them he will call them again some other time....but at least he send them money.....

One day Thandi called him cause even though they broke up but she still cared and she was worried about his relationship with his sons and well a woman answered the phone and she threw insults at Thandi also calling her a witch...she dropped the call and cried and she vowed that even if the boys gets too attached to Ruslan and forget about James she doesn't care anymore...well she and Ruslan are officially dating and they haven't gone beyond kissing and when she asked him if he's not sexually attracted to her he just made her feel his hard erection and told her that he wants her to fully be over James and he will service her any how she wants him to and that made her fall for him even more and that also encouraged her to try hard to get over James and fully move on.... and again Ruslan stopped making him shit on himself so even though he is "healed" but he never came home to see at least his boys and Thandi heard rumors that they have seen him around Pretoria with a pregnant woman....

Anyway her phone rang and she didn't recognize the number but she answered anyway***

Thandi: hello

Voice: Thandi?

Thandi: speaking

Voice: you are speaking with James' aunt Mariam

she got bored immediately

Thandi: ooh ok...o kae aunty? (how are you aunt?)

Mariam: o mohuta ofe was mosadi wena Thandi (what kind of a woman are you Thandi)

Thandi: askies

Mariam: or what you want me to ask you ka sekgowa....i said what kind of a woman are you?....James told me that wa feba koo ko pitori (you are whoring around there)

Thandi chuckled

Thandi: aunty weeh assomblief before o tlo botsa nna ka go feba tsa mo bolela le wa gao ngwana pele ka bofebe ba gae and omotsise if wa supporter nah lesea la gae le sefebe sa gae neh...ok shap (please before you start telling me about my whoring ways go and ask your own son about his whoring ways and also ask him if he's supporting his baby along with his bitch ok)

*** she dropped the call and clicked her tongue and her phone rang again but she just ignored it then Mpilo walked in***

Mpilo: mama uncle Ruu o tla neng(when is uncle Ruu coming)

Thandi: bathong Mpilo I don't know...why o botsisa (why do you ask)

Mpilo: he said we gonna go to Gold Reef City on his next visit

she just rolled her eyes

Thandi: well I don't know when he's coming Mpilo

well she said that cause she didn't want him to be disappointed if it happens that he postpones coming on Friday

Mpilo: but mom!

he said sulking

Thandi: hae Mpilo o sa batla go mbora tuu (please don't bore me)

Mpilo: at least call him and ask him ma please

Thandi: fine eish I'll call him later

he smiled and she smiled too cause all she wants is seeing her sons happy then Mpendulo walked in

Mpe: so mom have you called uncle Ruu lately

she rolled her eyes

Mpilo: mom said she will call him later

he said smiling and Mpendulo smiled too

Mpe: ok cool

**** he walked away and Mpilo followed him jumping up and down***

Thandi: Modimo waka (my God)...mmh uncle Ruu this Uncle Ruu that...i wonder o jitseng bana baka (what did he feed by kids)

then she laughed lightly while shaking her head

.
. .

***Well Saturday morning the boys were ready waiting for Ruslan to arrive....he called Friday night when he landed and told them he'll see them tomorrow as he's tired from the flight and now they were anxiously waiting for him....they were sitting outside in the veranda waiting for him while Thandi was busy cleaning inside....he was taking them to Gold Reef City without Thandi and she was cool with it cause Ray told her they are safe with him as he trust him with his own life...

A car parked in front of their gate and Mpilo got up and he ran to the gate looking excited and Ruslan got out of the car and he smiled wide when he saw Mpilo jumping up and down excited...he opened the gate and got in the Mpilo jumped on him and he picked him up ***

Ruslan: someone is happy to see me

Mpilo blushed and he hid his head on his shoulder and Ruslan laughed and he walked in then Mpendulo got up and he met him half way and they hugged

Ruslan: you good my champ

Mpendulo: yeah and thanks for helping me with my homework that time...I passed and the teacher was impressed and proud of me

Ruslan smiled

Ruslan: I told you you will ace it didn't i?

he nodded

Ruslan: im proud of you my boy...you did good ok

Mpendulo nodded smiling

Ruslan: and you Mr. Pilot how is school

Mpilo: its fine I passed too

Mpendulo and Ruslan laughed

Ruslan: mmmmh for real?

Mpilo nodded

Mpilo: mmmmh

Ruslan: well im proud of you too ok

Mpilo nodded smiling

Ruslan: is your mother up

Mpe: yeah she's cleaning inside

he put Mpilo down and they walked inside

Mpilo: mama Uncle Ruu is here

Thandi came out of the kitchen and she smiled shyly looking at him and he smirked at her....they shared a hug

Ruslan: you good?

he asked her

Thandi: yeah...you?

Ruslan: I am now

she blushed

Ruslan: ok boys time to go

he gave Mpendulo his car keys

Ruslan: go wait for me in the car I need to speak to your mom about something

Mpendulo: ok...mama see you later neh

Thandi: ok shap ma ninja a ka and behave ok

they nodded and she kissed their foreheads and they walked out rushing to the car and Ruslan pulled her closer and he smashed his lips on her and they kissed passionately with his right hand squeezing her butt...after some time they broke the kiss and they stared at each other smiling

Ruslan: hi

she blushed

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: damn I love you amour....i love you so damn much and I can wait to make you mine

Thandi: dude stop please....you making me blush haw

he chuckled

Ruslan: it's the truth anyway let me go before Mr Pilot come to get me....i love you ok

she nodded and he kissed her forehead

Ruslan: see you later

he stole a kiss on her lips and he walked out leaving her feeling like a teenager in love

.

.

.

she was watching Tv around 7 in the afternoon....Ruslan just send her a message saying they are about to leave Gold Reef city casino where they were having their dinner....her phone rang and it was Ruslan and she answered

Thandi: hey is everything ok

Ruslan: yeah umm look I have called Heath and Naledi and they said it's all good I can drop off the boys at their house for the night so pack an overnight bag cause after dropping them off im coming to fetch you

she swallowed hard

Thandi: um o...ok

Ruslan: good....i love you

then he dropped the call and she sat there frozen cause she knew what "pack an overnight bag" meant....she quickly got up and rushed to the bathroom to shave

.

.
.
****TO BE CONTINUED****

Part 2 { finale }

CONTINUATION OF 85 {PART 2}

.
.
.

NARRATED

They arrived at his hotel room and he put her overnight bag on top of the table and he took off his shirt and vest and she drooled when she saw his well build upper body and his hard abs and tattoos....she was surprised that he had tattoos

Ruslan: make yourself comfortable while I go take a quick shower

she nodded and he took off his jeans and he was left with his briefs and her eyes land on his semi hard dick print and she swallowed hard feeling her clit twitch cause she could see he was huge down there....he took his toiletry bag and went inside the bathroom and she quickly opened her bag and took out a wet wipe and she wiped her nana cause it was dripping wet

Thandi: ooh Gosh go tlo nnyewa tonight...mara le wena Thandi wa no jola le le foreigner la go tswa up North or is Guinea Bissau east of west eish....yho mara ka phapha yong.... mara vele vele ko jewa ke anaconda ele yho Jehovah....eish le nna mara ka no jola le le foreigner while i know gore ba tshwara di weapon of mass distraction (ooh Gosh it's about to get down tonight....but Thandi how can you date a foreigner that is from up north or is Guinea Bissau east or west eish.... im too forward.... so im really gonna be eaten by that anaconda yho Jehovah....but how can I date a foreigner knowing fully well they are packed with weapon of mass destruction)

she said to herself and she shook her head and she laid on the bed and she called Naledi to check on the boys and she said they went straight to bed cause they seemed tired....they said their goodbyes and she lay on the bed waiting for Ruslan..... He finally walked out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his lower body with a tent formed below his belt and Thandi swallowed hard

Ruslan: you see how turned on you make me amour

she looked away smiling and he got on the bed and turned her to lay on her back and he got between her legs and he bend down a bit and they kissed.... after some time he broke the kiss and he helped her take off her clothes and they continued to kiss....then he moved from her lips to her neck and he sucked on it while squeezing on the breasts and she moaned out loud

Thandi: oohh Ruu...oohh gosh

*** he moved from her neck to her breasts and he sucked on them while fingering her and she just lost it....then after some time he left them and he kissed her going down to her honey pot and he licked it and started sucking on her clit and Thandi lost it some more...she kept on jerking up and down and he just held her down still and he used his tongue on her and also sucked her nana until she squirted and came on his face and he chuckled going up to her face and he kissed making her taste herself he then took off his towel and he wiped his face and they continued to french kiss hungrily....the next thing she felt him on her entrance and she froze***

Thandi: ummm Ruu don't forget a co...condom

Ruslan: im clean and im sure you are too so I don't see why we should use a rubber amour

she bit her lower lip

Thandi: i...im not on any contraceptives Ruu I stopped when I broke off with James

he kissed her and she kissed him back then he broke it

Ruslan: then we can stop and wait until you are on contraceptives cause im never using a rubber with you amour... im sorry

she swallowed hard and her eyes filled with tears

Thandi: but Ruu...

he shook his head

Ruslan: that's my decision amour and as much as I respect yours of wanting to use a rubber cause you are not on any contraceptives then respect mine

she swallowed hard and he perked her lips and got off the bed with his hard and veined dick

Ruslan: ummm give me some time to take care of this in the bathroom I'll be back

Thandi: its...its ok please don't go....i need you Ruu please i...i'll go and buy an emergency pill in the morning

***she said sounding desperate and she looked away embarrassed**

Ruslan: you sure?

***she nodded biting her lower lips and he got back in bed and he got between her legs then they continued to kiss....the kiss got intense and Thandi felt the tip of his dick on her pussy entrance

and her heart started beating fast then he pushed it in and she closed her eyes as she felt a bit of pain***

Ruu: shit you are too tight amour.... look at me please

she opened her eyes and looked at him

Ruslan: I love you ok

she nodded

Thandi: i...I love you too

his eyes popped out cause she has never said it back before

Ruslan: wait did you just say you....you love me too?

she nodded with tears in her eyes

Thandi: I've always loved you Ruu I was just too stupid to admit it

he swallowed hard emotionally and kissed her lips pushing half of his dick in and he groaned while she moaned loud

Ruslan: shit!

he said as he felt her walls clinging on his shaft

Ruslan: you don't know how much I have waited for you to say those words back amour

***he whispered to her ear and he pushed all of it in and she moaned loud holding tight to his arms while he cursed then he started to move slowly in and out of her while groaning

lightly.....then out of the blue he increased his pace while giving her long strokes with his

forehead on hers he then pulled her leg up and he went deeper with his pace increasing some

more....he moved in and out of her while groaning from deep down his throat while Thandi was moaning out loud also calling out his name....what she was feeling was amazing and out of this world....

He went faster and faster in and out of her hitting it hard and that drove Thandi insane....he was so lost in her that he came back to his senses when her body shook vigorously and she was busy screaming holding on tight to his arms then he stopped and he pulled out and knelt on the bed and instructed her to put her legs on his shoulders and he lifted her lower body a bit then he slid in and started fucking her hard instantly...she held on to the bed covers as he went hard on her with sweat all over his body....he went in and out of her fast with his grip on her waist getting tighter... then another orgasm hit her and this time he didn't stop instead he fucked her harder and faster... you could hear that thwaa thwaa sound of their body slapping each other and her loud scream and his deep groans.....he went faster as he could feel that he was getting nearer and

nearer to the finishing line then he went in and out of her hard and fast for about three times then he slammed in her pushing in deeper and deeper as he shot his cum inside of her***

Ruu: shit *#!&*\$....fuck *&^%#@ ahhhh mother fucken shit!

that all he said as he came then he collapsed on top of her for a few seconds...he then pulled out slowly and he took the towel and wiped her and himself and he laid down on his back and pulled her to lay on top of him and he held her tight as they got their breath

Ruslan: you good?

she nodded with her eyes closed cause she was exhausted and he kissed the top of her head

Ruslan: thank you for that amour....damn you are tight and warm and.....i think im already addicted to your pussy

they both laughed lightly and they kept quiet a bit

Ruslan: did you mean it

she nodded

Thandi: I did

he kissed her forehead and held her tighter

Ruslan: thank you for loving me back

.
. .

he was now standing on the balcony only in his boxers lost in thoughts...he was falling deeper and deeper for Thandi and he was worried that it might lead to obsession and she might start feeling suffocated by him and decides to leave him cause when he loves he loves wholeheartedly and it always leads to obsession...he was scared to lose her he just needed to sit her down and tell her about his fears so he avoids what happened to him and the mother of his son that lead to her getting a restraining order against him....*

Ruu: yeah communication is the keyi have to talk to her...fuck Ruu don't mess this one up man...she's the one....she's the one I have been waiting for....just don't fuck it up

he said to himself and he sighed brushing his head then he heard footsteps coming closer and he turned and she walked towards him smiling shyly she was wearing a robe and underneath it she was naked...he then wrapped his arms around her while she rested her head on his chest and also wrapped her arms around his waist

Thandi: you left me all alone

she sulked and he chuckled

Ruslan: I just needed some air and plus you were sleeping so peacefully so I didn't wanna wake you up

he said and kissed the top of her head

Thandi: mmmmh ok

Ruslan: amour?

Thandi: mmmmh

Ruslan: I truly love you

Thandi: and I truly love you too

he sighed

Ruslan: when I love I love hard amour and I want you to tell me if im getting too much so I can take a step back

she looked up at him

Thandi: just don't get too controlling that's all Ruu and as for your love please keep on showering me with it cause I don't know how true love is Ruu I thought I did with James but I was wrong now please show me how true love feels like

he smiled and bend a bit since he was taller than her and he perked her lips

Ruslan: I just don't wanna overwhelm you amour

Thandi: look Ruu im all shy now cause this is the first time im experiencing this kind of love but once I feel like you are getting out of hand I'll tell you to your face respectfully that is....so don't worry about me as long as you don't cheat on me beat me up or neglect me and the boys then bhuti Ruu please shower me with your love assomblief

he laughed

Ruslan: im glad to hear that

Thandi: and thank you for being there for the boys...I truly appreciate you Ruu and I pray that nothing comes between us

Ruslan: nothing will come between us amour and as for the boys well they are also my boys and I have grown fond of them so don't worry I got you

she smiled at him

Thandi: I should also meet your boy so I can shower him with love too

he chuckled

Ruslan: well her mother is a bitc....umm she's bitter and im sure she'll give lame excuses as to why she can't allow him to meet you but I'll test the waters and see if she agrees but if she doesn't agree then we will find a way to make you two meet

Thandi: she's that bad?

Ruslan: American women are crazy amour.... let's just say i once loved her too much and she didn't appreciate me or my love to a point that she had a restraining order against me after she broke up with me and when I decided to move on and try to get rid of all the love I had for her and she also saw that I wasn't into her anymore she revoked the restraining order and said we should try again and that she's sorry blah blah blah but I wasn't there any more so since then she's been a bitter baby mama and I just don't give a shit

Thandi: wow...so do you still love her

he chuckled

Ruslan: no....im in love with you and I want to wife you soon

***she looked down blushing and he pulled off the robe she was wearing and it fell on the floor and she was left naked....then he grabbed her ass and he picked her up and she wrapped her legs around his waist and he went to the wall "still" on the balcony and he pinned her with her back on it and he pulled his briefs down and he directed his hard shaft and slid in....he groaned while she moaned loud cause she was sore down there but the mixture of pain and pleasure was just out of this world ***

Ruslan: you are fully mine now amour and I don't share....as much as I love hard I can also kill hard so never give what belongs to me to another men or all hell will break loose ok

he said with his deep voice and she nodded feeling scared then he started to move slowly

Ruslan: don't look scared I'll never hurt you unless you cheat or betray me.... other than that I'll worship the ground you walk on amour

he whispered to her then he increased his pace while sucking on her neck

.

.

.

AT JASE AND KEDI'S HOUSE THE FOLLOWING MORNING

Kedi: ooh God my hands can't stop shaking

Jase: don't worry all will go well my heart

he said kissing her cheek

Kedi: i guess so....its just im nervous Khumalo I mean I have a brother now a big brother

Jase: an arrogant big brother

Kedi push him lightly laughing and he chuckled

Kedi: hey watch it

they both laughed and he pulled her closer and kissed her lips....they kissed for some time then they broke it and they smiled at each other

Jase: I love you my heart and im glad you are my chosen one

she looked away blushing then she looked at his face again

Kedi: im glad too that im your chosen one my beast

he laughed

Kedi: so does he know about the beasts and stuff

Jase sighed

Jase: yeah and he doesn't care all he cares about is Mbali and his son....mxm I swear it's like uMbali umdlisile (fed him a love potion) or something

Kedi laughed

Jase: and don't think he's better than me cause he's also a gangster in a suit

Kedi: bathong Khumalo

the intercom rang and he got up

Jase: im just saying....mina naye same whatsapp group

Kedi laughed and Jase walked away then he came back

Jase: he's here

Kedi: ooh God

she said getting up and Jase perked her lips

Jase: relax...he's your brother and not a potential boyfriend haw

she punched him on his chest and he flinched and laughed walking to the door

.

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.

Ray: hey

he said standing not far from Kedi and she swallowed hard with tears in her eyes

Kedi: hey

Jase: umm I'll give you two some privacy

then he looked at Ray

Jase: only tears of joy man or even La Parca wont stop me from ripping your heart off your chest

Kedi: Jase!

Jase: I don't play around when it comes to you my heart and you know it

then he walked away and Ray chuckled shaking his head

Kedi: im sorry he's not...

he interrupted her

Ray: I'd do worse to anyone who'll make Mbali cry

she kept quiet and looked down

Ray: can I hug you

she started breathing heavily trying to suppress a sob and she nodded with tears running down her cheeks and Ray rushed to her and he held her tight as she cried...after some time she calmed down and they sat down

Kedi: I cant believe I have a big brother

she laughed lightly while wiping her tears off

Ray: well im here and im ready to skin alive anyone that hurt you

she laughed

Ray: i...i was told of what you went through while growing up...im sorry I wasn't there to protect you

she sighed

Kedi: well almost all of them are dead so at least I know they are burning in hell as we speak

he smirked at her

Ray: you should write down their names for me so whenever I visit hell I should pay them a visit one by one

she laughed and he smiled looking at her

Ray: I would like to have a brother-sister relationship with you...i know we lost a lot years apart but it's never too late I wanna be your big bro...i wanna threaten your husband for no reason and to be the best uncle ever to my niece and nephews

tears ran down Kedi's face as she nodded repeatedly

Kedi: I would love that too

then he pulled her in for a hug and they stayed in that position for some time then Jase walked in

Jase: can I have my wife back now

Ray chuckled

Ray: she told me how you once broke her heart... nc nc nc you better buy me my most expensive whiskey man or I'll fuck you up pretty bad

Kedi: hah Ray!

Ray raised an eyebrow at Jase and Jase showed him the middle finger

Jase: you also got my little sister knocked up nigga

Ray: you also did so... and plus Mbali only has one child what about Kedi

Jase: Saint.....need I say more

Ray: beasts...need I say more too

Kedi got up

Kedi: yho Modimo....you two bonang mo.... go set the table outside at the back while I go warm up our lunch

Jase: yes mam

then she walked away smiling feeling happy that she has a big brother now

Ray: is she always this bossy

Jase: you have no idea

they both chuckled and went to set the table

Jase: you know...I may not like you and you may be an asshole and arrogant but much respect for saving my sister more than once

Ray chuckled

Ray: I don't like you too but after your grandfather told me about what you did for Kedi much respect too man

Well after their lunch they decided to head to North west to their father's grave

.

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.

A WEEK LATER ON CHRISTMAS DAY

*** The Khumalo's and the Owoh-Masdens and the Vilakazi's were having a get together at Ray and Mbali's house.... the women were all inside the house chatting away while the guys are all outside at the back chilling and everyone was in stitches with Snakes Mj and Jabu as always being their usual selves***

Jabu: mxm oho....you are talking about being bitten by a dog baboon well have you been chased by otikoloshi at night while you drunk

*** he said to Snakes and they all laughed***

Snakes: mxm unamanga pinky-pinky man (you are lying pinky-pinky)....i have proof on my ass of its bite marks and healed stitches and wena ubusy ongitshela ngo tikoloshi (you are busy telling me about zombies)

they laughed

Heath: believe me man he's not lying

Mj: what happened?

Jabu: ehe so my then friend Moshe and I we were coming from a local tavern drunk at around two in the morning...it suddenly became too quiet in the neighborhood and I felt the hair on the back of my head stand up and I remember telling Moshe that maybe we should go back cause I have a bad feeling but he said nah im just drunk so we should go home to sleep it off

then he chuckled

Jabu: heh bafowethu I wish I listened to my gut feeling but no we kept on walking then not far from us we saw what looked like small children fetching water from a public tap we called a tralala and we both walked to them slowly frowning...I remember asking Moshe if he's seeing what im seeing and he said yah and we got to them and Moshe asked them what the hell they were doing fetching water at that time of the night....i remember they stopped what they were doing and they whispered among themselves then when they turned all I saw was a long ass beard and long nails pointing at us and the old man who was a size of a toddler said "a le ba tibisheng ba le twaela masepa" which means lets chase them they.....

then he looked at Heath who was holding in a laugh

Jabu: Mshikaro go tlwaela masepa ka English ke eng?

Jase: it means something like Mj and Jabu as always being their usual selves***

Jabu: mxm oho....you are talking about being bitten by a dog baboon well have you been chased by otikoloshi at night while you drunk

*** he said to Snakes and they all laughed***

Snakes: mxm unamanga pinky-pinky man (you are lying pinky-pinky)....i have proof on my ass of its bite marks and healed stitches and wena ubusy ongitshela ngo tikoloshi (you are busy telling me about zombies)

they laughed

Heath: believe me man he's not lying

Mj: what happened?

Jabu: ehe so my then friend Moshe and I we were coming from a local tavern drunk at around two in the morning...it suddenly became too quiet in the neighborhood and I felt the hair on the back of my head stand up and I remember telling Moshe that maybe we should go back cause I have a bad feeling but he said nah im just drunk so we should go home to sleep it off

then he chuckled

Jabu: heh bafowethu I wish I listened to my gut feeling but no we kept on walking then not far from us we saw what looked like small children fetching water from a public tap we called a tralala and we both walked to them slowly frowning...I remember asking Moshe if he's seeing what im seeing and he said yah and we got to them and Moshe asked them what the hell they were doing fetching water at that time of the night...i remember they stopped what they were doing and they whispered among themselves then when they turned all I saw was a long ass beard and long nails pointing at us and the old man who was a size of a toddler said "a le ba tibisheng ba le twaela masepa" which means lets chase them they.....

then he looked at Heath who was holding in a laugh

Jabu: Mshikaro go tlwaela masepa ka English ke eng?

Jase: it means something like don't bullshit me

he said chuckling and they all laughed

Jabu: yah that and....ooh kane you are married to a tswana lady.....anyway you should've seen us running man....we became sober instantly and ran like our lives depend on it

they all laughed

Mj: your lives depended on it bros

Jabu: eeh ntwana....the way we were scared neh we ran past gogo and mkhulu's house which was where we were gonna sleep

they continued to laugh

Jabu: by the time we came back to our senses we were on the other side of our kasi near another tavern breathing heavily and sweating like shit and from there on whats I stopped drinking

Smirnoff Storm todayebooks.com

pdfdreams.com

the all busted out with laughter

Mj: well I once got chased by a mad man just because I kicked a rusted and old tin that was on the ground only to find out that it belonged to him and he called it his expensive glass

***they laughed ***

Mj: bros I was so scared to a point that I was busy running while crying out loud and the stupid mumu didn't stop I would turn left and turned a bit to check if he was still on my tail and the fool was still chasing me

they laughed loud

Mj: I ran until I saw a police station and I ran into the building and the fools ran to the back when I budged in running

everyone was in stiches

Mj: and I jumped over the counter and followed them to the back

Jay: damn.... you three are the worst

then he looked at Snakes

Jay: at least from now on you are not going to act crazy alone

Snakes: tsek Nkosenye

Jase: so what happened Mj

Mj: aah bros those mumu (fools) asked why I was running and I told them and when they heard the mad man shouting that I should come out and pay for his expensive glass they refused to go back to their post....i ended up paying the mad man for kicking his "expensive" tin mxm

***they continued to laugh..... then Baba got up laughing while shaking his head and he went inside.....he asked the ladies were his wife is and they said she went to the kitchen and he went there and found Ma sitting on the bar stool with a glass of water in front of her and her hands shaking and he rushed to her ***

Baba: sthandwa sam

she looked up at him and smiled

Ma: im ok baba I just needed some water and some time alone

Baba swallowed hard and he held her and kissed the top of her head

Baba: ngiyakuthanda mkami (I love you my wife)

Ma: I love you too myeni wami(my husband)

He sighed

Baba: we gonna beat this sickness sthandwa sam yezwa....we will beat it

she looked up at him and she smiled

Ma: I know baba plus the doctor said it hasn't spread that much so God is in control

he kissed her forehead

Baba: lets go upstairs so you can lay down a bit and I'll tell you all my crazy stories

she laughed

Ma: ah ah I thought you told me all your crazy stories Khumalo

he chuckled

Baba: not all of them and I did talk to Bongani about the woman he's dating and he blatantly said he will never remarry he said we shouldn't worry about him yes he loves the woman but he will never remarry and he's good like that

Ma sighed

Ma: as long as he says he's good then there's nothing we can do

Baba: mmh...you know after Mbali's mother died and he said he will never remarry I thought he's just hurt he'll change his mind but he's still sticking by his decision and I respect him more for that

Ma: mmmmh he loved her their love was beautiful and im happy he got to experience it

Baba: mmmmh....manje...

he said helping her up

Baba: let go so you can rest my one

she giggled and they walked out of the kitchen

.
. .
.

Thandi's phone rang and she looked at the caller ID and it was Ruslan...she got up and answered

Thandi: hey

Ruslan: come to my bedroom now!

then he dropped the call... she frowned and she told the ladies to excuse her and she went upstairs

Ntombi: so your sister in law and the mysterious Ruslan mmmmh

she said sipping her drink looking at Naledi and Naledi laughed

Naledi: what about them

Nomhle: ooh please we saw how he was looking at her that look is not just any look Ledi it's a look that says YOU ARE MINE AND NEVER FORGET IT look

the ladies laughed

Naledi: well I know he likes her

Kedi: loves her Ledi

they laughed again

Naledi: yah that

she said and shook her head

Noma: well they look good together and I see why Ruslan is smitten by her....girl is gorgeous

they giggled

Mbali: let's just hope that she can handle him cause yeses him and Ray are birds of the same feathers and hei if he's anything like him then sistaz need to become my best friend too so we can exchange tips

they laughed

Amo: heh I see you haven't met Jabu wena

they laughed*

Mbali: wena no Ntombi need to become best friend too to exchange tips

more laughter

Imani: and what about me?

the ladies cleared their throats

Ntombi: well wena no Ma need to exchange tips...that's how scary both your men are

*** they all busted out with loud laughter***

.

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

.

****INSIDE RUU'S BEDROOM****

Thandi knocked and Ruslan opened the door and he was naked with his hard dick ready to bust with veins popping....she walked in with her eyes popped out and when she turned he was closer to her and he didn't waste time....he smashed his lips on hers and they kissed and soon Thandi's clothes were scattered on the floor and Ruslan was hitting it from behind...they went on and on until they both came and they laid in bed with Thandi's head on his chest catching their breath

Ruslan: I love you amour

Thandi: I love you too

and he kissed her forehead and he breathed in and out

Ruslan: can you do me a favor?

she raised her head and nodded while smiling at him and his heart melted cause her smiled did things to his heart

Ruslan: marry me

her eyes popped out as she looked at him then her phone rang....

Thandi: umm can I answer it

he perked her lips and nodded then she took it and breathed out then she answered sitting up

Thandi: hello

***she heard sniffs**

Thandi: hello

Voice: he's gone....he's dead

***she frowned ***

Thandi: Joe?

Joe: yeah....James...James is dead Thandi....that bitch killed him...she stabbed him to death

***her heart started beating fast and Ruslan saw something was wrong and he also sat up and looked at her curious ***

Thandi: wha...what?

Joe: that evil baby mama of his stabbed him to death....as his wife you are expected to sit on the mattress for him and mourn for him the right way and the funeral will be held gae

Limpopo....tell the boys and prepare to go to Limpopo...shap

then he dropped the call and tears ran down her cheeks

Ruslan: amour what's wrong

she looked at Ruslan and she wiped her tears off

Thandi: J...James is dead....he...his brother said he was stabbed by his baby mama and....God....what am I gonna tell the boys Ruu where will I even begin

He just pulled her closer and held her tight and she sniffed also holding him tight

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

AT AN UNDISCLOSED LOCATION

***Castiel was sitting on the ground with a bottle of whiskey on this hand next to Juana's grave at their backyard next to Juana's grave was their baby's small grave they were both under a huge tree ***

Castiel: im all alone baby...you left me all alone.....maybe I should just give myself up to the witches council and let them do as they please with me and to think I betrayed my brother to save you and now you left me

he chuckled bitterly with tears gushing out and he drank from the bottle

Castiel: I wasn't ready Juana why didn't you accept that mmmh....why couldn't you wait a bit

***he continued to cry.....it's been three months since Juana died and he looks like shit.....all he does is drink pass out and when he wakes up he goes hunting....for these three months he has been surviving only on blood and that made his skin look pale....well he's a hybrid and he survives both on solid food and blood normally he would only feed on blood for two to three times in a week while the rest of the time he eats solid food. That's why his skin looked light caramel instead of pale when he met Kazi for the first time...he can blend in with humans nicely cause he's not a full blown vampire his mother was a human witch and his father was a vampire but now that he hasn't eaten solid food for three months he looks like a real vampire with pale skin and the area around his eyes was dark ***

Castiel: yeah maybe I should just hand myself in to the witches council

then he felt a hand touch his shoulder and he turned but he didn't see anyone but then he heard a voice

Voice: you will never be alone my night rider....i will always be with you and you have Kazi now

he quickly got up and stumbled a bit since he was a bit drunk

Castiel: JUANA?...JUANA IS THAT YOU....BABY PLEASE COME BACK....PLEASE I PROMISE I'LL STOP SEEKING FOR A CHILD AND....AND I'LL BE A GOOD HUSBAND I PROMISE PLEASE COME BACK TO ME BABY

Voice: I'll always be with you my night rider and remember you are never alone...

Castiel: Juana show yourself baby....Ju....

he felt dizzy and fell on the ground and it was lights out....he woke up when he felt a hand touch his cheek and he looked around and there was no one around....it was starting to get dark so he got up and picked his bottle and walked to the house...he changed his shirt and he ran out going deeper into the woods

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

****AT KAZI'S HOUSE****

***Well she did find out that she's pregnant and she decided to tell Menzi cause she didn't want her kids to grow up without knowing their father just because he's married to another woman and ever since he knew he's fussy and over protective of her....he always wants to know where she is all the time and he spends more time with her than he does with his wife and that frustrates Kazi cause Buhle has called her multiple times warning her to keep away from her husband and when she tries to reason with Menzi he just won't hear any of it as for Menzi he was glad Kazi is pregnant cause it means she will be bound to him for the rest of their lives and he now had hope that she might even agree to his marriage proposal soon....

todayebooks.com
pdfdreams.com

Anyway her phone rang and she rolled her eyes and answered***

Kazi: im parking outside my yard and about to open the gate Menzi.....can you please stop calling me every second and concentrate on your marriage for goodness sake

Menzi: my marriage is my business Ntandokazi and those babies in your womb are my business too

she sighed

Kazi: fine....let me open the gate shap

Menzi: I hope you have started packing cause on Saturday you are moving in

well he bought her a house she tried to protest but with Menzi being Menzi she ended up giving up

Kazi: im almost done Menzi

Menzi: good and im sleeping over tonight in fact im on my way now

Kazi: Menzi im not your wife or girlfriend so you cant just tell me ukuthi you are sleeping over
she said with an annoyed voice

Menzi: well you are my baby mama so I can....shap im almost there

***then he dropped the call and she huffed angrily then she got out and went to the gate but before she could open it she felt like someone was watching her then she quickly turned around and there was no one....the was a car parked on the other side of the road but it looked like no one was inside but that feeling of being watched was still there.... she felt the hair on the back of her head stand then she decided to go back to her car and drive around until Menzi comes but as she took a step towards her car a gun went off and she fell on the ground.... then a force moved to the car that was on the other side of the street as the driver was starting the engine ready to drive away from the scene and it ripped the driver's door off the car and threw it away then it pulled the driver out and ripped his throat off his neck and it dropped his body on the ground and went to pull out the passenger that was also inside the car out of the it and it ripped his heart out of his chest and it dropped the body on the ground....the next thing Kazi was no longer on the ground and you could hear dogs bucking vigorously around the neighborhood...even the neighbor that was walking to lock his gate ran inside the house when the gun went off....5 minutes later Menzi parked the car in the middle of the street when the lights of his car hit a body on the ground and he quickly got out and rushed to it with his heart beating fast and he sighed with relief when he saw that it wasn't Kazi but the state the body was in....was gut-wrenching

Menzi: ooh God Kazi....Ntandokazi!

he called out to her rushing to her car and he saw her car keys on the ground and blood next to her car keys then he started to panic

Menzi: Ntandokazi! where are you....Kazi answer me baby!

he said running around calling out her name and she was nowhere in sight then he saw legs showing on the other side of the other car and his heart stopped beating for a sec and he slowly walked there and he sighed with relief when he saw that it was a male figure and not Kazi and he made a disgusted face when he saw what looked like a heart not far from the body

Menzi: Kazi ukuphi? (where are you?)...ooh God.....

he went back to her car and her handbag was there then he put his hands on top of his head cause it was clear she was abducted....he then took out his phone and made an important call to his boss asking for help before he called the police net for control nje

***** THE END *****

todayebooks.com

pdfdreams.com